L 56 d. 8.

Palmerin d'oliua

THE FIRST PART.

SHEWING THE MIRROVR of Nobilitie, the Mappe of Honor, Anatomie of rare Fortunes, Heroycall presidents of Loue, Wonder for Chiualrie, and the moſt accompliſhed Knight inall perfections.

Preſenting to Noble minds, their Courtly deſire, to Gentiles their expectations, and to the inferiour ſort, how to imitate their vertues: handled with modeſtie, to ſhun offence, yet all delightfull for Recreation.

VVritten in Spaniſh, Italian, and French: and from them turned into Engliſh, by *A.M.* one of the Meſſengers of his Maieſties Chamber.

Patere & Abſtine.

LONDON,
Printed by *T. C.* and *B. A.* for *Richard Higgenbotham*, and are to be ſold at his ſhop at the ſigne of the Cardinals Hat without Newgate. 1616.



TO THE WORSHIPFVLL

Maſter *Frances Yong*, of *Brent-Pelham*,, in the County of *Hertfort*, *Eſquire*, *and to* Miſtreſſe *Suſan Yong* his wife, and my moſt kind Miſtreſſe, *health, and their hearts contentment,* continually wiſhed.

VK

BEing indebted to you both for your manifold kindneſſes, I am bold to continue my labour begun, concerning the courſe of my promiſed Hiſtories, this being the firſt part of Palmerin D' Oliua, *ringleader to all the reſt, and therefore the originall from whence they which follow haue bin deriued. Though in my tranſlating they came laſt which ſhould haue bin firſt, now I haue good hope, that by the reprinting of them ouer againe, at length they will come to a iuſt order, and each haue his place as their courſe deſcribeth. The ſecond part of this will ſhortly follow: then the third and laſt that I am now in hand withall, which concluding with* Palmerin *of* England, *and* Primalion *of* Greece, *their ſeuerall laſt part, will perfect the whole hiſtory, and make it complete in euery part. As the reſt, ſo I commend this to your worſhipfull protection, remaining alwayes yours with my vttermoſt endeuours, and praying that your proſperity may neuer faile.*

Your poore well-willer till death,

To the Reader.



Hen I finiſhed my ſecond part of *Palmerin* of *Engl. nd*, I promiſed this worke of *Palmerin D' Oliua*, becauſe it depended ſo eſpecially on the other: to diſcharge that debt, for promiſe is no leſſe accounted, with the new yeere I ſend him abroad, a freendly companion for the long euenings, and a fit recreation for other vacant times.

But becauſe ſome (perhaps) will make exceptions againſt me, that being but one Booke in other languages, I now deuide it twaine: my aunſwere is, that to glut men with delight, may make them ſutfeit, and ſo in expecting thanks for my paynes, I ſhould remaine condemned by generall miſliking. Beſide, a Booke growing too bigge in quantitie, is profitable neither to the minde nor the purſſe: for that men are now ſo wiſe and the world ſo hard, as they loue not to buye pleaſure at vnreaſonable price. And yet the firſt part will entice them to haue the ſecond, when (it may be alleaged) the coſt is as great, though it had come altogether: yet I am of the minde, that a man grutched not ſo much at a little mony, payd at ſeuerall times, as hee doth at once, for this aduantage he hath, in meane time he may imploy halfe his mony on more needfull occaſions, and raiſe ſome benefit toward bying the ſecond part. Againe, the other part will be new at the comming forth, where now it would be ſtale: for ſuch are affections now

a daies,

a daies, that a booke a ſennight olde, is ſcant worth the reading. Thus no iniurie is offered by diuiding my Booke, but profit both to you and me: yours I haue rehearſed, and mine is, that a little pauſe doth well in ſo long a labour, beſide, this aduantage would I take, that if my firſt part deſerued no liking, you ſhould neuer be offended by mee with the ſecond.

Yet heerein I am encouraged, that what hath paſt with ſo great applianſe in diuers languages, can hardly merite to be deſpiſed in England, being matter altogether of delight, and no way offenſiue: for noble and Gentle mindes, are farre from iniuring the Hiſtorie, that hath ſo highly pleaſed the Emperours, Kings and mightie potentates, if then the inferiour ſort miſlike, it is becauſe they are not capable of ſo eſpeciall deſeruings.

And yet I am perſwaded, that both one and other will freendly entertaine *Palmerin D' Oliua*, becauſe his Hiſtory is ſo plentifully ſtored with choyſe conceit, varietie of matter and exquiſit conueyaunce: as nothing can be reprooued but my ſimple tranſlation, yet that I hope will be pardoned too, in that to tranſlate, allowes little occaſion of fine pen worke.

THE FIRST PART OF THE ANCIENT AND HONOURABLE HISTORIE OF THE VALIANT PRINCE *Palmerin D'Oliua*, EMPEROUR OF CONSTANTINOPLE, *Sonne to King* FLORENDOS *of Macedonia, and* the Fayre *Griana*, Daughter to *Remoius*, Emperour of Constantinople: a *History full of singular and courtly recreation.*

CHAP. I.

Of the secret loue that the Prince *Tarisius* bare to the young Princesse *Griana*, & the arriuall of the Prince *Florendos* of Constantinople.

In ancient Histories of the famous Emperours of Constantinople doe record, that the eight Emperour succeeding Constantine, the founder of that ancient and famous Citie, was named Remicius, who gouerned so iust [illegible] his subiects, [illegible] not onely his subiects intirely loued him, but of the kingdomes about him he was so feared and dreaded, that his Empire inioyed no greater [illegible] then in the time of his Predecessors. His Royall deedes of [illegible] and magnificent mind that nothing of [illegible] vnto his Court without

very

comming to his Court, without verie honourable receit and bountifull rewardes: exceeding the good nature of a vertuous Prince, whose deedes were holde of no small reckoning amongst the verie enemies. He married with the King of *Hungaries* Daughter, a Princesse for witte and beautie, equall with any of her time, which caused her to be so especiallie loued of her Lord the Emperour, as hee altogether gaue ouer the exercise of Armes: notwithstanding, his Court did not diminish one iote of the former glorie for good and hardie Knights, but dailie increased in such sort, as he tooke great delight to haue young Princes, Knights and Gentlemen, nurtered and educated from their verie infancie in his Pallace, especially after the Empresse had brought him a Sonne, which was named Caniano, at whose birth was no little reioycing through the whole Empire. Within two yeeres after, she was likewise deliuered of a goodlie Daughter named Griana, who growing to foureteene yeares of age, was of such rare beautie and singular good grace, as those that beheld her, esteemed her for the chiefest peece of workmanshippe that euer nature framed.

Hereupon it chanced, that Tarisius Sonne to the King of *Hungaria* (who had beene brought vp in company with the young Prince Caniano) fell into such amorous conceite of the young Princesse, as he denoted himselfe onely to her seruice, being vnable to conceale the obiect of his affections, but that time made her acquainted with the cause of his alteration. Many meanes he found to entise her good opinion towards him, but the carrying a religious zeale to loue in some other climate, made no reckoning of his importunate and dilligent seruice, which drew a hell of tormenting thoughts vppon Tarisius, seeing his suite and seruice so dailie despised. Neuertheleſſe, (to compasse his intent) he desired his Cosin Caniano, to cause a Tryumph bee published whereunto all Knights might be summoned, as well Straungers as others: not doubting but he should speede so well in deedes of Armes, as thereby hee might reserue the

loue

lone of the faire Griana, and so afterwardes make meanes by the Empresse to demaund her in marriage, all which hee concealed from his Cozin Caniano: who verie gladlie did consent to what Tarisius had requested, watching opportunitie to finde the Emperour his Father at leysure, when he made his highnesse acquainted with the whole enterprise, of himselfe and his Cozin Tarisius, desiring him that all Knights might haue warning for preparation, against a day the next Moneth appointed for the purpose. The Emperour was verie well pleased with his Sonnes request, accounting himselfe highlie honoured by his demaunde: whereupon he caused Heraulds of Armes presently to bee dispatched, to signifie his intended Tournament through al Countries farre and neere. In the meane while Tarisius could not rest day nor night, but still endeuoured to doo what he iudged might please the Princesse Griana, to whō as yet he had not vttered the effect of his longing desire, albeit, by extraordinarie actions hee dailie made shew sufficient of his tormenting passions. But it so fell out not long after, that one day in her walking he had forted her alone from all the other Ladies & Gentlewomen, in a place commodious for a Louers discourses, where falling from one argument to another, the furie of his oppressions imboldened him so far, that at length he brake with her in manner following.

Madame, you are not ignorant of the honourable assemblie, that is appointed at the feaste ensuing, when I hope to receiue the order of Knighthode, and if it shall like you to thinke so well of mee, as to graunt mee one request, easie enough for you to afford mee, perswade your selfe that I shal imagine my fortune equall with the happiest Knights that euer liued, in that it may be the onelie meane, whereby I shall enioy the prize and honour of the Triumph. Griana knowing assuredlie that Tarisius bare her great affection, as I haue before rehearsed, returned him this answere. In soth Cozin, it would please me meruailous well to bee the meane of so good fortune as you promise your selfe: Ne-

uerthe-

nor the elle, I haue not learned so little modestie, as to graunt any thing before I know what is desired. When Tarsius vnderstood her modest excuse, hee perswaded himselfe that he should now obtaine that of her, whereof vntill that instant hee had liued in despaire: whereupon, the teares standing in his eyes, hee beganne in this maniner. I humbly beseech you good Madame, to take in worth what I am to requaint you with: for when I determined to smother my griefe in secret, the extremities of my affection grew to such a surplusage, as it brake the strings of my thoughts, almost vowed for euer silent, to reueale that to you which my selfe dare but reuerently thinke, such is my loue to please you, otherwise, I knew no meane can warrant me from vaine and cruell death: so setled is the vnspotted loue I beare you, which when I striue to ouercome, and my selfe also, the more I would decrease it, the more it augmenteth, and that so strongly, as while you are in presence, my spirits forsake euery part of me, to liue in you onely. For which cause I haue determined (if you thinke it good) to request you of the Emperour your Father for my Wife, and if he regard mee with so much honour, the Realme of Hungaria may well challenge, and my selfe likewise, the highest crowne in earthly felicity, hauing a Mistresse of such vnspeakeable quality. In the meane time, if you please to bestowe on mee any iewell or fauour, commaunding mee to weare it as your Knight and Seruant: you shall well perceiue how aduenturous loue will bee in defence of my right, by the aduantage I shall recouer in the vertue of a gift so acceptable.

Griana, who made but slender account of his passions, and being not well pleased that he held her with such vaine discourses: modestly returned him this answere. If you had due regard of mee as I well deserue, you would not attempt mee with speeches so vnbeseeming my bearing: for if your desire be such as you giue me to vnderstand, you ought to make it knowne to the Emperour or Empresse, who haue

greater

greater authoritie ouer me then I haue my selfe. Therefore I desire you henceforth not to aduenture the like on perill of your life, otherwise I shall let you know how highly you offēd me: on which condition I am cōtent for this time to pardon your want of discretion, in that I perceiue my selfe to be the onely cause thereof, graunting you time and leisure thus priuately to assaile me, for which ouersight, I repent me at the very heart. With which words shee flung away and left him alone, declaring by her countenaunce to be offended with his requeſt, in that shee desired rather to die then accept him for her Husband, or to allow him the name of a friend. If then Tarisius was driuen into a quandarie, we nede not marnaile: wherefore troubled as he was, and not caring greatly whither he went, he entred the Empresse Chamber, where she and her Son Caniano stod conferring together: without saluting the one or other, he satte downe in a Chaire, and gaue such bitter sighes, as the Empresse hearing, was somewhat mooued therewith, doubting he had either receiued some great iniurie, or else could not prouide himselfe so sufficiently as he would for the Triumphe, whereupon she left her Son, and calling Tarisius aside, thus began with him. Nephewe, I see you very melancholy, which makes mee to iudge, that you want some needefull thing for the Tournament, which my Sonne hath caused to be published. With which words she beheld Tarisius more wistly then shee had done before, and perceiued the teares to trickle down his cheekes, which made her more desirous to know the cause of his griefe, but his heart was so confounded and shut vp in anguish, as he could not speake one word to her. Neuertheleſſe, the Empresse, who loued him as her owne Sonne, found so many meanes to perswade him, as in the end he disclosed the loue he bare to Griana, and the aunswere likewise which shee made him: whereby I am assured (quoth he) that nothing but death can cease my torments. The Empresse who of her selfe did many times determine to make that marri-

age,

age, (perceyuing now how fitly the ocasion offered it selfe, began to resolue on the consummation thereof: and to content her Nephew. in excusing the Princesse Griana, spake as followeth.

Doe you Nephew mislike the answere of my daughter? Beleiue me, therein she did but her duety: for thee cannot dispose of her selfe, being young, and vnder controule, but by consent of the Emperour and I, whom you ought first to make acquainted with your request. But since I perceyue how you are affected, I promise you I will conferre with my Lord the Emperour: and hope to preuaile so well in the cause, as you shall speed of that you most desire.

As they continued these discourses, they were giuen to vnderstand by a Messenger, that the Prince Florendes the Kings sonne of Macedon, was newly arriued with a braue company of Knights. But his comming to the Emperour was not as his Vassale or Subiect, because the Kingdome of Macedon was at that time no way beholding to the Empire, but onely to see the faire young Princesse Griana, the renowne of whose Beautie and vertues had so pierced his thoughts, as before he saw her, he loued and honoured her so that for this cause onely he iourneyed to Constantinople, where he was very honorably entertained, both of the Emperour and his Sonne Caniano, as also of the Empresse and fayre Griana, who oftentimes heard him reckoned and reckned amongst the most honourable and gracious Princes, that liued at that day.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

How the Empreſſe conferred with the Emperour, as concerning the marriage of theyr Daughter *Griana* with *Tariſius*, Sonne to the King of *Hungaria*; whereof they both determined, and of that which happened in the meane time.



The Empreſſe was not forgetfull of her promiſe made to her Nephew Tariſius, but endeuored by all meanes poſſible to finde the Emperour at ſuch leyſure, as ſhe might impart the whole vnto him: and becauſe ſhee had ſo hardily taken the matter vpon her, ſhe would gladly it ſhould ſort to effect, as commonly Women are coueitous of theyr owne deſires: Therefore no marueil if ſhe were earneſt in following her intent.

Some after, walking alone with the Emperour, and ſmoothly couering the baite ſhe was deſirous he ſhould ſwallow, ſhe deſired him to grant her one requeſt, whereof ſhee would not willingly be denyed. The Emperour neuer before hearing her ſo importunate, conſented at the firſt to whatſoeuer ſhe demaunded: Now perſwading her ſelfe, to ſpeede, thus ſhe beganne.

My Lord, hauing often conſidered with my ſelfe, that our Daughter Griana is of yeares and diſcretion able for a Huſband, I am the more deſirous to ſee her honourably beſtowed. And for that the young Prince Tariſius hath beene trained vp in your Court, and (which I litle thought) ſome good-will appeareth to betweene them: I ſhould thinke it not amiſſe to vnite them in Marriage together: for hard-

ing

A & recto

From copy in the possession of Mr J. R. Hetherington, 1962

A 8 verso.

(from dry in possession of Mr J. R. Hetherington

1962

lie shall we finde (in mine opinion) a Lord of greater blood and birth then he, being heyre apparant to the Crowne and kingdome of Hungaria: besides, they hauing beene so long time conuersant together in their young yeares, will entertaine a more speciall regard of loue betweene them, then can bee in any other that may moue the question to her. Madam (answered the Emperour) thee is your Child, and I doe not thinke but you would her good: therefore I like the motion well, for that indeede I esteeme so well of Tarisius, as of mine owne Sonne, and since we haue so happily fallen into these discourses, we will forthwith certifie the King his Father by our Ambassadours, that we may vnderstand his opinion herein. The Empresse gratified her Lord with very hearty thankes, being not a little glad shee had so well preuailed, wherefore immediately shee aduertised Tarisius. But for Griana, her affection was else where, for she bare a certaine secret good liking to Florendos, so soone as shee beheld him, hearing so great report of his knightly bountie and prowesse, so that beholding them together, and theyr eyes deliuering the good conceit of each other, one might easily iudge, that Loue had so mightyly mastered her thoughts, as if shee consented, shee had set downe her rest for her choyse, and hee on the other side was drawne into the same compasse, notwithstanding each of them (for the time) concealed what they rather desired should bee knowne betweene them. Yet this hidden fire stroue to gaine place of issue; for diuers times the Princesse Griana being amongst her Ladies, talking of such Knights as would shew themselues at the Tournament, the Prince Florendos was commonly first spoken of, and so highly would the Ladies commend him beyond all the other, as Griana could not refraine from changing colour, so that the alteration he found in her spirit might be euidently perceyued, howbeit none of the Ladies as then noted it: and thus shee continued till the feast of Saint Maria d' Augusta, which was the day appointed for the Tournament, on which day the Empe-

rour

reuse knights of his Nonne Caniano, and Tarisius, Nephew to the Empresse. In honour whereof, he helde a greater and more magnificent Court, then before times he had done: for he suffered the Ladies to accompany the Knights at the Table: Albeit they were not wont to do so often till that time, yet full well it pleased the Prince Florendos, who sate opposite to the Princesse Griana: During which time of dinner, though many piercing Lokes, and smothered Sighes were sent from each other, as messengers of their semblable opinions, yet cunningly they shadowed all from being discovered, and after the Tables were withdrawne, and each one preparing for the Tourney, Florendos so well behaued himselfe, as he found the meanes to speake priuately with his new Friend: and thus he beganne.

Madame, the Heauens haue not a little fauoured mee, in forcing vs so commodiously together: that I may shew before I enter the Lystes Royall, the occasion why I left the Realme of Macedon, to visite my Lord the Emperour. I sweare to you vpon my Knightly faith, that your gracious selfe was the only cause of my Journey: and while I liue, I shall euermore aduenture my selfe, in ought that may stand with your fauour and liking; And the first argument of my happinesse, I should account, if you would commaund mee this day to Arme my selfe for your Knight: Otherwise, I must be content to absent my selfe, being assured, that without your regarde, it is impossible for mee to do any thing that can returne mee estimation or honour. And albeit I haue not as yet done any seruice to you, whereby I should deserue to be accepted: Yet such is the hope I repose in your vertuous nature, as you will not refuse my honest request, being the first I euer desired of you, and not the last (I trust) shall be vpon honour. Now as you haue heard before, Griana, earnestly affected Florendos: Neuertheles, as a modest and well aduised Princesse, doubting least he feigned those speeches discourse, dissembling her selfe to be somewhat displeased, returned this Answere.

I did not think my Lord Florendos, that you would so farre forget your selfe, to hold mee with speeches not beseeming the Daughter of so great an Emperour as I am: Neuerthelesse, knowing you are a Straunger, and ignorant (it may be) of the modestie which should defend Knights, deuising with Ladies, I will not vse such rigour towards you as I ought, yet must I tell you that I find my selfe offended. You desire that as my Knight you may enter the Tourney: for that I graunt ye, to the ende I may perceiue the effect of the prowesse, which each one so much commendeth in you, the rest, it is my pleasure that you forbeare.

Madame quoth he, if I haue vsed any such speeches as agree not with your patience, for Gods sake (in my excuse) accuse my small compasse of libertie, which remaineth only at your disposition. What qd. she, thinke you that I will loue any but he that must and ought to be my Husband? Ah sweete Lady said Florendos, that is it that I so earnestly desire: and thinke not that I sollicite you with any other kind of loue, but only to make you the Mistresse of my selfe, and altogither to dispose of me and mine: for prose whereof, I will hereafter imploye my selfe in the Emperours seruice, in such sort (as if you like it) I hope to purchase his content. Truely Syr quoth she, that onely appertaines to the Emperour and not to me, to whome you are to make knowne what you intend: for he hath authority to command, and I am bound by duety to obey. At which wordes the Empresse called her away; when Florendos making her curteous reuerence, departed to his Chamber to Arme himselfe, for many Knightes were entred the Lystes, and he in short space came thither for company: where he behaued himselfe with such valour, as he not onely got the honour of the first day, but of the foure dayes following, while the Tourney endured, and wonne the prize, which Cananio hadde prepared for him that best deserued it, which made him be greatly esteemed of the Emperour, and of the whole Court in generall, especially of the fayre Griana, whose heart by little

and

and little, Lone brought in subiection, to the no small contentment of Florendos, which doubtlesse hadde the Prince Tarisius beheld, I imagine hee would have hardly lyked it. But now during the time of these great Feastes and Triumphes, Fortune the sworne enemie to all quietnesse, presented the Emperour with other occasions, to cut off these Pastimes and Courtly deuises: For after many of the Knights assembled at his Court, had taken leaue to returne into their Countreyes, Gamezio Sonne to the Soldane of Babylon, who was on the Seas with a mightie Armie, intending to conquer Alexandria, was by extremitie of winde and weather, driuen into the Streytes before Constantinople. Which when the Pilotes and Partiners perceyued, not one amongst them but greatly reioyced at this great good Fortune, but chiefly Gamezio, who perswaded himselfe that his Gods had sent him thither, that the most noble and flourishing Cittie of the world might fall into his handes: Whereupon the windes somewhat appeased, and the seas calmed, he assembled the chiefe and principall Captaines of his Armie, and thus he beganne.

My good Friends, I beliene assuredly, that our great gods would not suffer vs to arriue in Alexandria, because they went against them of our owne Law and Religion, but rather it liked them better, that we should addresse our selues to this Countrey of Christians, eyther to ruinate it altogether, or at least to bring it vnder our obeysance. Therefore I am determined at this time, to deserue the reuenge of the iniurie, which the King Calameno did to the Soldane, and as much as in me lyes, employ my forces in conquest of this Countrey: for which cause, I desire that each of you would particularly encourage your people, assuring them (if wee can conquer this Cittie) the Riches thereof will countervaile their paine and trauaile. The Captaines failed not to accomplish their charge to the vttermost, summoning euery one presently to Armes: so prouiding their Shippes, their Ensignes, and all things else needfull for their defence,

they hoysed their sayles, making towards the shoare, where with such prouision as they had they make Landing, making such a noyse with their Drums, Trumpets, and Clamours, as was heard with no small feare in every part of the Citie. Neuertheles, they were receiued with better resistance then they looked for, as following the discourse of the Historie, you shall at large vnderstand.

CHAH. III.

¶ Of the Battell fought before the Citie of *Constantinople*, betweene the Emperours power, and the Armie of *Gamezio*.

IMmediatly was this huge Armie on the Sea discouered by the Sentinelles of the City, whereupō the rumour arose so great, as the people ranne on heapes to defend the Hauen, where the Moores thought to haue made their first entrie. In the meane while, Caniano, Tarisius, and the other principall Knights with their men of Armes, put themselues in Equipage, ordaining their Army in such warlike maner, as now they marched forth of the Citie, to succour those places where the Moores gaue most eager Assault. The Prince Florendos being left behinde, made no little hast to gather his Company: And as he galloped with them by the Emperours Pallace, he espyed the Princesse Griana, standing at her Chamber-windowe, casting many a ruefull looke towardes the Gates of the Cittie, which so deeply pierced the gentle Princes heart, as immediately he saide with himselfe. By Heauen (sweete Ladie) either will I dye this day

day, or remoue the griefe that seemeth so neare to touche you. And with this resolution hee gaue the spurres to his horse; when it was not long before hee got among the thickest of the Moores, where hee beheld the Enemie so strong, and the Christians so weake, as the day was like to prooue dangerous and dismall. For the Prince Gamezio was esteemed one of the best Knightes throughout all Asia, and that day hee behaued himselfe so roughly amongst the Christians, as saith to say, they were enforced to retyre towards the Cittie.

Which when the Emperour beheld, who remained with no great strength to defend the City, he was not a little grieued to see his men turne their backe on their enemies, & dispose themselues in such fearefull and dismaying sort. But Florendos & the Prince Canimo vsed such meanes, as they got them sone in Aray againe, and returned on the Enemie with a fresh and hardie charge. Tarisius shewed himselfe very valiant, and aduenturous, striuing by all the meanes hee could to equall the Prince Florendos, who that day gaue testimonie of most rare exploits: so these 3. noble Gentlemen past from ranke to ranke, sending all to the earth that durst withstand them. Gamezio seeing his men so fiercely slaughtred on euery side, mooued to Tarisius, vowed to take reuenge on him, deliuering him such a cruell stroke on the head with his sworde, as downe he fell to the ground so astonished, as his enemy might euen then haue slaine him: and so he had done but for the Prince Florendos, who seeing the Moore aduancing himselfe on his stirropes, to reach a full stroke at Tarisius on the ground, lifted him quite out of his Saudle with his Launce, and bare him so rudely therewith to the Earth, as breaking his necke with the fall, he gaue vp the ghost.

When the Moores beheld Gamezio their Generall slaine, and the Christians make such hauock of them, their hearts failing them to make further resist, fled so fast as they could towardes their Ships, when had not the night to sone preuented them, not one had escaped death or taken Prisoner,

Notwithstanding, the greatest part were put to the sword, diuers making hast to get away by Boates, were drawned in the Sea, and many of account brought backe Prisoners; Thus with victorie returned the Emperours power to the Citie.

So many of the Moores as escaped to their Ships, being not a little glad they were so farre from their Enemies: set saile and returned towards the Soldane, to whome they declared the summe of their ill-fortune, as also the death of his sonne Gamezio; which tidings made him wel-nie mad with rage and anger. But being olde and crazed with sickenes, hee could not goe in person to reuenge his death, which made him vow and sweare, that so soone as his other sonne came to yeares to beare Armes, he would send him with such a puissant strength, as easily he should destroy the Emperor and his Countrey: in the meane time he sent the Ransome to redeeme them that were taken prisoners: where we will leaue the Soldane, and returne to Caniana, and the other Princes, who being now come againe to the Citie, the Emperor hauing heard the worthy seruice Florendos had done that same day (and how he had receiued some few dangerous wounds in the Battell) sent for him in all hast that might be to his Pallace, because he would Chirurgions and Physitians should haue care of him. So was Florendos brought very honourably to the Pallace, and conducted to a Chamber beseeming his estate, where the Empresse Griana came presently to visite him: to whome the Prince Caniano recounted, how Tarisius had bene slaine by Gamezio, but that Florendos stepped betweene his death and him, but quoth he, the Moore excused Tarisius; for in my presence hee gaue his last farewell to this world, so that now wee may say the Victory is ours, albeit before it hung in hard suspence.

Whyle Caniano continued these and such like speeches, Griana cast manie a sweete loke on the Prince Florendos, and he answered his obiect with the selfesame messengers of his heart. Thus contented they their seuerall passions

with

with modest and vertuous regard, as none present could suspect their secret meaning. The Empresse and her daughter courteously taking theyr leave, Florendos and his Chyrurgians we leaue a while together, they to apply medicines to his woundes, and he the remembrance of his Mistresse to his heart. On the morrow the Emperour with his Nobilitie rode forth of the Citie, to se the slaughtered bodyes, among whom they found Gamezio, who was easily knowne by the richnes of his Armour, which Canieno caused to bee taken from the dead bodie, and brought to Florendos, as the desert of his trauell; whyle the Emperor himselfe (the more to honour him) made present thereof to Florendos at his returne, with these speeches.

My noble Cozen, by your Valour and Knightly prowesse, haue I had the vpper hand of mine Enemyes: may I but liue to requite thy good deserts, I shall account my selfe happie and fortunate: Notwithstanding, account of mee as thy Kinsman and continuall Friend, and be there ought in my power shall like thee to demaunde, on the faith of a King I vow to giue it thee.

Florendos most humbly thanked the Emperour, as well for the great honour hee did him, as also for his large and bountifull promise, whereon he builded so assuredly, as hee almost accounted sayre Griana for his owne: who with the Empresse her Mother, came daylie to visite him, by which meanes theyr mutuall Loue encreased more and more, and Florendos recouered his health in the shorter time, when he sollicited the Emperour with this suite following.

CHAP. III.

¶ How *Florendos* intreated the Emperour, to giue him in Marriage his Daughter *Griana*, and what answere the Emperour made him.



After that Florendos was throughly healed of the wounds which hee had receyued in fight against the Moores: finding the Emperour one day at leysure, and alone in his Chamber, he beganne to salute him, as after followeth:

Most dread and soueraigne Lord, so Princely and gracious haue your fauors bene towards mee since first I entred your royall Court, as the King my Father and I shall neuer answere such exceeding courtesie. And to the end this kindnesse may rather increase then any way diminish, I beseech your Highnes not to deny mee one request, which among the infinite number of your Princely graces towards mee, I shall account it to exceed all other. In briefe, it is the princesse Griana your Daughter, whose loue and honorable fame, haue me forsake the Realme of Macedon, onely to desire her in Marriage, if either any desert in mee, or your owne Princely good conceyt, might repute mee worthie of so high a fauour. And for I would not your Highnesse should any way misconceyue of mee, as that the motion proceedeth from a youthfull and vnaduised head, or that I haue enterprized it without the good liking of the K: my Father: I humbly desire your Maiestie to rest satisfied, both in these and all other opinions, in that my Fathers consent, brought me with no little spede thither, and the hope of

yours

yours during my abode heere, hath taught mee to place my Loue with discretion, and continue it with honourable vnspotted loyaltie. With this addition (vnder your Highnes Correction,) that were shee mine, as I am wholly hers, the faithful seruice of a thankful sonne, would answer the gentlenes of so good a Father, and the irrenocable vowes of holy Loue, assure Griana of her Florendo. Right dearly did the Emperour loue the Prince Florendos, as had hee bene his own Sonne Caniano: his knightly valour, and manifold other vertues iustly inducing him thereto: and gladly hee would haue consented to his request, if his promise made vnto Tarisius did not binde him to the contrary: whereupon he returned him this answer. Beleeue me good Cozin, I am not a little agrieued, that I cannot satisfy your gentle request, for that Tarisius, Nephew to the Empresse hath already preuented me: to him haue I past my promise for my Daughter, and daily I expect the Embassadeurs comming from Hungaria, to finish the Marriage: so that I had rather lose the best of my Cities, then it should be said I falsified my word. Notwithstanding, of one thing I can assure you, that you are farre higher in my grace and fauour then hee: yet necessitie is without law, and the regard of mine Honor must intreat you to hold me excused.

Greatly abashed was the Prince Florendos, seeing in one instant that Hope stroken deade, that had maintained his life, since his comming to Constantinople: and so nypt in the head was hee with the Emperours answere, as hee stode a good while in a stadie, not speaking a word; At last he began thus. God forbid that so great a Prince should breake his promise, by my occasion; Neuerthelesse, my truth and loyaltie to your Highnesse shall not any way diminish, but I shall remaine the most forword in duety, of any that owe Seruice and Allegeance to your Maiestie. Nyther will I (saide the Emperour) imagine the worse of you, but loue you rather better then I did before. Then entred diuers Noble-men and Gentlemen, which made them breake

off

off from further ſpeaches, and Florendos taking his leaue, went to his Chamber, ſo full of griefe, and extreame heauyneſſe, as eaſily he could haue beene inuoced to commit ſome violence vpon himſelfe: but caſting himſelfe vpon his Bed, he thus began to breath forth the furie of his Paſſions, to eaſe the heauy burthen of his oppreſſed ſpirit.

Vnhappy wretch that I am beyond all other, what hope of life canſt thou flatter thy ſelfe withall, ſeeing the meane that ſhould maintaine the continuance thereof, forbids thee (Fond man) to hope any longer. What angry Planet gouerned thy Natiuitie? that her to whome thou gaueſt life, ſhould this day be cauſe to ende thine owne. Beliene me, Tariſius, had I made triall of this inconuenience before, hardly ſhould I put my perſon in ſuch daunger amongſt the Moores, to ſhelde thy life: but in defending the ſword out of thy throat, I haue deſeruedly thruſt it in mine owne: So that by lengthening thy dayes, I haue eppyred mine owne date, and that with a death ſo miſerable and cruell, as no enemie whatſoeuer would wiſh to another. But were it not that my duety to the good Emperour, countermaundeth me, thou couldſt not with ſuch eaſe eyther out-braue me in my loue, or thus vſurpe the gracious fauour of my Miſtreſſe Griana, were affection ballanced with deſert, or loue meaſured by vertue, as it is by opinion. Notwithſtanding, to bye her loue, I ſhall account my ſelfe happie, in that ſhe cannot but pitty my vnfortunate death, and my ſpirit ſhall paſſe with greater quiet to his ende, if ſhee knew with what content I take my Deſtinie: but faire Griana, would God I had eyther not ſeen thee at all, or elſe that Fortune had bin more fauourable to mee in my choyſe. At which words, the extremitie of his Paſſions toke away the libertie of his ſpeech: ſo that hee could not finiſh, what hee would gladly haue ſpoken, but falling from his Bed to the ground in a ſwoune, amazed one of his Eſquyres, that was in the next Chamber, who hearing the fall, ran in immediately, where ſeeing his Maiſter lying dead (in his iudgement) ranne and called Frenato, who was Cozin to Florendos, and one that knew

knew most of his priuate affayres: notwithstanding, hee was ignorant in the cause of this Accident, who taking him vppe in his armes, with colde water and vineger cast in his face, at length hee got life into him againe: when Florendos opening his eyes, and seeing his Cousin so busie about him, breathing forth two or three bitter sighes, saide. My deere Friend and Cousin, I beseech you hinder not the end and ende of my life, for seeing out of all hope to recouer my Lady Griana, there is no meane left to maintaine my life.

When Frenato heard these words, hee doubted that the Prince had receyued some contrary answere from the Emperour, as concerning the Marriage betweene him and his Daughter, for whose loue onely, hee left the Kingdome of Macedon: wherefore he perceyuing that shee must bee the onely meane to ease his torment, hee began thus roundly to answere the Prince. And what of this? must you therefore dispayre? Alas saide Florendos, what would ye haue me doe? the Emperour hath long since past his promise for her to Tarisius, as his Highnesse assured mee by his owne words. Very well Sir (answered Frenato,) but doe you know if she haue giuen her consent? I promise you, I am perswaded that she loues him not, but that her fauorable regard is much more towards you then him: and because you say so much, to morrow will I sound the bottome of this matter so, that (if I can) I will frustrate the Emperours intent towards Tarisius. Do you in the meane time but learne to dissemble your griefe, and shew not your selfe mal-content, for any thing that hath beene saide: but be of good cheere, and referre your fortune in this case to the successe of mine endeuours. These and such like perswasions Frenato vsed to the Prince, whome he thus left in his Chamber, and returned to the Pallace as was his manner. All this while the Emperour bethought him on the speeches that had passed betweene him and Florendos, which made him the night following, to discourse thereon with the Empresse, and perswading her, that shee could more willingly accept of him

for

for his Sonne then Tarisius. But she who highly fauoured her Nephew, reproued his opinion with many Answeres, so that by importunate intreaties, teares, and other subtill fetches, which Women are wont to vse to accomplish their desires, shee so farre disswaded the Emperour, hee promised her againe not to giue her to any other, then to him to whome hee first past his word. Of which words, the Empresse was not a little glad, and therefore all that night shee deuised, by what meanes she might from that time forward so much as lay in her to hinder Florendos from speaking to her Daughter: whereupon she daily kept her Chamber of presence, and held a more strict lookes on Griana, then before shee had done, which greatly increased the passions of Florendos, and brought him into so weake estate, as the learned Physitions could not deliuer the cause of his sickenes, to the no small griefe of the Emperour, but especiallie of Caniano. Yet for all this would not the Empresse at any time visite him, because shee would hinder the occasion of her Daughters seeing him, remembring what speeches had past betweene him and the Emperour. And albeit Griana made no outward shewe thereof, yet in her heart shee was highly displeased at her Mothers dealings: so that one day, when her Brother Caniano came to see her, to recount vnto her in what extremitie he hadde left his friendly Companion, and what griefe it would bee to him if hee dyed, as he greatly doubted: What my Lord (qd. shee) it is not so I hope? Yea certain (qd. hee) and I feare he will very hardly escape this day. At which words, the water stood in her eyes, yet so well as she could, shee dissembled her passions: Neuerthelesse, shee could not hold it in, but saide, I marueil much that the Empresse my Mother, makes so slender account of him, as since his sickenesse she would not vouchsafe once to visite him: I feare she hath forgotten what good he did for vs, that day when hee valiantly slew the Turke Gamezio. Beleeue mee (my good Lord and Brother) I am heartily sorrie for his sickenes: for if hee dye (as God forbid

quoth

quoth she secretly, the Emperour my Father shall lose more then he thinketh on: the great service he hath done for him already, may giue instance of my words, and he being the sonne of so great a Prince as he is. By this time hadde such extreame griefe ouerburdened her heart, as shee was constrained (feigning to goe to the Empresse Chamber) to leaue her Brother, that she might alone by herselfe bemoane her Friends hard fortune.

CHAP. V

¶ How *Griana*, sent a Ring to the Prince *Florendos*, by *Cardian* her Mayde, desiring him (as he loued her) to comfort himselfe; And of the answere he sent her.

SO soone as Griana had left her Brother, she went into her chamber, where more and more shee lamented for the sickneſſe of Florendos, and with her teares shee coupled these discourses. May it be that any liuing creature can deserue so grieuous punishment as I doe, that endanger the life of the worthiest knight in the world? Vnhappy that I am, that Loue, yea, the loue he beares to me, should bring so braue a Gentleman to so hard an errigent: but if he die, such full vengeance will I take vpon my selfe, as I will not remaine one houre aliue after him, and yet our Ghostes seeke their owne quiet in death, that Fortune would not afford vs in life. Yet will I thus farre first aduenture, and that before any sleepe enter these eies of mine, trie if it consist in my power to ease his extremity, that buyes my loue at so deere a price. And in this anguish of minde, she called one of her

her Damosels, the Daughter of her Nurse named Cardina, whom aboue the rest she trusted most, and to her she began in manner following. Cardina, thou knowest the loue I alwaies bare thy Mother, and for her sake how well I haue thought of thee, I haue knowne thee long time a true and faithfull Seruant: but now Cardina, is a time beyond all other, to make tryall of thy truth, and to witnes thy loyaltie to me, onely as thou art sure, so to be secret, and so secret as I must put my life and honour into thy secrecie.

Cardina, who was wise, and of good gouernement, hearing Griana vse such earnest speeches, imagined that she would commit no common matter to her trust with such confirmation, whereupon shee modestlie returned this answere. Madame, rather had I bestowne peremeale in sunder, then any thing you commaund for secrete, should by me bee reuealed without your licence: and so assure your selfe, that while I liue, you shall finde mee as faithfull in deede, as I promise in worde. I neuer hitherto (quoth the Princesse) had other opinion of thee: Listen now therefore what I shall commaund thee. I haue vnderstood for certaine Cardina, that the greeuous sickneese of the Prince Florendos, is caused by verie earnest loue which he beares to me, and for account it great pittie to lose so great a Knight, do so much as take the paines to go to him from mee: and saye I desire him to bee of good cheere, and if there bee any thing in my power may do him good, I will gladly accomplish it, as shee that loues him as her owne selfe, and to assure him thereof, say I send him this Ring, which I will him to keepe as a pledge of my loue. Madame, answered Cardina, Fortune speede me so well, as my paines may giue ease to both your passions: and might my sentence like you Madame, I know no Knight so worthy of your loue as Florendos. Go then saide Griana, and returne againe so soone as thou canst. So went Cardina straight to the lodging of the Prince Florendos, at the entrance whereof, shee meete the Prince Camano so beauye and pensiue as might be, because

he

he perceyued his Frend to consume alwaye euerie day more and more. But Cardina, who had well learned her lesson, kept aloe, and would not be seene of Caniano; who beeing gone, she got vp to the Chamber, where when shee was ready to enter, shee heard the Prince complaine in this sort.

Ah poore wretch, must thou needes die without any hope of remedie? And as he would haue proceeded on, Cardina stepped to him, and after shee had saluted him, saide to him secretly, that the Princesse Griana had sent her to him, to vnderstand of his health: and beleeue me good Prince, quoth shee, I neuer saw Ladie so sorrowfull for your sickenesse, as she is. She commendeth herselfe to your honor most heartilly, and hath sent you this Ring, as an earnest of the loue shee beares you: desiring you to be of good cheere, and comfort your selfe, because she desires to see you, to conferre with you, of matters which concerne you both nearely. These words so rauished the spirit of Florendos, as a good while he doubted, whither hee dreamed, or that he might giue credite to what he heard: For albeit he knew the messenger so well as any in the Court, yet could he not perswade himselfe that hee was so fortunate. At length betweene hope and despaire hee toke the Ring, which hee entertained, with many deuout kisses: and embracing Cardina so well as he could, thus answered: Alas my sweete Friend, may it bee possible that any Ladie hath such regard of him, who neuer was able to doe her any seruice? Doubt not therefore my Lord (answered Cardina:) and if your will declare your loue answerable to hers in vertue, you must giue testimony thereof, by comforting your person, that shee may see you so soone as may bee. Ah faire Virgin (quoth hee) let my whole life be employed, in what shall like her Diuine nature to commaund mee: and I assure you, that these tydings hath breathed such newe life into my soule, as already I finde my selfe wonderfully chaunged; Yea, and that in such sorte, as before three dayes be ouer-past, I shall attend her most gracious will, with seruiceable diligence. In the meane while, I shall

desire you saye Friend, to let my soueraigne Mistresse vnderstand, that I kisse her Highnes hand in humble dutie, and had ere this giuen Farewell to this life, had not her swéete regard called mee againe from death. Thus parted Cardian from the Prince, taking her way spédily towards Griana, who longed not a little to heare from Florendos, whom she had made Lord of her gentle affections.

CHAP. VI.

¶ How *Cardian* recited to the Princesse *Griana*, what speeches had passed betweene her and *Florendos*; and of the counsell shee gaue her Mistresse, to conferre with him in the Garden, so soone as hee was recouered.

CArdian thus dispatched from Florendos, made no little haste towards the Princesse, who remained all this while silent in her Chamber: and no sooner perceyued Cardina to enter, but shée demaunded if Florendos receyued her Token in good parte or no. Beleeue mée Madame answered Cardina, I thinke you neuer did any thing in all your life, whereby you could obtaine more honour and applause, then by that you vouchsafed to do at this instant; for in my iudgement you haue performed a myracle, in giuing him life that was in the very Jawes of death. Then from point to point she recounted the talke passed betweene them: First, how shee found him in the middest of his regrets, and lastly, what message he had sent her.

Thus while Cardian continued her discourse, euery word tooke hold on the gentle heart of the Princesse, and wounded her

her with such pittifull regarde of the Prince his torments: as what she desired inwardly, ther shadowed with modestie, as loath to receyue shame in her Lone, hauing carried herselfe with such honour all her life, quoth ther to Cardina. How might I (good Seruant) ease this weightie oppression. Very well (said Cardina,) when Fortune alloweth opportunitie. But thou knowest (quoth Griana) a Princesse as I am, to bee secret with so braue a Gallant, doth greatly hazard my life and honour. As for that Madame, (saide Cardina,) my Sister can better counsell you then I, or any that I know: by her meanes may you speake with your knight, the bravest Gentleman in the world, one whome I know is so farre deuoted yours, as he will rather lose his dearest life, then impeach your honour any way: and otherwise then in loyaltie, to make you his Lady and Wife, I am well assured hee loueth not, which loue (Madame) you may well entertaine. Returne then Cardina, (quoth the Princesse) to my Lord Florendos, and assure him that so soone as hee is well recouered, I will come and speake with him, in such a place where he may safely aduenture: and bee sure him as hee loueth mee, that it may be with all conuenient speede.

Cardina without any further delay, went with this Message to the Prince Florendos: who hartened himselfe so well vpon these speeches, as within fiue dayes he found himselfe throughly amended, whereof the Emperour and Canino his Sonne was not a little glad: but Tarisius was scant well pleased thereat, for hee had conceyued a secret iealousie, because he was so earnest in affection towards Griana, who by her maid Cardina had warned Florendos, that the night following, hee should come into the Garden, where into her Chamber had a secret entrance, and there would bee and she conferre of their loue, without suspition of any. Florendos seeing these affaires sorte to so good ende, purposed what euer happened, not to faile the time and place: which made him thinke this day a yeare in length, so long hee looked and desired for the night. But now the wished houre is come,

when Florendos with his Cozin Frenato, (who was priuy to the Princes secret loue) departed from their Lodgings, and comming to the Garden, they saw the Wall was very high, and hard to climbe, notwithstanding, greater things are possible to Louers, chiefly when a cause of such weight is in hand, so that in short time Florendos had got to the top of the Wall, and afterward went to the place wher Griana staied his comming, who had no body with her, but Lerina, sister to Cardina, to whom likewise shee thoroughly bewrayed her secrets. Who hauing espyed them, came and fell on his knee, before the Princesse, but she tooke him vppe in her armes, embracing him so sweetly: as Lerina withdrew herselfe amongst the Trees, not with any intent of feare to displease them, but with a certaine kinde of griefe, which ouercame her, in that shee wanted a Friende to participate with her in loue, as her Mistresse had, before whom Florendos, being on his knee, saide. Madame, by vertue of your commaundement, I am thus bolde to enter your presence, yeelding my whole abilitie to you, as to the diuine Goddesse that hath sheelded mee from death: which grace seeing your Princely nature hath attributed mee, my life for euer hereafter remaines at your soueraigne pleasure: the vnfeigned promise whereof, I binde to you by irrenocable vowes, but especially by my faith, the only ornament of a true knight, that I desire no longer to breathe this ayre, then to honour your name with my continual seruice: for life without your grace and fauour, is more vnkeasome to mee then a thousand deaths. But by your fauour my Lord (answered Griana) how, or from whence hath this hot loue sprung, let me know I desire you? Madame (quoth hee) as I haue heeretofore, so at this time I assure you, that in my native Countrey of Macedon, I heard the renowne of your excelling beautie, at which very instant, I dedicated my selfe onely yours: and euer since continuing in this religious seruice, I haue so confidently set downe my rest, in gracious regard of your sweete selfe, as being yours in seruice, I liue: if otherwise,

I

I die. In sooth said the Princesse, I see then you have given your selfe wholly mine, and so I am now contented to accept you. Then Sweete (quoth he) to seale the assurance of this diuine fauour you haue done me, let me intreate to kisse those sweete Lippes that deliuered the sentence I haue long looked for. Which to graunt, though for modesty sake, at first she seemed daintie, yet at length Loue had so surprized her, as he neede not strine when no resistance was offered. Thus with teares and solemne kisses, they breathed into each others soule the mute arguments of their Loue, and sayde Cynthia, amiably fauouring this delicate encounter, added such courage to the minde of this lonely Champion, as breaking the Launce in the face of Venus, hee bequeathed the successe of his deuoire to the gracious Aspect of that Planet. And among a number of soft and sweete loue speeches, hee discoursed to her his talke with the Emperour her Father, how he had requested her in marriage, and how hee erenised his consent, by the promise he had made before to Tarsius, through the daylie and earnest perswasions of the Empresse. Notwithstanding (quoth he) in respect you haue not consented thereunto, I hope they shall finde themselues farre beyond their reckoning. Now for the Princesse, shee neuer knew that Tarsius had laboured to haue her to his Wife, because she made so light account of him, as she would rather die then consent thereto: whereupon shee returned Florendos this answer. The Emperour my Father hath reason to thinke basely of my Mother, and great discredite will it be to her, to procure my marriage against my will, for neuer shall I consent thereto: and therefore my Lord I desire your aduise, how I may preuent this insuing daunger?

Madame answered Florendos, my aduise is loue alreadie, so please you to accept thereof, I will conuey you hence secretly, and before the Emperour or any one knowe of it, into my countrey of Macedon, where I and mine shall entertaine you with great and rauished honour, and you shall be our gracious Ladie and Princesse. Beleeue me sayd she,

it is doubtfull in such a iourney what daungers may happen, notwithstanding, hauing vowed my selfe onely yours, be it to the liking or disliking of my Father and Mother, I haue rather breake through the straightes of a greater hazard, then be forced to marrie him, whome while I liue I cannot like: therefore doe you expect the aduantage of the time, and I will aduenture with you whither you please. Madame (answered Florendos) continue you this resolution, and referre the rest to my charge, which you shall see affected ere three dayes be past: in the meane while I entend to take my leaue of the Emperour your Father, with this excuse, that the King my Father commaunded my returne home: for which cause I will send my traine before, reteining onely but tenne of my best Knights to accompanie me. For that (quoth Griana) do what you thinke best, & without any further expecting me in this place, certifie mee how things happen, by your Cozen Frenato, or my maide Cardina. But now you se the day beginnes to breake, wherefore let me desire you to depart, that no scandall or suspition arise of our meeting. Florendos kissed the Princesse hand though longer hee would haue stayed, humbly take his leaue, and by the helps of Lerina, hee got ouer the Wall againe, where Frenato stayed his comming, to whome when he was entred his lodging, hee imparted the appointment betweene him and the Princesse, desiring him to discharge his traine, except ten of his best appointed Knights, to helpe him if any hinderance preuented his intent: as for the rest, they should be going on before, and stay his comming at an appointed place, three dayes iourney to Constantinople. In the morning he awaited the Emperors comming ahearse, to whom he said, that he had receiued Letters from the king his Father, with expresse commaundement to make speede returne home: therefore my good Lord (sayd hee) I desire to depart with your fauourable liking, and in respect I may not contrary where I am bound to obey, I intend to make speede to set forward on my iourney: assuring your highnesse, that

that in what place I shall chaunce to come, I am yours in loyall and faithfull seruice. My good Cozin (aunswered the Emperour,) I give you thankes with all my heart, for the honour you haue done me with your gentle presence: and if you haue occasion to vse mee in ought, you shall perceyue how highly I loue and esteeme of you. My Lord (saide Florendos) I desire to deserue the great kindenesse I haue found already: So taking his leaue, the Emperour embraced him, and as he issued forth to his chamber, he met the Prince Caniano, of whom he toke his leaue likewise; who desired him to staye three or foure dayes longer. In which time there came to the Court certaine Ambassadors, which the King of Hungaria had sent to the Emperour, to conclude the Marriage betweene his Sonne Tarisius, and the Princesse Griana, the Duke of Gramay beeing the chiefe of this Embassage: Who was accompanied with many Knightes and Gentlemen of name and account, to whome the Empresse gaue very gracious Welcom, in that she had priuately procured this their comming. As these Embassadours entred the great Chamber, Caniano and Tarisius who accompanyed them, perceyued Griana to withdrawe herselfe aside, very sad and melancholie: Whereupon Caniano came vnto her (greatly abashed at her angry countenance) and thus he beganne. Faire Sister, now at this time when you ought to shew the most cheerefull countenance, you are more sadde then of long time I haue seene you: Mee thinkes you haue good occion to be merrie, seeing the Emperour my Father hath prouided you so brane and worthie a Husbande, as is my Cozine the Prince Tarisius, who I am sure loues you as his owne life. Ah Brother (qd. she) I know not what should moue him so to do, seeing I neuer thought so well of him: and more gladly could I entertaine mine owne death, then be constrained to Loue where I cannot. These Words did Tarisius easily vnderstand: notwithstanding he made shewe as though he did not: but going to the Empresse hee desired her to stay there with the Emperor, seeing the Ambassadors were come

from the King his Father, that what was begun as concerning him and Griana, might now bee finished according to his promise. Upon this occasion, the Empresse called Griana aside, and with smoth and sweete speeches began to breake with her, how for her good she had induced the Emperour, to give her in marriage to her Cozin Tarisius, and what honourable advantage shee should receive thereby: wherefore sayde daughter (sayde shee) resolve your selfe with childlike obedience, to thinke well of that your Parents have determined. All these perswasions could not draw one pleasing word from the Princesse, but shee excused her selfe still, by the desire shee had to remaine as shee was, and rather then to marry shee would take a religious life upon her: with which words she brake into such teares, as the Empresse was constrained to leave her alone, not doubting to find her the next time in better tune. Griana then considering with her selfe, how she should at length be inforced to yeeld, whether she would or no, if Florendos did not the sooner accomplish his enterprise: called Cardina unto her, and sent her with this charge to Florendos, that that present night hee should not fayle to meet her in the Garden, where shee would be ready to depart with him, otherwise he should never gaine the like opportunity: with which message Cardina departed.

CHAP

CHAP. VII.

How Florendos came that night to the Garden, to conclude what hee and Griana had intended, and what hapned to them.



Florendos vnderstanding the will of his Mistresse, with great diligence laboured to execute what they had intended, and taking his leaue at the Court, fained hee would returne no more, but take his way straight towards Macedon. Tarisius, whose iealousie increased euery day more and more, set priuy spies to watch euery night, who went in and out at the Princes Chamber, and albeit of long time his labours were frustrate, yet at length he and his spies perceyued, how hee whom hee most enuied, mounted the Garden Wall where the Princesse lay: for Florendos hauing left his company without the City, accompanied with Frenato, and both of them well armed, hee priuily returned againe to the Pallace, thinking about midnight to carry her away, for whose loue hee had thrust himselfe into this dangerous hazard. Thus hauing left their horses without the City with their Pages, and being come to the Garden wall, Frenato helping the Prince to get vp. Tarisius and his men, who vnhappily lay there in ambush, ran violently vpon him, crying all alonde, kill, kill these villaines that would dishonour the Emperours Pallace. At which words, Florendos and Frenato seeing themselues discouered, presently drew their swordes, and beganne to lay aboute them very valiantly: Florendos giuing

Tarisius so great a blowe on the head, that hee fell downe to ground as hee had bene dead, and two or three of his companie with him: Which when the rest beheld, they gote over the Wall, and running with great clamor into the Cittie, cryed, helpe, helpe, Tarisius, whome Florendos (seeking to robbe the Emperours Pallace) hath cruelly murthered.

This noyse was heard by Griana, Lerina, and Cardina: who were in the Garden staying for Florendos: Which did so amaze the hardiest of the three, as they knew not well what countenance to set on the matter: especially Griana: Whom this feare had stroken into a dead Traunce, but Lerina, and her Sister, taking her up in their armes, conveyed her into her Chamber, and some after into her Bed, when recovering her selfe, in extreame weeping, thus spake. Alas miserable wretch that I am, doth Fortune employ all meanes shee can for my destruction? Well, let her do the uttermost spight she can: For I am well assured before it be long, that Death shall triumph above all her discourteses. Cardina seeing her so Weepe, and wring her handes, and as it were readie to fall into dispaire, beganne to perswade her in this sorte, Madame, it is no time now to use these extremities: for Gods sake learne to cover your Passions, to the end the Emperour may not detect us, being assured, that as yet we were not perceived: And if you can but content your selfe, all this tumult will soone be overcome. I pray thee (quoth Griana) leave me alone, and goe see (if thou canst,) What is become of Florendos: that I may know whether he be taken or slaine. So went Cardina, and standing amongst others, as one that knew nothing, beheld all. During this hote Tumult, Frenato seeing troubles increasing more and more, followed the matter with such diligence, as hee gote Florendos out of the throng, and the darknes of the night was such, as they easily compassed to get out of the Cittie, where their Pages stayed with their Horses, whereon they mounted, & set on away. But the Prince Florendos would manytimes have returned backe againe, so loath was he to leave

leaue her whom he loued so dearely for being out of all hope to see her againe, he esteemed his life of no value or account. In which impatience, he rent his comely locks of haire, and hasted his flesh with great violence, whereupon Prenato thus spake to him. Why how now my Lord: will you in seeking honour, wound your selfe with shame: or in arguing your loue to your Lady, endaunger her life? desire you to lose your selfe, and her also for euer? Beleeue me Cozen, this very hardly becomes you, that the subtill dealing of a cowardly Knight, should make you thus to forget your self. No no good Cozen, it is now no time to declare these shewes: let vs therefore make speede to our company, and if you thinke good, we will send one secretly backe to the Cittie, to vnderstand the end of this troublesome broyle, and we in the meane time may set forward towards Macedon. Ah sweete Cozin (quoth Florendos) you speake as the man that cannot comprehend my torments: thinke you it it possible for me to liue, leauing that rare creature in such perill, for whose loue a Well of greefes hath martired my soule: By my Knightly faith I sweare, that death is a thousand times more welcome to me, then to be maistered by this one conceit, that I should liue an houre out of her gracious seruice. Well well Spy (said Prenato) what you may not do now, reserue till better conuenience, and let vs set on before the day-light descry vs: otherwise, in seeking to defend Grisana, your selfe shall be witnes of her reproach and condemnation. Florendos perceiuing his Cozin did aduise him for the best, was well contented to be ruled by him: so giuing the spurres to their horses, stayed not till they ouertooke the rest of their company; when he dispatched an Esquire present backe to the Cittie, commaunding him straightly to direct some to the King his Fathers Court, the successe of euerie thing that happened in his absence.

But now to returne where before we left, Garidian had not long stayed in this hurlye burlye but she perceiued the Emperour was risen, who in all hast caused his Guard to

armes

arme themselues to helpe Tarisius: for by this time had the two knights which escaped, aduertised in ꝑ court, that they tooke Florendos as he was climbing the Garden wall, to go to dishonour the ꝓrincesse Griana. At which report the Emperour was so moued, as he wēt in great furie to his daughters Chamber, whom he found in her bed, more likelie to die then liue: but necessitie (whereof many do often make a vertue) made her cover her weakenes with a faire shew of courage, so that when she sa̅ him enter, she wrapped her selfe in her night mantle, and came before him, to whom he began in this furious manner. Thou lewd Gyrle, darest thou conceiue the thought to do me this dishonor? By my crowne, for this thy presumption, I shall make thee such an example to all other, as thy head from thy shoulders will scant quite thy fault.

Griana hearing him speake so roughly, answered him againe thus mildly. My Lord and Father, I beseech you to pardon me, you accuse me, & I know not whereof: if I haue donne euill, it is in you to chastise me as you shall please: and if I be innocent, vouchsafe god Father not to condemne me. Ah varlet (quoth he) this excuse shall little profite thee. So taking her verie rudelie, he locked her in a strong Tower, whereof he carried the key himselfe: t. en went he to Tarisius his lodging, to se̅ how he did, for it was tolde him that he was in daunger of his life: where he found the Empresse heauily weping, but he caused her to go to her Chamber, and commaunded his Chirurgious to looke diligentlie to his Nephewe, and not to spare any cost to purchase his health. Now because they which searched for Florendos, could not finde him, the bruite and rumour was qualified, and the Emperour went againe to his Chamber till the morning, when the Empresse hearing ꝑ her daughter was in prison, tooke it very heauily, and kneeling before the Emperour, desired him that she might fetch her breath: but he was so angery, as her wordes could do nothing with him, yet hee graunted that shee should go see

her,

her, and take her the Key: when he entring the Tower, found her sitting on the ground so blubbered with teares, as was lamentable to behold: but when she beheld her Mother, she arose, and doing her reuerence, could not speake, her teares so ouercame her. The Empresse that loued her dearely, seeing her in this greeuous estate, had much adoo to dissemble what shee thought, how be it, after a few light words passed betweene them, the fair. I am sorrie daughter, that you haue so lightly throwne your affection vppon a Straunger, and that you forget your duetie, in following your Fathers counsell and mine, who well knewe the loue Tarisius beares you, and no otherwise Daughter, then to take you to his wife. But you (carried away with that lasciuiousnesse, which ill agrees with your credite and calling) haue rather thought best, to graunt Florendos entrance by your Garden, at such a suspected houre, as while you liue, your honour will be hardlie thought on: for two of Tarisius his Knightes, who thought to take the Traytour, are slayne, and my Nephewe himselfe daungerously escaped. Griana hearing him called Traytour, whome shee so highlie loued, and that shee her selfe was accused, by that which ought to excuse her, answered. Madame, and my gratious Mother, as yet I am ignorant of the cause, that hath moued the Emperour in such choller against mee: and be it for this you speake of, in sothe I am offered very great iniurie, for I knowe not whither Florendos, or any other haue entred my Garden: well I am assured hee came not where I was. These are straunge newes to me Madame, I would rather haue thought him on his way towardes Macedon, in respect of the solemne leaue he toke in the Court. For my part, I would that the Traytour which was the cause heereof, had long sithe beene buried in the bottome of the Sea, then he should so abuse the honour of Florendos, with a matter of such villanie, wherein I cannot iudge him faultie: but were it he Madame, I am at a point, let him die the death, as he hath well deserued, for my duetie to you my Parents

hath

hath taught me better nurture, and loue can be no priuiledge to me to fiend. Then good Mother, twit not me with impeach of honour in so innocent a cause, for defence whereof, were the death present before mine eyes, I haue forrowed as much as I would, and am more readie to embrace it then line in fuſpect, ſo ſhall my Father and you be eaſed of prouiding me a Husband. As for the priſon wherein I am, I will not dente his fauour when it ſhall pleaſe him to deliuer me: but I could take it farre more contentedlie, to ſpend the remainder of my following dayes thus ſolitarie, then to line abroade miſeemed on by any. Faire Daughter (ſaid the Empreſſe) do not diſcomfort your ſelfe in this ſort, the Emperour hathe ſome reaſon (in regard of the loue he beares you, and the outragious tumult which happened) to do as he hath done: but I hope in the end all will ſort to the beſt, and that you your ſelfe ſhall remaine contented. Many of her ſpeeches paſſed betweene them, till at length ỹ Empreſſe left her and departed, for ſhe thought long till ſhe was with the Emperour, to let him know the talke betweene her and Griana: which ſhe did without omitting any thing, notwithſtanding he was more ſeuere to his Daughter euery day after. Then ſent he for the Ambaſſadours and thus he beban with them. My Lordes, at this time I am aduiſed, that you ſhall returne to your King my Brother, for in reſpect of the accidents which you haue ſeene to happen, I will craue pardon for this time, referring matters ouer till ſome other time, when things ſhall fall in better diſpoſition. The Ambaſſadours vnderſtanding the Emperoues pleaſure, the next day toke theyr leaue toward the King theyr Maiſter, to whom they declared the whole in generall: whereat hee conceiued ſuch diſpleaſure, as hee preſently ſent for his Sonne Tariſius, who had not as yet recouered his health. But hee was ſo enamored on ỹ young Princeſſe, as would not obey his Fathers commaund: but ſo ſone as he was indifferentlie amended, he intreated the Emperour to pardon his Daughter, acce-

ſing

sing his ow ie men, who vnderstanding have raysed this false rumour of her and Florendos. By this meanes, the Empresse and her Ladies obtained libertie daylie to accompanie Oriana; but all the night time he caused her to be locked vp as closely as before, committing her to the charge of an aged Gentlewoman named Tolomestra, whom he commanded vpon paine of death, not to be a minute of an houre from of her company.

CHAP. VIII.

¶ How *Florendos* arriuing on the Frontiers of *Macedon*, made many sorrowfull complaintes, for not bringing away *Oriana*, according to his Enterprise.

DIsmer hauing Florendos Frenato ouertaken the two company, but they stode on their guard (fearing to be followed) as at length they got the Frontiers of Macedon. Then because Florendos imagined himselfe without life, not hearing any tydings from his Mistresse Oriana, her continuance ouer all at the first Tolome had caused vnto, there to expect the returne of the Esquire he sent to Constantinople. Whose turned, assuring his Master (more then her loue) by reason of the little abode he made in the Emperours Court: for he could not be brought to beleeue that Oriana was inuolued, and that Tarisius was not slaine, as his brother had perswaded. These Princes aid, wolibertie of their Prince, as well for the harde playe of his sweete friend, as that she had failed in killing him, by whose death she well hoped to recouer his loue: all the whole

whole day would be receyue no sustenence, but locked himselfe close in his Chamber, and tumbled on his Bedde as a man halfe desperate. But Frenato, who would not be long absent from him, fearing least his furie would cause him worke some violente on himselfe, made such meanes that he got into the Chamber, at what time the Prince was thus lamenting. Alas sweete Madame, was I borne in such an vnhappie houre, that without desert you must endure imprisonment for me: What satisfaction may your Florendos liue to make, in requitall of this iniurie? When did you euer merite to be so hardly intreated for him? Beleeue me, could you bee discharged soone as I could wish it, Bolts, Locks, nor Walls could hold you a thought while: yet wishing is not action, euery thing is contrary to me, all helpes refuse me, and death like wise denyes mee: but by my Sworde, (and therewith he started vp) in spight of whatsoeuer, I will deliuer you. Frenato seing him rise in such a furie, came and toke him by the arme, demaunding what he would haue. Death (qo. he) if I could, for it grieues mee to liue any longer. You speake very lustily (quoth he in mockage) all this is for the imprisonment of Griana: Is it not better shee should be there, then in the custodie of Tarinus? her Captiuitie you know cannot long endure, but sure she married he could neuer be recouered. Cheere vp, let good hope yet leade you, and note send an other Messenger with speed to Constantinople, to know what accidents haue happened since, and to vnderstand he meanes to speake with Cardina, who will certifie you from Griana, what is or may bee done in those affayres. This Counsell liked well Florendos, whereupon he presently dispatched a Gentleman of trust, who with all diligence vnderstode the commaund of his Master. For in good time he arriued at Constantinople, where Griana had liberty to speake with her Gentlewomen: who when he heard, he was not a little glad, whereupon he searched earnestly, till he had found Cardina, to whome he deliuered his Masters minde, as also in what sadde and

pen-

heauy plight he left him, desiring her with all speede to certifie the Princesse thereof, and what seruice shee would commaund him to his Maister. Cardina knowing how glad the Princesse would be, to heare these tydings from Florendos, went to seeke her sister Lerina, to whome shee imparted what you haue heard, and shee, well aduised of the time, and place, discoursed the same to the Princesse, vnseene, and not suspected of olde Tolomestra. How ioyfull she was of this message I cannot vtter, nor you conceyue, but she was resolued, neuer to haue any other Husband but Florendos; and therefore to comfort him, she deuised to write vnto him: that he might hope as well as shee did: but well shee knewe not how to accomplish her intent, by reason shee wanted penne, incke, and paper, and shee was forbidden to haue ante. Notwithstanding, shee so well perswaded her woman Tolomestra, (as feigning to write to the Emperour her Father) shee recouered the meane to execute her desire. Then withdrawing her selfe apart, first she wrote a letter to the Emperour, and after vnto one to Florendos, wherein shee desired him not to bee offended, albeit things fell not out to his liking: for (with the saueurs of Fortune) the end would be as pleasant to him, as the beginning had beene vnhappie to them both: Withall, that as her desire to prolong her life, bee should do nothing to the preiuice of his own person. These two letters, thus written and sealed, she called Tolomestre, and gaue her that she had written to the Emperor, desiring her to carry it presently to his Maiestie: By whose departing, she had opportunitie to conferre with Lerina: in briefe, she desired to goe seeke the Esquyre, that he might returne to his Maister, with the letter she sent him: which shee did effectually, and the gentle Esquyre made no little haste to his Maister. Who receyuing the Letter from his Mistresse Griana, was not content alone to reade it but kiss, and rekiss it, an hundreth times, thus saying: Ah sweete Letter, written with the hand of the onely fayre Princesse, this daylining: And (for her sweet sake will I keepe thee) as the

best

beſt token a true Knight can receyue from his Ladie.

CHAP. IX.

¶ How the Emperour promiſed *Tariſius* that hee ſhould marry *Griana*, whether ſhee would or no: and how ſhe was deliuered of a faire Sonne, without the knowledge of any, but olde *Tolomeſtra*, who had her in guarde.

When the Emperor had receyued the letters which Tolomeſtra preſented him from his Daughter, although he found nothing therein might prouoke him to anger, ſauing that ſhee earneſtly deſired him to pittie her Eſtate, being innocent of any thing was layde to her charge: yet hee ſhewed himſelfe more diſcontented then before, ſending Tolomeſtra backe with this anſwer.

Say to Griana, that ſeing ſhe was ſo aduenturous to incur my diſpleaſure, ſhe ſhall well know that I will not ſpare to punish her offence: and let her aſſure her ſelfe that I will neuer looke on her while I liue, if ſhee match not with Tariſius, to whome I haue giuen her. All this Tolomeſtra told to Griana: which rather then to obey, ſhee deſired to dye.

Wherefore when any came to viſite her, ſhe would ſhew her ſelfe more pleaſant in their company then ſhe had done, in reſpect of vnexpected heauines that ſecretly touched her, feeling her ſelfe ſo farre conceyued with Childe, as ſhe knew no meanes to ſaue it, and her Honour, if it ſhould happen to be perceyued. Yet one onely helpe ſhee had in this extreamitie, that being ſo weake and ſickly, as the Phyſitions could not diſcerne her diſeaſe; but reputed her likely to die,

which

which thee with all her heart desired, yet doe what iniury to her selfe shee could, shee had better health then shee desired to haue. In the end feeling her selfe so grosse and vnweldie, shee durst not leaue her bed, but kept it dayly, till her time drew very neere at hand, when the Emperour (by the earnest importunity of the Empresse) happened to come and see her, bringing with him the Prince Tarisius: who being thus entred the Tower, they found her in such grieuous and dangerous estate, as for all the anger the Emperour had against her, it moued the teares to stand in his eyes, which shee shadowed so well as her could, framing his speeches to her in this sort. Well daughter, it likes you to contrary me, in that which concernes your honor and profite, and without any feare (as is thy duety) thou hast boldlie refused the Husband which I haue appointed thee: but (by mine honour) I will cause thee know that thou hast displeased me, for wilt thou or not (before I leaue thee) I will giue thee to him whom I haue promised. Then taking her by the hand, and calling Tarisius to come neere, thee said. My Sonne, in regard of my word, which I will keepe inuiolably, I giue thee here Griana, from henceforth account of her as thy wife: And holde thee, here is the Key of the Tower, keepe her in thine owne custody, and hereafter thinke of her as thou findest occasion. Well sais Griana that perforce thee must obey her Fathers will: wherefore with great wisedome couering her secret thoughts, with extreame teares deliuered this answere. Alas, my good Lord and Father, I neuer thought that your highnes would vse such cruelty towards me: as to enforce mee take a Husband contrary to my liking, not (my good Lord) but that Tarisius hath much better deserued: but that which toucheth me most in opinion is, that our neere alliance in kindred, is sufficient to continue the loue betweene the King his father and you, without any such needlesse seeking of newe vniting. And moreouer, good Father, his education in your Court with my Brother Caniano and me, since our very

youngeſt yeares to this preſent, had beene of ſuch equall and familiar condition: as it ſeemes to mee impoſſible to reuerence him with that intire dnety, which women muſt and ought vſe to their Husbands. Wherefore my good Lord and Father, I perſwade my ſelfe (vnder your correction) that you ſhould ſupport me in this iuſt requeſt: the rather in reſpect of my preſent eſtate, which may induce you ſomewhat to conceiue, that the obſequies of my buriall is more likely to be ſolemnized, then thoſe holy ceremonies that ſhould bee vſed at my marriage. And with theſe words ſhee powred forth ſuch abundance of teares, as the Emperour knew not what to anſwere: but ouercome with pitty, withdrew himſelfe, leauing Tariſius with her: who hoping to haue better words of her, ſayde: Madam, I beſeech you not to offend your ſelfe for any thing the Emperour hath ſaide concerning mee, for I will not any thing to your diſcontent, and rather would I ſuffer all my life, then cauſe the leaſt doubt to incurre your diſlike, hoping that in time to come, you will take ſuch pitty on mee, as being perſwaded of the loue I beare you, and the reuerent deſire I haue to doe you ſeruice, you will grant that with good will, which the Emperour ſtriues to gaine perforce, aſſuring you that nothing can be more grieuous to me, then the hard dealing which hitherto hath beene vſed towards you. And to the end you may reſolue your ſelfe of that I ſay, your Father hauing deliuered mee the keyes of your Priſon, and the guarde of your perſon, I here commit both to your gentle pleaſure. So kiſſing the keye, he layd it by her, and without expecting any anſwere, with great reuerence hee departed, leauing her with Tolomeſtra, ſo rapte into a ſlumber or trance as her Keeper would not for pitty trouble her. The Princeſſe in this ſilent paſſion, thought that ſhee ſaw a fierce Lyon before her, with open throate to deuoure her, and neere at hand eſpied an armed Knight, to whom ſhee laboured for defence crying, that for Godsſake he would ſhield her from the beaſt: but the Knight with ſterne and angry coun-

countenance thus answered. I will not defend thee, but with my sword will take thy life from thee. Thou hast so much offended the heauenly powers in disobedience to thy Father, as I ought rather to diuide thy heade from thy shoulders, then to hinder this beast from deuouring thee. Thinkest thou to contrary their diuine pleasures? Sufficeth not the fault thou hast committed with Florendos? content thee, and hyde thy shame, in regarde of the fruite in thy wombe, whose worthinesse thou shalt know more of hereafter. If thou doest not, thou diest an euerlasting death, from which thou canst haue no meanes to defend thee. The Knight did so affright Griana, as shee promised him to fo accomplish the Emperours commandement without fayle: whereupon the Knight and the Lion banished away, leauing her (as shee thought) by a fayre fountaine, enuironed with Trees and diuersity of flowers, the sweet sent whereof was so pleasant and odoriferous, as made the cheerefull blood to reuiue againe in the Princesse, and with breathing forth a vehement sigh shee awaked, inuocating on the powers to pardon her transgressions, and promising to obey the will of her Father, albeit shee could hardly forget Florendos so soone. Within two or three dayes after, the Prince Tarisius came to visite her, to whom shee shewed better countenance then shee had done: and as they were deuising together in amorous talke, shee said. Beleeue mee sir Tarisius, you haue vsed such honest and gentle courtesie towards me, as henceforth I will giue my selfe wholy yours: therefore being sorry for my long disobedience to my parentes and you: triumph now Tarisius in the honor of my loue. If these words pleased Tarisius, it is not to be doubted: for joy whereof hee went presently to the Emperour, and made him acquainted with these happy tidings: so that (to make short) after many promises and solemne oathes to the Princesse, not onely to accept her as his spouse and wife, but as his Soueraigne Lady and Mistresse, hee brought her with him to the Emperour, who hearing

the resolution of his daughter, imbraced her and tok her into as good conceit as euer he did.

Notwithstanding, Tolomestra was commanded to attend on her still: wherefore Griana knowing her time to draw neere, and hardly could shee conceale her fortune: after many difficult doubts and feares debated in her thoughts, at last shee imparted the whole to Tolomestra. The olde Gentlewoman after many motherly rebukes, for the fault committed, as the danger eminent, thought better yet to cover this misaduenture, then to publish that which would displease many, and profite none: so leauing to reprehend when care and comfort was more required, at that instant, the Princesse was deliuered of a goodly man child. Thus in the ninth moneth, after the returne of Florendos towards Macedon, on munday at night about eight of the clocke, the Princes had her houre of deliuerance: When Tolomestra receyuing the Child, saw it so beautifull and well fourmed, as it grieued her meruailously to think what hard fortune it brought with the birth. For the honour of the Mother could not bee defended, but by the yrke of the infants life: wherfore hauing wrapped it in swadling clothes which the Princesse had prepared of some valne, shee brought it to the sorrowfull Mother, saying. Truth me Madam, it much displeaseth mee that we must thus lose this lonely child, whom I could haue esteemed happy, and the mother likewise, if it might line without displeasure: but he sweet babe must suffer the punishment for the offence, whereof he is not any way culpable.

Alas (said the Princesse) what shall wee doe? Would God it were dead, or out of danger: then taking it in her armes, & washing his face with flouds of teares, after many sweete kisses, thus said: Ah my little dainty, and must I needs leaue thee? must the safety of thy life remayne in the mercy of a strange woman, who not knowing thy Parents: may deale with thee discourteously? Well, if thou die, thy mother will not be long after thee. And as shee thus mourned

ouer

ouer her infant, she perceyued on his right cheeke a little marke in likenesse of a Crosse: which made her call her vision to remembrance, and the words of the knight, that promised good fortune to the Child: which made her conceiue a comfortable hope, whereupon, about his necke she tyed a fayre Crucifixe of golde. Now was the night very farre spent, and Tolomestra feared they should be preuented, wherefore (quoth she) Madam it is time to determine of some thing, leaue musing I pray you any longer on the Child, and let me go carry it to Cardina to be borne forth of the Court. The weeping Mother seeing shee counselled for the best, for her last adewe sealed many sweet kisses on the face of the Infant, and so in great griefe deliuered it to Tolomestra, who went and found Cardina, to whom she gaue it, and she without any tarriance mounted on horseback, not knowing what way she took, rode on which way fortune guided her. Very beautifull was shee how to be discharged of her carriage, for no leaue to let any woman in the neighbour villages haue it, least so the Princesse might be discouered: for that it was commonly blazed through the Empire, that the Princesse was imprisoned for the loue of Florendos. At length the day began to appeare, when shee perceiued her selfe on a high Mountaine, which was very thicke set with Palme and Olme trees: then she alighted from her horse, and made a little bed of sweet Hearbes, wherein she layde the Childe, hoping some body would passe by, that would take some compassion on it. So committing the tender infant to the protection of the powers aboue, she returned to the City in very good time.

CHAP. V.

How Gerrard passing where Cardina had left the child heard it cry, and so brought it home with him to his wife to nourish it.



The Mountaine where Cardina had left the Princelie yong son, was about a dayes iourney from Constantinople, and was commonly called the Mount of Olives, where neere at hand dwelt a wealthy Farmer, who hauing the occupation of the ground grew very rich by gathering the fruits of the Palme, Olive, Date, and other trees, and like a good husband tee daily followed his affayres, being named Gerrard. His Wife the same morning likewise was deliuered of a Male Child, which being dead borne, caused this good man to walke forth into his grounds in great heauinesse, for he had but one daughter aged three yeares, and his Sonne would haue beene a great comforte to him. In these melancholique passions, as he went neere the Tree, where Cardina had left the seely Infant, he heard it cry: whereat he greatly maruailing, approched neerer, and saw the sweete Babie pittifully mourning, wanting the nurture that should comfort it.

He tooke it very tenderly in his armes, & seeing it so sweet and louely, was perswaded that God had sent it him, in recompence of his owne that was dead borne: and so ioyfully went home with it to his Wife, who was named Marcella: and to her he beginneth in this manner. Behold sweete Wife, in the place of your yong dead Sonne, God hath this day

day sent vs another, which I haue brought you home. Then recounted he to her, how he found it on the Mountaine vnder an Oline Tree: and therefore, (quoth hee) I pray thee nourish it in steade of thine owne, for a goodlier Childe did I neuer behold. The good Woman tooke it, and vnwrapping the swadling clothes, saw they were rich and of good value, but chiefly the Crucifixe which hung about his necke: whereupon shee iudged it of some noble house, and moued with pitty thus sayde. I beleeue (sweet infant) that thy mother is in no small griefe for the losse of thee, but seeing thy fortune hath brought thee to mee, I will foster thee as thou were mine owne Sonne. And from thence forward shee vsed it so louingly, as euery one thought it to bee Gerrards owne childe: and bringing it to Baptisme, because he found it so among the Oline Trees, hee caused the Childe to be named Palmerin, who grew on in yeares, both in comelie feature and gentle behauiour. Not long after Marcella brought her husband another son, whose name was Colmelio, and him did Palmerin loue as his owne brother, and companion, as hereafter you shall more at large vnderstand: but here I will craue leaue to pause for a while, and following the intent of this History, you shall vnderstand how Griana gouerned her selfe, after shee had escaped this hard aduenture.

So soone as Cardina was returned to the Court, Griana sent for her, to know what shee had done with the infant: to whom shee discoursed in what sort shee had left it: which grieued her as much as the weight of her offence.

Notwithstanding, considering how happily she had escaped shame and disgrace, from thence forward shee dissembled her passions better, and shewed her selfe so well reclaymed, as the Empresse much reioyced thereat, hoping now to end the matter for her Nephew Tarisius: whereupon one day finding her Daughter alone, shee tooke occasion to conferre with her thus. Daughter, will you now accomplish that, which your Father and I haue long beene importu-

nate to, I pray you bold all no longer, least you driue him into anger againe, which can no way returne you benefite. When Griana heard her mother speake so gently, knowing well, (that whither she would or no) it must come to that conclusion, shee answered: Madame, you haue thought good (vntil I, will I) that I should wed with your Nephew Tarisius, I must then by force doe that which willingly I cannot, nor while I liue shall I conceiue better opinion: if then (Mother) hereafter our fortunes fall out so contrary, that any misaduenture happen by this your wilfulnesse, you need not complaine but of your selfe, being the inuenter and procurer thereof. All these speeches of Griana could not alter her opinion, but without regard of any danger, she went presently to the Emperour, desiring him (seeing Griana was recouered) to end the marriage betweene her Nephew and her, whereto he gaue such suddaine consent, as before a seuen night was finished, Tarisius and shee were married together, to her great griefe, as her countenance declared; for when euery one were at their feasting, dauncing, and other delights, the wofull Princesse thought on the great iniury she had done to Florendos, accounting her selfe the most vnhappy on the earth, and so her selfe thus sorrowed. Ah my deare friend, what will thou say, when thou hearest these tidings, that I am become so false and ill vsed to thee? what excuse may plead for mee to thee. By good reason may I for euer bee excluded from their company who haue kept their faith inuiolable to their friends, and continue in profession of their vnchangeable affections: for neuer did woman commit such treason as this that I haue done: and yet (my Lord) altogether against my will, as my wofull heart may giue euident witnesse, which shall bee thine while it remaines in this miserable body, which Tarisius must now haue, though in right it be thine. And in this sort continued her dolorous complaints till night approched, when shee must yeeld that honor to Tarisius, which fully better will she could haue affoorded Florendos.

After

After the feastes and triumphes of the marriage were finished, Griana desirous to absent her selfe from her fathers Court, because the remembrance of Florendos passions was so grieuous to her: desired Tarisius to make short his state, and set forward to Hungaria, whither the Emperour her Father caused her to be so honourably conueyed, as beseemed the Daughter of so great a Prince. But as she was taking her leaue among the Ladies, the Empresse came to her forowfullie weeping: which when Griana beheld, she said. Madame, I am abasht to see what heauines you shew for the departure of your Daughter, to whom you alone haue beene so cruell, as by your meanes she is banished for euer from you and your Countrie: why lament you then, seeing it is your pleasure to make her vnfortunate while she liues? I heartilie desire the heauens to pardon you, and that the first newes, hereafter you shall heare of me, may be the true report of my death. This said, she mounted on horsebacke, and without any semblaunce to take her leaue of her Father: so being honourablie accompanied, in short time she arriued in Hungaria with Tarisius, whose loue to her so vehementlie increased, as he reputed himselfe the most fortunate Prince in Europe, hauing gained the patagon among all Ladies. Some after the aged King died, by which meanes Tarisius came to be Crowne. Griana highlie esteeming such as she brought with her from Constantinople, to wit, Lerina and Cardina, but especiallie Tolomestra, to whom she very often imparted the whole secrets of her mind, leading so strict and constant a life, as all the Court did wonder at her. But the remorse of conscience, which dayly touched her for the losse of her Sonne, caused her to spend day and night in deuout orisons, that the heauens would forget her fathers offence.

CHAP.

CHAP. XI.

How Florendos vnderstood by the Esquire hee sent to Constantinople, the marriage of Griana and Tarsius: whereat hee conceiued such inward greefe, as he would haue died with extreame sorrow.

ALl this while cõtinued Florendos on the frontiers betwæne Cõstantinople and Macedõ, til at length he heard ỹ Griana was released of her imprison mẽt: wherof he was so glad, as now he thought to heale more surely thẽ he did before: whereupon he dispatched Lyomenus one of his Esquires towards her, with a Letter of earnest and intire affection, wherein hee desired to know, if hæ might compasse the meane to come and sæ her, and hæ doubted not to bring her so secretlye on her iourney, and with so good prouision, as before they should bee againe discouered, they would bee safelye arriued in Macedon. But this hope was some frustrate, for Lyomenus, being come to Constantinople, found the marriage betwæne Tarsius and Griana consummated: which hee tooke so displeasantlie, as without giuing ỹ Letter, or speaking to the Princesse, he returned hastilie againe to his Lord and Maister. Who beeing aduertised of his comming, sent for him immediately vp into his Chamber, at whose entrance, the Prince discerned the newes by his countenance: whereupon he demaunded, if Griana were sicke, or how shee fared? My Lord (qd. hæ) happie had shee beene, if shee had dyed some yeares since: for I doubt (vnlesse you arme your selfe with

with wonderfull patience) that what is done will highly endaunger your person. Why (quoth Florendos) what is happened? Trust me my Lord (qd. he) the very worst that can be for you, Tarisius hath espoused her, and (despight of her) the Emperour caused it to be done. No sooner had Lyomenus spoken the word, but Florendos cast himselfe cruellie against the ground, saying. O my God take pittie on my soule, for my body must nedes suffer mis-fortune. At which wordes hee fell in a sounde, when Lyomenus thinking him dead, ran hastily and called Frenato: who knowing well the cause of his passion, laboured by all meanes he might to perswade him, but notwithstanding all the intreaties he used, in foure and twentie houres hee could not get one word of him, whereupon hee sent for an auncient Hermit nere at hand, whom Florendos made verie much account of: who being come, and applying diuers soueraigne Hearbes to his temples, whereof the olde Father knew well the vertue, at length Florendos recouered his sences, and opening his eyes, beheld the old Hermit, to whom with verie feeble voice he said. Ah good Father pray for me, for I feele mine ende nigh at hand. Not so my sonne, sayde the Hermit, what? are you so vnprouided of diuine perswasion, as you will lose both bodie and soule for a matter of so meane consequence? hast thou lined so long, and yet ignorant of the inconstancie of Women which is no other then thou beholdest in Griana, knowest thou not, that as the saple of the shippe is subiect to all windes, so are their affections to continuall mutabilitie? and knowest thou not, that what they purpose to execute irreuocably, in one moment they are suddainly dissuaded from? My Sonne, beleeue my counsell, and with as much pleasure learne to forget this folly, as with extreame paine thou diddest first imprint it in thy thoughts. Ah Father (quoth Florendos) neuer seeke in this sort to perswade me, beeing assured if you knew how things haue past, you would not thus in tearmes disgrace my Ladie: for shee is mine, and Tarisius hath no

right

right to her, to whom the Emperour hath married her perforce, els would she neuer haue broken her faith to me: and while I liue Father, none but she can be called the wife of Florendos, Sonne to the mightie King of Macedon. The wise old Father seing him in choller, and being loth likewise to offend the Prince, would no longer crosse him in speeches, but fearing to moue him to much, mildly thus spake. May be (my Sonne) she hath beene deere to you, and I would your consent in loue had answered your liking: but thus to dispaire, and endaunger your owne life, trust me it is not well done, therefore I desire you to perswade your selfe, and by your constancie condemne her lightnesse, taking patiently what hath happened. These and such like good words vsed the old Fermet, but Florendos would take no sustenance, neither be removed from this opinio, for fiue days while the old man stayed with him: neither would hee looke cheerefully as hee was wont, but continued euermore sad and melancholique, nor could the King his Father cause him like of any Wife, but onely Griana, for whom continually he neuer left mourning.

CHAP. XII.

How young Palmerin sleeping, had a strange vision, which prouoked him to know whose Son he was: and of the talke which passed betweene him and Dyosena, the daughter of Gerrard.

PAlmerin being now come to the age of fifteene yeeres, nourished in the mountaine as the Child of Gerrard his supposed Father, well beloued of him and Marcella his wife as their owne Son: grew in stature so tall, comely and well nurtured, as well might

he

he be knowne of noble parentage. For albeit he companied with Gerrards Children, who vsed him after their rusticall capacities: yet hee desired more to passe the Mountaines with his long Bowe, to chase the Beares and Bores thorowe thicke and thinne, and to keepe Hawkes and dogges, rather then Sheepe and Cattell as the other Children did. In these sports he hadde such wonderfull delight, as oftentimes he would come home very late and sore wearied, but one time among the rest, he came home so ouerlaboured, as he was glad to lay him downe to rest, and he was no sooner fallen a sleepe, but he was solicited with a meruailous vision, the effect whereof thus followeth. He thought (as hee was pursuing a goodlie Harte thorow a Forest) hee mette with the fayrest Ladie that euer eye beheld, who sat on the side of a goodlie Fountaine, and called him vnto her saying.

Be not abashed Palmerin, though I am come frō the farthest parts to find thee in this Country, for I am wel assured that ere manie dayes be past, thy bountie & prowesse shal make thee renowmed through the world, for one of the hardiest knights that euer liued. Leaue therefore this obscure & rusticall kind of life, & henceforth lift thy mind to high occasions which are offered thee: and herof beleeue me, as she that loueth thee as her own life, being deuoted onely thine at all times as nature may witnes who hath marked me with thy like Charracter. Then shewing her arme, she said. Behold in this hand, and on this side of my heart, one like & selfsame marke, as thou broughtest on thy face from thy Mothers womb. To which words Palmerin would haue answered, but the ladie vanished away so sodainly, as he could not perceiue what was become of her. Whereupon raising himselfe, and marualing from whence this occasion shuld proceed, he admired the beautie of the Lady he saw in his sleepe, which was so liuelie in his remembrance, as he iudged her present before his eyes. But perswading himselfe that such apparitions happened by idle thoughts, or by some vapour of no effect:

ſect: made no account thereof, whereupon, the next night following, the ſame Lady that appeared to him in the Foreſt, preſented her ſelfe to him againe, holding in her hands a ſumptuous Crowne of Gold, and thus ſpake. See here (my Lord) the honour which I hold, being giuen me onely for the loue of you.

In this ſort continued this viſion for foureteene or fifteene days following, till at length the Lady ſhewed her ſelfe very angrie, ſaying. I am aſhamed Palmerin, that you deferre ſo long to ſeeke me out: how you think the promiſes I haue made you are friuolous? No, no, the time and trauaile thou taketh (if thou giueſt credit to my words) ſhal make thee know that thou art the Son of a King, and not of the Countrey ſwaine that hath ſoftered thee. From henceforth therefore expect me no more in this Mountaine, but if my beautie haue found place in thy heart, ſeeke then to conquer me, that thou maiſt be the Lord and poſſeſſor of me. Thus departed the Ladie, leauing a deſire (more then accuſtomed) in the heart of Palmerin, who till that time made little reckoning of ſo high matters, for t'e paſſe all life he led with Gerrard and his familie, ſeemed the moſt happieſt to him in all the world, not hauing ſeene any perſon of greater calling then he. But now new affections ſo eleuated his mind, as he intended to go ſeeke her, whom in ſleepe he had beheld ſo often: For (quoth he) if ſhee aſſure mee to diſcend of a royall linage, I may well preſume ſhe knowes me better then my Father Gerrard, elſe would ſhe not ſo often induce me to follow my fortune, and the good that is prouided for mee: well might I be accounted a fole, if I would not aduenture on ſo eſpecial an occaſion, therefore happen what will, I meane to ſearch thorow the whole world till I haue found her, and none but ſhee ſhall euer be my Miſtreſſe. But how can it be that I am diſcended from ſo high a place ſeeing my Father is ſuch a ſimple Countryman? hath my Mother beene forgetfull of her reputation, that ſome Prince or great Lord hath ſo become my Father? Well, I will know of her (if I can)

before

vefore I depart, and if she will not tell me, I will search for her that shall assure me. Thus was Palmerin confounded with remembrance of his visions, as from that time he became meruailous pensiue and solitarie: then bethought he, how he might know of his Mother Marcella the end of his desire, whereof Dyosena (who loued him dearely) partly aduertised him.

You haue heard heeretofore, how when Gerrard found Palmerin among the Olive Trees, he had a Daughter three yeeres olde, named Dyosena, indifferent fayre, who as shee increased in yeares, became so amorous of her supposed brother, that hardly she could dissemble her affection: notwithstanding, shame and regard locked vppe her lippes, that she durst not speake what she gladlie would, but seeing Palmerin in like sadnesse as he was, she imagined that some sickenesse had stroken them both, wherefore casting many doubts as she lay in her bed, in the same Chamber her Parentes did, she heard them enter into this discourse. Haue you not seene Palmerin (quoth shee) how heauy and sadde hee hath beene a long time? Yea truelie haue I (qu. shee) it may bee that some haue told him he is not your Sonne: so falling out of one matter into an other, Dyosena heard them repeat the maner how they found him, which she desireus to let Palmerin vnderstand, arose early the next morning, and comming to Palmerin, thus conferred with him. Brother, if you knew so much as I do, peraduenture you would be not a little abashed.

Why good sister (quoth he) I pray you let me vnderstand the matter. In sooth (quoth she) I euer thought til this time, that you had bin mine own natural Brother, but by chaunce hearing some talk betweene my father and mother this last night, I am no other then your friend, and she y loues you dearelie: which I haue euermore hetherto feared to let you know, doubting y^e^ greenes of our colangu nitie, which I now perceiue can not hinder our marriage, if you will request mee of my Father, who I am sure will not denie you. And so she

rehearsed

the rehearsed the manner of his finding, which so well liked Palmerin, as he gaue the more credit to the visions he hadde seene, neuertheless, he thus dallied with Dyofena. It may be sitter, you misunderstood our Parents, my selfe will demaund the truth of our mother, if she assure me as you haue done, then will I talke with them concerning our marriage. So shall you do well (sayd Diofena) to be thorowlye assured, yet neede you not report me to haue informed you, least therby you bring me into my Parents displeasure. Palmerin thus leauing Dyofena, chanced to find his mother Marcella alone, to whom he said. Mother, I beseech you grant me one request that I shall demand of you. That will I my Sonne (quoth she) if it be in my power to do. Vnderstand then good mother (quoth he) that I haue oftentimes disamed how I am your son, so that I know not what to say, vnlesse you please to assure me better. When Marcella heard these words, she was stroken in a studie: but Palmerin was still so importunate, as at last she thus answered. In good faith (fayre frende) I neuer knew thine owne naturall parents, yet haue I loued thee as if thou were mine owne Sonne: and so what wordes Diofena had before reported, Marcella confirmed, taking him with her into her chamber, where she shewed him the cotlie swadling clothes that he was found in, & the Crucifixe likewise that hung about his necke, which he intreated her to bestow on him, to the end (quoth he) that for your sake I may kepe it while I liue. Marcella would not deny his request, but put it about his necke her selfe.

From which time forward, Palmerin shewed himselfe of more chearefull disposition, deuising how he might compasse the meane to go seeke his Fortune, whereto his sundrye apparitions had so often incited him. And as none can shunne what is ordeyned him by diuine prouidence, not many dayes after, as he was walking alone vppon the Mountain he heard a voice cry verye pittifullie for helpe and succour: whereuppon Palmerin tooke that way which he heard the

the boyes, where hee beheld a Lion greedily deuouring a Horse. Palmerin hauing no weapon to defend him selfe withall but a staffe, very hardly set vpon the beaſt, giuing him such a stroake betweene the eyes, as hee fell downe dead to the ground, then comming to him, hee heard complaine, saide: I haue my friend in some part reuenged thy wrong. Alas, sir (quoth he) and had you not beene, my life had perished, for as I trauelled on my iorney, this Lyon furiously set vpon me to deuoure mee: which the rest of my company perceiuing, tooke themselues to flight, leauing me as you found me. The best is, (said Palmerin) that you haue escaped with life, and if you please to goe with me, not farre hence where I haue beene nourished, you shall haue the best entertainement that I can make you. My friend (quoth the Stranger) you haue already done so much for mee, as if you will goe with mee into the Country where I dwell, I haue wherewithall to reward your trauell richly. Is it farre hence Sir (sayd Palmerin:) In the City of Hermida (quoth hee) in the Realme of Macedon I dwell, from whence I departed a moneth since with my merchandize, which I haue left at Constantinople: from whence returning homeward, this vnlooked for mischance befell me, which had made an end of mee without your resistance. As they were thus conferring together, one of the Strangers seruants came to looke him, and finding him so happily escaped, was not a little ioyfull, reporting that hee had left his companions not far off. Returne then (said the Master) and will them to come to me to the next village, where I mean to haue my wounds dressed, which the seruant performed immediately, & all this while stood Palmerin in debating with himselfe, if he should thus leaue his Father Gerrard or not: at length, (after many opinions) fearing if hee returned home againe not to finde the like opportunity, concluded to depart with the Stranger. So was hee set on a very good palfray, and setting forward to Macedo, that night they were entertained in a very good lodging, where the Stran-

ger caused his wounds to be searched, reporting to every one how by the ayde of Palmerin his life was preserued, for which cause hee accounted of him as his owne Sonne. All this while Gerrard and his wife little thought of this mishap, but expected Palmerins returne till darke night, and seeing he came not as he was wont, both hee and his wife the next day searched the mountaines, but they could not finde him, which made Gerrard to question in himself, what euill hee had offered him, that should make him thus depart. Now durst not his wife Marcella tell him, the talke betweene her and Palmerin, but accompanied her husband in sorrow for their losse: especially Dyofera and her brother Colmelio were most sorry, Diofena for losse (as she thought) of her husband, and Colmelio for the company of his supposed Brother, whose absence went so neere his heart, as hee intended neuer to giue ouer search till hee had found him.

CHAP. XIII.

How Palmerin went with this Merchant named Esteban to the City of Hermida, who afterward gaue him Horse and Armour to be made Knight.

ESteban the Marchant thus conducting Palmerin on his way, at length arriued in the City of Hermida, where he was louingly welcommed home by his Wife, both young and beautifull as any in that Country, to whome hee reported his dangerous assault by the Lion, and without Palmerins helpe he had bin deuoured: but

but (quoth he) good fortune sent him at the very instant that slew him, for which I shal be beholding to him while I haue a day to liue, therefore good Wife entertaine him in the best sort you can deuise, for hee hath well deserued it. This speech had the Merchant with his fayre wife, who embracing Palmerin, sayde: that nature had omitted nothing in her workemanship, making him so nimble, and ful of hardinesse. Palmerin seeing himselfe so fauoured of so beautifull a Woman, hauing before spent his time among shepheardes, Swineheards, and lowtish Swaines of the Country, with modesty beganne to blush, and was so well fored with ciuility to make her this answere. I desire Mistresse that my behauiour may bee such, as may continue my Maisters good liking and yours towards me. So from that time he followed Marchandize, & profited so well in the course of traffique: as Estebon committed all his affayres to Palmerins trust: who rather gaue his mind to martiall exercises, and followed knightly dispositions so much, as very nature declared the nobleness of his mind, for hee delighted to manage great horses, to fight at all manner of weapons, to see dangerous Combates, to frequent the assembly of Knights, to talke of armes and honourable exploits, and in briefe, to exercise all the braueries of a noble Courtier.

Whereat Estebon maruelled so much, as falling in talk with him, he sayd. Me thinks it is strange Palmerin, that thou being the sonne of a Bridge, and nourished on the Mountaine of Olives (as thy selfe hath often tolde me) disdainest the life of a Marchant, frequenting the company of hardy Knights, as though thou couldest take Launce and shield to enter the combate. Syr (said Palmerin) I know not if my Father bee such as I haue told you, but I wot wel my heart so serues me, as I can thinke of nothing but actions of honour and knighthood. The Merchant was contented to beare Palmerin in these tearmes, because hee perceiued that his Wife fauoured him greatly, whereat hee became a little iealous, and gladly would remoue the occa-

on, wherefore he said. Seeing it is so Palmerin, that thou hast no mind to follow mine affaires, I am well content thou shalt exercise chiualrie, being the thing thou naturally affectest, and whereby thou mayest attain credit and account. For mine owne part, because I will not hinder so good forwardnesse, thou shalt haue of mée money, horse and armour, that thou mayest goe to Macedon to the king, where, if thou request it of the Prince Florendos his Sonne, hee will not refuse to giue thée thy order. Palmerin returned him very hearty thanks, and hauing prouided all things expedient for his iourney, tooke his leaue of the Merchant Ettebon and his Wife, hoping to speed well in his aduenturous enterprise.

CHAP. XIIII.

How Palmerin arriued at the Court of Macedon, hoping to receyue the order of Knighthood, at the hand of the Prince Florendos, sonne to the aged King Primalion, by the fauor of the Lady Arismena

Such spéede made Palmerin being departed from the Merchant, as on the fourth day following, riding by a riuer side, hee found a Dwarfe sitting beauily weeping, of whom hee demaunded the cause of his mourning. Alas sir (said the dwarfe) as I was riding by the commandement of my master, to a Lady whome hee dearely loueth, a Knight euen now tooke my horse from mee, and very villanously offered mee outrage, which yet dooth no so much grieue mee, (as being thus on foote,) I know

know not how to get over the riuer. Mount vppe behinde me (saide Palmerin) and at the first Towne we came to, I will prouide thee of another Horse. Then mounted the Dwarfe vp behind him, and hauing past the riuer, desired to know of Palmerin whether he trauailed: for (quoth he) I neuer saw man whom I had greater desire to serue then you. Dwarfe (sayde Palmerin) I now iourney toward the court of Macedon to the King, where I hope to finde the Prince Florendos, who is accounted one of the worthiest Knights in the world, and by his hand I desire to be knighted, if I may. And after you haue receiued your order (saide the Dwarfe) I hope you will not be so vnwise to hazard the aduenture wherein so many haue failed and lost their liues. What aduenture is that quoth Palmerin? To go to the Mountaine Artiferia (saide the Dwarfe) in hope to kill the serpent, which hath beene the death of so many valiant knights. And what occasion sayd Palmerin, moued them to fight with the Serpent? That I will tell you answered the Dwarfe. The King Primaleon Father to Prince Florendos whom you seeke, three yeares since fell into a very strange disease, for which no remedie can yet be found, notwithstanding, the diligent endeuours of the Queene and Lady Ariſmena her Daughter, one of the fairest and most vertuous princesses that euer was heard of, who seeing her Father in such dangerous estate, hath often assembled the best Phisitions in the whole world, who haue practised all possible meanes to recouer his health: yet hitherto all hath beene to no purpose. Whereuppon she sent to an ancient Knight, the most skilfullest in the art of Nigromancie this day liuing, who returned this answere: that hee should neuer be heal'd, except hee be first washed with the water of a Fountaine, which standeth on the top of the Mountaine Artiferia, whither foure times a yeare resort three sisters, Magitians of the elfe Carderio, to gather vertuous Hearbes which there they watch, and where of they frame all their enchauntments. This place is de-

fended by the Monster, whereof I solue you, that no man as yet durst approach it. Which newes when the Damselle Arismena vnderstood, hoping by strength of men to recouer the water and vanquish the beast, leuied a great number of Souldiers well appointed, who were no sooner entred the Mountaine, but the Serpent came furiously out of his Denne, throwing fire and smoake out of his mouth, and beating his wings together with such terror, as the very hardiest durst passe no further, but were all glad to take themselues to flight, yet could they not depart with such expedition, but the greater part of them paide their liues for their bold attempt, the Mountaine was so stored with Lions, Beares, Mastiues, Hacts, Tygers, Dunces, and other wilde rauenous Beasts that dwelled there.

Now at length many Knights had tryed themselues in this aduenture, thinking by their prowesse to performe more then the other: but all the worse for not one of them returned backe aliue. And why goes not the Prince Florendos himselfe said Palmerin, that is esteemed the most valiant knight through al Greece? Alas sir, sayd the Dwarfe, some other matter hath so drowned his mind in melancholie, as he liues like one that despiseth himself. While the Dwarfe continued his discourse, the desire of honour and renowne did so lively touch the spirite of Palmerin, as he sayd to himselfe. It may be that Arismena was the Lady which in my sleeping thoughtes visited mee so often, if the Destinies haue bowes her mine, why should I feare the Serpent, or all the other beasts wherewith this Dwarfe vseth to terrifie mee? Haue not I slaine a Lyon already with a staffe? Truth, the more danger is in the place, the more honor depends vpon the victory. If I leaue my life there, I am not the first: If I returne with conquest, I shall be beyond any worldly fortune: therefore fall out as it will, no perill shall dismay me from giuing the aduenture, whereupon he sayd to the Dwarfe. But tell mee my friend, yee that bringes the water from the mountaine to the King, what aduan-

tage

tage shall be deserued. My Lord (quoth hee) it hath beene many times published, that his reward shall bee the best City in all this Realme. Then Dwarfe sayde Palmerin, one man more will hazard his life in this enterprise, albeit I should receiue but thankes for my trauell, wilt thou goe with mee. That will I (answered the Dwarfe) if you please, and neuer will I forsake you while breath is in my body. Thus set they on till they came to the great City of Macedon, at what time Florendos was gone to the Temple in such beautifull, as he seemed a man of another world, being accompanied with many Knights, and his fayre sister the Lady Arismena, to whome Palmerin boldly addressed himselfe: and as though hee had beene a Courtier all his life time, with seemely mouelly he set his knee to the ground before her, and thus began. Madame, I humbly beseech you to vouchsafe mee one request, which well you may not deny mee, in that I am a Stranger, as also in respect of the desire I haue to doe you seruice. And trust mee Sir (quoth shee) you shall not bee refused, what is it you would haue mee to doe for you? That at your request (sayd Palmerin) the Prince Florendos your brother, will giue mee my Knighthood. Arismena seeing Palmerin so amiable, and well disposed of body, marueiled of whence hee was, and sayde: In good sooth Sir, such matter nothing appertaineth vnto me, I (as I iudge) such a motion should proceede from your selfe: yet taking him by the hand, shee presented him to her brother, saying. I pray you my Lord graunt to this young Gentleman as yet not knighted, the thing he hath desired mee to demaund. Florendos hauing not as yet beheld him, looked vpon him, when an exceeding passion presenting y Princesse Griana to his thoughts suddainely touched him, and being rapt into more conceite of loy then he had beene accustomed, demaunded of Palmerin if hee would bee made Knight. With right good will my Lord, quoth he, if it shall like you to doe me so much honor, for aboue all things else it is my onelie desire. My friend, said

ſaid Florendos, it is neceſſarie I ſhould firſt know, whither you be noble borne or no. My Lord, quoth Palmerin, as yet I neuer knew my Father or Mother, nor any of my kinde: notwithſtanding, mine owne heart makes mee ſuggeſtion vnto my ſelfe, and moreouer I would I die, then do any thing that were not vertuous, and well worthie the name of a Gentleman. And truſt me, ſaid Florendos, I am of the ſame opinion: this night therefore you muſt obſerue the religious watch as is accuſtomed, and to morrow will I giue you your order, and put the ſpurre on your heele my ſelfe. Palmerin on his knee humbly kiſſed the Princes hand, and continuing in talke together, Florendos tooke a great delight in beholding him, ſo that he demaunded his name and Countrey. My Lord, quoth he, they which found me amongſt the Palme Trees, on the Mountain of Olives, not farre from Conſtantinople, haue giuen me the name of Palmerin. By mine honour ſayd Florendos, I ought well to know the Cittie whereof you ſpeake, as the place wherein my dareſt affections tooke their firſt life, and not long ſince, are bequeathed to death, awaiting now but the houre to be diſcharged of the burden.

Thus hauing in his company his vnknowne Sonne, begotten by him on the Princeſſe Griana, knew little that his loue had ſorted to ſuch effect: neuertheleſſe, nature prouoked him to like ſo well of Palmerin, as none in the Court contented him more then he. And longer would they haue continued their talke, but that fayre Ariſmena interrupted them, aſking Palmerin if he would diſcharge her of the requeſt he demaunded. That do I Madame (quoth he) and in requitall thereof, dedicate the whole circuit of my life to your gracious ſeruice: and to begin my deuoire on your behalfe, ſo ſone as I haue receiued my Knighthode, I will take my iourney towards the Serpent, in hope to bring the water that muſt recouer the king your Fathers health. Alas good Sir, quoth ſhe, God forbid that you ſhould fall in ſuch daunger by my meanes. I know well aunſwered Pal-

merin,

merin that I can die but once, and if it be now then am I dispatched, and if I escape, I shall do that wherein many other haue failed, and this is my resolution faire Madame. Beleeue me, said Florendos, me thinks you are as yet too yong, to finish an action wherein consists a great daunger, I pray you therefore referre it vnto such, as haue had more experience in Armes then as yet you haue. My Lord, saide Palmerin, in other matters I shall obey when you commaund, but this I must desire you not to dissuade me from. Well then (quoth Florendos) seeing you will needes haue it so, I am content, you shall in the meane while kéepe me companie: as for sword and armour, trouble not your selfe to prouide any, because my selfe will furnish you sufficiently.

Thus all day Florendos accompanied Palmerin, demaunding of him what things he had seene in Cóstantinople, and falling from one discourse to another, he asked him what Esquire he had to attend on him. Then he shewed his dwarfe named Vrbanillo, such a deformed and euil fauoured fellow, as euery one that saw him laughed heartily: whereupon Palmerin said to Florendos. By my faith my Lord, as vnfamely as he is, I thinke so well of him, as I should be displeased if he were any way iniuried. Assure your selfe, saide Florendos, that he will stand you in great steade when you haue no need of him, and loke that you leaue nothing behind you, that you neede to sight against the Serpent, and truste it in his discretion to bring after you. When Vrbanillo perceiued euery one left with him, he was halfe angry, and in some choler thus sayd to the Prince. I can no way my Lord, better my shape or proportion, but if I line, this little deformed body of mine shall giue you to vnderstand that I beare so good a minde, that where my maister leaues his life, I meane to finish mine, and though in meane while I can do him no other seruice, he shall be assured of my truth and loyaltie. Be not offended (Dwarfe my good friend) sayd Florendos, for I thinke well of thee and of thy behauiour. And so because the Tables were couered for Supper,

per, they brake off talke, Palmerin preparing himself to his watchfull deuoire in the Chappell.

CHAP. XV.

How Florendos gaue to Palmerin the Armour and Sword of Gamezio, whom he slew before Constantinople, and afterward Knighted him: and how a Damosell came to the Court, who presented him with a Helmet and a rich Shield.

THe time being come, that Palmerin should performe his deuout watch in the Chappel, before he receiued his knighthood, according to the auncient customes: Florendos gaue commaundement, that the Armour of Gamezio should be brought him, which the Emperour had giuen him, after his conquest of the Soldome of Babilons army on the Sea, as you haue heard before, and these he shewed to Palmerin, saying. My friend, this armour sometimes belonged to the best Knight of his time, whome (neuertheless) I conquered, being then more pleasant, ioyfull, and at better content, then I shall be while I haue a day to liue. And because I haue some speciall opinion of your prowesse, and that these ornaments of defence you will better employ, then any other, on whome I shall bestow them: I pray you hencefoorth to weare them for my sake.

My Lord, sayde Palmerin, my deuoire, that my seruice towards your honour, may bee witnessed in my good imployment of this gentle gift. Then Frenato and diuers o-

ther

ther Knight did helpe to arme him, and afterward accompanied him to the Chappell, where all that night hee spent in solemne orisons, that God would endue him with strength to vanquish the Serpent, that so the King might again receiue his strength.

At the breake of day, as Florendos went to the chappell to giue him his order, there entred among them on the suddaine a comely Damosell, bearing a Helmet & a shielde of azier, the goodliest and most beautifull that euer was seene, vpon his Shield being portrayed a Ladies arme, hauing her hands fast closed together: the Damosell comming before the Prince Florendos, began thus. I pray you my Lord to pause a while, till I haue conferred a little with Palmerin. Florendos was greatly amazed at this accident, in that hee had neuer seene the Damosell before: notwithstanding he returned this answere. Faire Damosell, and my friend, God leaue haue you to say what you please. The comming to Palmerin, and falling on her knees before him, thee sayde. Sir Palmerin, a Knight that hath authority to commaund me, and whom as yet you doe not know, hath sent you by mee this Helmet and Shield, wherein you shall find the very secrets of your heart. And if you desire to know whence this honour proceedeth, it commeth from him, who hath proued the effect thereof, and that knowes more of your neerest affayres then you doe your selfe, albeit as yet hee hath neuer seene you. Damosell, sayd Palmerin, where may I finde the learned man that hath thus honoured mee, whom I may remunerate with my chiefest indeuours hereafter? You cannot as yet know him, saide the Damosell. I pray you faire Virgin, quoth Palmerin, that you will answere on my behalfe, how in any place I shall come to meet after. I remayne ready to doe what likes him to commaund mee. It sufficeth (quoth she) loke that hereafter you remember your promise: Then comming to the Prince Florendos, thee sayd. My Lord, the same Dame from whom I beare salute Palmerin, gaue mee in charge to say, that you

shoulo not feare or doubt to dubbe him knight: but to perswade your selfe, that both by father and mother hee is so noble as hee doth well deserue it, and him hereafter you will iudge beyond all other, for by him you shall enioy the thing you most esteeme and desire. Thus hauing no longer licence to stay with you, I humble desire you to excuse my departure. Sweete maide, saide Florendos, may your words sort to so good ende, as you haue promised. So departed the Damosell, leauing Palmerin on his knees before the Prince, who taking the sworde that sometimes belonged to Gamezio, knighted him saying: And mayst thou prooue as famous and fortunate, as my hope perswades mee thou wilt. Then was hee honourably conueyed to the Pallace, where the faire Arismena vnarmed him and couered him with a rich mantle of white Satten, imbroadered all ouer with sumptuous flowers of gold: beside, no one in the troupe but highly reuerenced him, for the worthie report the Damosell made of him. And albeit the Princesse Arismena dissuaded him so well as she could, that he should not endanger himselfe against the Serpent, because by him her Brother should ouercome his melancholy, and fearing his losse without hope of recouerie: yet needes would he be gone the same day, but that her importunate intreatie perswaded him to stay eight dayes longer. Palmerin beeing some after alone by himselfe, hee remembred the words of the Damosell, who promised him to finde the secrets of his heart in his sheeld: whereupon he well aduised himselfe, and saw that the hand portrayed in his sheeld, had the same marke which the Lady hadde, that appeared to him in his sleepe, whereat not a little marualling, he saide within himselfe: It must needes bee without all doubt, that hee which sent me this present, knoweth full well the scope of my fortune, for I am well assured that the Lady which spake to mee in my sleepe, when I abode in the house of my Father Gerrard, shewed me her hand with the selfe same marke I see heere pictured: by which I may perswade my selfe, that thee will

not

not ceaſe to ſollow and finde me out, vntill ſuch time as I might ſpeake with her. Whereuppon hee found himſelfe ſo ſudda nly inueigled with her loue, as hee thus complained. Ah Palmerin, well maieſt thou ſee that long thou canſt not reſiſt this impreſſion, but whence ſhould this honeur proceede? to loue her thou neuer ſaweſt, nor knoweſt where is her abiding? If it fall out that thou dieſt in the purſuite, theſe paſſions ſhall ſoon haue a final end, and I gain ẏ greateſt felicitie that I can deſire. By this time had he ſpent the eight daies, which he promiſed Ariſmena for Florendos cõpanie, when as well to begin the ſearch of her hee loued ſo well: as to ende the aduenture, he intended of the Serpent, he prepared to depart, prouiding himſelfe a great huge Mace of Iron, which did him good ſeruice, as you ſhall reade hereafter.

CHAP. XVI.

How Palmerin fought with the horrible Serpent of the mountain Artæferia, and ſlew him, bringing the glaſſe filled with the water of the fountaine, whereby King Primaleon of Macedon recouered his health.

EIght daies had Palmerin ſtayed with Florendos, and in company of the fayre Princeſſe Ariſmena, who fearing that hee would neuer returne from the Mountaine Artiſæria, was very penſiue and ſad: and oftentimes ſhe intreated him, not to hazard himſelfe againſt thoſe cruel, rauenous and ſupernaturall Monſters, but rather to witneſſe his

his valour against Knights of account like himselfe, but all her speaches profited not, for he was resolued to depart. I shall yet desire you, said the Princesse, that for my sake you will take with you three Esquires which I will giue you, which may lend you succour if any inconuenience should befall you. Then shee called the Esquires, and presented them vnto him, with the glasse that he should bring the water in from the fountaine, if fortune stood with him to finish the aduenture. Palmerin mounting on horseback, and Florendos accompanying him halfe a dayes iourney on the way, left him on his iourney towards the Mountaine Artiferia, where hee arriued on the last day of Aprill. Then he commaunded the Esquires and his Dwarfe Vrbanillo, to expect his returne at the foote of the Mountaine, for hee would suffer none of them to go vppe with him: so ascended he the Hill by a little trackt sute path, with his yron Mace on his necke, and the Glasse for the water fastened to his girdle. Hauing thus trauailed vp till about midway he found the passage so thicke set with trees and brakes, as he was constrained to alight from his Horse, whome hee vnbrideled and left there feeding: and much further had hee not gone, but the night ouertooke him, yet did the Moone shine bright and cleare, which made him still trauaile onward, till he beheld the Rocke where the water was, and the Serpents denne, who was come somewhat lower to recreate himselfe among the greene hearbes, where hee had closely couched himselfe. But when he heard Palmerin comming he beganne to swell, and with his tayle together very strangely: all which could not dismay this aduenturous Knight, but commending himselfe to God, sette down his Glasse, and with his Mace marched stoutly against his enemie, saying, Why Palmerin? didst thou so often request of Florendos and the Princesse his sister, to try thy strength against this Diuell, and now thou art come in sight of him, wilt thou faint? Doth it not beseeme thee better to die with honour, then to liue with shame? let the one encou-

rage

rage thee to follow thy enterprise, and the other kill thee when thou offerest to retire. And with these words he aduaunced himselfe to the Serpent, and the Serpent fiercely began to assaile him, and with his taile hee smote him downe, but that he nimbly preuented the stroake, deliuering the Serpent so sore a blow on the head with his Mace, as made him reele and stagger, and cries so terribly, as the whole Mountaine resounded with a marualous Eccho, and to reuenge himselfe, with his tallants he got hold on Palmerins Armour, which he rent violently in two or three places, wounding his body very dangerously. When Palmerin perceiued in what hard plight he was, he toke heart afresh, and watching his aduantage, stroke the Serpent with his Mace so strongly on the necke, as he fell to the ground in a manner dead, and Palmerin plyed him with so many stroakes one after another, as hee left him not while any life was in him. After this happy victory, for which deuoutly he praised God, binding vppe his woundes as well as hee could, with extreame wearinesse he layd him downe & slept: when he seemed to see the three sisters whereof we haue spoken before, who were the Daughters of a Knight, Lord of the Isle Carderia, to whome none might bee compared for knowledge in the Magicall science, and so well hee had instructed his Daughters, as after his death they alone excelled in this arte, so that the men of the Countrey commonly called them the Goddesses of destiny, because they could deuine before what should follow after. And if any one did happen to iniury them, they would reuenge themselues by their inchauntments, so that they were greatly feared and held in reuerence. They vsed diuers times this Mountaine Artiferia, as well together Herbes for their necessary vse, as also for the Water of the fountaine, for the defence whereof they had left this Serpent, who was in time growen so huge and monstrous, as hee rather seemed a Diuell then a naturall Beast. Notwithstanding how hideous soeuer hee was, Palmerin as you haue

heard

heard, ouercame and slew him, finding the three Sisters in the maner as I haue told you: who were not greatly discontented with him, but esteemed so well of him, as in his steade the eldest of them thus spake to him. Beleeue me Palmerin, thy beginning is so honourable, as great pittie it were to let thee die heere, chiefly for the want that all Greece shall haue of thee in time to come, the whole Empire whereof is predestinated thine: and therefore will I heale the woundes thou hast at this time receiued. I will then do some what more for him, said the second Sister, I will enchaunt him so well for his auaile, as hereafter no conjuration or witchcraft shall haue any power to hurt him. Truly said the third Sister, for my part, I will giue him such fortune, as the first time he shal see his ladie Polinarda, (who so many times saluted him in his Dreames) she shall loue him so intirely, as no dolor or torment shall make her forget while she liues, the happines she shall receiue by his occasions. Then the eldest sister tooke a Golden Cup, and filled it with the water of the fountaine and wringing the iuyce of certaine hearbes into it, washed therewith Palmerins woundes, so that they were immediatly healed.

Now felt he very well all they did, but his slumber tooke away the libertie of his speech, vntill such time as they were departed, but first the eldest of them thus spake. Since this Knight hath had so good a beginning, and that his strength hath depriued our guard of our fountaine, I pray you let vs suffer him to haue a glasse of our water, that by his meanes the king of Macedon may be healed, which a number of other knights haue failed of heretofore. Whereto they all consented, and so it came to passe: then gathering their hearbes as they were wont, and washing them, they tooke their way to the Isle Gerdiria.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVII.

How Palmerin discended from the Mountaine, with his glasse, full of the water of the enchanted Fountaine, and how ioyfull Vrbanillo and the other Esquiers were, seeing their Master returne with so good fortune.

WHen these three Squiers were departed, Palmerin awaked and arose, not a little marvelling at that he had heard & seen, but most of all when he felt his wounds healed, and saw his glasse full of the water he came for: so rendring thanks to heaven for his good successe, hee went up higher on the mountaine, thinking to see the Fountain, but he could not, wherefore without any longer stay hee discended downe againe, thus saying to himselfe. How happy may I count my selfe, to finde so good Fortune in this desolate mountaine: for now I know her name that is destinied to be mine, henceforth shall she not conceale her selfe from me, may I finde the place where she abideth, and this I vow by him that made mee, that I will not cease to seeke her through the world, til I heare some tydings of her: and were it not for the promise I have made the Princesse Arismena, to bring her this water to recover the King her Father, this day would I begin this religious enterprise, in hope (if the Ladies spake truth that appeared to me in my sleepe) hereafter to bee one of the happiest Knights in the world. So walked he on till he came to that he left his horse wherein he mounted, and came to Vrbanillo and his other Esquires, who hauing heard the cry of the Serpent, when

Palmerin gaue him his firſt ſtroke, perſwaded themſelues that their Maſter was ſlaine: but when they ſaw him coming, Vrbanillo aboue all the reſt was moſt ioyfull, and ran apace to meet him, deſiring to know how he had ſped. Very well I thank God, ſaid Palmerin, who gaue me ſtrength to kill the Monſter, and to bring ſufficient of the Water, I hope, to win the King Primaleon his health. Then haue I the thing, I moſt deſire, ſaid Vrbanillo, albeit I greately feared, that you had accompanied all the other knights in death, that aduentured before you, and could not ſpeede ſo well. So mounted they all on horſebacke, and made ſo good iourneyes as they arriued at Macedon, whereof Florendos and Sarze Ariſmena were not a little ioyfull, eſpecially when they were aſſured, that Palmerin had brought with him the Kings health, by meanes whereof it is not to be demanded, if he were highly honoured and receyued at the Court.

CHAP. XVII.

How foure Knights would haue taken the glaſſe of fatall water from Vrbanillo, before Palmerin arriued at Macedon, and of the Combate betweene them.

You muſt here vnderſtand that the ſame day Palmerin, in cõpany of his Eſquiers departed from the mountaine, hee ſent Vrbanillo the Dwarffe before, towards Macedon with the glaſſe of water: when it ſo fortuned that foure Knights mette with him, one of them ſaluting him in theſe hard termes. Deformed villaine, giue me that glaſſe, or I ſhall take thy head from thy ſhoulders. Palmerin, who

came

came not farre behinde, seeing the knights offer injury to his Dwarfe, gaue spurs to his horse, and thus answered: How now Gentlemen? are you not ashamed in my presence to abuse my seruant, trust me, I neyther can nor will so put it vp: and so touching his Lance, he encountred one of them so roughly, as hee fell from his horse deare to the grounde. When the other three saw their companion thus foiled, they altogether set vpon Palmerin: but their fortune fell out so ill, as two of them were soone vanquished, and the third took him selfe to flight, very hardly escaping. Palmerin made no account of following him, but leauing them rode on his way, his Dwarfe thus comming to him: Beleeue me my Lord (quoth he) he is to be accounted ouer foolish hardy, that at the weapons point seekes to offend you: I dare boldly affirme my words, by euidence of the fortune of these foure knights.

In that, said Palmerin thou maiest be deceyued, but God is alwayes friend to iustice and equity, and enemy to such as go against them. But because you shall know the occasion why these foure knights would haue taken the glasse from Vrbanillo, you must note that they were all Seruants to a great Lord of a Castle, which was a dayes iourney off the Mountaine Artifæria, who hauing intelligence by Sheepheards and other peasants, what good fortune had befallen Palmerin to kill the Serpent, and bring away the fatall water, repined greatly thereat: for the Lord did highlie malice the King of Macedon, because he had enforced him to surrender a Seignour, which he against all right held from one of his Sisters, and for this cause, knowing that by the vertue of that water the King should recouer his health, hee sent his foure sonnes to take it from Palmerin, whose successe in their attempt fell out as you haue heard. Now Palmerin by this time is come to Macedon to the King, whom with great reuerence he saluted on his knee, when the King embracing him so well as he could, sayd. Trust me my good Friend, next to God I must esteeme you dearest, for

that as hee by his Godhead hath made me breath this ayre, though weake and sickly: by diuine prouidence hee hath sent you to restore my bodily health, from henceforth therefore I shall intreate you to command mee and mine at your pleasure. My gracious Lord, sayde Palmerin, the heauens giue me successe to doe you seruice, for I know no Prince liuing this day, for whom I would more gladly aduenture my life. I thank you good Sir, quoth the King, but the griefe I haue sustained for the sorrow of my sonne Florendos, brought mee into such a long and lingering extreamity, as well may I blesse the time, that by your good successe am so happily deliuered: let mee therefore entertayne you as my second sonne, and perswade your selfe of such a Father, who will loue you as if you were his own naturall childe, in that I, and the greater part of my kingdome shall be at your disposition. Worthy Sir, sayd Palmerin, worthie might I be reputed amongst the wise in the world, refusing the honour you please to offer mee, especiallie in such an extraordinary kind of fauour: for the rest, (beeing thus accepted in your princely grace) I haue sufficient being furnished with Horse and Armour to doe mee seruice. With these words the King embraced him, and meere ioy causes the teares to trickle downe his cheekes: so that Palmerin stayed longer with him then he made account to do, till the Duke of Durace sent for him, as you shall reade in the discourse following.

Chap.

CHAP. XIX.

How Duke Astor of Durace sent to the King of Macedon, desiring him to send him the Knight that had slaine the Serpent on the Mountaine Artisæria, to ayde him against the Counte Passaco of Mecæna, who layde siege to one of his Cities.

SO farre was spread the fame of this victorie, which Palmerin had against the Serpent, on the Mountaine Artisæria, as at length the Duke Astor of Durace heard thereof, against whome the Count Passaco of Mecæna waged battaile, and seing himselfe vnable to resist his enemie, minded to send to the king of Macedon, requiring aid of the knight ỹ slew the Serpẽt at the enchaunted Fountaine: and hereuppon he dispatched one of his Gentlemen towardes the King, who made good haste till he came thither: when doing his reuerence, and deliuering his Letters of credit to the King, he saide. Deade Lord, the Duke of Durace my maister most humbly salutes your Maiestie by me. The King hauing read the Letters, and noting the contents, bad the Messenger discharge the rest of his message. It is so Sir, said the Gentleman, that of long time my Lord and maister hath beene assaulted by the Count Passaco, who in such cruell sorte hath warred on him, as he hath well neere destroyed the whole Countrey, for hee hath taken the Cittie of Mizzara, and against all right both challenge it for his owne. After this the Duke my maister raysing his siege to bid him battaile, Fortune

hath beene so contrary to my Lord, as his noble Sonnes are slaine, and ỹ greater part of his worthiest Gentlemen. Yet not contented with all this, the Counte pursues him still to his very Cittie of Durace, which he hath begirt with siege so strongly, as he is doubtfull of a further daunger. But within these eight dayes he understood that your highnesse hath here a Knight, that slew the Serpent on the enchaunted Mountaine, in whose valour my Lord reposeth such confidence, as would you graunt him licence to come thither, my Lord will accompany him with so many hardie men at Armes, as hee doubts not to enforce the Counte to leaue his Countrie: and for that the matter requireth expedition, he desires your assistance with all possible spæde. I am sorrie, quoth the King, that the Duke my Nephew is in such extremitie, and I promise you I did not thinke as yet to part with *Palmerin*: but seing the necessitie is so vrgent, I will intreate him to go with you, and so manie approued Knights with him, as the Count shall perceiue I am not well pleased with his hard dealing towardes my Nephew. Now was *Palmerin* present when the Gentleman deliuered his message, which pleased him not a little, because hee would gladlie leane the King to follow his fortune, and was thus held from his desire by importunate requestes: but seing the King had graunted to send him to the Duke, he fell on his knees, vsing these speeches. In respect of my good Lord, that the Duke your Nephew hath vrgent occasion to imploy me, and in that his suite is onely for me, without any other of your people, I beseech you suffer me, to go alone to him, for my hope is so good, in a cause of truth and right, that wee shall be sufficient there to ende the controuersie. Not so my good friend *Palmerin*, sayde the King you shall not hazarde your selfe alone, but take such company as I shall send with you. My Lord, quoth *Palmerin*, hee demaundes mee without any other company, and therefore let mee perswade you to satisfie your request: so turning to the Gentleman, he bid him prepare to set forward,

ward, for he was readie. Mary the Sir, answered the Messenger, with what expedition you please, for neuer was Knight expected with more earnest longing for, then you are. This suddaine resolution of Palmerin displeased Florendos: wherefore taking him aside, he said. If it be then my deere freende, you will needes bee gone, albeit your companie hath giuen mee greater solace & delight, then any thing else since I lost mine onely content: yet is my regarde of your honour such, ỳ I feare more to heare your misfortune, then I pittie ỳ necessitie of my Cozin the Duke of Durace. Yet let me intreate you, that finishing your intent with fortunate successe, you make your present returne to the King my Father, whose loue, and whose liberalitie you needs not doubt off. My Lord (quoth Palmerin) the King and you haue so highlie honoured mee, as whereseuer I shall come hereafter, I rest yours in my verie vttermost endeuours.

These wordes did Ptolome heare, the Sonne of Frenato, whom Florendos had kept since ỳ time he was his page, and was now olde enough to receyue the knighthood; which made him desirous to purchase honour by some meanes, especially if the King would moue Palmerin to take him with him, his request he perswaded himselfe would not bee denyed, whereupon, kneeling before the King, he beganne thus. If it please your highnesse, that at your handes I might receiue my order of knighthood, before Palmerin departed from your Court, I am assured he would not disdaine me for his companion, especially if your Maiestie did moue the question on my behalfe. Beleeue me, quoth the King so good a motion shall not be hindred by me, & therefore to morrow will I giue you your order, and such Armor as shall well beseeme a Knight, prepare you in meane time to performe your watch. Highly contented was Ptolome at these speeches, and gaue order for his prouision of needefull occasions, till euening came, when he entred the Chappell, where he spent the night in deuout orisons, that heauen

would so further ỹ whole course of his time, as might stand with the aduauncement of iustice and his owne honor. Early in the morning the king accompanied with his Sonne Florendos and many other knightes, entered the Chappell, where finding Ptolome on his knees, he gaue him his Knighthode, wishing his Fortune to proue such as might make him famous where euer he came: afterward he desired Palmerin, that this new Knight might beare him companie in his trauailes, whereto Palmerin willingly consented, accepting so well of Ptolomes behauiour, as he purposed thence forward not to forsake so good a companion. Then they both toke their leaue of the King and Florendos, and departed with the Gentleman towardes the Duke of Durace, making such good expedition in their iourney, as hauing crost the Seas with a prosperous winde, they landed in the Countrey of Durace. Now because the Cittie was besieged on all sides, they were doubtfull how to gette in vnseene of the enemie: which the Gentlemane their guide, performed so well, as by priuie signes made to the Sentinell, at length they got in without any danger. The Duke hearing tydings of their arriual, left his Chamber and came to welcome Palmerin, whome he entertained with great honour, spending the most part of the night in familiar conference with him, till hauing brought him to his Chamber, he left them both to their good rest, till the next morning, when he came againe to visite them, thus saluting Palmerin.

Your arriuall, Sir knight, doth arme me with such assured hope, as by the helpe I shall receiue at your hande, mine enemie (I trust) shal not ouerhaue me as he hath done hitherto: and therefore you with your worthie companion, are both so welcome as you can deuise. My Lord, (quoth Palmerin) the King that sent me to you, hath bound me to him by so manie courtesies, as for the loue of him and Florendos his Sonne, you may assure your selfe of my vttermost seruice, so long as I shall be able to holde my Sworde.

The

The Duke returned his noble offer many thanks, and walked into the Hall, the Duchesse there expected the comming of Palmerin: so after many welcomes and courtly embracings, the Tables being couered, they sate downe to Dinner: al which time, Palmerins eyes were fixing on the Duchesse Daughter, who was one of the fairest Virgins that ener he saw, and so bessed was his thoughts in beholding her, as hee gaue small regard to the Dukes words, who reported what shamefull iniuryes the Court had offered him from time to time, and how many skirmishes had passed betweene them since the beginning of the warre. Thus spent they the Dinner time, till the Tables being withdrawne, the Duchesse with her Daughter were gone into their Chamber, and the Duke questioned with Palmerin as concerning Ptolome, who was very neere allied to the Duke: and so with discoursing of nouels of Macedon, also the doubtfull affaires of the warres, they passed the whole day till night came: when Palmerin and Ptolome departing to their Chambers, Palmerin could take no rest, the beautie of the Duchesse Daughter so troubled his thoughts, which made him desirous to know her name, if this were shee the three Sisters spake of on the Mountaine, and was beside promised him in his sleeping visions. Palmerin was not alone thus passionate, but on the other side the yong Lady became as amorous of him: but fortune would not permit their loue, as you shall heare more hereafter. The Count hauing all this while maintained very straight siege, intending now to loose or gaine al, gaue fierce assault vpon the Cittie, first calling all the chiefest Lords and Captaines of his Armie, moning them with earnest and Souldier like perswasions, to foresee the aduantages, and to encounter their enemies with magnanimious and resolute courage. When he had thus imboldened his men so, the fight with sound of Drums, Trumpets, and Clarions they had the Cittie battaile: then might they behold how they bestirred themselues with Fagots to fill the Ditches,

and

and Trenches, sat scaling ladders to the walles, how the one side assaulted and the other defended, that many lost their liues or departed maimed: such hauocke did Palmerin and Ptolome with the Dukes power, make on theyr enemies, notwithstanding they were in number farre beyond them, and marualous well prouided of all necessaries. But then Palmerin remembred a sodaine policie to preuent a mischiefe, for as the enemie retired to prepare for the second assault, hee called the most part of the best Knights that the Duke had, willing each one to betake himselfe to his horse and follow him, leauing the rest well appointed for defence of the wals. The Countes power sounding the alarme and comming roughly againe vpon the Citie, Palmerin with his companie priuily issued forth at the Posterne gate on the backs of their enemies, and gaue such a braue onset, as they were enforced to forsake their scaling Ladders or resist this incounter. There were many stroakes deliuered on either side, the Counte and most part of his Knights being on horsebacke, which made them holde the longer play with Palmerin and his men: notwithstanding, the Counte seeing such a hardy attempt giuen on a sodaine, and doubting fresh supplie would come from the Citie, with feare beganne to retire, and with one of his Brethren laboured to resist this sharpe assault: but Palmerin and his companie gaue them small time to rest, laying on loade with marualous fiercenesse, whereat the Counte was so offended, as comming to Palmerin, hee gaue him such a cruell stroake on the Helmet, as he fell therewith to the ground, yet did hee quickly recouer himselfe againe, and requited the Counte with so sound a salutation, as he made him tumble from his sadole headlong to the earth, at what time on the other side Ptolome had so cauuazed the Counts brother as hee sealed him a requittance with his sword for his life. Then began the Counts Souldiours to dispaire for their successe, and Palmerin with his traine to follow them so closely, as they were glad to take themselues to flight, leauing theyr

Maister

maister ouerthrowne in the Armis, where he was troden to death with the trompling of the Horses. Thus did the victorie remaine to the Duke, his enemies scattering in flight glad to saue their liues, whome Palmerin commanded to follow no further, least gathering themselues together againe, and espying aduantage, they might so endanger them: for oftentimes the vanquished to narrowly pursued, recouer courage and dant the pride of the conquerers. For this cause he returned with his men into the Citie: the Duke vnderstanding the foyle of his enemie, which made him with a great number of worthy Citizens to go meete Palmerin and Ptolome, whom imbracing he thus entertained. Ah good Knights, by you is my estate recouered, and the death of my Sonnes reuenged on the murderer, therefore dispose of mee and mine what you thinke best: to which words Palmerin thus answered. My Lord, let heauen haue this honour of our victory: as for me I haue done, and will hereafter what I can, for the great kindnesse of the King of Macedon your vncle, who hath honoured mee in sending me to you, and other recompence I neuer did or will seeke. As they thus parled together, the Duke perceiued by the bloud on Palmerins Armour, that he was wounded in many places: wherefore (quoth he) I see you are sore wounded, let vs make haste to our Pallace, where a Lady attending on the Duchesse, and well seene in chirurgerie, shall giue attendance on you till you are recouered. So mounting on horsebacke they rode to the Pallace, where Palmerin was lodged. Being brought into his Chamber, the Duchesse and her daughter holpe to disarme him, when the Ladie dressed his wounds, perswading him there was no danger in them to be feared. Thus each one departing, Laurana and the Duchesse daughter called Vrbanillo the Dwarfe saying to him. My friend, desire thy Maister to make bold of any thing hee wants, and that for my sake he will dispaire of nothing. Madame, sayde the Dwarfe, you haue good reason to wish my maister well, as well for

the

the good assistance he gaue the Duke your father, as also in respect of his deserts, which are as honourable as any that euer came in this court. These words Palmerin very well heard, hauing his eye continually on her: wherefore when she and all the other were departed, hee called Vrbanillo, demaunded what talke hee had with the Princesse, which he reported and his answere also. Gramercies sayd Palmerin, I pray thee finde the meane to let her know that I am her seruant and knight, ready to accomplish any thing that shee shall commaund me. Referre this matter to mee Syr quoth the Dwarfe, I know what Saint must patronize these affaires, and what offering must bee layde on his Altar.

CHAP. XX.

How Palmerin became highly enamored with the beautie of the Princesse Laurana, thinking her to be the Lady that solicited him in his visions.

VRbanillo the Dwarfe not forgetfull of his Maisters commaundement, the next day whē Laurana came with hir mother to visit Palmerin, she tooke the Dwarfe aside, demanding what rest his maister tooke the night past. Madam (quoth he) indifferent, I thanke God and you, for in you two consists the disposition of my Maisters health. As how, quoth shee; Thus Madame, sayd Vrbanillo: the first day that he beheld you, he gaue the whole possession of himselfe so firmely to you, as day & night he meditates on your diuine perfections, doub-

ting

king in requitall of his seruice to my Lord your Father and his Country, whose liues and yours he hath defended, himselfe shall bee repayde with sodaine and cruell death: for, had hee not come for your safety, well had hee escaped this dangerous extremity. Then seeing (sayde Madame) that his valour hath been the mean of your deliuerance, doe not so degenerate from gentle nature, as to kill him that gaue you life. Why, my friend (quoth she) what wouldest thou haue me to doe? To loue him, sweet Madam quoth he, as he doth you. Alas, sais she, thou maist assure thy selfe, that none can wish thy Master better then I doe, being my duety and his desert: with which words shee changed colour with such modest bashfulnes, as it might be perceyued she could hardly master her affections. Which, when the Dwarfe behe'd, as one not to learne his lesson in this art, perswaded himselfe by the very lookes of Laurana, that his Masters loue would sort to happy end, and thereupon hee followed the matter thus. I thinke Madame, that you wish my Master as well as any, but that is not inough, vnlesse your wish agree with his in this point, that you graunt your selfe his onely Lady and Mistresse, as hee hath vowed himselfe your Knight and Seruant. If it may please you to wish this good to my Master, vouchsafe this fauour as a president of your liking: that so soone as hee shall finde himselfe better in health, you will but consent to speake with him alone, in some such conuenient and vnsuspected place, as hee may haue liberty to acquaint you with the secrets of his thoughts. Alas, quoth she, how should I so doe, without offering too much vnpeach to mine own honour? Madam, sayd the Dwarfe, the night giues fauour to louers sweet enterprises. By this time the Duchesse was ready to depart, which Laurana perceyuing, said to the Dwarfe: Assure thy master from me, that I am more his then mine owne, and I will doe for his welfare what I may with modesty. By reason of their departure, the Dwarfe could not make her answere, but shadowing the matter as hee

had

had done before, went about his Masters businesse, till he came and found him alone, when he discouered all that had passed betweene the Princesse and him, which so well contented Palmerin, as nothing could more: because hee perswaded himselfe, as I haue sayde already, that this was shee which the three sisters promised him, by whom hee should receiue the honour that destiny allowed him. For this cause thence forward hee was very desirous to know her name, commaunding Vrbanillo very straitely to enquire it, which hee did, informing his maister, that her name was Laurana: whereupon he well saw, that hee was deceyued, in that the three sisters had named his Mistresse Polinarda, & therefore he resolued to withdraw his affection, and to depart thence so soone as hee could bee able to beare Armour: But it may bee easily presumed, that when one hath so far ventured in loue, that he perceiues himselfe beloued, as the Dwarfe perswaded his maister, hardly can hee giue ouer so fayre a beginning: yet heere it fell out contrary, as you shall well perceiue, that the end was more sodaine then the beginning. Palmerin now knowing the Princes name, beganne to vse other countenance to her then he was accustomed: but shee good Lady (in his excuse) conceiued better opinion then shee had cause: yet as it euermore falleth out in loue, that when Ladies see themselues but slenderlie courted by their friends, they grow importunate in their amorous desires: so came it to passe with Laurana, who perceiuing her self not solicited by Palmerin as she was wont, one night somewhat late shee called the Dwarfe and thus beganne. How comes it to passe my good Friend, that thy maister is not of so pleasant disposition, as heretofore he hath bin? it may be thou hast not let him vnderstand my last salutation, or else feare withholds him from following his determination: I pray thee doe the message of my earnest good will to him, and tell him that I long to impart our affections together, to the full resolution of our desired thoughts, which I haue found the way vnsuspected

to

to accomplish, so please him to come to my chamber to morrow at night, where I shall not faile to expect his presence. When the Dwarfe heard Laurana vse these wordes, thinking his Master was still in his former cogitations, thus answered. Trust me, sayre Madame, within these fewe dayes, my master is become so melancholike, as I haue many times feared his death, and I am sure hee hath no other cause to torment him so, but onely the fury of the extreame loue he beares you: yet seeing you haue promised him such great fauour, let me alone to change this vnpleasant humour. Fayle not then (quoth she) to let him know my mind. I goe presently, sayd the Dwarfe, to acquaint him with these long desired tidings. So taking his leaue, he went to his maisters chamber, whome he found fast a sleepe, when not daring to awake him, he let slay his message till the next morning, and so layde him downe to rest, at what time sleepe had throughly possessed him, he began to cry and complaine so loude, as his Master hearing him, arose, and demaunded of him the cause of his lament. Alas, my Lord (quoth he) neuer in all my life was I so affrighted, me thought that one of the fayrest Ladies that euer eye looked on, held a naked sword against my throate, saying, Vile, and villanous creature as thou art, darest thou presume so much to offend me, as to make thy Lorde and maister amorous of Lady Laurana, and to forsake me? iustly doest thou deserue to die on this weapon for thy paillardise, and if hereafter thou carry any message to preiudise my right, assure thy self, that I will chastice thee in such sort, as all deformed villaines shall receiue example by thee. I tell thee Traytor, Palmerin his fortunes climbe higher then the name of Laurana, and where he is more loued for the royalty of his linage, then for his base and pastoral education With which wordes shee gaue me such a stroake on the head with her sworde, as I, (fearefull of my life) cryed so loude as you say, you heard mee. This motion made Palmerin easily perceiue, that Polinarda had made this

threat-

threatning to the Dwarfe for Laurana: which concealing to himselfe, he sayde in laughter. I thinke thou didst forget to drinke when thou camest to bed, and so thy heart being drie, conceyued this vision: I pray thee sleepe, and trouble me no more with such idle passions. The Dwarfe betooke him to rest, but Palmerins thoughts were all night hammering on this dreame, so that he resolued to depart thence the next morning, and seeke elsewhere his aduentures, seeing hee was aduertised by so many aduertisements. So at the day rising, hee called the Dwarfe, and commaunded him to prepare his Armour, for hee intended to take his leaue of the Duke. Ptolome hearing this, and hauing noted before all the Dwarfe tolde his maister in the night, dissembling the matter, as was his manner, hee came, and bad Palmerin good morrow, who answered Ptolome in this manner. My deare friend, I haue concealed none of mine affayres from thee, since the time we receiued our Knighthood, and parted together from the Court of Macedon: now therefore will I impart to thee what I haue determined.

It is so, that vrgent occasions constraine me presently to leaue this Country, and hencefoorth to frame my course which way fortune will direct me, by which occasion I see wee must bee enforced to leaue each other: notwithstanding let mee intreate that our absence may no way impayre our friendship, not doubting but in good time wee shall meete together againe. In meane space, if you see the King, or Prince Florendos, forget not the humble duety of thy bowed Seruant, I beseech you, who dedicates his life and honour in all attempts to their gratious fauours. By God sayd Ptolome, let who will doe the message for me, for neither death nor danger shall separate me from you: but I will beare you company while life and soule bolde together. If you bee so resolute, said Palmerin, shame woes it for mee to refuse you. Set forward then when you please (quoth Ptolome) for we neither must nor will depart, thats flat.

So

So being both armed, they came to the Duke, who marvelled much to see them so prepared, and therefore demaunded whither they went. By god Lord (answered Palmerin) in that your Countrey is nowe quieted, wee must intreate you for our departure, because weightie affaires in other places doo so commaund us. How happens it saye friendes, (said the Duke,) that you will so soone leave me? My Lord (quoth Palmerin) wee are so entered: and therefore wee humbly intreate you not to be offended. If your affaires be such (said the Duke) loath I am to hinder you, commaund of mee and mine what you please, for all remaineth at your disposition. Most humble thanks did Palmerin, and Ptolome returne to the Duke, and ere they went to Horseback, they came to take their leave of the Duchesse and Laurana, who was well nigh dead, seeing her hope deceyued, for shee expected the night comming, when shee and Palmerin should conferre together of their loue: but seeing him now departing, shee was out of all hope to see him againe, the extreame griefe whereof so ouer-came her, as giuing a great shricke she fell in a swoune.

The Ladies and Gentle-women in great amazement came about her, ignorant of her euill, but only Palmerin and the Duarte, which her kinsmen would not reueale to any, for the reason you heard discouered before: and rather would she entertaine her owne death, then make knowne a secrete of such importance: Wherefore hauing somewhat couered her selfe, and not able to conceale her anguish, with an extreame sigh she thus breathed forth her sorrow. Ah Palmerin, easily hath thou kindled the fire, which with great shame thou leauest continuing vnquenched! who would haue thought that such treason could harbour, where loue conditions and honourable dalott shuld so brightly? Well may I condemne all men of disloyaltie, seeing thou hast failed resembling so excellent. Beleeue mee Knight, thou hast done me great wrong, and thy selfe much more: for which, where euer thou commest, bee thou named the most vngratefull

knight that euer drew sword, seeking her death so cruelly, who loues thee dearer then her owne life.

These complaintes made Laurana before the Duchesse, not sparing to discharge the whole burthen of her oppressed heart, her Mother not daring to gainesay her, but expected when she should depart this life: wherefore perswading her selfe from despaire, thee sweetly promised to worke so with Palmerin, as he should stay, and enioy her to his Wife. But all this was in vaine, for hee mounted on horseback, and accompanied Ptolome and Vrbanillo, left the Citie of Duraco, no one knowing which way they were ridden: Palmerin conuerted into such heauinesse, as nothing could torment him more, so earnest was his desire to see her, whom Fate and Fortune had appointed for him.

CHAP. XXI.

¶ How Palmerin and Ptolome met with a Damosell, who made great mone for a Casket which two Knights had forcibly taken from her, and what happened to them.

BEing thus departed from Duraco, these knights rode along, thinking in what heauinesse they had left the Dukes Daughter: when Palmerin accusing himselfe as guiltie of this mischaunce, within himselfe thus sadly discoursed. Vnhappie man that euer thou camest into this Countrey, where thou hast left so hard an opinion of thy selfe, as while thou liuest thou shalt be the worse esteemed: and well worthie, for iustly maist thou be accused of disloyaltie, in making meanes to obtaine the loue of

of the faire Princesse Laurana, and having conquered where thou desiredst, to make so little account of her as thou hast done. Hadde death prevented thee before, thee had bene satisfyed, thine Honour defended, and thy vnknowne Polinarda no way iniuried: Which speeches made the teares to trickle downe his cheeks: when Ptolome looking aside espyed him, and guessing the cause of his sicknes, said. Verily I neuer thought to see such womanish behauiour in you, nor that any griefe or misfortune should haue teares so soone at commaundement. How will you hereafter withstand so many casualties, hard aduentures, and dangerous Stratagems, with many and sundry narrow brunts that you must passe through, when I see you vnable to ouercome your owne selfe, being surprized by her teares, to whome you haue done honour to afford a good countenance? If you hadde receyued of her the sweetes of Loue, reason might then pleade in your excuse: but hauing no way misprized her honour, or offered offence to modest chastitie: what inuinis may thee say that you haue done her? Forget I pray you these vnseemely fashions, hardly agreeing with a Knight of such report as you are: let vs finde some thing else to talke on: and tell me which way you intend to iourney? By my life (quoth Palmerin,) I knowe not, but let vs take which way Fortune shall please to conduct vs. I thinke it best then (saide Ptolome.) that we shape our course towards Rome, where wee shall find people of all Nations, by whom we may be instructed, as concerning Aduentures worthy our trauell, and guiding to honour. On then cheerely (quoth Palmerin,) and so they trauelled eight dayes together, not meeting with any Aduenture worthie to be spoken of, till at length they mette with a Damosell heauily mourning, who said: Alas, what will thee say, whose trust was onely in mee, hauing lost the thing wherein consisted her hopes, to recouer the highest of her noble desires? Palmerin hearing these wordes, and moued with compassion, rode to her, and demanded the cause of her mourning? Syr Knight (quoth shee) I was sent

by a Lady with a Casket, wherein was one of the best Swords in the whole world, which is so Enchaunted, as none can draw it out of the Scrabbard, but hee that is esteemed the worthiest knight living: but before any be admitted to make proofe of this Adventure, hee must graunt a request that I am to aske him. With this Sword home I travelled many strange Countreyes, as France, Italie, Sclauonie, and diuers others, whereof many had tryed, but no one yet could finish the Adventure: whereupon I was this day travelling towards the Emperours Court of Greece, and here by I mette with two knights, who having heard the cause of my long travell, made proofe of their Fortune, one after another, and both failed, whereat they were so offended, as they toke the Casket from me perforce, and are gone therewith I know not whither: which doth so much grieue mee in respect of her losse towards whome I am, as death would be more welcome to me then life.

Faire Virgin (saide Palmerin,) doo not discomfort your selfe, but shew me which way they rode that dealt with you so discourteously. Gentle knight (quoth shee) if your hap be to restore my losse againe, you doo the most gracious acte that euer knight did for a distressed Damosell. Whose Crayors to honour (whereof the one is in Crimson Armour, bearing in his shield three Lyons heads) toke this way by the Wood, and as yet I am sure they cannot be farre hence.

Then Palmerin clasped his Helmet, and taking his Sword and Launce, desired Perdome to guide the Damosell and follow him, galloping that way which shee had shewed him: and by the time hee had rid two miles, he espyed them he looked for, talking with another knight they had mette, and they three together were readying to open the Casket, unto whom Palmerin cryed, Treacherous villains, that cannot mete with Ladyes on the way, but must offer them iniurie, deliuer the Casket or yee die: One of the two turned presently, and seeing him that thus threatned them to be alone, not moouing a foote, beganne to laugh, and scornfully re-

turned

returned this answere. Softly, softly, good Syr, God pardon they soules whome you kill so easily: but for all his words, Palmerin ranne against them, and they at him, so that hee receyued a small wound on his shoulder: in recompence whereof, hee gaue one of them a passe-port into another world, and laid so lustily on the other, as hee set him quickely besides his Saddle. When the third saw his companions at so harde a reckoning, he saide to himselfe. By my faith he spake not vnadusedly that saide A safe escape is better then a bad tarrying: And allowing this sentence for currant in his owne opinion, gaue the spurres to his Horse, making haste away with the Casket, so fast as hee could: but Palmerin beeing somewhat better mounted, got such aduantage of this Runaway, as with his Sword he parted his right arme from his body, whereupon hee fell to the ground and the Casket with him. Then Palmerin alighted, and toke it vp, and leauing the knight there, returned which way hee came: when opening the Casket, hee toke great pleasure in beholding the Sword, which was marueilous costly: yet would hee not proue to draw it forth, because he knewe not her pleasure to whome it appertained. At length he espyed Ptolome comming, who came apace (if needs had beene) to haue assisted him: but when he knew how he had ouercome the knights, and recouered the thing was so desired, no man could be better contented, especially the Damozell, who leaping from her Palfray, came and kissed Palmerins feete, saying. And may all happinesse repay this gentle deede, Fayre knight, for but by you, my death had bene bell welcome to mee.

Damozell (quoth hee) see here the Casket according as I found it, I knowe not whether they that toke it from you haue abused it or no. No, no, (saide shee) they could no way wrong it, the Sword beeing heere that belongs to the best knight. I pray you (quoth Ptolome) let mee make tryall of my strength, albeit I know my self no such man as you speak of: so taking the Casket, offered to begin, when the Damozell desired him to forbeare, for (quoth shee) you must first

graunt mee one requeſt. What ere it bee ſaid Ptolome, I graunt it: and ſo ſet all his might to his intent, but could not accompliſh it. Wherefore quoth he to the Damozell, beliene me Lady, he that wrought this Enchantment, did more by his Arte, then I can by my cunning, and in my opinion you may trauell long enoughbefore you finde him that ſhall quit your expectation. The more will be my trouble, (quoth the Damozell) beeing tyed by neceſſitie to ſuch a Knightes fortune. When Palmerin ſaw that his Companion had failed, he doubted whether hee ſhould take it in hand or no: yet ſeeing hee could ſpeede no worſe then others had done, he ſaid to the Damozell, will you any thing with mee before I aduenture my ſelfe, for my Friend ſhall not be mal-content for a fellow. Gentle Knight (quoth ſhee) I will nothing, but that you make the like promiſe your Friend did. Of that doubt you not, ſaide Palmerin: ſo laying hands valiantly on the Sword, without any great labour he dreiue it forth, being the richeſt and goodlyeſt Sword that euer was ſeene.

Ah good Knight, (ſaide the Damozell) happie bee the day of thy Natiuitie, for thou haſt deliuered mee from incredible labour. The Sword is yours, but by your promiſe you ſtand bound to goe with mee where I ſhall conduct you, to do that ſhall pleaſe my Lady to commaund you. Leade the way Damoſell (quoth Palmerin,) and be ſure wee will not leaue thy company. So mounted the Damozell on her Palfray, and toke the way towards Rome, where ſhee that deliuered her Caſket remained in deuotion, & with ſuch ſpeede they diſpatched their Trauell, as they arriued at the Gate of a ſtrong Caſtle, where the Damozell alighted, deſiring Palmerin and Ptolome to expect her returne a while. The Gate being opened, ſhee went ſtraight to her Miſtreſſe and her Siſter, who being glad of her comming, demanded if ſhee had found out the man ſhee went to ſeeke. Deere Ladyes (quoth ſhee) I haue, and hither he is come with mee, but this I dare aſſure you before hand, that a more goodly and valiant Gentleman liues not this day: for in my preſence he vanquiſhed

quished three Knights, who perforce toke the Casket from me, and for the sword he drew it forth so easily, as it had béene that he weareth by his side. Goe, said the Lady, and cause him come nére, and come Sister let vs goe to the gate to entertaine him. Then was the draw Bridge let downe, when Palmerin and Ptolome riding to the gate, met there the Ladies, whom they saluted with great reuerence, and each Lady leading a Knight in by the hand, conducted them to their Chambers to be vnarmed.

CHAP. XXII.

How the Lady of the Castle declared to Palmerin, what moued the Giant Darmaco to take from her, her Daughter and her goods, whereupon Palmerin promised to enter Combate with the Giant: as much for pitty, as to acquite his promise made to the Damosell that brought the Casket and the enchaunted Sword.

OUr two Knights being thus entred the Castle and vnarmed, the Ladies brought each of them a rich Mantle of Crimson Damaske, imbrodered with gold and pearle to couer them, and so came with them into the Hall to meate, where wanted not those of daintie delicates: so after the Tables were withdrawen, and many other speéches passed betwéene them, the Lady thus beganne to Palmerin.

Sir Knight, as nowe I am a poore and disinherited Gentlewoman, that sometime was Wife to one of the wel-

thiefe Knights in this countrey, with whom I long time remained not hauing any Childe, till at length it pleased God to send mee a Daughter, so faire a creature as euer Nature framed, who at my Husbands death was left with mee but fiue yeares aged. My Lord and Husband learned in the Art Magicke, and for his skill renowned in this Countrey, the day before his death he called me to him, vsing these speeches. Deere Wife, let it suffice thee that I know what shall happen to thee after my death, and that one shall take perforce from thee not onely such Goods as I leaue thee, but also thy faire Daughter: to helpe which extreamitie, I haue somewhat prouided for thee before my departure.

Thou shalt finde in my Cabinet a Sworde, which I my selfe haue enclosed in a Casket, and haue sette so many Enchaunted spells on that Sword, as no man shall be able to draw it out of the Scabbard, vnlesse hee be the best approued knight in the World, and hee it is that must giue thee succour, and helpe to recouer againe thy losse. Too true fell out my Husbands speeches: For shortly after Darmaco the Gyant came hither, and as his custome was to abuse whome hee listed, so toke he from mee the best of my Castles, and in despight of me toke my Daughter from mee, saying: that hee would giue her to one of his Sonnes in marriage, a villaine farre more vicious then his Father, and so deformed, as Nature stands ashamed at her owne workemanship. Now in respect I would not consent to this vnseemly Marriage, such goods as was left mee hee most violently toke from mee, this Sword onely excepted, which you haue worthily conquered, and that had gone with them too, but that my Sister hidde it very secretly. Now worthy knight, if euer pittie take place in thy gentle heart, reuenge mee on this Villaine, that hath thus robbed me of my goods and my Daughter, whose youth (being as yet but ten yeares olde) is the cause that the Giant hath not consummated the Marriage. And if it shall like you to do thus much for mee, you shall not onely fulfill your promise to the Damosell that brought you hither, but you

shall

shall doe a deede acceptable to God, profitable to me, comfortable to my poore Childe, and honourable for euer vnto your owne selfe. Madame (answered Palmerin) it is no meruaile if Darmaco haue done you this wrong, in that Giants doe take a habit in trecherous dealings: wherefore did not my promise binde mee to your Damosell, I would not passe so lightly out of this Countrey, ere I compelled him somewhat to recompence this iniurie, and this shall I (God willing) doe to morrowe, so please you I may bee conducted to him. Ah gentle knight, sayd the Lady, what I am not able, Heauen will no doubt repay thee: And because it was now somewhat late, after they had spent a little more time together in conference, these Ladies accompanied him and Ptolome into their Chamber, and taking their leaue, committed the knights to their good rest for that night, which they passed with quiet repose, and on the next morning after they were armed, they demaunded their guide of the Ladie, that should direct them the way towardes the Giant. Then shee called the Damosell that carried the Casket, and two knights of her owne, whom shee commaunded to goe with Palmerin: so committing him to God and good successe, they take their way straight to the Castle of Darmaco, where they arriued in the morning, when they espied a Squire on the walles, who was appointed there to keepe the watch, to whom Palmerin sayd. My friend, I pray thee if Darmaco be within, cause him to come forth, for I would speake with him. And what would you with him answered the Squire? I would intreate him, saide Palmerin, to vse himselfe more courteously then hee hath done heretofore, and that hee would doe right to a good Lady whom hee hath disinherited, namely to send her her goods and her Daughter againe: and if my intreatie may not preuaile with him, bidde him if hee dare come to the Combate, wherein I will make him confesse vnder my Sword, that his actions haue beene villainous, trayterous, and disloyall. In good sooth Sir, answered the Squire in

derision,

derision, you may seeme to haue reason, and they that sent you likewise, but your iourney I feare me will not amount to so much: therefore, if you will be ruled by me, get you going, vnlesse you are willing to leaue your heads for a signe to our Gates. My head, said Palmerin, my Sword holdes too good an edge, and mine arme too sound strength, to leaue a Iewell of such price so easily: goe therefore when I bidde thee, thou wert best, otherwise assure thy selfe if I vanquish thy Maister, that thou with the rest shalt surely dye the death. Two sons, said the Squire, shall I doe your message: and if any harme happen to you, say my good Friend you were counselled before: but as for my Maister Darmaco, hee hath not beene within for this houre and more, yet is his Sonne Mordano heere, who can bid you welcome as well as his Father. So departed the Squire, and in short time Mordano the Giants Sonne came vpon the walles, demaunding of Palmerin what hee sought for? I tolde thy Squire, answered Palmerin: but tell me, art thou the Son of the Giant, that delightest in offering villanie to Ladies? And how then, said Mordano, what if I am? I pray thee, said Palmerin, bid thy Father that without any further quarrell hee deliuer the Lady that hee detaines violently, otherwise I shall cause him to doe it whether hee will or no. I shall make thee answere, said Mordano, if thou darest tarrie but till I arme my selfe: and so presently departing, in short time he came forth very well appointed, with a meruailous strong Launce in his hand, and mounted on a verie lustie Courser, so prauncing towards Palmerin, hee said. Wretch, art thou come to seeke thine owne death? I pittie thee: yet if thou wilt yeelde thy selfe to my mercie, I will spare thy life, and suffer thee to waste thy time in one of the base Dungeons in this Castle. From lodging there, God shelde mee, quoth Palmerin: and being moued with these rough words of his enemie, hee encountred Mordano with such courage, as their Launces being broken, both of them were dismounted, Palmerin not hurt, but Mordano

was

was wounded on the right side, the trunchion of Palmerins Launce being left in his body. Notwithstanding hee recouered himselfe quickly, and came furiously towardes Palmerin, and gaue him such a cruell stroke on the head, as the blod beganne to trickle downe his face: which when hee perceiued, and how it stode him in hand now to bee venturous, hee requited Mordano with so sound a greeting, as he parted one of his armes quite from his body, and astonied him likewise that hee fell to the ground: but recouering himselfe, he ranne towards the Castle, and Palmerin after him. The Seruaunts of the Castle, seeing their Lords Sonne in such danger, with Iauelins and other weapons came against Palmerin, whom they had murdered, if Ptolome and the two Knights that were sent with him, had not spedily come from their close ambush to defend him: and so manfully did they behaue themselues, as they droue them into the base Court, where Mordano fell dead at Ptolomes feete, who deferring no time, presently with his Sword toke his head from his shoulders. The seruants this seeing, dispearsed themselues and ranne into corners, so that Palmerin and his company had no body left to resist them, some lying there wounded to the death, and other escaping forth at a backe Gate, which they made fast after them, least they should be followed. When Palmerin sawe all things fall out so effectually, hee called for the Damosell and the Knights that came with him, who being not a little glad of this great good fortune, desired first to seeke for Esmerinda their Ladies Daughter, for they were well assured that shee was in the Castle. Search in euery place, quoth hee: and because the night drew on, the Gates were made fast, & there they determined to lodge for that night. In the meane while, the Damosell went about the Castle, and neere the Giants Chamber shee found Esmerinda, who immediatly knowing her, came running and caught her louingly about the necke: for before, (not knowing that her companie had conquered the Castle) shee and three other Women that kept

kept her companie, were greatly feared, but now the Damosell gaue her perfect assurance, that all was done for her deliuerie, and by the onely Knight for prowesse in the world, whom her Lady Mother had thus sent thither. As they continued this talke, Palmerin came to them, before whom the young Gentlewoman Esmerinda humbled her selfe on her knees: but hee taking her vp, embraced her with these speeches. Prettie soule, your Lady mother hath great desire to see you, will not you goe with vs to her: Sir Knight, quoth she, I neuer in my life desired any thing more, then to see my Mother: but I greatly doubt that the false Darmaco will meete vs by the way, for hee went this morning to the funerall of one of his Sisters, and it will bee to morrowe before his returne, when if he hap to meete vs, we are but dead. Let mee deale for that good Lady, sayd Palmerin: I haue alreadie killed the Sonne, I doubt not but this small practise will make mee doe as much to the Father. While Palmerin and Ptolome thus deuised with Esmerinda, the Damosell and Vrbanillo had prouided Supper, which being ended they went to rest, expecting the morning, when they prepared the woman to horse-backe: and hauing taken what them best liked out of the Cattle, they set fire on the rest, and so toke their way towards the sorrowfull Widdow: who expecting good tydings, continued in earnest and deuoute Orizons, that the good Knight might ouercome her blood-thirsty enemy, and returne with victory, and her Daughter Esmerinda.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXIII.

How Palmerin running with his companie to the Ladies Castle, happened to meete with the Giant Dermaco, who lost his life in Combat with Palmerin.

THus rode Palmerin into his company very joyfull of their good fortune, especially Florimonde, about all the rest that this pleasant humour lasted not long, for this late ejected Dermaco comming thether a good, hauing with him his wife and two well appointed Knights: whereat the young Lady was so affrighted, as she cryed out, saying: O God, how are we betrayed? At which words the other women began to discourage themselues, imagining the Giant to haue come with intent to haue slaine them: but Palmerin said to Florimonde, I pray thee good Friend, while I fight with Dermaco, goe you and those two Knights downe with the rest in the meane while, I thinke it good that my Squire Vibanillo carried them into the thickest of the wood. By this time they had espied the Giant, who spurred towards them, who not thinking what had happened, yet seeing but Florimonde to deliuer, in a confident rage, rode running at him, who encountred him so sturdily, as the blow threw his Father off his Giant dumbles lustily of his Palfrey, hanging in his stirrop by the left foote, and was no way able to recouer himselfe

The

The Horse feeling his Maister from his backe, and his burthen to weigh ouer heauie on his side, the Giants sote likelyise tickling him in the flancke, began to course about, and to beate his Maister with his feete euery way hée could reach him, when Palmerin on the other side laid him on such strokes, as at length he sent his soule to the diuels, the patrons of his villainous life. Now thought Palmerin he had no more to doe, but goe helpe his companions against the other knights, wherein hée was deceiued, for the Giantesse to reuenge her Husbands death, gaue so cruell a stroke at Palmerin with her Husbands Mace, as had hée not shunke aside she had slaine him, and so continued more like a Lyon then a Woman, redoubling stroke after stroke: which forced Palmerin for safegard of himselfe, seeing no meanes or persuasions could preuaile with her, to send her packing after her Husband. Ptolome and his knights had dealt so well with the rest, as on the comming of Palmerin they had dispatched them all, if the supply had not come to them, as you shall heare more anon.

The Lady of the Castle Mother to Esmerinda, so soone as Palmerin departed thence towardes the Giant, sent to seeke a young Gentleman named Crispino, to whom shee promised her Daughter in marriage, if so be she could recouer her againe out of the Giants power: who staying not long after this message, made haste to the Castle, the Lady entertaining him in this manner. Not long since, my good Friend, there departed hence a knight, who intendes to reuenge my wrongs on the Giant Darmaco, and because I knowe not to what ende this enterprise will sort, I pray you Arme you, and take tenne of your hardiest men with you, to helpe the good knight if he should be distressed. Crispino soone consented to this motion, and in his way towards the Castle, it was his chaunce to mete with the Dwarfe and the Ladies that fledde into the wood. It is not to demaund how pleasing this sight was to him, beholding Esmerinda whom hée loued as himselfe: of whom he demaun-

ded

ded where their company was, and shée reported in what state they left them at time of their flight. Whereupon hee commaunded fiue of his men to guide the Ladies to a kinsmans house of his that was neere at hand, and hee with the rest of his traine galloped to the place, where Palmerin, Ptolome, and the Ladies two Knights encountred with the fresh supply that came to Darmacos men. But he was no sooner arriued, but hee beheld Palmerin and Ptolome wounded very sore, and one of the Ladies Knights slaine among the rest, which moued him and his men to bestirre themselues: so that (short tale to make) the Giants men were all vanquished in the end, and then Crispino declared to Palmerin, how hee had sent Esmerinda and the Ladies to his Cozins house not farre off, whither if it pleased him to walke, hee should receiue what courtesie could be performed on so suddaine warning, in respect of the happy fortune the whole Countrey should finde by him, being thus deliuered of Darmaco and his Sonnes, but aboue all, for the safetie of his best beloued Esmerinda. Thus rode they together with Crispino, whose Cozin made them very gracious welcome, reioycing greatly at this happy victorie: and afterward they set forward to the good Citizens, Crispino by the way reporting to Palmerin his loue to Esmerinda, and howe her Mother had promised him her in marriage, desiring him to assist the matter that it might be finished; which he promised to doe, and so at length they came to the Castle, where when the Lady saw her Daughter, and heard how her chiefest enemies were slaine, it is hard to expresse her exceeding ioy, which her cheerefull countenance somewhat made manifest, welcomming Palmerin with these wordes. Ah gentle Knight, how might I be able while I liue to recompence this inestimable fauour, the comfort of mine age, and my oppressed soule haue you brought me, may neuer harmes befall so good a Knight. Ladie, quoth he, giue the prayse to God, as for mee, iudge if I haue beene as good as my promise to your Damosell or no,

and

and if there be any thing else to doe, Lady I am ready now to performe it. You haue done so much for me, sayde she, as nothing remaineth more to be desired, vnlesse of your bountie you will cause me to receiue what the Giant tooke from me by force: for seeing her is dead, they that with-helde it from me, will now willingly restore it againe. That shall be likewise accomplished, quoth Palmerin: but because he and Ptolomie were lately wounded, as you heard, they stayed to be cured, and sent Crispino with his Cousin and a good sufficient traine, to demaunde the Ladies Castle and her goods. They that helde it of the Giant, vnderstanding his death, made present deliuerance thereof; and committed themselues to the Ladies mercie: whither shee sent her Daughter, so soone as Palmerin and Ptolome were healed, to whom the subiects vowed their faith and allegeance, and with great triumphes honoured the marriage of Crispino and Flauerida. On the morrowe, as the knight sate at meate, there entred the Hall a Squire, who sayd to Palmerin, that a Damosell stayed without to speake with him. Let her come in, quoth he, and say her pleasure. The Squire bringing her into the Hall, she fell on her knees before Palmerin, saying: Sir knight, doe you not know me? No in good sooth, answered Palmerin. Beleeue me (quoth the Damosell) then hath my seruice beene euill imployed which sometime I did you, and whereof I am sure you haue heard good account. Then Palmerin knewe her (for bringing the Shielde and the Helmet when Florendos knighted him) whereupon he rose from the Table, and embracing her, said. Faire Damosell and my friend, I pray you pardon me, for the length of time since I first saw you, did quite exempt you from my remembrance: pleaseth it you to commaund me any seruice? Sir knight, sayd the Damosell, when I presented you the Helmet and Shielde, wherewith you tooke your order of knighthode, you promised me (if you remember) that you would vse it with right good will, in any affaires the knight had that sent it you, and when

he

he should require such performance: now is the time to confirme your deede with your word; for he hath sent me to you with humble intreatie, that without any stay you goe where I shall conduct you, otherwise you are the onely cause of his death. God shéld me from such misfortune, said Palmerin, rather would I goe with you presently from the Table. So doe I pray you (quoth thee) for I haue haste. Then hee called for his Armour, and the Table withdrawne, he went into his Chamber to Arme himselfe, and so did Ptolome also: returning, they toke their leaue of the Ladies and mounted on horsebacke, the whole company being so sorrie for their departure, as Esmerinda came to the Damosell, saying. I promise you Damosell, you haue done vs wrong in mine opinion, to hinder vs of the presence of so good a Knight. Lady, answered the Damosell, thinke you he was borne for you onely? content your selfe with the good you haue receiued by him, and suffer such as haue néede of his prowesse, to receiue his assistance as you haue done. And good reason, said Esmerinda, if it be to so good an end, that no resistance be offered when helpe is required. So departed the two Knights with the Damosell which way she guided them, and very desirous was Palmerin to be with the Knight that sent to sécke him: because he would gladly know, of whence he was that wished him so well, as his message declared by the Damosell the same day he was Knighted.

CHAP. XXII.

How Palmerin and Ptolome arriued at the Court of the King of Bohemia, where they entred Combat against the Countie of Ormeque and his two Couzins, who accused the Knight and his Sonne of treason, that sent to seeke Palmerin.



Many miles had these Knights rid with the Damosell, when Palmerin at length desired her to tell him, what hee was that sent him the helmet and the sheelde: whereto she answered, that seeing he was so desirous to know, listen, quoth shee, and I shall report the whole vnto you. The Knight wee speake of, is descended of very royall blood, being Vncle to the King of Bohemia that raignes at this present, as also to the Empresse of Allemaigne, the very best seene in Negromancie this day liuing. This noble man is named Prince Adrian, who neuer liked to liue in the Court of the King his Brother, but contented with what patrimonie his Father left him, at length married with a very beautifull Lady, of whom in time he begat a Sonne named Dyardo, which Sonne his Brother the King of Bohemia, nourished vp in his Court with his owne Sonne. So mutually in loue agreed these two young Princes, as after the death of the aged King, the young Dyardo should ioyntly rule with his Couzin the King: who toke to wife the Daughter to the Duke of Lorayne, bringing her with him into this Countrey, in company of her Sister, a Princesse so wise and vertu-

vertuous as euer liued. It so came to passe, that Dyardo my Lords most noble Sonne, framing his thoughts to the inspirations of loue, affected so highly the other Sister, as hee determines neuer to haue any other to his Wife, if hee might compasse what hee intended. For her good Lady, hee could not be deceiued in his amorous desires, hee found her loue so equall with his, yet did they shaddow their affections so discreetly, as none could perceiue them, but Domarto the trayterous Countie of Ormeque, one of the best knights in all that Countrey, were he as familiar with vertue and honestie, as he is with malice and disloyaltie. This Traytour enterprised to match with the Queenes Sister, beloued as you haue heard by my Lords worthy Sonne, and thereupon after many solicitings, made knowne his intent vnto her, whereof she made so slender account, as shee forbad him any more to trouble her. Domarto seeing my Lord Dyardo his onely hinderance in loue, intended a malicious villanie, and on a suddaine accused the Prince, that hee intended to poyson the King, so to obtaine a Crowne, as descended of a nerer consanguinitie. And as it often falleth out in such cases, when one seekes to crosse an others fortune, there is no time slacked in following such drifts: euen so this Traytour, finding the yong King alone, began his matter in this colourable sort. My gratious Lord, the faith and alleageance I owe to your Highnesse, bindes mee to make your Princely eares acquainted with such newes, as, God is my witnesse, sayde the Traytour (lifting his eyes and hands to heauen) mine owne death were more welcome to mee, such is the loue I beare them whom it concernes, being all so neere allied to you in birth, as sorrie am I they should be detected: but in your regard my gracious Lord, the action touching you in such sort as it doth, let mee die rather then spare any liuing creature, no not mine owne Sonne, had Nature giuen mee any. This nodeleste exordium haue I made to so foule an occasion, albeit truth needes no colours or eloquent figures: and therefore in briefe my Lord, this is the summe, I am

credibly enformed, that your Highnesse Cousin the Prince Dyardo, and Madame Cardonia Sister of the Quéene, haue laide the platforme to poyson your Maiestie, and this haue they attempted, by the procurement of olde Adrian your Uncle, who pretends that the Crowne of Bohemia is his. I know not whether it be for want of discretion or no: but howsoeuer it be my Lord, you should not leaue such a villanie vnpunished. The King began greatly to meruaile at these newes, and knew not well what to thinke: whereupon hee answered the Countie, that hee could not beléeue this accusation. But the Traytour set so smoothe a countenance on the matter, and did auerre it still with such stout protestations, as hee induced the King to beléeue him: so that a day or two after, the King being walking in his Garden, séeing Dyardo and Cardonia at the Quéenes Chamber window, secretly conferring of their amorous affections, commanded them both to be carried to prison. The Countie glad thereof, prouoked the King still with such anger against them, as immediatly hee would haue them both done to death: but that the Quéene and the Lords of his Counsell, found meanes to qualifie his displeasure, declaring what discredit his Highnesse should receiue, if he did not suffer them to be openly conuicted of their offences. All this while good Princes, were they ignorant of this detection, till at length the King discoursed the whole matter to them, and likewise who was their accuser: nor did the Countie faile to maintaine his words openly, offering to make it good in fight, against any that durst say the contrary: and because he had two Cousins, hardie and valiant Knights, conspiratours likewise in this faction, there could be none found that would enter the Combat against them. Which when the noble Prince Adrian vnderstoode, very griefe had welnére slaine him, in respect he had no Childe but this Dyardo, as also for that hee was accused with that he neuer thought. Hereupon he went presently to the King his Nephew, and preuailed so well with him, as he obtained the space of two

Moneths,

moneths, to bring with him one or two that might maintaine the innocencie of him, his Sonne Dyardo, and the Princesse Cardonia, against the Traytour Domarco and his Cousins. And this is the cause he sent mee to seeke you forth, in hope that you are as much his Friend as hee is yours, which you may somewhat perceiue, by the friendly presents hee sent you by mee to Macedon. So helpe mee God, said Palmerin, you haue reported a most strange discourse, and neuer did I thinke, that such treason could enter the thoughts of any Knight, or other inferiour person. All this is true, quoth the Damosel, and it is appointed that the Prince Dyardo, with his aged and crazed Father, shall defend their owne causes, without seeking helpe of any other: but he neuer as yet receiued the order of knighthood, and therfore is constrained to desire your assistance. And that shall I doe with all my heart, said Palmerin, would God wee were there where hee expecteth vs, for the desire I haue to see him, as also to vnderstand what hee knowes of my following fortunes. Those matters are hid from mee, quoth shee, yet this haue I heard him say diuers times, being in talke of you, that he accounted you the most honourable knight in the world: and that if he euer chaunced to see you, he would aduise you to goe to the Emperour of Allemaignes Court, to be the knightly Seruaunt to the Princesse Polinarda. When Palmerin heard the name of Polinarda, hee remembred that it was her name, whom hee had so many times seene in his traunces, for which cause hee asked of the Damosell, what the Lady was of whom she spake? My Lord, quoth shee, Polinarda is Daughter to the Emperour, and Niece vnto my Lord Adrian, the most beautifull Princesse that euer eye beheld. By my faith, said Palmerin, the more easily may I be induced to graunt her my seruice, and thither intend I to trauaile, when I haue finished your Lords businesse. So rode they with much more hast then before, till at length they came to the Citie of Almedya, where the King remained, and the Prince Adrian expecting Palmerins

comming: which when hee heard, hee came to meete him, each embracing other with meruailous courtesie, and the good olde man with the teares in his eyes, thus said. Ah good Knight, what may counteruaile this your exceeding paines, to maintaine the right of my Sonne and mee, who are falsely accused of such villanous treason, as (on the perill of my soule) wee neuer did imagine: Thereof am I certainly perswaded, answered Palmerin, and therefore am I come to enter the Combate with him, that dare affirme otherwise. Mine olde age, quoth Adrian, might excuse mee henceforth from bearing Armes, but being vnable to endure so vilde a slaunder, so long as life and soule will holde together, shall I doe my deuoire: so please your companion to make the second, as olde as I am I will be the third, for the trayterous Count hath two of his Cozins that take part with him. And if my fortune so fall out as I die in this tryall, I shall receiue my lot very contentedly, if mine eyes might first behold mine iniurie reuenged. I pray you, said Palmerin, goe presently to the King, to the ende that his Highnesse may graunt vs the field, for my Friend and I thinke long till we haue made your accuser know his treacherie. Adrian immediatly went to the King, and on his knees thus began. My Lord, you knowe that the Count of Ormeque hath accused me, my Sonne Dyardo, and Madame Cardonya, of the crime of Lesæ Maiestatis, and in that wee all are innocent, I am ready to maintaine, that he hath falsely and maliciously belyed vs, which I my selfe will approue vpon him, or two more with mee, against him and his Couzins, if they dare enter the fielde with him in this quarrell, where wee will either make knowne their villanie, or receiue the reward belongs to disloyall Traytours. As for the wrong which you (my Lord) haue done mee, being your Uncle, and my Sonne Dyardo your Couzin germaine, that I referre to God to recompence, and to the better knowledge you shall receiue of mee hereafter, being holy too olde to be a Traytour, and my Sonne too louing

to

to proue disloyall. The King was abashed to heare his Uncle speake so audaciously, doubting now whether hee should giue credite to what had beene reported, especially against him, so neere his Highnesse in blood, who so liberally offered to enter the Combat: notwithstanding his white head and aged body made him vnfit for such actions, wherefore hee thus answered. God Uncle, impute not mee any thing faultie in your accusation, and that the proofe shall manifest that must be made. The Counte being present, was strucken in a quandary at these wordes, and gladly hee would haue denied this former slaunder, but hee could finde no way cleanely to doe it: wherefore seeing of force hee must needes enter the Combat, he boldly fell on his knees before the King with these wordes. My Lord, what I haue saide is verie certaine, and most true it is, that by the counsell of Prince Adrian heere present, his Sonne practised with Lady Cardonia, to poyson you, that hee might be King, which to make good, there is my gage, on the behalfe of my selfe and my Couzins. Thou lieſt Traytour in thy throat, said olde Adrian, I take thine offer: and as hee would haue gone on with further speeches, Palmerin stept before the King, saying. Worthy Lord, seeing the effect of the wordes must be put in execution, which haue beene heere spoken on both sides before your Maiestie: may it please you the Prince Dyardo and Lady Cardonia may bee sent for, to take with vs their oathes as in such cases is required, and in meane time let each one goe put himselfe in equipage for the Combat. God reason saide the King, and presently hee commaunded the Princes to be brought, who being come, Palmerin demaunded where they were that tooke part with the Counte: whereupon hee presented his Couzins, the one named Edron, proud and arrogant, and the other Edward, of selfe same quality. These two tooke their oathes with the Count, that the Princes accused, conspired the Kings death, in such sort as hath beene before declared: and olde Adrian, Dyardo, and faire Cardonia sware the contrarie. But it is

true, and I will not denie it (said the Prince Dyardo) that I haue and doe loue Lady Cardonia, as much or rather more then mine owne selfe, yet neuer did I carry any other intent, but to request her in holy wedlocke, so pleased the King and Queene to like so well thereof as we could. But that euer I intended treason or villany, it is most false, and Count thou lieſt in thy throat, and thy copartners that haue sworne with thee. It is sufficient, said Palmerin: but my good Lord, quoth he to the King, if we be conquerers, the accused shall be deliuered, and the accusers hanged? What say you Counte, said the King? Good reason Sir, the like doe we request if we be victors. Will you (said Palmerin) that each shall helpe his fellow as he findes it conuenient? What else? said the Count, that is expedient. While this talke endured, Edron regarded so well Palme-rin, that hee espied the Sword which the Damosell carried in the Casket, and brought to that Court as she did to others, which shewing the Count, hee said out aloud. Where did the deuils finde this Knight to giue him this Sword? Belike they gaue him strength to draw it out, else he might haue failed as many other did: the Damosell was vnwise to bestow it in such bad sort. At which words Palmerin being angry, returned Edron this round answere. I see (Knight) there is in thee more brauerie and foolish glory then manly action, thou blamest me before thou knowest me, but ere you and I part, Ile finde better reason to bestow on you, and beate better gouernment into your pate with this sword that likes you not. This caused euery one wishly to behold Palmerin, the King remembring that he had séene the Sword, which none in his Court could deserue to conquer: whereupon he esteemed so well of Palmerin, as he commanded Edron to silence, and all to goe Arme themselues, because he intended that day to see the Combat fought.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXV.

How Palmerin, Adrian, and Ptolome entred the Combat against the Counte of Ormeque and his Cousins, whom they honourably vanquished.

After the King had commaunded the knights to goe arme themselues, he gaue charge to foure of his ancientest knights to see the Field prouided, and there to place the Iudges, according to the wonted custome in Bohemia: the knights being carefull of the kings commaundement had soone prepared all things in readinesse, wherefore the king, his Lords, Ladies and Gentlewomen, went to see the issue of this valiant enterprise. Then was the Prince Dyardo and faire Cardonya brought into the field, before whom was made a very great fire, wherein they should be burned, if the count conquered. Soone after came the fire Combatants, who entred at two places appointed one against the other, the Challengers being conducted by two of the Iudges to their place, and the defendants by the other two where they were appointed: so the Iudges being placed, the Marshall summoned the field, and the Heralds bid the Champions doe their endeuour.

Palmerin had good regard to Edron, whose wordes sticking on his stomacke, called now for reuenge, wherefore couching his Launce, hee encountred him with such a full cariere, as his Launce passed through his body, and Edron tumbled dead to the ground. In the meane while the Count and Prince Adrian had vnhorsed each other, Adrian so sore

wounded

wounded as he could hardly helpe himselfe: as for Ptolome and Edward, they had astonied each other with falles from their Horses, but they recouered themselues quickly, and with sharpe strokes beganne to charge each other valiantly. Greatly ashamed was the County to bee vnhorsed, and therefore to recouer his honour, hee came with great furie towards his enemie: which Palmerin perceiuing, stept betweene them, saying. To me County, to me, who will bid more for thy head then any in the field. With which words he reached him such a sure stroke on the head, as made the fire flye forth of his eyes: notwithstanding, as a man of good courage, he stept aside, and thrusting his Sword into Palmerins Horse throate, enforced him quickly to take him to his feete: but all the worse for him as it fell out afterward, for Palmerin hauing beaten him out of breath, he flung away his weapon, and caught him about the middle, where they tugged so long together, that Palmerin getting him downe, and his knees on his belly, with his Sword sone toke his head from his shoulders. All this while Ptolome had good play with his enemie, and after many dangerous wounds receiued on either side, at length hee had the better of the day by killing his aduersarie. Then hee and Palmerin went to the Iudges, who giuing them sentence of honourable victory, they toke off their Helmets, and came to see in what estate the Prince Adrian was. Euill enough (quoth he) my noble good Friends, but the lesse account doe I make of my life, in that mine eyes haue seene due vengeance on mine enemies. Then was he nobly borne forth of the field, the King commaunding to lodge him in his owne Pallace, and the Chirurgions searching his wounds, found them mortall, which newes did greeue the whole Court ingenerall: the good olde Prince yet being of some courage, was ioyfull to dye in so good sort, hauing defended his owne honour and his Sonnes, whome hee sent for, and in the presence of all the standers by, saide. My Sonne, seeing it hath pleased God thus to send for mee, good reason

is

is that his will be fulfilled, but ere I depart, this I command thee, that (next God) thou truely serue and loue my Lord and King, beating towardes him a heart so faithfull, as I haue done to the houre of my death: and conceyue no offence at what hath passed betwéen thée and mée: hauing come to passe (as I iudge) more by euill counsell, then any setled perswasion against vs. For the rest, to thy vttermost remember the good thou hast this day receiued by that noble Knight, who is called Palmerin: then calling Palmerin to him, he said. Syr Palmerin, Death seized so surely on mée, as I cannot let you know a number of things that concerne you very nerely: I counsell you therefore to trauell to the Emperours Court of Allemaigne; where you shall heare tydings of that you séeke so earnestly. With which words he deliuered vp his ghost. And because it séemeth good, ere I passe any further, to let you knowe how the Prince Adrian came by the knowledge of Palmerin, thus it is;

I haue heretofore reported, that he was a notable Cabalist or Magician; by meanes whereof few secrets were concealed from him: so casting his Kalender of most honourable Byrths, he happened on Palmerin: and perceyuing the high Fortune he was borne to, chiefly, that he should proue a most notable Knight, and the greatest Lord in Europe: hée was desirous to contract a Marriage betwéene him and his Niece Polinarda, presenting her to him in his Visions, as hath bene declared. Hée thus deceasing, the King highly discontented at his Vncles hard fortune, caused him to be buryed in most sumptuous manner: making him a Tombe in forme of a Pyramides, the most excellét and stately that euer was in Bohemia, and ouer against him were hanged the bodyes of Count and his two Cousins, for his Trophe. Thus euery thing quieted, and the Funerals of the Prince Adrian solemnized, Palmerin would presently haue departed toward Allemaigne: but Ptolomes Wounds were so dangerous, as hée was constrained to stay longer then hee intended. In the mean space the King did them all the honor that could be done,

deuised, in hope to kay them still in his Court, but it was impossible, for Palmerin told him he must nedes go to the Emperour, about affayres of very great importance. I know your meaning well enough (saide the King,) you intend to goe combate with the Enchanted Knight: and in so doing you shall lose both your paines and your life, as many others haue done before you.

What Enchaunted Knight is it (saide Palmerin? on my Faith (my Lord) I neuer heard any one talke of him but you. Then wil I tel ye, (qd. the king) since I haue begun the matter. Not long since in the Countrey of the Emperour my Uncle, in the Citie of Ymanes, dwelled a wealthy Knight, who had a faire Daughter, amorous of a Gentleman: and they re loue kept so secret as none knewe it but themselues. It so fell out, that her Father marryed her to another Gentleman in his house, but for any good acceptation, or chearfull countenance of the Gentle-woman, the Bride-groome could haue none, so highly esteemed shee her first Loue: and continued in opinion towards him so firme, as shee graunted him enterance into her Chamber, at an appointed time, where he murdered her Husband, and carryed the Lady with him whether he pleased. The bruit hereof was so sone spread abroad, as the Mother of the murthered Gentleman heard thereof: Whereupon shee made her complainte to the Emperour, who immediately sent to summon the other before him: but they refusing to come, and hauing betaken themselues to a very strong Castle, were in the ende so streightly besieged, as the Lady with her louer, at length were taken, and hauing confessed the trueth of they re offence, sentence was giuen on them, that they should both be burned. The Father of this Knight offender so grieued hereat, as hee went to one of his Sisters, intending neuer to see the Emperour and his Court againe. His Sister seeing him in this extremitie, (as no malice or baude inuention is comparable to a Womans) deuised to Enchant one of her Sonnes, a good hardy Knight, in such sorte, as hee should neuer be ouercome in Fight, but

with

with an Enchauntment of greater force. Besides, shee gaue him a Bow, and a great company of empoysoned Arrowes, wherewith hee should kill the Emperour and his Children, or any other whome himselfe pleased: which hee hadde not failed to haue done, but mine Vncle Adrian vnderstanding therof, did take such carefull regard to the matter, as he could not hurt them, but many of his people: so that the Countrey is wonderfully perplexed. For hee is mounted on a Horse Enchaunted as himselfe, the swiftest in pace that euer was seene, wherewith hee flyes into many out-places of the Empyre, committing a thousand harmes, and cannot be stayed, for whosoeuer comes to him Armed, Knight, or Peasant, all dyes the death, and none escapes him. And that which is worst of all, it is commonly reported, that if mine Vncle will not giue him his eldest Sonne Trineus and faire Polinarda his Daughter, to doe with them what shall like his humour, hee will neuer departe the Countrey, till hee haue throughly ruinated it. By my Sworde (my Lorde) saide Palmerin, in all my life I neuer heard so strange a tale, were I sure to dye a thousand deaths, I will fight with this Diuell, and deliuer the Countrey, if my strength will compasse it. Alas my good Friende (saide the King) it would much displease mee that you should hazard your selfe in such a daungerous aduenture: for where such diuelish Enchantments are, the strength of man (how great soeuer it be) doth not preuaile: & therefore for my sake I pray you forbeare. Let come what please God (said Palmerin) for if I dye now, I shalbe excused for euer hereafter. Well sawe the King that hee could not chaunge his minde, therefore he left off any further to intreate him: and too long he thought he tarried for Ptolomes health, so desirous was hee to bee with the Emperour, hoping that his Combat with the Enchanted knight, would graunt him meanes to see and talke with Faire Polinarda. Wherefore when his companion had gotten a little strength, they toke their leaue of the King and the Ladyes, chiefely of the Prince Dyardo, and faire Cardonia: who after they departe-

departure had such succesſe in their Loue, as with the Kings consent the Marriage was solemnized. Now are Palmerin and Ptolome on the way to Gaunt, where the Emperour made his continuall aboade: the Enchaunted Knight so persecuting him, as he durſt at no time came forth of his Castle.

CHAP. XXVI.

¶ How Palmerin and Ptolome arriued at the Cittie of Gaunt, where the Emperour of Allemaigne kept his Court: and of the Combate between Palmerin and the Enchaunted Knight.

GOod expedition made these Knights in their Journey, till at length they arriued at the Cittie of Gaunt, where the Emperour of Allemaigne then soiourned, not knowing how to depart thence, because the Enchaunted Knight watched him at all hours: our Knights being thus come thither, lodged in the house of a wealthie Burgesse, where they were entertained in very honourable manner. They were no sooner dismounted from their Horses, but the whole Cittie was on a sudden vprore, and the people ranne on heapes from one place to another: which made him remember what the King of Bohemia hadde tolde him, and presently he imagined what after followed, for his Host in great feare, came running to him, saying:

Alas Syr, we are all vndone, the Enchanted Knight hath gotten the Gates of the Cittie, and in despight of the Guard hee is entred: Wonderfull is the harme that hee will now

do,

dow, if the Prince Trineus and fayre Polinarda be not releeued. God defend such hard Fortune (saide Palmerin,) rather will I fight with him, and if I dye, I shall accompany many others in vnfortunate successe. With these woords he toke his Launce, and galloped that way where hee hearde the tumult, which was at the Emperours Castle, where the Enchaunted Knight was, shoting his poysoned Arrowes at the windowes hee espyed open. Joyfull was Palmerin to finde him in such a place, where the Lady Polinarda might giue iudgement of his valour, which opinion did so renew his courage, as presently hee marched towards his Enemie, who held in his hand a persian Bowe, with an Arrow in it ready to shoote, hauing a great sort more at his backe, in his Quyuer: he was of vnreasonable stature, yet with a countenance both sterne and courageous, all which could not dismay Palmerin, but called to him in this manner. Proude Knight, that by the ayde of Diuells and euill Spirits, hast committed monstrous cruelties: It is now time that hee whome thou seruest should haue his preye, which is thy saule into endlesse perdition. And so without staying for an answere, hee ranne valiantly against him: but the Enchaunted Knight taking his aduantage, shot an Arrow at him so violently, as it pierced through his Armour to the bare flesh. Palmerin hauing broken his Launce, with an Iron Mace hee had, hee reached such a stroake to the Knight, as hee brake his Bowe in two pieces, and the blowe falling on the head of his Horse, made him therewithall fall dead to the ground. The Knight hauing recouered himselfe, toke a Mace that hung at his Saddle bowe, and came against Palmerin, who was mowe on foote likewise: So layde they on loade terribly with their Maces, that the Emperour and his Nobles, Lordes and Ladyes, hearing the stroakes, came to the windowes, to see the Combat, little thinking that any one durst presume to meddle with his enemie: yet all this while the Knightes neuer breathed, although their Shields and Armours were very much mingled, and their bodyes wounded in many places.

And

And because Palmerin saw the fight endure so long with the Mace, he threw it down, and took him to his sword, wherewith hee did so bumbaste him about the head, as he could scant tell where to strike againe: but the knight on a sudden lifting vppe his Mace, gaue Palmerin such a stroke betweén the head and the shoulders, as made him stagger, and reele to and fro amazedly; yet comming to himselfe, and seeing the knight faint, with his great effusion of blood, closed with him, and casting his legge behinde him, threw him to the ground, when setting his foote on his brest to keepe him downe, with his Sworde he parted his head from his bodie.

What question were it whether the Emperour reioyced hereat or no? who for his whole Empyre would not he were aliue againe, beeing so well deliuered from his onely enemie in the world, that could so molest him and his Countrey with such mischieuous cruelties. And for to say soth, the Enchaunted knight was altogether inuincible: nor could Palmerin haue thus preuailed against his wonderfull Enchantments, but that the three Sisters of the Mountaine Artiſæria highly fauoured him: as you heard before what promises they made him.

The Combate beeing thus ended, and the Enchaunted knight dead, the Emperour (giuing thanks to God for this victorie) set open the gates of the Castle, and came forth himselfe to welcome Palmerin: who kneeling on his knee before the Emperour, thus spake. Mightie Prince, such renowne haue I heard through the Worlde of your exceeding honor and bountie, as I haue trauelled many strange Countreyes, to come offer you my seruice: desiring your Highnesse (if my sute may seeme reasonable) to accept mee hencefoorth amongst your knightly Seruants. Ah faire knight, (answered the Emperour) it is for me to know of you, how I may remunerate this vnspeakeable courtesie, for but by you mine enemie had triumphed in my spoyle: so much then is my selfe, my Children and Countrey bounden to you, as no satisfaction is sufficient to regratiate. So taking him by the

the hand, and perceiuing his body wounded in many places, hee conducted him into one of the faireſt Chambers in his Caſtle, where hee was vnarmed, commanding his Chirurgions to take diligent care of him, becauſe in truth they much doubted his life. Wherefore getting him into his bed, all needefull things for his health were applyed to him, and no coſt was ſpared to ſaue his life that preſerued the whole Countrey.

CHAP. XXVII.

How the Empreſſe came to viſite Palmerin, who kept his Chamber, becauſe hee had receiued ſuch dangerous wounds in the Combat with the enchanted Knight, and of the ſpeech he had with the faire Princeſſe Polinarda.

THe Empreſſe with her faire Daughter Polinarda, glad of the death of the enchaunted knight, came to Palmerins chamber to viſite him, who hearing of their comming, caſt a night mantle about him, which the Emperour had ſent him, and came with great reuerence to welcome them: ſo deſirous was hee to ſee her, for whom hee had trauailed ſo many ſtrange Regions. In this place it is neceſſary that you remember, what gracious gifts the three fatall ſiſters beſtowed on him, in the Mountaine Artiferia, one of them granting him this ſpeciall fauour, that he ſhould be highly eſteemed of her to whom he was deſtined, ſo ſoone as ſhe beheld him, which came to paſſe as here ſhall be declared.

red. Palmerin expecting the entreaune of the Empresse and her daughter in his chamber, meeting them at the doze, falling on his knee, did with great humility kisse their hands: but the Empresse taking him vp in her armes, saluted him with these speeches. Gentle Knight, right happy may wee count our selues by your comming hither, the Realme being more desolate then it hath beene seene heretofore, and not without cause, in respect of the great iniurie the Knight did vs, whom you haue slaine, he hauing sworne the death of my children that neuer offended him: but God bee thanked the lot hath fallen on himselfe, which hee determined to inflict on other: for which great grace they stand so deepely bound to you as to their Father that first gaue them life, which by your prowesse you haue happily preserued: this second gift being of no lesse account then the first, worthily may you be called their second Father. Palmerin giuing eare to the Empresse salutations, had his minde more busied in beholding Polinarda, whose daintie regard so maistered his opinions, as head, heart, thoughts and all were now set to worke: yet couertly he shaped this answere to the Empresse. Madame, what I haue done for you and yours, is nothing in respect of my great good will: for since the time I first had knowledge of my selfe, and before I receiued the order of Knighthoode, vnderstanding of my Lord the Emperour, and what honourable entertainment was in his Court, I dedicated my seruice to him onely, and for this cause Madame came I hither. But how is it possible Sir, said thee, that you can content your selfe to be one of his Knights, your deserts being so great? Very well Madame, quoth hee, and yours too, so please your Highnesse to afford me such fauour. With all my heart Sir, said shee, shall I entertaine you towards the Emperour, and on mine owne behalfe will prouide better for you then I will speake of: and did it like you, I would accept you for a Virgins Knight heere, and none other. Whereupon shee called her Daughter Polinarda, saying. Faire Daughter, this Knight as yet hath little acquain-

tance

tance in the Court, I pray you see his entertainment may be good, because his desire is to make stay with vs, and for your owne part, looke that you intreate him well, with this request, that you accept him for your seruaunt, and he shall be your Knight. And are you both agreed Ladies, said Palmerin? Heauen forsake mee if I refuse honour of so high account. And as they would haue proceeded on, the Emperour came in and brake off their talke, and comming to the Empresse, said, Madame, I beseech you haue good regard to the health of this Knight, and let our Chirurgions not trifle the time with him, for I perswade my selfe, that the enchaunted Knight with his venomed arrowes, hath wounded him with great danger inwardly, and hath besides sore bruised his bodie with the weight of his Mace. But *Palmerin* hauing *Polinarda* so neere him, neither minded his wounds, or what the Emperour had spoken, his object more delighted, then his wounds greeued him, then the Emperour taking him by the hand, said, I pray you my deere Friend to bee of good comfort, dispayre not for any thing I beseech you, and be aduised by them that haue care of your health, for you shall want nothing if my Crowne will purchase it. So departed hee and the Empresse, with their Daughter *Polinarda*, whom loue had already so inueigled, that shee (being yet but tender of yeeres) found her selfe so restrained of her libertie, as shee scant knew how to dissemble this suddaine affection: and from that time forward shee became so sad and pensiue, as one of her Ladies, the most fauoured and familiar with her, named Brionella, Daughter to the Duke of Saxon, well perceiued it, yet durst shee not presume to demaund, whence proceeded this strange alteration, but so circumspectly did shee regard the Princesse, as shee well noted the ground of her griefes. Whereupon it happened, that one time amongst other, they two being alone together, Brionella iudging that her Lady delighted to heare speech of *Palmerin*, how to hit the nayle on the head, shee thus began. What say you Ma-

daune, (by your fauour) of the new come Knight: did you euer see a brauer and more accomplisht Gentleman? Vpon my faith Madame, in mine opinion I thinke that nature hath wrenght all her perfections in him, and fauoured him aboue all other Knights in manhode and Chiualrie. Ah Brionella, answered the Princesse, thou art not alone of this opinion, for I euer thought as much though I kept it in silence: would God I had as great authority ouer him, as hee already hath gotten ouer me. Is the matter so with you, saide Brionella? it should seeme you are in loue with him then. To tell thee the truth Brionella (quoth shee) I am, and did I not doubt some other hath preuented mee, I would aduenture to make him mine. In good soth Madam, said Brionella, you two being united together in one reciprocall league of loue, well might it bee reported the most honourable match, and of the two noblest young Princes through the whole world: and seeing you haue made a choyse so worthie, dismay not good Madame, but proceede in your determination. Thus deuised the two Ladies together on Palmerin, who was no lesse in affection for the loue of Polinarda, whom hee had searched with so great paine and trauaile, and had now found with so high good fortune. If loue was so earnest with him before in his sleeping visions having not seene her, much more vehement was the impression now hauing her in presence. Whereupon the day following he called for his garments, and as he was making himselfe readie, the Emperour by one of his Gentlemen sent him the good morrow, desirous to vnderstand in what plight hee felt himselfe. God Sir, answered Palmerin to the Gentleman, I beseech you doe my humble dutie to the Emperour for this great courtesie, and you may thus assure him, that (heauen be praysed) I feele my selfe in so good estate as euer I did. Which the Emperour hearing was highly contented, and sent to desire his company to the Chappell, where Palmerin (neuer before so thoroughly touched with the forcible assaults of loue) glaunced so many

many sweet lookes on the Princesse Polinarda, and breathed so many sighes, the secret Ambassadours of his heart, as it was a heauen to him to be in these passions. The Emperour and all the traine returned from the Chappell, they went to meate, and Palmerin being placed right against Polinarda, was in such fits as hee knewe not what countenance to vse: for his colour went and came in such manner, as the Princesse might easily iudge the cause of his dolour, whereupon shee presently presumed, that he had more interest in his thoughts then ere shee looked for. The like opinion conceiued he of her, yet was no other testimony deliuered on either side, then sad countenances, the reuealers of a tormented spirit. Thus continued these two louers, till the Tables were withdrawne, and then the Lords and Ladies fell to dauncing, in which delight and diuers other, the whole day was spent, till the Empresse and her Ladies departing to their Chambers, the good night on all sides was reuerently giuen: when Palmerin went to his lodging in such an agonie, as more likely to dye then liue, hee threw himselfe on his bed, where hauing sighed and sorrowed long time grieuously, at length hee brake forth into these termes. Ah Palmerin, vnhappie, wretched and most miserable, now art thou entred into such a Labyrinth, as impossible is it for thee to get out againe with life, but what should moue thee to so high an enterprise, being no way able to equall her that is serued to none? Alas, now doe I plainely see the small credite is to bee reposed in Dreames, and that the visions I saw in my Father Gerrards house, on the Mountaine Artifania and elsewhere, are friuolous illusions, and of no account: with them mixed I ioyne the promise made mee by old Adrian, who boasted to knowe so much of my fortunes, for loue is not of such power on my behalfe, that faire Polinarda, either can or will make any reckoning of me. Then Palmerin resolue thy selfe sufficiently to die, that this inuisible and consuming fire, which by little and little melts thee away, may bee extinguished, and

thy sels eases. With thos wordes hee breathed forth such an extreame sigh, as Vrbanillo the Dwarfe (being nere) heard him, who doubting least any new misthaunce had happened by the priuie wounds the enchaunted Archer gaue him, made haste to know the cause of this ecuill. Ah Vrbanillo, quoth Palmerin, I finde my self sare wounded then dead. What my Lord, said the Dwarfe, now you ought to bee of best disposition, will you deceiue vs with this alteration? The Emperour neuer gaue you bad countenance since your comming, whence then should proceede this straunge conceit. No no Vrbanillo, quoth hee, it is not the Emperour, but a Lord of greater power then his Maiestie. It is Loue my Lad, the strict commaunder of the stoutest minds, hee hath conquered mee, and well I know I shall die, if thou doe not finde the meane to helpe me. By my faith my Lord (quoth the Dwarfe) so please you to tell mee how and wherein I may helpe you, let me die a thousand deathes if I doe it not. Vnderstand then my good Vrbanillo, said Palmerin, that this strange alteration, proceedes from the diuine lookes of my peereles Mistresse Polinarda, whose fiery beames haue searched to naire bely euer corner of my thoughts, as I must die because I loue so dereely. But couldest thou make known me to her the least part of my insupportable vexations, may be she would haue some pittifull remorse of my martyrdome: for well may it be iudged, that a Lady accomplished with so many vertuous perfections, must needes bee stored with sweetnes, fauour and pittie. Not vnlike my good Lord said Vrbanillo, but doe you not remember how I was punished, when in the like case I ventured to solicite your loue to Laurana, Daughter to the Duke of Durace? by my faith my Lord, I shall not forget it while I haue a day to liue, and am afraid to fall againe into the like danger. And this spake Vrbanillo with such a grace, as Palmerin could not but laugh, noting with what feare the deformed fellow gaue it forth, whereupon hee said. Thou needest not be dismaid, if she that sinote thee in thy sleepe be thy Polinarda, for whose

loue

love I am thus tormented, and for whom I was borne, as many have enformed mee: I pray thee therefore speake to her, and dread no colours. It is good, said Vrbanillo, that you would have mee more hardy then you are your selfe: speake to her your selfe if you dare, for I dare not adventure it for feare of my life. If thou doest it not (quoth Palmerin, assure thy selfe thou shalt never hencefoorth serve mee. Nay then (quoth the Dwarfe) I will rather put my selfe in ieopardie, to be better beaten then I was the last time, before I will lose so good a Maister. I pray thee doe, said Palmerin, in respect thou seest the earnestnesse of mine affections. Feare not (quoth the Dwarfe) albeit you were a great deale more fit to breake the matter then I: but I will gage my life to gaine you the Lady, and hereupon they rested till the next morning.

CHAP. XXVIII.

How Polinarda desired Palmerin to give her his Dwarfe, and of the speech which shee and Vrbanillo had afterward together.

EArly the next morning Palmerin arose, and having walked abroade to contemplate his desires, returned into the chamber of audience, where he found Trineus the Emperours Sonne conferring with the Ladies: at which very instant the Dwarfe entred, whose hard favoured body and face, made them all fall a laughing, so that Trineus came to his Sister Polinarda, saying. Sister, did you ever behold

a more proper Page to attend on Ladies, then this gaunt Squire that serues my Lord Palmerin? In good sooth Brother, quoth she, he is farre vnlike his noble Master, yet would I like well enough if hee were mine. I beseech you Sir Palmerin, said Trineus, bestowe your Seruant on my Sister Polinarda. Madame, quoth Palmerin, were he better, he is yours, and his Maister likewise. Then called he Vrbanillo, who kneeling to vnderstand his Maisters pleasure, he said: Vrbanillo, I haue giuen you to my Lady Polinarda as her man, will you not serue her honourably and truely aboue all other? Yea my Lord, quoth he, next after you, but you will I not leaue while I liue, although you would disdaine my seruice. God reason hast thou, said the Princesse, and well am I pleased it should be so: yet during the time of his stay here, you shall forsake him and abide with me. For that Madame, quoth the Dwarfe, I am well contented. Then loke you faile not, said the Princesse, henceforth to giue your attendance. These speeches were thus vsed as it were for passtime, that thee might thereby deceiue the iudgements of other: but her whole intent was, to knowe of Vrbanillo, if his Maister were affected to any other Lady, by whose meanes her loue might be frustrate. For as you haue heard, a little before that loue had brought her vnder such obeysance, as did not the regard of honour withholde her, her selfe would first breake the Isle of her berations, rather then stay too long and not bee solicited. Many other deuises had the Ladies with Vrbanillo, who knew so well how to behaue himselfe, as from thence forward he grew so familiar amongst them: as hee would enter their Chambers when himselfe pleased, vnder colour of attendance on the Princesse Polinarda, from time to time to moue his Maisters messages. But at length hee preuented him in this sort, for being alone at a window in the presence Chamber, hee called the Dwarfe, and making her entrance by other occasions, she asked him whose Sonne Palmerin was. God knowes Madame, quoth hee, for I doe not, nor himselfe neither:

neither: but of this I can assure you, that neuer was knighthly Cheualrie bettter employed by any then by him, for since the time of my knowledge, hee hath done such noble Acts, as it is not remembred that euer knight in this age did the like. And then from point to point hee discoursed all that Palmerin had done since his comming to him: And can you thinke then good Madam (quoth the Dwarfe) that hee is discended of Noble linage? Trust mee Ladie, I haue my selfe heard by many learned Magicians, and others, that they? Diuinations were no lesse then I say.

Polinarda heard the Dwarfe thus speake on his Maisters behalfe, if before his loue had kindled her liking, no marueil if heart and spirit were now enflamed: so that now shee could not longer conceale what she had hitherto couered, and therefore said to the Dwarfe, I beseech thee Vrbanillo, by the faith and dutie thou beareſt to thy Maister, Tell me one thing that I desire to know of him, which shall tende to nothing but to his honour and aduantage. You haue so Conjured me, faire Madame (quoth the Dwarfe) as death shall not compell mee to hide whatsoeuer you shall please to commaund, if it lye in me to resolue you. Know then Vrbanillo, said the Princesse, that I loue thy Maister as dearely as my Brother Trineus: and am desirous to know of thee, what Lady it is he esteems aboue all other: because when I know her, I may loue her the better for his sake: Withall, that I may commend the Ladyes happinesse, whose fortune is to be loued of so braue a Gallant: Well perceiued the Dwarfe, that eyther now or neuer was the time to bestirre himselfe, according to the promise he had made to his Maister: wherefore he answered the Princesse in this manner. Beleeue me Madame, were it to any other, I would not reueale such secrets of my Lord as you desire to know: but to you that are his Ladyes Mistresse, I am content to bewray the whole. Suffiseth then Madam, that hee loueth in such sort, that if the Heauens send him not remedie the sooner, impossible it is that his Life should long endure: for I see him so farre beside himselfe, and tormented

with

swith so many passions, as euery houre his death is expected. What will ye Ladie that I say? He complaines, he sighes, and day by day is in such dispaire for his Ladyes Loue: As happie might I haue counted him, had he neuer seene her, or that his dayes were as short as his desires. If then Polinarda were in doubt (not iudging her selfe to bee shee) it may easily be imagined, and presently was she brought into such a perplexitie, as the Vermillion colour in her cheeks beganne to chaunge, such sodden feares possessed her minde, & so manie sundry varieties of opinion thwarted her conceyt, as fain she would haue spoken, but could not of long time, whereby the Dwarfe discerned the cause of her alteration, yet he dissembled what he saw, and thus continued on with his discourse.

Now considering (Faire Madame) the high desects of my Lord and Maister, may thee be esteemed happie (as you say) that shall cause the losse of the best Knight living this daye? My Mistralle, if he dye (as God forbode,) farewell the onely flower of all true Noblenesse, and the most assured Friende to distressed Ladyes. Wherefore I beseech you pardon me, I shall name her vnto you: and let mee intreate you to deale with her so farre, that the courtesie wherein she is indebted to so good a Knight as my Lord and Maister is, may be shewed effectually, as that she would loue and fauour him, as her duty and hath very well deserued. Trust me Vrbanillo, answered the Princesse, when I know the Lady I will, I beleue, if she do not regarde his passions as she ought, I will intreate her at my request to be more pittifull. These wordes procured a sodden iealousie in her, that thee should promise to another what shee most desired herselfe: yet somewhat earnest to be resolued, she bowed to fulfill her promise, and therefore desired him to tell her Name. So you will giue mee your word Madame, (quoth the Dwarfe,) not to take in ill parte what I shall say, I will satisfie your request presently. Beleeue mee (saide the Princesse,) I will not, rather perswade thy selfe, that herein thou dost me great pleasure. My faire Princesse (quoth the Dwarfe) it is for you and no other, that my

my Lord is thus tormented, it is for you that hée lines, and dyes an hundred times a day: Sweete Ladie haue pittie on him, and séeke not the losse of so good a Knight, who loues you dearer then his owne life. At which answere shée was surprized with incredible pleasure, yet feigning the contrary, shée saide: Is it I? And how long I pray you? By my faith Madame (quoth hee) that can I not tell you: But I haue heard him say of a long time: more then foure yeares before hee was Knighted, hee vowed himselfe yours: since which time, all his honourable Actions hath hée onely dedicated to your praise. So that for to finde you, hee left the King of Macedon, and his Sonne Florendos, with whom he was in such estimation, as no man the like: yet that honour hée forsoke to do you seruice: and for your loue he yelded himselfe as vassall to the Emperour your Father, and gaue himselfe your Knight, if you deigne to accept him. When Polinarda had well heard the Dwarfe (albeit her heart floated in ioyes) yet could shée so well commaund her thoughts, as shée séemed to make small account of his wordes: Notwithstanding, returned him this answer. I promised thée Vrbanillo, not to conceiue yll of ought thou shouldest tell mee, nor do I: yet would I haue thée to regarde my calling, being Daughter to so high and mighty a Prince as is the Emperour: But if it be so, that Palmerin thy Lord and Maister beares mee such speciall affection, I must let him knowe by thée, that it would haue bene farre more séemely, himselfe to haue told mee, then to make thée Ambassadour in such secrete affayres: Neuertheless, I mislike not of his honourable Loue and good will, whereof I shal thinke better, when I know the effect is conformable to thy protestations. Madame (quoth the Dwarfe) so you would please to vouchsafe him time and place, hee will make you acquainted with strange matter, concerning both your Destinies: which cannot else can bee preiudice your honour. Why tell him (said the Princesse) hée shall haue me daylie heere in the Chamber of Parlasme, where hée may say his pleasure with safetie. In meane space I accept him as

my

my Knight, charging him that hee do not departe the Court without any licence, if hee desire to do me pleasure.

The Dwarfe well pleased with so good an answere, on his knee kissing the Princesse hand, toke leaue of her to returne towards Palmerin: who meeting him by the way, in place conuenient, said:

How now Vrbanillo what newes hast thou brought mee? life or death? Maister (answered the Dwarfe,) as you haue good occasion to repute your selfe the most fortunate Knight that euer bare Armes. Then palmerin embracing him, said: Ah tell mee what they are: Hast thou spoken with diuine Polinarda? Takes thee any pitty on my consuming cares? That doth she (my Lord (quoth the Dwarfe) and comaunds you by me (if you be so vowed hers as I haue perswaded) that henceforth you depart not the Emperours Court, without her leaue. Then recited hee the whole talke betweene them, and lastly, the pleasure shee conceiued in so good tydings: so that shee accepted him onely for her Knight. Whilest the Dwarfe continued this discourse, Palmerin was rauished with such inward ioy, as with a great sigh, he saide: O heauens, how do you fauour mee? Now see I well, that my seuerall apparitions on the Mounts of Oliues and Artiseria, are predestinations, ordained to me by your Gracious presence: I beseeche you therefore humbly, that what you haue promised may soone come to effect, for the regarde of incomparable Polinarda. Then demanded he, by what meanes he might attaine to speake with the Princesse? Shee saith (quoth hee) that you shall haue her daylie in the Presence, or in the Empresse Chamber, and there may you safely imparte your whole minde vnto her. But I haue other newes to tell you, For I vnderstand certainely, that the Emperour intendes a matter greatly for your aduantage: he minndes to morrow to visite one of his Castles neere at hande, and there also, to passe the time, in honour of the Ladies will haue a Tourney. So that there (better then any where else) may you and Polinarda conferre togither: therefore courage your selfe, and

goe

goe keepe companie with my Lord the Emperour, it may be himselfe will acquaint you with this Enterprise.

Now credite mee Vrbanillo, (saide Palmerin) thou hast don so much for mee, as I shall neuer recompence thee while I liue: but I pray thee tell me, did she not at the first take my message strangely? That did she (quoth the Dwarfe) when I perswaded her that you loued a Ladie in such sort as hardly could you liue without her fauourable regard: then she thinking it was some other and not herselfe, chaunged her colour marueilous passionately, but let it suffise you, that thee is as deepe in loue as you are or can bee.

So went Palmerin to the Emperour, who calling him to him, saide: My noble Friend, I shall make knowne to you what hath bence concluded in your absence. The Ladyes of our Court haue bene so long lockt in, for feare of the Enchaunted Knight whome you haue slaine, as they haue desired to progresse a little: for which cause, and to pleasure them, I am thus determined; Two leagues hence haue I a goodly Castle, enuironed with Woods and pleasant Meadowes, there may we hunte the wilde Harte and Boze, with other pastimes: but now haue I caused Scaffolds and other preuision to be made there for a Tourney, and fortie Knightes will I appoint in this Action, tenne against tenne, and the first Conquerours shall keepe the fielde against tenne other, that shall reuenge the tenne banquished: So hauing all iousted, they shall fight at Barryers, with rebated swordes, and the braueste Champyon shall haue a rich Jewell, which the Empresse hath prouided for that purpole. Now would I haue you one of the ten Challengers, and my Nephew Ganerino, on the Defendants side: for him do I esteeme one of the best Knights of my Court: Will you not do thus much at my request? God forbidde (saide Palmerin) that I shoulde refuse any thing you please to commaunde. These newes were immediately published thorough the Court, which made euery Knight spedily to prepare himselfe, hoping to be of that number of the fortie, that should performe

the

The Tourney: and thus they priuily imparted to their Ladyes, how they would breake both Swords and Launce for their Loue. Among whome Ptolome was not the last, for he so affected the young Princesse Brionella, as he had made her sole Mistresse of his hart, yet could he not find the meanes to acquainte her therewith: But the next day, as she rode among the Ladyes, they had good leysure to conferre togither, & before they arriued at the Castle, they discouered throughly vnto each other their Affections, promising mutually such a iust consent in Loue, as the one should bragge of the others happinesse. While they thus continued their louely amorous discourse, Palmerin who had but newly presented himselfe to Polinarda, was much discontented, because so soone as hee came to her, the Empresse called her, and left not talking with her till they alighted from Horsebacke: Notwithstanding, before night, hee gained recompence for that disaduantage: for after Supper, the Emperour and the Ladyes went a walking, by a goodly Riuers side, there to disporte themselues, in the cole of the euening. Now was it the merry Maye moneth, when the Fields were richly decked with Natures Tapistrie, and Cupid gaue good opportunity to his Subiects, to contemplate they sweet and affable desires, and well came it to passe for Palmerin, while Trineus and Ptolome were conuersing with the Empresse, that hee taking his Ladie and Mistresse by the Arme, walked with her amongst the faire Flowers, and seing the time and place serue him so well, trembling, (as surprized with a vehement passion) thus beganne. Madame, your gratious nature will not count it strange, but rather take it in good part, that I a knight Errant, and as yet vnknowne among Courtly assemblyes, should presume to make knowne a secrete to you, which my self dare not imagine without reuerence, and death can cause me declare to none: nor may I procede without some assurance of my vncertaine hope, by her diuine pittie that giues me life. And although the words of my Dwarfe haue acquainted mee with your Princely fauour, sufficient to expell all

feare

feare and suspition of reproofe: yet such is the height whereto I aspire, as the greatest Monarch in the World can scantly deserue, then well may I esteeme my selfe vnworthie. But doubting whither your words were such, or that my Dwarfe (perhaps as hee often may doe,) hath reported more then hee had giuen him in charge: I am desirous, (trusting on your benignitie and speciall fauour aboue all other) to vnderstand, if your good pleasure be so highly to honour mee, as henceforth to accept me for your Knight and Seruant. And if such vndeserued fauour and grace may happily fall to my lot, I shall not only acknowledge, that Fortune hath directed my course, to the onely place of honour, but shall haue good occasion beside, to make knowne by my knighthood, that I am the Fauourite of the most fayre Princesse. Herein good Madame, you shall not dissent from reason, if I hauing lost my Libertie (by beeing onely yours,) want the Modestie that should shielde mee in your high regarde: Therefore may you sweete Lady, in mine excuse, accuse Loue, and your celestiall beauty: both stronger to commaund mee, then I to gainesay. My Dwarfe hath let you know (as he told mee) part of the paine I endure for your sake, which you cannot but thinke well of, in that my Destinie so commaunded mee, long time before I sawe or knewe you, not alone in Visions, but by manifest solicitings, so that in search of you, I haue suffered such trauell, as maruell it is that Nature could make mee able to sustaine. Notwithstanding, I account all right happily bestowed, if I may but gaine fauour in your gracious Eyes, without which, it is vnpossible for mee to liue: For there is no parte possessing eyther life or spirite in mee, that is not vowed to your only service. These words were dipt in teares, and deliuered with many a bitter sigh, which moued Polinarda to such compassion, as taking him by the right hand, shee began to playe with his Fingers, her trembling testifying her secret affections: and then breaking off Palmerins discourse, as hee thought to haue continued longer, thus answered. Sir Knight, it seemeth by your countenaunce that you despayre

of

of something, or else haue more fortitude then I can conceyue.

Esteeme you mee of simple iudgment, that knowing your valour and knightly perfections, I should not account my selfe happy to haue so braue a Champion? Let it suffice you, that what Vrbanillo tolde you, is true: and in regard of the paine you suffer for my Loue, and fancying mee so firmely as you do: Beleeue mee good knight, you feele no griefe, but it is as familiar with mee, so that what thought you haue of mee, the like haue I of you, as time and the vnspotted loue I beare you shall witnesse: in meane time promise me not to departe my Fathers Court without my consent. And because I see the Ladyes approching, referre wee the rest vntill some other time, when wee shall haue more leysure to conferre together. And tell mee now, if you be determined to Iouste to morrow? That will I Madame, (quoth hee) if it shall please you to commaund mee. In sooth (said shee) I will not hinder you, because I know the honour of the Tourney will be yours: For my sake therefore shall you weare this Bracelet, as a signe of my Fauour, and pledge of my Loue. So taking off her Bracelet, she gaue it to Palmerin, who receyued it with no little content: And so concluding their familiar talke, because many Knights and Ladyes came about them, they walked where the Emperour and the Empresse were deuising with Ptolome and Trineus. Now because darke night drew on, and the Euening dew was dangerous, they returned to the Castle, entending the next day after dinner to beginne the Tournament.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXIX.

How Palmerin gained the honour of the Tourney, and of that which happened afterward.

After the order of the Tourney was set downe by the Emperour, as you haue heard, Palmerin did but expect the houre to goe to it, not doubting to performe such chiualrie, as his Ladies fauour should be worthily honoured: wherefore hauing prepared all his necessaries readie, immediatly after Dinner, accompanied with none other knights brauely armed, whereof Ptolome was one, he entred the lists royall. And espying his Mistresse Polinarda in the window with the Empresse, after he had done her humble reuerence, he began to manage his horse with such braue carriers, as euery one delighted to behold him, but especially the Princesse, whose heart Loue had thoroughly conquered, so that she gloried to be beloued of a knight so worthy and commendable, as that her eye was neuer from the obiect of her sweet desires. And marking his shield, she beheld in a field of Sable, a siluer hand fast closed, the impost whereof caused her to meruaile, in respect what had passed betweene them before, and gladly would she haue known the meaning, but the place would afford no such countenance: wherefore perswading her selfe for the time, she was content in seeing her Bracelet, which her knight wore vpon his right arme. And after many courses and lofty poynts done by Palmerin and

the Knights before their Ladies, among whom Ptolome shewed so correspondent, as the presence of his Lady Brionell highly prouoked him. Then entred the Prince Ganareno, Nephew to the Emperour a knight of no small reckoning amongst the Allemaignes, and with him nine other, in most sumptuous armour: and their brauaries likewise tended to their Ladyes (yet nothing comparable to Palmerin and his companions) they went to their tent, and while the Trumpets and Clarions summoned the field, euery knight prepared himselfe in readines. Palmerin, not so much to win common applause, as her loue who had the soueraigne power ouer him, seeing Ganareno ordering himself to run first, tooke a strong launce, and encountred him with such puissance, as horse & man were both ouerthrowne and very sore bruised: notwithstanding, he was soone recouered by his companions, and in a Chaire caried forth of the field. One of his knights would needes reuenge his misfortune, and was him selfe in like sort serued: in breefe, the other eight had all one payment, not one of them being able to moue Palmerin from his saddle. Palmerin ioyfull of his good successe, was departing away with his company, when one of them thus spake vnto him. Sir Palmerin, you haue saued our labour, and got the honor that wee desired. Tho time willcome (quoth Palmerin) when you may do as much for me: but for this time (if you please) you may excuse me. All that were present, as well Lords as Ladies, marualled at the valour of palmerin, and among the rest the Emperour, who said aloud, that hee neuer knew a more valiant Gentleman. polinarda being so neere as she heard her Fathers wordes, and had her selfe beheld his high good fortune, was so dainely sollicited with such affectionate pleasure, as forgetting her selfe, and where she was, she thus spake to Brionella indifferent loud. What say you faire friend: doth not Palmerin worthily deserue to be loued: By my faith Madame, answered she, I neuer saw knight giue such rough encounters with the Launce, as he did to Ganareno and the rest of his cõpanions. Polinarda would

haue

haue proceeded further, but there entred ten other knights, the formost being Ptolome, not content (as it seemed) that he ran not at the first: and then entred ten knights more, of whom the formost was Cormedes an Allemaigne knight. They raunging themselues in order, ptolome and Cormedes brauely encountred, but neither were vnhorsed: which greeued Ptolome to do no better in presence of his Lady: wherefore taking another Launce, at the second course Cormedes was cast quite out of his saddle, and three more of his fellowes after him for compaine. Which when the Duke of Lorraynes Brother perceiued, a knight well accounted of in the Countrey, desirous to recouer the honour his foregoers had lost, spake thus to Ptolome. It seemes that these Grecian knights are come to rob vs of the honor that is ours by inheritance, in vnhappie houre were the Allemaignes borne if they suffer it: and so couching his Launce, met Ptolome with so full a carrire, as losing saddle and stirrops he fell to the ground, and foure more of his knights after him had like entertainement, but a hardy knight of the Emperors named Menadus, met the Dukes brother so rudely, as downe hee fell to the grounde with his saddle betweene his legges. There were many braue encounters with the Launce, to vanquish one another, and all for the loue of their Ladyes, who delighted to see their knights so brauely behaue themselues. The Iust finished, each one alighted, and with their blunt Swordes fell to the Barriers, and so cruelly they laid on each other, as they would not suffer one another to take breath: especially ptolome, who buckled with the Duke of Lorraynes Brother, to winne the honor he lost in the Iousting. And new a fresh entred noble Palmerin, who was the onely man to whom Loue and Fortune were fauourable, raunged among the thickest, and with his swoorde made way among them valiantly: at length hee came to the Duke of Lorraynes Brother, and so canuazed him about the pate with his blunt Fauchion, as he fell to the ground greatly astonied, charging

him to speake no more in disgrace of the Grecian knights. All the port ended, the knights withdrew themselues into their Chambers to be vnarmed, and each knight wrapping himselfe in his Mantle, Palmerin was in his Ladies liuery, for shee had sent him a very rich one, and so comming into the Chamber of presence, the Emperour welcomed him in this manner. Beléeue me my Lord, I account the Prince happy that hath you for his friend. As I am, my gracious Soueraigne, answered Palmerin, I am your humble and obedient seruant during life, ready to accomplish what shall please you to commaund me. The Emperour highly thanked him, and presently came the Empresse, one of the Ladies bringing with her a rich Cloke, and couered with pearles and stones of great value, which she presented to Palmerin, as the prize and honour he had wonne in the Tourney, and said to Polinarda; Faire Daughter, I am sure you will bestowe some gift on Sir Palmerin, in that hee hath so worthily deserued. These words raised a sweet blushing in the Princesse countenance, not a little reioycing that hee whom she loued, had carried away the prize from all the other knights: so with a prettie modest smile, shee tooke a chaine of Gold from about her necke, saying; See here Sir Palmerin what I giue you, this gift is to tye and chaine you in such sort, as you may neuer depart from the Emperours seruice. Palmerin with exceeding contentment receiued the chaine, and on his knée humbly thanked the Empresse and the Princesse, to whom hee spake as followeth. Madame, I am well contented to abide in such a prison, and neuer will I desire any other liberty, but still will be his vassaile that hath power to command me. This answere pleased the Emperour exceedingly, in that he desired to haue Palmerin still abide in his Court. Wherefore he said to Polinarda, you haue done well Daughter thus to binde Palmerin, for now he cannot escape away when he list. So the Tables being couered, the Emperour and all the knights of the Tourney sate downe to meate, where much talke was spent as concerning the successe on

all

all sides, but Palmerin and Polinarda had enough to doe to view each other, their eyes doing their office, and carrying betweene them the message of their passions, yet so discretly shadowed, as none could perceiue them. Supper ended, the Knights and Ladies went to daunсing, and afterwards to their chambers, because the Emperour had commanded the next day another Tournament: a briefe report whereof may very well serue, in that you can imagine there wanted no braue chiualrie. What Palmerin did that day, it were in vaine to tel, because the former day makes known his worthinesse, and Ptolome behaued himselfe in so good sort, that Brionella was as proude of him as the Princesse of her Knight, and therefore presented him with a very rich Diamond, as a token of his desert and her loue. Thus while the the Iousts endured, the Duke of Lorrayne had great familiarity with Palmerin, because hee had deliuered his Sister Cardonya, from the false treason of the Count of Ormeque. All passtimes thus finished, the Emperor returned to Gaunt, where Palmerin intreated his Mistris to appoint him time and place, where they might more priuatly discourse on their loue, the which she promised, and awaited opportunity.

CHAP. XXX.

How Polinarda discoursed her secrets to Brionella, and of the talke she had with Palmerin.

POlinarda not forgetting the promise shee made her friend, to meete him in some place where they might argue on their loue, determined to discouer her affections to Brionella, the beleeued of Ptolome: well perceiuing, that without her helpe, shee could not attaine the end of

her desires, wherefore without any longer stay, shee thus began with her. My chosen friend, I would make knowne one thing vnto thee, which death can compell me discouer to no other, wherefore thou must haue care to keepe secret my speeches, in respect of my calling, not doubting but in time to recompence any paine thou takest for me. Faire Princesse, said Brionella, in that you do me such honour, as to impart your thoughts to mee, rather will I die then fayle one iot of your commaundement, and therefore assure your selfe, that what you declare shall neuer be discouered. Then Polinarda reuealed to her the loue shee bare palmerin, what passions had tormented her, and in what extremitie her desires hadde driuen her: and therefore sweete friend (quoth shee with a deepe sigh) find thou the meane that I may priuatly talke with him. Brionella admiring the earnest loue of the Princesse, knew not readily what to answere, but seeing that by this meanes shee might more easily conferre with Ptolome, whome shee likewise intirely loued, thus spake. It is no wonder Madame, you beeing so incomparable, as I know no Prince liuing of whom you are not worthie, if you haue resolued your loue on noble palmerin, in that there is no knight in the world better deserues you, his rare chiualrie beeing such, as it cannot otherwise bee, but that hee is descended of royall linage, beeing accomplished with so many speciall perfections. Therefore Madame, so like you, I haue deuised well for your purpose, as thus. You know my chamber window stands so commodious, as you may with safety confer with him at pleasure, which you may let him vnderstand by his Dwarfe, and appoynt him time as you shall thinke conuenient. This counsell did not a little content the princesse, because she longed to that with her louer, and therefore concluded at his departure to appoint Palmerin his time. Now was the Chamber of Brionella ioyning to the Cittie wall, and had a goodly prospect into the fields, and Palmerins lodging was neere vnto it, facing the wall as the other did, so that one might easily

easily passe betweene the lodgings, nothing being betwixt them but a little garden, brauely decked with flowers, and goodly fruit Trées. The time appointed, Polinarda called the Dwarfe to her, saying. Vrbanillo, thou shalt go to thy maister, from mee and after thou hast saluted him with my manifolde well wishings, will him this night to come secretly to my Lady Brionellas chamber, where at the window we may safely talke together: and bid him not misdoubt my Lady Brionella, for I haue made her acquainted with all my secrets. And because thy selfe maist conduct him to the place, come, and I will presently shew it thee. So went the Dwarfe with polinarda to Brionellas chamber. where hauing séene the window, and glad to carrie such tydings to his maister, beeing well assured how they would content him: hee departed, and tarried not long on his message, because palmerin thought each houre a yéere to heare from his mistresse: wherefore hee beholding the Dwarfe comming, tooke him in his armes, and demaunded what newes hee had brought him? The Dwarfe with a chéerefull countenance thus answered. My Lord, Fortune spéede you as luckie, as the newes that I bring you do well deserue. By this beginning, palmerin perceiued that hee brought such tydings as hee long loked for, which was how hee might speake with the Princesse: wherefore embracing him againe, he commanded him to make report of that his sweete mistresse had giuen him in charge. Then the Dwarfe deliuered how the Princesse had great desire to see him, and where shee did intend to speake with him. Which when palmerin heard, filled with vnspeakable ioyes, hee recorded the wordes to himselfe with many iterations, and the more often hee spake the words, the more his delights increased. But tell mee (quoth he to the Dwarfe) didst thou marke the place well where I must talke with my goddesse? Thereof doubt you not my Lord, sayde the Dwarfe, for I shall not faile to bring you sure thither, if it be your pleasure I shall go with you, because the Princesse

her selfe, in company of Lady Brionella shewed it me. How am I beholding to her, said Palmerin, for this high fauour, which else were my death if I should be denied? Vpon this hee called Ptolome, to whom hee imparted euery circumstance, which Ptolome reputed for his great auaile: this offering the meane for him to visit Brionella, and therefore they concluded to goe together the night ensuing, to the place appointed for this louing encounter. The houre of rest being come, and euery one in their Chambers as best beseemed, Palmerin, Ptolome and the Dwarfe, remayned together, and seeing the time readie to countenance their enterprise, toke each of them a rich Mantle, and with their Swords vnder their armes, went out at a windowe vppon the walles: and albeit the passage was somewhat dangerous, yet loue had so encouraged them, as without regard of danger or fortune, they came to the window which the Dwarfe had shewed them, not seene by any. Polinarda who was most attentiue, hearing the trampling of their feete, saide to Brionella. Is not this Palmerin? So opening the Casements, shee saw Palmerin and Ptolome attending like diligent Seruants. If then both parties were pleased, it is not to be doubted, nothing in the world more contenting them then the sight of each other. And truely Palmerin and the Princesse had great reason, for beside that their fatall destenie did so procure them; their equall natures were so commendable and correspondent, as though they had neuer seene, yet were they borne to loue together. Now was Polinarda very brauely accoutred in a glorious night mantle, and such soft white silkes, as shee shewed brighter then the morning Starre, her fierie pointed lookes so wounding Palmerin, as rapt vppe as it were into a second heauen, hee remained silent a long time, not able to speake a word. The Princesse was likewise in the selfe same conceit, and so ouercome with regard of her Paramour, as shee continued mute, and was loth to giue the onset. Palmerin ashamed to accompanie his Lady with

such

such silence, began thus mildely to Court his Mistresse.

I did neuer thinke, (fayre Madam) that Fortune would honour mee with such extraordinary fauours, directing my course to your noble Fathers Court, to be thus entertained into your gracious seruice, hauing no deserts in mee to induce you to your choyse: but it may be in respect of some good report by such, to whome I account my selfe highly beholding, hauing thus founde the place where I was predoinate to loue, my Starre hath thus appointed it, and withall, to make me the happyest man liuing. And it may bee Madame, that such as enuie not my happinesse, haue acquainted you with some of my exterior actions, which God (not I) hath brought to passe: but they, ignorant of the entire and feruent loue I beare you, could make no iust reporte thereof to you, being a secret so speciall, and not to bee comprehended: Besides, the deapth and wonderfull nature thereof not to bee measured, therefore to be buryed in your heauenly opinion, which how ample so euer you please to graunt me, the more am I bound both in dutie and affection, which in despight of enuie and his confederates, shall remaine immoueable, and pleade the continuall loyaltie of your Knight and Seruant.

And if I should report how many times your diuine person hath beene presented me in sleepe, I would therewithall discourse infinite passions, which I endured, seeing my selfe frustrate of that I now beholde. How many Countreyes and Citties: What perils and dangers haue I past to finde you, prouoked on still with neuer chaunging loue: If this then were sufficient to make mee runne through a worlde of daungers, I leaue it to your iudgement (Sweete Madame) what it may doe now, seeing with mine eyes what I dreamed on before, and now may with safetie say, (incomparable Beautie. Here hence then proceedeth, that these my extreame Affections haue ouercome all other parties in mee, not once able to imagine how many reuerend opinions I vse of you: which must intreat you on my behalfe, that your accustomed clemencie, will pardon my preiudicate conceyte, be-

cause

cause being not mine owne, but yours onely, I may easily offend. These speeches moystened with the teares of his eyes, and luke-warme Bloud of his heart, deliuered manifest euidence how truely hee loued the Princesse, who bearing him company in all arguments of Loue, thus answered. I doubt not Sir Palmerin, but that the loue you beare me is exceeding great, noting your earnest Affections, and the great trauell you haue sustained in search of mee, and no other certaintie do I request to be perswaded by, being as vehement in affection towards you, as you are to mee: For proofe whereof, this present attempt may suffise, that against my duety I should be seene thus secretly, in a place so suspicious, and the Time so vnnecessarie. But yet if I haue offended herein, then accuse those seemely perfections which I haue obserued in you, and the confidence I repose in your good Conceyt, coupled with the honourable estimation that is generally reputed in your vertues. Pardon me (sweete Ladie) said Palmerin, if by my longing desire to speake and conferre with you, I haue in any thing displeased, for earnest good will to do you seruice, constrained me to be thus importunate. The matter is farre from any desert of offence (quoth the Princesse,) for hither are you come onely by my commaundement, to the ende that wee might see one another, and talke of such things as nerest concerne vs: and therefore resolue your selfe good Knight, that I esteeme you aboue all other, and promise you by the faith of a Princesse and loyall Friende, to dye, rather then any other shall be Lord of me. Which very words, so rauished his sences, as very hardly hee could sustaine himselfe: Whereupon Polinarda put forth her hand out at the window, which hee in often kissing well marking, beheld the Character thereon as you haue heard before. Ah (sweet Madame, (quoth he) this is the token that makes mee the happyest man this day liuing. As how I pray you (said shee) what know you hereof? Then Palmerin discoursed all his Dreames and visions, and briefly raune through repetition of his whole life, how the wise Adrian had sent him the Shielde of Sable, where-

in

in was figured a Hand fast closed together, signifying the same hand I holde at this present, because this hath the same marke the other had in figure. In truth (said the Princesse) I was desirous to know the meaning of that Shield, wherin I saw a Siluer hand closed, which you bare the first day of the Tournament, being now a little gladde in that you haue so satisfied mee. After wardes Palmerin made knowne vnto her, the marke himselfe had on his face, which agreed with hers in perfect likelyhood. O God (quoth shee (happy be the time of this meeting: Blame mee not my Lorde to be thus surprized with your Loue, seeing our fatall Destinies haue so appointed: This will cause mee to liue in more hope of good successe, then before I did, and that our amitie will sorte to such ende, as our two hearts shall both be combined in one: and yet let me see I beseech you, the marke on your face, how nere it resembles this on my hand. Shee fetching a Taper which burned in her Chamber, lifted vp his comely locke of hairel, and saw them both shaped in one forme, wherefore suddenly setting away the Light, shee embraced Palmerins head in her armes, and sealed many sweet kisses on his amiable Character. The like louing kinde salutations passed betweene Ptolome and Brionella, at an other Casement of the Windowe, with solemne Vowes and Protestations, neuer to faile each other in their loue, and this to be the fittest place for conuersing on their desires, till Fortune afforded them better opportunitie: and longer would they haue there continued, but that the dwarfe came to his Master in this manner. My Lord, I thinke you can neuer finde time to make an ende: Will you haue the day light preuent you, and so discredite you all? In soth it is time you were in your Chamber. Palmerin who was loath to departe from the pleasure of his thoughts, made small account of the Dwarfes words, and continued on in amorus deuises: But the Princesse, a little more fearful then hee, remembring the dwarfe said true, and loath to be seene suspitiously, said: My Lord, it is time to breake off, but I pray you fayle not of your promise: Let vs

visite

visite one another, now you knowe the way and place. So Palmerin and Ptolome tooke leaue of their Ladies, and passed to their Chambers without suspition: The successe of theyr Loue you shall vnderstand hereafter, as time and place shall fitte for the purpose: but now to satisfie you with choyse of delights, we will returne a while to another discourse.

CHAP. XXXI.

¶ How the King of Fraunce kept a Royall and magnificent Courte: And how his Sonne Lewes became enamoured of the Duchesse of Burgundie.

During the time that the Emperour of Allemaigne liued in this happinesse, accompanyed (as you haue heard) with manie hardy Knightes: there raigned in France a mightie Prince named Agariel, valiant, wise, and vertuous, who had three sonnes, whereof the second was the hardiest Knight at Armes, being named Lewes.

This King Agariel, the more to honour his Knights and noble Gentlemen abiding in his Realme, determined to kéep open Court for all commers, as none of his predecessors euer did the like before him, and therefore sent abroade his Heralds, Gentlemen of hie Escuirie, and others, to summon his Lords and Barrons of France, that on a day appointed, they would all meete at the Courte.

And because none should be ignorant what hee intended, hee requested that all Gentlemen professing Armes, at the Feast of Easter following, should repaire to Paris, being the head

heade and chiefest Cittie of the whole Kingdome. The Quéene likewise aduertized all Ladyes and Gentlewomene at whose commaund euery one obeyed, so that in fewe dayes, the Court was well furnished with Lords and Ladyes: nothing nowe intended, but delights and Courtly Pastimes, which made the Duke of Bargundie likewise repaire thither. Now was the Duke aged, a man of good prouidence, and a tryed Knight, hauing matched in Marriage with the King of Denmarkes Sister, a young beautifull Ladie, and of vertuous education: the Duke hoping to haue issue by her, because by his first Wife he could not haue any. The King aduertized of the Dukes comming, commaunded his Sonne Lewes with an honorable traine to go entertaine him, which hée did, so that many solemne reuerences passed betwéene the Duke and him, as also to the Duchesse, whome as he welcomed with many salutations, so did he earnestly contemplate her excellent Beautie, reputing her farre fairer then the Fayrest, and on a sudden became amorous of her: Such a violent breach made Loue into his heart at the very first sight of her. In this great and vnlooked for veration, hée conducted her to the lodging which was prepared for the Duke, dissembling so well as hee could his new desire: But so vehement was his oppression, as without returning again to the King, he went to his Chamber. Prince Lewes being thus alone by himselfe, (Loue) not a little triumphing of his new preye, tormented his thoughts with so many conceytes, as all the night he spent in sighs and dolorous lamentes, his minde still trauelling by what meanes hee might compasse his intent. Sometimes, he thought it impossible in respect of the Duke, then againe as easie, because of his Age, a contracie to yrksome in his eyes, for the sweete flourishing youth of the Duchesse: All which imaginations wrought so diuersly in him, as his spirite forsaking counsell and reason, made him breake forth into these exclaimes. Ah Heauens, haue you formed Beauty with such Excellencie, as to cause mee endure a torment more then mortall: Ah mine Eyes, too lauish were

you

you in beholding her, who cannot chuse but vtterly disdaine thee, thou hast an acquaintance with her, and therefore let thy death chastise thy boldnesse. Yet mayst thou be deceyued in thine owne opinion (saith man: perhaps in offering her thy seruice she may chaunce to accept it, for the Duke is olde, and likely to dye: how happy were it for thee to be his Executor, for his Lady? Dispaire not then man, for things thought impossible are easiest oftentimes in performance. In these and such like teares he spent the night, and seeing the faire morning salute him at his Chamber window, he arose, intending that day to bewray his passions to the Duchesse: and knowing that the Duke would goe visite the Quéene, accompanied with many Knights, he came to bidde him god morrowe: Which the Duke taking very kindly, requited him with many thanks, ignorant that for the faire Wife, he was so courteous to the olde Husband.

The Duke hauing taken his way to the Quéene, Lewes kept company with the Duchesse very manerly, wayting opportunitie to discouer his affections, and reuiewing her beauties so perfect and rare, not able longer to holde began thus. It is maruell Madame, if faire beautie should be so bitter, as a man cannot surfette but he must nedes dye. The Duchesse not knowing of whome the Prince spake, nor as yet regarding that hee was in Loue, answered. In soth my Lord, the Ladie hath small reason, that thée should vse you so hardly, if you meane it of your selfe. In briefe Madame (quoth hee) it is you haue wounded mée, and none but you can ease my afflictions: if then (sweete Ladie) you retaine such pittie, as all your other Excellencies shewe you to haue, you will not disdaine to giue mee remedie, which if you do, for euer I remaine your Knight and loyall Friende. And in mine opinion Madam, you cannot well refuse my suite, seeing hard Fortune hath bene such an enemy to you in Marriage, the Duke being olde and full of melancholy, you young, tender, fresh, and dainty as may bee: Yée more méete to kéepe companie with Antropos the mortall goddesse, then liue with a saint of

so

to rare perfections. But had my lucke bene such, before you were Espoused to haue knowne you, I would with Malou haue hindered your Riding so, or Fortune should haue so vrly denyed me: For such is my religion in Loue, as better death then discontent, and had I bene Lord of Europe, you had bene Ladie. Notwithstanding Madame, so like it you, I may be your Friend and Knightly seruant: for loue wants no wiles to compasse desire, and my suite is modest, if you count it not vnseemely. The Duchesse, whom sweete loue could easily intice to follie, hardly might resist a present Conquest: Wherefore chaunging countenance, and not daring to reueale what shee gladly would, saide. Trust mee (my Lord) your speeches are not comely, to violate chaste Wedlocke is so monstrous, as you can haue no priuiledge to aske, nor I to graunt, and therefore content you.

This answere, albeit it was sharpe, and scant pleasing to the Prince, yet loue so perswaded him, that the Duchesse had another meaning then she bewrayed: For, noting her countenance so full of change, he guessed that some sparks had fallen among her affections, whereforе he began againe. I beseech you Madame accuse Loue, if I haue spoken to your disliking, yet hope I to see the time, when I shall make knowne how great my affection is to do you seruice: and continuing this talke, he brought her to the Queenes lodging, Loue following them both so narrowly at the heeles, as the Duchesse was no lesse affectionate, then Lewes was most passionate. Which when he had gotte some light off, in hope to purchase his desire, hee sollicited her in more secrete manner then hee was wont: so that being one day in place where they might familiarly talke, Lewes perseuering in his enterprise, declared what torments hee suffered for her Loue. Whereupon the Duchesse not onely by the Princes reasons, which were perswasiue, but as well to mittigate her owne oppressions, thus answered: Great is the force of your perswasions (my Lord) but greater is that of loue, which hath made me yours: So that what you requeste I cannot denye, and although it

stand

stand not with mine honour, yet such is my fortune. Let mée intreate you therefore to conceale this Loue so discretely, as none may know of it; especially my Lord the Duke, and expect the day that shall yéelde me content, and make me happy.

This answere so highly liked the Prince, as neuer man thought himselfe in greater felicitie, and rendering her againe manifolde thankes, he sayde:

I sweare to you Madame, by the diuine force of Loue that gouernes vs both, to be for euer your Knight, and neuer shall any other desire abide in mee, then you shall like and well allow off: for otherwise I were not worthy this speciall fauor. The Duchesse thanking him, departed: and thencefoorth so secretely shadowed their Loue, as none suspected that the Prince loued the Duchesse.

CHAP. XXXII.

¶ Of the enterprise of Lewes the Prince of Fraunce, for the loue of the Duchesse of Burgundie.

LOng continued the King of France this state in all Magnificence, there méeting many noble personages, as well Straungers as of the Realme, that it was marueilous to behold, as also the Ladyes and Damosels that accompanied the Quéen: who on a day in the Presence chamber among many Knights, conferred of the bountie and prowesse of the flourishing braue young Courtyers: among whom the Prince Lewes making one, eache one spake in behalfe of his Ladies beauty, yet concealing theyr names to themselues, till better occasions might cause them deseruedly to be knowne. All this talk the Prince well marking, who for the Duchesse

loue.

loue was depriued of libertie, theiu many sweete glaunces at the Mistresse of his affections, perswading himselfe, that nature neuer made a more perfect creature, and not able to make her like againe, burst her mould, whereupon hee sayd, Lordes and Ladies, who with such aduantage haue chatted on beautie, vnderstand that such as you haue yet spoken of, or generally in your owne thoughts shall thinke vppon, may not be equall with one that I know, euen shee that is Ladie and commaunder of my heart, whose beautie is so far beyond all other, as bright Cinthia from the goodliest starre in the firmament. And because that none shall imagine, how (being carried away with priuate opinion) I vse these speeches, I will make good my wordes by deedes of Armes, against any Knights whatsoeuer that dare say the contrarie. Now in regarde that none shall pleade ignorance, I will aduertise all Knights, how the first day of Maye next ensuing, and seauen dayes more immediatlie following, I will be in open fielde in my Tent, where I will erecte a stately monument, on the toppe whereof shall bee her figure whose Knight I am: and there will I defende it in this honorable quarrell, against such Knights as will Combat for the beautie of their Ladies, I affirming mine to excell all other in perfections. This condition must be obserued by such as enter the field, that they bring the Ladies figure with them whom they honour most: and if Fortune frowne on them in such sort as they be vanquished, there shall they leaue their Ladies Image, to be placed vnder my Mistresse as her subiect. Now if my vnhappy Starres so crosse me, as I lose the credite I would bee loth, the conquerer shall enter in my Tent, and in my Ladies place shall his Mistresse bee mounted, if hee meane to maintaine her with such conditions as I doe mine. And hee that last accomplish these eyght daies, shall beare away the honour with the portraitures of the Ladies, which by him or any other all the fayde time haue beene gained. And this libertie shall bee granted, that hee which receiues the foyle with the Launce, shall Co-

bat with the Sworde (if hée please) before hee yéeld. Now th at this mine enterprise may be openly knowne, and put in execution as the vertue requireth: I will send Horsemen through all the prouinces of Christendome, that all knights willing thus to aduenture, shall bee héere receiued. His speaches ended, the Gentlemen present could not meruaile sufficiently, at this great and high enterprise of the Prince Lewes, and the daunger wherein to hee thrust himselfe, yet not knowing who was the Ladie hee would thus aduenture for: but shée beeing present, perceiued that the Prince in honour of her loue, toke in hand this perillous hazarde, wherein she conceiued such secrete content, as the passions of loue hauing penetrated her heart, made her feare his misfortune, which she would not for her life. In this assemblie was present the Duke of Sauoye, a young Prince, braue, hardie and courageous as might be, and esteeming so well of himselfe, as he thought no knight in the world could vanquish him, who to answere the Prince Lewes, arose and thus spake. My Lord, I would not willingly haue entered the Combat against you, but that I heard you so farre outreach your selfe, as shee whose beautie you maintaine, is more perfect then all other Ladies: but shee that is the commaunder of my heart, is such a braue accomplished Ladie, as (in truth) her beautie may not be matched through the whole world. And to affirme what I say, I sweare by the order of my knighthode, that the morrow after you haue finished your eight dayes enterprise, I will enter the same fielde, and auerre against all knights, that the Goddesse to whom I am dedicated, excelles all other Ladies in her heauenly gifts: and hee that dare maintaine the contrarie, vnder my Sworde I will make him confesse it. All such therefore as will make proofe of their valour, shall find mee there in my Tent at my appointed day, and nine dayes after to sustaine the same quarrell in plaine Combat, eyther at the Launce, the Mace, the Sworde, on horsebacke or on foote, at his choise. And though I vanquish one knight, it

shall

shall not be lawfull for me to rest a minute space, but presentlie take him in hande that shall follow: and bee it my fortune to be foyled by him, hee shall keepe the field in manner as you my Lord deuised. And to the ende all may be the better executed, please you that in such places where your intelligencers shall come, my enterprise may likewise bee declared, in respect I hope to behaue my selfe so well, as my Ladie will make speciall account of me. The lady for whom the Duke of Sauoye thus attempted, was Daughter to the King, and Sister to Lewes named Lucemania, whom he loued intirely, and aboue all things desired in marriage: which to compasse, and to honour his Ladie, hee thus offered the Combat against all knights. These Princes, intending to go thorow with their intent, concluded betweene them, that the Duke of Sauoye should breake it to the King, to gaine his good will: whereuppon the Duke departing towards the Queenes Chamber to find the King, espied him at verie good leysure walking in his Garden, to whom hee went in all hast, and on his knee thus began. So please it your highnesse to graunt me one boone, I shall be bound to continue the loue I haue borne your Maiestie, which is to prolong my life in your seruice, as the most forward knight in your royall Court. The King who had long time fauoured the Duke, taking him by the hand, thus answered. Demaund my good Cozin what you please, and it shall bee graunted. Then the Duke deliberatelie discoursed, what the Prince Lewes and hee had intended for the loue of their Ladies: wherewith the King scant content, and meruailing at this hastie enterprise, said. Why Cozen, do you imagine your selues able to maintaine so hard a taske, in resistance of so manie hardie knights, wherewith the world is now plentifullie stored: Beleeue me, in manie Countries are Ladies of greater beautie (I doubt) then is at this time in our Realme of Fraunce. I promise you, I hardly like what my Sonne and you attempt, but seeing my word is past, you shall not now bee hindered: ow therefore what your

selues thinke expedient, with this consideration alwaies, that the ending of matters is greater then the beginning. The Duke humbly thanking the King, aunswered. We doubt not my Lord, but by the helpe of God and fauour of our Ladies, to ende our affaires with fortunate successe: but if now wee should giue ouer, and not go forward with our promise, we might worthily be reputed of shame and cowardise, the most villainous reproches that can be to any noble heart.

The King perceiuing the earnest affectiō of these two yong princes, and that to deny their request would be more hurtfull then to graunt: commaunded him againe to proceed with their intent, with such suretie against all strange knights, as what losse or victory happened to them, they must be content with al that fell out. The Duke not a little toyfull, kissing his highnes hand departed, and immediatly acquainted Prince Lewes therwith, but now the queene vnderstanding her sons enterprise, sent for him, & with sad countenance thus spake. I would (my son) that the intent of you and the duke of Sauoy, were eyther a while deferred, or vtterly forgotten, because I greatly doubt, that the end will bring a further consequence then you expect. For thinke you, that by all your forces & Chiualries, the beautie of your Ladies shall be any iot increased? no beleeue me: but if they loue you as loyall Friendes ought to do, as greatly will they dislike your enterprize, as feare the daunger whereinto you may fall, a matter causing other desire then you thinke on, and more offensiue (perhaps) to them, then any honour you may winne can please them. Lewes, who by no meanes would be dissuaded from his conceit, aunswered. God Mother, if for no other feare, this matter shall not be reuoked, in regard of the shame, and neuer dying dishonor I shall gaine thereby, which makes me desire a thousand deathes, rather then not to be so good as my worde: therefore perswade your selfe good Mother, that albeit her beautie for whom I enter the Combat, cannot bee more perfect hereby, in that it is without imperfection, yet

such

such is my resolution in a matter so certaine, as her sweete lookes shall deliuer me strength enough to ouer my talke, without any end of any inconuenience that may happen. The Duchesse (enflamed with loue) hearing these wordes on her behalfe, must needes speake, and thus began. I know not (my Lord) who is the Ladie you loue, nor what are her vertues, but heereof I can assure you, that she is highlie beholding to you, and (except great reason to the contrarie) ought to loue you, considering what perill you thrust your selfe into for her beautie. Madame (quoth the Prince) the trauaile I shall take, and the bad fortunes may befall mee, are little and of no account in respect of her gracious beleeue, therefore for her honour I will beare my inward paines with secret content, and attempt these outward actions with the greatest courage I can possible, desiring no other recompence then her fauourable conceit, wherof once assured, nothing can seeme difficult to me, no, were it to dye in her diuine seruice. And as he would haue continued longer, the King (not yet throughly content with his promise past to the Duke of Sauoye) entered the Chamber, by whose countenance, Lewes well knew he was mal-content with him, wherefore falling on his knee, he said. My Lord, no one is ignorant, how all my welfare and reputation consisteth onelie in your gracious fauour, as a Prince and Father, the most vertuous that I know: to which great good in some part to recompence: I haue enterprised a matter vnworthie of dislike, to please your highnes (of your accustomed bountie) to graunt and accept it in good part, in respect that such as are borne to the highest place of dignitie, ought to bee more prompt and readie to all magnanimious actions, then their inferiors, chiefly in warlike, chiualrie, and deeds of estimation. What moued Curtius to Horatius, Mucius Scaeuola, Marcus Curtius, Manlius Torquatus, and a number more of Romaine Knights, if not the courageous following of occasions offered: What made for euer immortall the fame of Marius the Romaine Citizens, Hanniball the

Carthaginian, and Agesilaus the Greeke, if not the vndaunted valour of their minds, deliuered in their deeds of Kingly consequence? Assuredly I beleeue, that their Fathers, Vncles, and auncient progenitours neuer made them noble or ought renowned: what then? onely vertue, the very formatrix of all nobilitie. For this cause my good Lord and Father, hauing now opportunitie, as my Cozin the Duke of Sauoye hath informed you, may it please your grace to permit my endeuours with fauour, to the ende I may deliuer perfect testimony, that I no whit degenerate from your heroycall and kingly vertues. The King somewhat moderating his former opinion, answered, Trust me Sonne, full well you knowe how to disguise and couer your folly with vertues colours, God send it to fall out so well: arise, and beit as your Cozin and you haue requested. See in meane time that you prouide all needfull occasions, that when the day comes nothing bee inuanting. Lewes humbly thanking his Father, arose, euery one present not a little reioycing, because they feared all would be squandered. Then began the Lordes and Ladies to conferre together, and the Dutchesse departing to her lodging, being resumed by the Prince, did not (as I thinke) repent her selfe of her issue, as a number of you (marching vnder the same Ensigne) would doe the like in such a case. In fine, the Duchesse fearefull of the thwarts of Fortune, that she would worke her disgrace by some bad coniectures or wounding reports, said, I know well (my Lord) the good will you beare mee, without any further shewes or confirmations by actions so daungerous, which I had rather die then behold, and therefore whatsoeuer you shall performe, will condemne mee as vnworthy of so good deserts: in this respect you shall therefore graunt mee one thing, which is, that aboue all you haue care of your selfe, else will perpetuall discontent cut short my date, being bereaued of the honour of my greene desires. Now Madame (quoth the Prince) may I boast of my fortune, not doubting to follow the deuise of a Ladie so vertuous, for

your

your swete words prolong my life, else ere this had death robd you of your knight. The Duchesse hereto with an amiable smile, aunswered. I must not lose you yet good Prince, for may I lengthen your life, it shall be for ever. Many solene thankes the Prince returned, and by this time had brought her to her Chamber, where having baise lamain, departed.

CHAP. XXXIIII.

How the Prince Lewes and the Duke of Sauoye, sent their Heraldes and horsemen into all partes, to make knowne to all Knights their enterprises, and the conditions of their Combats.

THe Prince Lewes ioyfull of the king his fathers consent, but of the gracious answere of the Duchesse most of all, dispatched immediatly his Heraldes into all the prouinces of Europe, who executed their charge with such diligence, as there was no court or Emperour, King, or Prince, but they declared the enterprise of these two young Princes. So that one of the Princes Heraldes, accompanied with the King of Armes belonging to the Duke of Sauoy, came to the Emperors Court of Allemaigne, which then was furnished with a great number of Lordes and Knights, being there to solemnize the day of his byrth, but especially Palmerin aboue all the rest, tryumphing in the loue of his Princesse Polindarta. The Heraldes being entered the great Hall, found the Emperour sitting in his chayre of estate, with many Princes, Barons

and noble personages about him: who graunting them li-
berties of speech, the Herald of Fraunce began first in this
manner.

Illustrious and most redoubted Emperour, the cause why
we thus presume before your Maiestie, is by the commaun-
dement of the vertuous yong prince Lewes, son to our dread
Lord Agariel King of Fraunce, as also of the Duke of Sauoy
his Cozin, so good a Knight as may well commaund: what
our message is, so please your highnes to call all your knights
in presence, because it thereby concerneth them, we with du-
tie will deliuer it. The Emperour presently called for all
knights and Gentlemen of his Court, who desirous of the
newes, were not long in coming, before whom he said. Dread
Lord, the prince Lewes of France my maister, commends him
to your Maiestie with this Letter, may it please your grace
to command it to be read, and you shall soneer the effect of
our Embassage. The Emperour caused his Secretarie to
read it openly, and because it contained what you haue heard
already, it shall bee needelesse to waste longer time in talke
thereof: but the letter being read, the herald thus proceeded.
The prince my Maister (quoth the Emperour) giues the
knights of your Court (as else where) to vnderstand, that
hee entends to prooue by deede of Armes, how no Ladye
in the world is comparable in beautie to the Ladie he loues,
which hee will bee readie to maintaine in Combat the first
of May next, and seauen dayes following, in his Tent be-
fore the Gates of Paris, there will hee beside it against all
commers that dare awerre the contrarie. Afterward hee re-
hearsed all the conditions to bee obserued in this Combate,
and the King of Armes to the Duke of Sauoy, made him lyon
his Maisters challenge likewise as you haue heard. The
Emperour merualling at this message, said. Without doubt
the Ladies had need to be fayre, and my Cozins your Mai-
sters valiant and hardie, else it is doubtfull he to such an en-
terprise will fall out, for the affections of persons are diuers,
and their fortunes daungerous, neuertheless I desire the

issue

ſtune may ſort to their honour. The Lordes and Knightes haue heard your Meſſage, and I iudge ſome of them will prouide to be there, becauſe they prize the beauties of their Ladyes at as high a rate, as your Maiſters do eſtéeme their faire Friends: yet let them do what they thinke moſt expedient, becauſe they are olde enough to make you anſwere. As for me, you may ſalute (on my behalfe) the King, my Brother, and my Couzins, to whom I ſend thanks with all my heart, that they thus acquainted me with their honourable endeuours. All this while the Knights conferred together, with diuers iudgements of their pretended Combats: Some of them were eyther fearfull or too forward: others well aduiſed and prouoked with diſcreete courage. Among whom repute was Noble Palmerin, all penſiue, his eyes fixed on the ground, and not a word, hauing in his ſpirite diſcouered how bitter the diuorce would be of the Eyeſtone his ſweete abient: in the ende concluded the Combate, perſwading himſelfe, not in Chriſtendome, nor in the other three habitable partes of the Earth, eyther Empreſſe, Queene, or Ladie, was more accomplished with perfections then his gratious Miſtreſſe Polinarda. And in reſpect of this Embaſſage, it ſeemed to him diſpiteous, and a diſhonour not ſufferable, if hee ſhould not iuſtifie the truth, and haue ſo good occaſion: Wherupon he deſired a thouſand deaths, rather then he would deſerue ſo braue a Voyage: and ſo on his knee before the Emperour, he thus began. Gratious Lorde, and my moſt louyng Patron, I intend (with your good liking and leaue) to depart with all ſpeede poſſible, to ſée the Iouſtes and Combates of Fraunce and Sauoye: Let it not therefore diſpleaſe (for the honour of Chiualrie, that I leaue your noble Court a while, but may commit my ſelfe to this iourney, with your fauourable opinion. The Emperour very loath to let Palmerin goe, anſwered: In good ſoth Syr Palmerin, I greatly doubted (ſo ſoone as I heard theſe newes from France,) that it would not paſſe without your preſence, which diſpleaſeth me, not ſo much for their ſake, as your abſence, which is and will be

to

to me greater griefe then you iudge: but let me intreate that thy returne may be speede, and stay no longer then thou hast good occasion. I would gladly knowe, would you graunt it mee, what Lady shee is, for whome you thus aduenture: you neede not Palmerin hide it from mee.

My Lord (qd. he) the Dame for whom I enter the Combate is such, as none may or ought compare with so singular, rare, and (aboue all) vertuous, as neuer would I thinke my selfe worthy to beare Armes, if feare of danger, misfortune, or death it selfe should haue power to plucke mee from my dutie. As for my stay (the Iousts once ended) within one moneth or sooner, I intend my returne to your Maiestie: and let me intreate you not to feare any thing in my iourney, because I go for your Honour, and my Sworde shall ring on the stoutest creast, the euer continuing honors of the Emperour of Allemaigne. The Emperour vnwilling to forgoe him, and loath to hinder knightly Chiualrie, saide. Without question Palmerin, the Lady is indebted to you, and you declare vnspeakeable Loue, that for her Beautie you deliuer your selfe to such great hazard: but as for your intent to my honour, I rather delight to haue it by your presence, then thy fame after such applause with your absence. But seeing that you will needes to Fraunce, happie Fortune goe with you, and make you victorious in all your attempts: which I doubt not, but by your valour and the vertues of your Mistresse, the French will not braue so much on the seuenteenth of May, as perhaps they will on the first. Prouide that before you departe, you demaund and haue all things for your iourney, as well for such as goe in your companie, as for your owne necessarie prouision: and some will I appoint to attend on you, that may preuent any treacherous inconuenience. Palmerin not refusing this bountifull offer, with great obeysaunce thanked the Emperour: and taking his leaue for that night, returned to his Chamber, determining to depart with all expedition, because the day of the Iousts were at hand. Nowe was Trineus the Emperours Sonne a young Prince, and had not yet re-

ceiued

reiued his order of knighthood, hee hearing of Palmerins departure, was marualous desirous to beare him companie: whereupon hee kneeled before his father, intreating him not to deny him one request. Demaund what thou wilt my Sonne (quoth her) I graunt it thee. Then I beseech you good father, said hee, to suffer mee, sir Fraunce with noble Palmerin, that I may bee acquainted with the courtesie and ciuilitie of that nation, not doubting but soone to deserue my knighthood. And yet if before I receiue my order, I see these high and worthy deeds of Armes, happily they may entice mee to follow their vertues: beside, if now I loose so good an occasion offered, I know not when I shall compasse the like commodity, therefore (good father) let mee not bee denyed. The Emperour offended for his rash promise to his sonne, laboured to change his minde, yet all would not serue, for the Prince promised to go so couertly, as none should know him. Wherefore he called Palmerin, who as yet was not departed the Hall, saying. I see Syr Palmerin, you shall not go alone in your voyage, for my sonne Trineus desires to be your companion: for which cause I commit him to you, and desire you to conceiue so well of him, as at your returne wee may be all merrie together. Which Palmerin promised, whereupon the Emperour called for the maister of his horse, commanding him that all things might bee in readines against their departure: all which was done with such diligence, as the third day following all things prepared, they tooke their leaue of the Emperour, the Ladies, who at their departure shed many teares (a common matter with them) wishing the victorie and honour to Palmerin. Thus with Trineus and twentie other knights, a great number of Squires and seruants in good equipage, they iourneyed towards Paris without any hinderance by the way, or matter of memorie.

Now before wee passe any further, you shall vnderstand, that after the Heraldes of the Prince of Fraunce and Duke of Sauoye were departed, and that Palmerin had obtained

tained leaue of the Emperour, the Princesse Polinarda arriued hereof, was greatly displeased with his sudden departure, wherefore calling Vrbanillo, the Dwarfe to her, she sayde: Vrbanillo, thou must goe to thy Maister, and will him this night to meete mee at our appointed place, that I may conferre with him, of a secret matter concerning mee. Which when Palmerin heard, the earth being couered with her blacke mantle, and euery one in their dead sleepe, he called Ptolome and Vrbanillo, who were all well acquainted with this lone-walke, and being there in presence of they Ladies, the Princesse with a great sigh thus begunne.

Alas my Lord what minde is this in you, thus to voyage towards Fraunce, and to leaue me alone sadde and solitarie? Alas, not content to hazard so long a iourney, but also a dangerous Combate beside for my Beautie, which is a thing of so slender estimation, as may not Parragon with the Ladies of Fraunce, beeing Perceloste (as I haue heard) among those of highest perfection. Ah my Lord, more comfort and content it is for mee to haue your companie, then to be crowned Queene of any Realme conquered by your worthy vertues and prowesse. Therfore (sweet Friend) I intreat you with all my heart, and by the vnfained loue you beare mee, to leaue such dangerous Enterprises, where death is commonly more frequent then life. These words came with such amiable conturation from the Princesse, as Palmerin, (though loath to be vnkwaded) answered. Let me prouaile with you so farre good Madame, as not to imbrace my Enterprize for your gracious Loue, for the honour you haue done me, in making me your Knight, I prize at no lesse value then my deerest blood, and should I be held from those French exployts, vnlawfully were I to bee your Seruant: in that (as you well know) no Knight but carryes the honour of his Ladie in such account, as hee preferres that before his owne life. When Madame, in religion of this office, I absent my selfe for a while, I shall accomplish nothing but my duetie, whereto your selfe bound mee, and I hope to execute with such successe, as you shall

beare

beare the prize of Beautie, not onely from the faire Ladyes of Fraunce and Allemaigne, but from all Christendome, yea, the whole world, may I live to travell it.

Do not then (sweete Mistresse) mislike, if I absent my selfe, for a cause so resonable, & continue me still in your favourable conceit, as hee that was borne to do you service. And albeit I cannot depart without exceeding griefe and anguish, yet perswaded of your rare arguments, I frame my selfe with patience yeelde to reason, beeing present with you alwayes, in that I carry your divine image in my soule, and in mine hart, life, and all, till I come.

These words were sealed with many devoute kisses, and Ptolome had like paine in perswading Brionella, yet this contented them in the ende, that the honour of their travell was the renowne of they^r Beautie: and so with forced content they most lovingly departed.

The nert morning, the Princesse sent Palmerin an Arming-coate of greene Velvet, embrodered all over with great Orientall Pearles, and very thicke beset with Starres of golde, and in the midst of each Starre a costly Emeralde: and he had caused her Picture to be most curiously drawne in the purest Arabian-golde: her face and hande formed wonderfully nere the life, and all her Lineaments very singularly fashioned, and this portrait caused her to be set in a faire Litter, covered over with Crimson-velvet, which hee had provided onely for the purpose, and so set forward.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXXIIII.

¶ How the Prince Lewes came to see the Duchesse of Burgundie: And what happened.



SO soone as the Heraldes and Horsemen of Lewes of Fraunce and the Duke of Sauoye hadde dispatched theyr Charge, their Lordes gaue direction to prepare all things in readinesse so soone as might be: but yet the Princes affection to the Duchesse did so torment him, as hee daylie compassed new meanes to conferre with her, that she might know the passions he endured for her sake.

At length it came to passe, that the King and the Duke of Burgundie, & diuers other Princes, rode forth on pleasure together, and returned not againe for two dayes space, which made him thus beginne with the Duchesse, I neede not tell you Madame, for you know it well enough, how continually I langnish in remediless affections, till now this opportunitie puts me in some hope of comfort, that you performing so solemne promise, will deliuer me out of this extremitie. Wherefore faire Mistrisse, since time and occasion hath pointed it, and Fortune (by Nature froward and inconstant) fauours it: Let me intreate you to take the benefite of both, least hereafter we compasse not the like againe.

My Lorde (quoth the Duchesse,) you must thinke I am more yours then mine owne, and make that reckonig of you, as no Lady can the like: how is it possible then for mee (louing as I loue) to flie from that which loue commaunds me to fulfill? Let it suffise you then, that the regarde of mine

honour

honor defended, I am ready to do ought may agree with your lyking. What happened afterwards I leaue to your opinions, but by the halfe the whole may be discerned: notwithstanding, vertuous Ladyes haue power to resist such motions, though time, occasion, and such amorous solicitings did offer it them: but such may bee accounted more diuine then humane, and to them may worthily be erected a Trophee, in disgrace of the Temptresse Venus. But this litle discourse not much dissenting from the matter, is written in reproach of such young dayntie Wantons, that so vainely attend on theyr ouer-fond and vnchaste desires: And may likwise be a warning to vndiscreet olde men, that they chose theyr Pantoffle fit for theyr foote.

But now is come the first of May, the day to begin the Enterprises of the Princes of France, and Sauoye: Lewes to entertaine the Duchesse Loue, begunne with such aduantage, had greater desire now to execute his intent then before. Wherefore this day was his Paulion erected nere the Cittie Gates, being beautifull and very sumptuous: and at the Entrance thereof was placed a goodly Monument of blacke Marble, curiously set forth with columnes of white Marble, very thicke embossed with golde and pearle. At the side of his Paullion was placed another monument of greene Jaspis, adorned with many Vases, Pillars, and antique Imagerie of Golde, whereon hee intended the straunge Knightes that came, should place the figures of their Ladyes. On the other side was a seemely place appoynted for the Judges of the Fielde, who were the Dukes of Orleaunce and Burgundie: Princes highly esteemed for their Nobilitie, and in their Times had bene hardy and aduenturous Knights. Many other Tents and Pauillions were that day there set vppe, as well for straunge Knightes that came, as for Noble men and Gentlemen of the Realme. And now comes in the Prince brauely mounted to the Fielde, accompanyed with many young Princes, Knights, and Gentlemen: the Heralds and Kings of Armes ryding before, Droummes, Phifes, Trumpets

pets and Clarions sounding, so gallantly as made the Ayre deliuer a most sweete Eccho. Before him in a very sumptuous Coach, was carryed the curious counterfeit of the Duchesse, so superficially set forth, and with such perfection of Arte, as though it had bene the Duchesse her selfe.

After followed Prince Lewes, in rich and glorious guilte Armour, all ouer-grauen with most artificiall Flowers, and mounted on a Courser of Spaine, esteemed one of the best runners of Europe, which made way with braue and lofty voltages, as did not a little delight the beholders: one of the chiefe Princes of the Court bearing his Helmet, and another his Lance. What neede I make further report of the Princes triumph, Hee comming to the fielde with such Equipage, as well beseemed the house from whence he descended, and as beseemed a lonely Knight in presence of his Ladie: who as her Fauour had sent him that morning, a costly Gyrdle garnished with Rubyes, Dyamonds, great Emeraulds, and other vnualuable rich stones, with a Swoorde so good as euer Knight woore, and therewith rode he gyrded to the Field. Before he went, the King his Father thus spake to him:

My Sonne, this day and all the other following, Fortune spæde thée so well, as thou mayst winne the honour my heart doth wish thée. My most néerde, (answered the Prince) I hope before the seuenight be finished, to accomplish your desire effectually, so fauour me thée that may command me. So leauing the King, hee came to the place appointed for the Combate, the Iudges placing themselues where they should, and the Prince himselfe in his Tent, where hauing his Mistresse picture set on the appoynted place, he commaunded the trumpets to sound, and a Heralde to proclaime, that no Knight bearing Armes, should bee so hardie as to enter his Tent, except he first graunted his Ladie to be the most faireſt creature in all the Worlde: and if any were so stubborne not to confesse it, by knightly prowesse he would force him to do it.

The Herald hauing done his charge, and the Iudges causeth the Conditions to bee openly read, the People diuided them-

themselues in conuenient places, and the Lords, Ladies and Gentlewomen betoke them to their tents and Scaffolds. The first that entred the fielde against the Prince, was the Counte Durcell of Arragon, his foure Squires conducting before him in a great gorgeous litter, the statue of his Mistresse Daughter to the King of Arragon, the fayrest ladie in all Spaine, and for whose beautie hee toke in hand this quarrell. After him came foure other Squires, the foremost leading his Courser, the second bearing his Helmet, the third his Shield, and the fourth his gauntlets and launce: and comming to the monument appointed for straunge ladies, caused the portrait of his lady to bee placed thereon: then comming to the princes Tent, said. I know not lord Lewes, if ouercome with glory, presumption of your strength, or ouerweening your selfe, you haue made this large enterprise, to Combat with the best approoued knights in the whole world, in iudging no fairer lady, to bee this day liuing then your owne: for mine owne part, I am not so troubled in conceit as you are, to quarrell for such a fabulous matter, yet dare I tell you that my lady is much more beautifull then yours, which if you will deny, I am ready by the streugth of mine arme to make you confesse it. Lewes feeling himselfe greeued with these iniurious speeches of the Count, answered. Proude knight, I am ashamed to heare thy iudgement so simple, as to thinke I am come hither for a matter of so light moment, as though I would not in strife against thee and all other what I haue promised: but let that passe, before we depart he will cause thee know thy folly, by that time thy pate and thy body as thorowly bumbasted, looke to thy selfe, for I intend to dreit. So mounting on horsebacke, and prepared as it had been to a warre mortall, encountred each other with such furie, as their launces flying in shiuers by into the ayre, they met together so terribly with their bodies, their Shields, their Horses and their heades, as they were both dismounted to the grounde. But earnest desire to vanquish, they being beside, streng

and well disposed knights, made them quickly beginne the second assault with their Swords, which was so dangerous, and handled with such dexteritie, as it was hard to iudge who should haue the honour of the Combate. But Lewes beholding the representation of his Lady, and considering her so excellent and fauourable to him, tooke heart afresh, and (as it were inspired with new vigor) so laide on the Counte Durcell, as in short time hée brought him vnder the mercis of his sword, when holding it against his throate, hée sayd. Peremptory knight, if now thou confesse not my Lady to excell thine in beautie, thy vndiscréte head shall raunsome thy folly. The Counte (for all this) would not answere one word, by reason of the debilitie he felt himselfe in, hauing lost so much of his blood, as for the grése he conceiued to be thus vanquished: whereat Prince Lewes not content, would haue taken his head from his shoulders, but the Iudges of the fielde came to him, saying. My Lord, you ought to forbeare, hauing brought your enemie beyonde his owne defence: your victory being sufficient to content you, forbids his death. The Prince perswaded, entred his Pauillion, and ioyfull of his conquest, commaunded two Gardants of the field, to take the figure of the Princesse of Arragon, and place it at the séate of the Duchesse counterfeit: which was done imediatly, and the Counte Durcell brought into his owne Tent, where the Chirurgions tooke diligent care for the curing of his woundes. Some after came a knight of Myllaine, who giuing such defiance as the other did, was in the ende constrained with great shame, to confesse vnder the conquering sword of Lewes, the imperfections of his Lady, and her stature placed by the Princesse of Arragon. The same day were fiue great Lordes of Italie brought in like subiection, and so the tryumph ended till the next day, when the first that came into the field was a braue Gallant of Spayne, a knight of good estimation, and specially reputed, who after a vaine-glorious oration made (as the nature of the people is that way affected) put his

forth vs

fortune to the triall of his launce: where hee sped so ill, as hee was vnhorsed, and in the following Combate likewise receiued the foyle. After him seauen other knights of Castile proued as vnfortunate, their ladyes pictures all reuerencing the Duchesse, who being not a little proude of her knight, and the memorable renowne hee witnessed of her beautie, I leaue to your considerations, both for her conceit that way, as also in loue towards the Prince, who seeing no more readie to enter the quarrell, returned thence to the Pallace, to conferre with his sweete mistris of his high good fortunes.

CHAP. XXXV.

¶ Of the Combate betweene Prince Lewes of Fraunce, and Crenus the Duke of Gaule.

GReat pleasure did the King conceiue, and all the nobility of the Court, at the gotten victories of Prince Lewes, against so many worthy knights, so that they altogether accounted him most fortunate. And now the third day when hee was entred his Tent, an English Knight (no lesse braue in fearmes then the other) defied the Prince, and betweene them begonne a daungerous conflict, in the midst whereof, the king with many Princes, Barons, and Lords, as also the Quéene and the Duchesse of Burgundie, came to their standing, and vnhappily beheld the foyle of the English Knight, the Duchesse hearing him confesse her beautie, and beheld his Ladyes portrait placed vnder hers. But now the curagious Duke

of Gaule named Crenus, came brauely mounted into the [illegible], doing his dutie to the King, Quéene, and Ladies, who not knowing him, by his Armour iudged him some great Lord, in that no knight before caused so good opinion generally, nor came with brauer countenance into the field, hee beeing indeede a Prince of wonderfull possessions, and a knight at armes worthily proued. The Duke (as all the other had done) caused his Ladyes to counterfeite to be placed where it ought by his Squires, to the no little admiration of all the beholders, noting what rare and excellent beautie it was adorned withall, the workman hauing performed such exquisite perfections, as it had beene the Ladie her selfe naturally liuing: while the Squires were thus placing it on the monument, the Duke aduaunced himselfe to Lewes, in this manner. The ouermuch selfe conceit (Lord Lewes) of minde but easily acquainted with matters of difficultie, hath often beene, and yet is the cause to plucke great personages more low then they expect: so that men haue seene them deceiued of their intents, and rewarded with ridiculous shame and confusion. This spake I to you, hauing heere begun a businesse, the end whereof will bee more hard to you, then as yet the beginning hath beene: for Europe is sufficiently stored with hardy knights to asswage your presumptious opinion, and Ladyes much more faire and excellent, then shee whom you contend for. And this (by the fauour of Fortune, gracious regarde of my Lady and mistresse, and helpe of my good Sword) will I enforce you to confesse, that incomparable Agriola, daughter to the King of England, for vertue, for beautie, and all diuine perfections, exceedeth yours whatsoeuer she be. Before such a leasing (quoth the Prince) shall passe the lippes of a Sonne of Fraunce, eyther will I consent to be peecemeale torne in sunder: and before fayre Phœbus haue paced one houres iourney, I doubt not to make thee repent thy pride and arrogancie. By the soule of king Arture, saide the duke, looke thou garde thy selfe well, for I haue with my courte-

lar,

lar, abate the pride of a brauer man then thy selfe, and ere wee two part, I meane to trie if I can do it againe, therefore resolue thy selfe to thy best defence, for (by my life) I will not fauour thée. Without any further speeches they encountred with such violence together, as Prince Lewes was throwne betweene his horses féete, and he for England lost his stirrops, but recouered himselfe well inough by the mayne of his horse: then hee séeing his enemie got vp againe, cast himselfe out of the saddle to haue taken his aduantage, but Lewes preuented him, and came marching against the Duke with his Sword drawne, who staied him thus. Me thinks Prince of France before any worse befall thée, thou wert best to yéeld thy selfe, and remember that our Combate beginnes for the excellentie of beautie. By God man of England, answered Lewes, thou canst not perswade me to a thing so farre from my thought, therefore go to, and hee that hath the fairest friend shall soone bee knowne. In this great choller hee reached the Duke such a stroke on the head, as made him set one knée on the ground, but recouering himselfe quickly, and both thorowly angry, they layde on each other so cruelly, as the very hardiest of the beholders feared the successe. Thus fought they for matter of speciall value, the defence of their owne reputations, and honor of their Ladyes, whose loue was more precious in their hearts then their owne liues. So long these eager charges continued on both sides, as Prince Lewes hauing receiued more then twentie wounds on his body, séeing himselfe fainte, fell downe before his enemie, saying. O noble heart of Fraunce, the true successour of thy famous predecessours. The victorious Englishman setting his foote vpon him, saide, Lord Lewes, if now thou declare not my Lady to excell thine in beautie, it costs thée thy life, a matter nothing pleasing to me, in respect of the chiualrie and singular prowesse I haue found in thée, as also this magnanimous enterprise of thine, which in dispight of thy foyle, and death it selfe, shall make thee liue for euer. But Lewes made

no answere, eyther for his weakenesse, or for full conceit of his misfortune, wherefore the Iudges came, who granting the Duke victorie, desired him to proceede no further, which hee honourably granting, was as ioyfull of the conquest, as the Duchesse sad and pensiue, thinking Prince Lewes had béene slaine outright: wherefore she flung away to her lodging, not tarrying for the king or any of his Ladies, who likewise departed the field in maruailous sorrow, séeing their Son so pittifully wounded: but aboue all, the Duchesse made more lamentation, then shee would haue done for the death of her husband, yet fearing what shee thought secretly, should by her gréefe bee openly suspected, comforted herselfe so well as shee could: and being by her selfe, with one of her trusty Gentlewomen, shee thus breathed forth her mones. Ah trecherous Fortune, enemie to all actions of regarde, why hast thou suffered the man that I most fauoured, thus to bee vanquished: and (which is most to be pitties) without hope of life? Ah deceitfull trompereſſe, séeing thou hast offered him so much wrong, do mee the fauour to beare him companie in death, that liued and died so honorably for my loue. Ah death, let it suffice thée that loue hath wounded him, and make not thou experient of thine inuitable stroke, vnlesse thou wilt do as much for mée. Ah false and flattering Sonne of Venus, is this the guerdon thou rewardest them withall that serue thée faithfully? So ceasing her complaint a while, in great impatience she thus began againe. Alas, neither the one or other are cause hereof, but my most vnhappy selfe, when (prouoked by my beautye) hee tooke in hand this enterprise: but if it bee so (deare Friend) that enuious fate deale so hard with thee, soone mayst thou bee reuenged on her that caused it. And with these words shee fell betwéene the armes of one of her Ladyes present, whom shee specially trusted, who thus spake to her. Why how now Madame: will you perswade your selfe no other wise? beléeue mee there is no remedy but you must change your conceit. What will you forget your

selfe?

selfe: it is no time if you remember your selfe well, for if hee whom you loue and endure these paines for, should vnderstand hereof, in steede of seeking his health, you will shorten his daies, if (as you say) he liue not without your welfare. More requisite is it that you go comfort him with your cheerefull presence, then thus to bee the argument of both your deathes. Besides Madame, if my Lord survive, as no doubt hee shall, what may hee presume? trust me matter sufficient (if you governe not your selfe better) that you seeke to discover, what most of all beseemes you to conceale. Alas (my Friend) answered the Duchesse, I know you speake the truth: but how is it possible for mee to content my selfe, seeing what estate hee is in, onely for my loue? But if hee die, small reckoning will I make of my life: for let my honour bee blamed or otherwise, let all aduersities and misfortunes go together. Yet will I somewhat bee aduised by thee, and I will go see if my presence will any thing comfort him. To breake off this talke, came an Esquire from the Queene, to intreate her come to her Maiestie: which she did, and went with the Queene to the Princes lodging, who beholding the Duchesse so pale and full of greefe, with this conceit his wounds opened and bled afresh, for which cause the Chirurgions, who imagined the occasion to proceed by shame the Prince conceiued, that any one should see what wounds he tooke by the Duke of Gaule, wherefore they forbad any to enter his Chamber, vntill the perill of death was better passed over, which was within short time, when the duchesse by her often visiting him, conuerted his sorrowes into many ioyfull conceits. But because our history appertaines not onely to his deedes, or the loue of the Duchesse, wee will returne to the Duke of Gaule, who after hee had this conquered Prince Lewes, followed the conditions of the field, taking the portraict of his Lady Agriola, and placed it where the Duchesse picture stoode, setting it among the other conquered Ladyes. That day diuers other knights came on behalfe of their Ladyes, whom the

the valiant Englishman entertained with such valour, as all his paines turned to the honour of his Mistresse Agriola, who now was seated as paragon of the field.

CHAP. XXXVI.

¶ Of the Combate betweene Palmerin and the Duke of Gaule, and of the successe thereof.

IN the same day that the Prince of Fraunce was vanquished by the Duke of Gaule, arriued at Paris Palmerin, Trineus, and their traine, but the combate was first ended, wherefore they commanded their Squires to prepare their Tent. Palmerin vnderstanding that the duke was conquered, greeued not a little, in that he came no sooner to win the honor of the Prince; yet knowing, if now he could conquer the Duke, more honour should arise to him then by the Prince Lewes, hee contented himselfe, passing that night in his Tent with the Prince Trineus, in diuers arguments of the Combate betweene Lewes of Fraunce and the Duke: yet was Lewes highly commended of Palmerin though hee were ouercome, because hee had so brauely done the two former daies against all the knights that came. All this night could not Palmerin sleepe, thinking on the day ensuing, but rising early in the morning, and commending himselfe to God in his prayers, hee put on the Coate of armes his Lady Polinarda gaue him before his departure, and toke the counterfeit of his Lady in his armes, not thinking any of his knights or Squires worthie to beare it, and thus accompanied with Trineus and

other

other Allemaigne Lordes, entred the Lystes with so braue a gesture and countenance, as euery one commended him for a good Knight. And hauing placed the Picture on the accustomed Monument, as it had beene to the liuely creature her selfe, he thus beganne. Ah perfect myrrour of all beautie, vertue, and excellencie, resolue thy selfe this day, to beare the Palme of honour from all Ladies in the World, in that your Knight craues a thousand deaths, before hee giue consent to the contrarie: and perswades himselfe so assuredly of your present fauour, as he durst venture on a whole Armye, to keepe his religion in your diuine seruice. Theie wordes were spoken so low, as the Duke of Saule heard him, wherewith not contented, he answered. What new Knight, demandest thou (cenge) of a Ladie to defend her Beautie: Ill canst thou performe what thou speakest, if thou be no better prouided. For all that Syr, said Palmerin, I hope to make you graunt what I say, and that there is not a fayrer Ladie liuing, then she whose figure thou here beholdest, other wise I shall constraine thee to verifie it, whether thou wilt or no. That shall wee soone see (quoth the Duke: So departing into theyr Tents to be armed, and ready to Ioust, they met so valiantly together, as both of them brake their Launces brauely without mouing each other, and taking newe Staues, encountered againe, where the Duke was vnhorsed, and Palmerin very sore wounded: So betaking them to theyr good Swordes, continued a dangerous and doubtfull Combat, till in the ende Palmerin ouercame the Duke, and holding his Sworde ready to cut off his head, sayd, Knight thou art dead, if thou graunt not my Lady to excell thine in beauty. Ah Syr, (saide the Duke) vnhappy be the houre that you toke in hand this voyage, to depriue me of that which made me the most happie Knight of the World, with what countenance may I present my selfe before her, seing Fortune hath bene so auuerse to mee: Thus filling the ayre with his regrects, the Iudges came, desiring Palmerin to saue his life, whereto hee consented: which words were more bitter to the Duke then

death

death, who in these complaints was leade into his Tent by his Squyres. Palmerin not forgetting the honour due to his Ladie, threw downe the Image of Agriola, and sette his Ladyes in the roome, saying: Now are you in the place Madame, which is your owne by right. This victory was not a little pleasant to the Frenchmen, but especially to the Prince Lewes, when he heard thereof: who the better to make his ioye knowne to Palmerin, sent him two of the best Horses in his Stable, as glad of the reuenge on the Duke, as that Palmerin remained Conquerour. Palmerin sent hearty thanks to the Prince, as well for his present as his good will, and so continued in his deuoire to his Ladyes Beautie, as that day he honoured her with the conquest of foure French Knights, and the submission of their Ladyes portraitures: yet aboue all, Palmerin commended to Trineus, the valour of the Englishman, confirming the Duke for a chosen Knight at Armes, and neither Frenchmen, Italian, Spanyard, English-man, Romane, or Greeke, that attempted against Palmerin, in the following dayes, but still he bare away the victorie, and Polinardaes Picture their Ladyes obeysaunce. The last of the eyght dayes, came into the field the Lorde of Albret, greatly esteemed for Prowesse and Chiualrie, and he would defend the Beautie of his French Ladie: but Palmerin after a long and tedious fight, brought him and his Mistresse among the vanquished, and so concluded the French Princes enterprise, to his owne immortall honour. Afterwards came the King Agariel, with the Princes and Lords of his Court to Palmerins Tent, making him the greatest entertainment could bee deuised, whereof Trineus, and the other Allemaigne Lordes were highly contented, and after his Wounds were healed, caused him and his companie to bee lodged in his owne Pallace, where the Queene, and her Ladyes would often visite him, and the Prince Lewes likewise, who by manie intreaties with Trineus, vnderstood her Name for whom Palmerin thus aduentured. But when the King vnderstood, that Trineus was the Emperour of Allemaignes Sonne, and all

this

this honourable Companie came from his Fathers Court, they? Welcome cannot be sufficiently sette downe, nor Palmerins prayses effectually rehearsed: whome the Prince Lewes thus entertained. In good soth Syr Palmerin, the Prince may imagine himselfe happie, that is honoured with your knightly seruice, but aboue all, the Noble Emperour of Allemaigne. My Lord (qd Palmerin) it likes you to speake your pleasure of mee, yet did I neuer knowe knightes more worthy in fight then your Country-men, among whom your deeds may not escape vnreported, no more then the deedes of Scipio can among the Romanes. Manie other honourable and Familiar spéeches passed betwéene the Prince and Palmerin, about the Ladyes Figures, that were brought to the Joustes: Polinarda, onely triumphing beyond all the rest, hauing no second, but faire Agriola of England, the goddesse and Mistresse to the Duke of Gaule.

CHAP. XXXVII.

¶ Of the Combate which the Dukes of Sauoye and Lorrayne had togither, for the beauty of their Ladyes: and what was the issue thereof.

YOu haue héere before heard, the Enterprise of the Duke of Sauoye, for the beautie of his Ladye, and how after Prince Lewes his dayes of Combat were finished, hee should maintaine nine other in the like quarrell: Wherefore the day after Palmerins victory, he put himselfe in order as the time requyred, and hauing in the Fielde erected two Pillars of Porphyre, displaying them that belonged to the

the Prince Lewes, his Tent was there set vp all of Crimson Velvet, very curiously embrodered with Gold and pearle, and round about within, were Inscriptions of many braue sentences of Loue, extracted from Hystoriographers and Poets, as well in Greeke, as in Latine, in praise of the Mistresse of his deuoted affections. In the morning hee went to giue the good morrowe to the Princesse Lucemania, Daughter to the King of Fraunce, whome hee had chosen for his Spouse and Wife. After many solemne courtesies passed betweene them, fearing the Queene should finde them together, he toke his leaue of her, shee giuing him from her arme a sumptuous Bracelet, garnished with fiue great Dyamondes, and fiue faire Rubies: which gift much encouraged him to follow his Enterprise. Being come into the Field, the Judges appointed were the eldest Sonne of Fraunce, and the Counte of Armignac: wise Princes and valiant Knights at Armes, and standing in the gate of his Tent vnarmed, because hee sawe none ready to offer him Battell, the Duke of Lorrayne at length entered the Fielde, attended on by a braue company of Knights & Squyres, who brought the portraite of his Lady, being a figure of rare Beautie, and hauing a Crowne on her head, where ouer was written in great Letters of Golde, This is Polinarda, exceeding in Beautie all Ladyes in the worlde: Which was read by manie, who could not satisfie their eyes in beholding so braue a spectacle, and beeing sette on the Pillar appoynted, hee came to the Duke of Sauoye, saying: Blasphemous Knight, detractour of the Beautie of Ladyes, heere may thine owne eyes witnesse how thou hast belyed Beautie, in presuming to thinke any more fayre then this incomparable creature, to whome thy Ladye may not worthily be hand-mayde. And if thou wilt not presently confesse what I commaund thee, theelde thy head from my Weapon, which I meane to knocke well for thy great indiscretion. The Duke of Sauoye enraged with these words, Armed himselfe presently without any answere, and mounting on Horsebacke, with a strong Launce in his hande, encountred

encountred his Enemie so courageously, as breaking both their staues bravely in shiuers, to their very Gauntlets, passed on without any further harme. The Duke of Sauoye angry that he had not dismounted his enemie, with his Sword drawne returned furiously vpon him, and laid on such strokes as the fire sparkled from his Helmet: yet the Duke of Lorraine, like a good and hardie Knight, defended himselfe most valiantly, and reached the Duke of Sauoye manie threwde Wounds, so that both of them (beeing throughly nettled) rent each others Armor in such sort with their Swords, and mangled their flesh so vnmercifully, as the Iudges could not imagine who hadde the better vantage. The Duke of Sauoye wondering to see the Duke of Lorrayne holde out so long, beganne to storme more like a Fiend then a man, railing on fortune, that (in respect of his Ladies beauty) she assisted him no better, and being at the very point of dispaire, tooke heart afresh, and redoubling his stroakes vpon his aduersarie, at length slew his Horse vnder him, who falling downe, and his Master with him, by reason that he was so sore wearied, and bruised, & beside, had broken his thigh in the fall, could not recouer himselfe, before the Duke of Sauoy (being alighted) set foote vpon him, and in furie would haue parted his head from off his shoulders, but onely that the Iudges ranne quickly and stayed him. Then was the Duke of Lorraine halfe dead carryed into his Tent, and the Duke of Sauoye caused Poltnardaes picture to be sette at Lucemanias feete: a thing very strange in respect of their great difference. Afterwards hee was vnarmed, to haue his Wounds bound vp, which were so daungerous, as gladly hee would haue beene excused from the Combate with any other Knight for that daye, did not shame, and the Lawe he had made himselfe prouoke him to the contrary. But within an houre after, was defyed by a Knight of Scicilia, who would Combate on Foote, with the battel-Axe, in which conflicte the Duke was very neere ouercome, hee had lost so much blood before: but yet in briefe, the

Scyci-

Scicilian Knight for the day, his Ladies Picture was yelden conquered, and the Duke of Sauoye went to rest him in his Tent.

CHAP. XXXVIII.

¶ How the Duke of Sauoye entered the Combate against Ptolome, and how hee sped.

PAlmerin not as yet in perfect health, was aduertised how the Duke of Sauoy had conquered the Duke of Lorrain, fighting for the beautie of the Princesse Polinarda, the conceite whereof so grieued him as nothing could more, to see her honour so badly defended whome aboue all other he esteemed dearest, which made him in great choller, say before the Prince Trineus. By God (my Lord) Loue made a slender choyse of the Duke of Lorraine for his Mallall, and Madame Polinarda seemed to bee scant wise to chose him for her Champion, in respect of the excellent Beautie Nature hath bestowed on her. And yet it could not bee imagined, how the Duke of Lorrayne should gayne the victorie without shame, in seeking honour beyond his desert, because hee is vnworthy such extraordinarie Fauour, which makes mee repute it rather of a fainte heart, then any want of a iust quarrell. Trineus hearing Palmerin so affectionate in his speeches, in a merry laughter, saide. In good sooth Syr Palmerin, the Duke of Lorraine was but ill counselled, to enter the Combat for my Sisters beautie without her Licence, in that hee once learned, how you could defend it much better then hee. Palmerin fearing hee hadde spoken

more

more then he might, because hee discoursed his Loue too openly, excused the matter thus. If it were not (my Lorde) that I doubt to offer wrong to a Lady, on whome dependeth my life, and whome I loue more dere then my selfe: I would cause the Frenchman well to vnderstand, how madame Polinarda your Sister, surpasseth in all perfections, eyther of grace or beautie, all the Ladyes of the Countrey: yea, I dare say of the whole World: therefore one may easily coniecture, that the Duke of Lorrain during the Combat, had his minde fixed on baser occasions. Then Trineus smiling to see Palmerin so diligent to shadow his Loue, saide: It is no strange matter (Friende Palmerin,) to see presuming mindes payde with selfe-same Coyne, as the Duke is: and yet I cannot marueil enough, that my Sister Polinarda would not commit this matter to my charge, shee hauing had so good knowledge of your Valour and Prowesse. These speeches pleased not Palmerin a little: and did in such sort encourage him, as for the iniurie done his Ladie, by the Duke of Sauoy, in setting her Figure at the feete of Lucemania, hadde not Trineus perswaded him with faire speeches, all sicke and sore as he was, he would haue gone to reuenge this dishonour. Notwithstanding, hee called Ptolome secretly, saying: Thou knowest (my dere Ftiende) what shame is offered her, to whom I was Destinated before my byrth, by the presumption of an ouer-bolde Knight, and what griefe it is to me, that I cannot at this present reuenge this wrong my selfe, I pray the therefore supplye my insufficiencie, and enter the Combat with that vaine-glorious Duke, of whome thou mayest gaine honour and yeeld me content, in giuing ease to my afflictions, which else are insupportable. I promise you (my Lorde, answered Ptolome, before you made the motion I entended it, and I will accomplish it with such good will, as I make no doubt to ouercome the Duke of Sauoye. And for my Mistresse Brionella, will I enter the Fielde, whose Beautie is sufficient to enrich me with the Victorie, for surely in my conceit, she farre surpasseth Lucemania. Therefore my

Lorde

Lorde let mee requeſt one courteſie, which I am loathe you ſhould denye me: that if you ſhall be able to morrow, but to accompanie me with you preſence in the Fielde. If the Ayre will ſuffer mee, (quoth Palmerin, I will, in meane while, I will pray, that thy Fortune may fall out to my hearts deſire.

Thus Trineus, Palmerin, and Ptolome, were paſſing the time, conferring with other Noblemen, of the valour of the Duke of Sauay, againſt all ſtrange Knights: and how he had foyled the Duke of Lorrayne, had not his Horſe falle on him, and maimed him: otherwiſe, he brought the Combate to ſo good a Judgement, as he had wonne the honour of the Field. Whereat Palmerin was more offended then before, becauſe himſelfe was not able to reuenge this misfortune: Herewithall, hee conceyued a kinde of Iealouſie of the Duke of Lorrayne, becauſe hee hadde choſen his Ladie Polinarda for his Miſtreſſe, and on her behalfe hee hadde entred the Combate: and how hee durſt place her Picture on the Pillar with her name, without hee had receyued ſome commaundement from her: Which conceyt ſo grieued him, as his woundes began to be as dangerous as at the firſt, continually labouring in his thoughts; Now with the lightnes, then againe with the inconſtancie of Women, neuertheles, he could not iudge, (affecting earneſtly the vertues of his Lady) that ſhee would be of ſuch a double liking: and in this doubtfull eſtate, ſayde. Ah God, I ſee that Women winne lightly, and loſe againe more eaſily. Then repenting his words, followes on thus: O heauens, and what ſhall I ſay: It is impoſſible that ſhee (meaning Polinarda) ſhould be ſo forgetfull, and neuer will I beleeue, that a Princeſſe ſo wiſe and vertuous, would reward mee with ſuch Treaſon, which may not, nay I dare ſweare cannot, once enter her thoughts. Yet would not all opinions ſerue to allaye this new iealouſie, but ſtill it hadde power to confound reaſon: and all the night continued he in this variable conceit, till the next morning, when Ptolome (ſo ſoone as the Sunne aroſe) accompanyed with Trineus, went to his Tent, where being Armed, all ſaue his Helmet, hauing

hauing his Launce and Sheilde, hee came to the Duke, saying. Thou knowest knight the cause of my comming, stand vpon thy guarde, for I fight for beautie. The Duke suddainly at these words mounted on horsebake, and came against his enemie with such strength, as Ptolome cast the Duke forth of his saddle, and suddainlye alighted with his Sworde drawne: but the Duke recouering himselfe, entertained him in sharper sort then hee expected. Now beganne betweene them a cruell and pittious Combat, as their Armour, sheildes and swordes, flew about in peeces, and the blood trickling downe their bodies in many places, so that it was generally reputed, how the fight could not end without the losse of both their liues. Yet in the ende, the Duke beeing of stronger constitution then Ptolome, and greedy of victory ouer his ensuie, ran so violently vpon him as hee got him on the grounde, and hebeing vppermost, offered to take the aduantage of his life: but the Iudges forbidding it, caused Ptolome to be carried into his Tent, where the Prince Trineus stayed, not a little, sorrye for this great misfortune. The Duke likewise sore wounded was carryed into his Pauillion, but first hee saw the portrait of Brionella sette in the rancke of the conquered. The same day did the Duke fight with a knight of Scotland at the Mace, who not nimble enough in vsing that weapon, in the end had the foyle, and three other knights afterward at seuerall weapons, so that it was admirable to beholde the exploits of Armes the Duke did, in that no knight as yet meeting with him, but departed with shame, and their Ladies pictures placed as vanquished. And now was Palmerins Combat against the Duke of Gaule not talked on: for the Duke of Sauoy was accounted the onely knight in the world, to the no small ioy of the Princesse Lucemania, who perswaded her selfe now, that her beautie was most excellent. But there was not so pleasant as Palmerin was pensiue, and enraged out of measure: notwithstanding his weakenes, and the often intreaties of Trineus, he would needes to the fielde, saying,

ing. God my Lord perſwade mee not, for I reckon not my life, ſo I may take vengeaunce of the diſhonour done to my Ladie your Miſtreſſe: the manifold courteſies of the Emperour your Father, haue ſo bounde me to her and you, as exceede my life farre, and therefore I beſeech you not to hinder me. Trineus yet ouercame him by perſwaſions, aſſuring him to haue time ſufficient for his reuenge, whereat greatlie diſpleaſed, hee feigned himſelfe to be whole ſooner then hee was indeede, for the great deſire hee had to deale with the Duke. And Prince Lewes angrie, to ſee the Duke hold the fielde longer then hee did, not able to bee ouercome by any Knight, came to Palmerin, ſaying. I know not my Lord, whether you vnderſtande the Duke of Sauoyes victories againſt ſo many hardie Knights, but belike his ſtrength is much better then mine was, or Fortune alloweth him more fauour then ſhee did to me. In my conceit, if you enter not the Combat, you do me wrong and your ſelfe two: and if he depart hence with victory, then ſhall I haue cauſe to complaine of you: in that his ſucceſſe hath made him ſo braue and preſumptuous, as though no Knight is able to anſwere him in the fielde: let me intreate you Sir Palmerin to abate his pride, and (as well hee deſerues) make him knowe his folly. Palmerin hauing greater deſire to execute this matter, then thus to be intreated, returned the Prince this anſwere. My Lord, God giues honour and victory to whom hee pleaſeth, without eyther regarde of the cauſe or the perſons. If according to bountie or nobility of minde he diſtributed ſuch gifts, then had you beene among the better ſorte, as furniſhed ſufficiently with valour and magnanimitie: yet if your enterpriſe haue not ſorted to your deſire, account this for certaine, that it is for your good, and for other reaſons then are to you knowen, for ſuch matters are his ſecrets, and hee doth ballance them by his diuine wiſedome. Notwithſtanding, as well to ſatiſfie your requeſt, as eaſe mine owne minde, to morrow morning will I enter my Tent, albeit my preſent eſtate would haue me ſtay a while: there

will

will I Combate with the Duke, not certaine how fortune meanes to deale with mee. But happen what shall, I go with a minde to conquere, and doubt not but the issue will be such, as shall yelde you content, and mee the victory: so shall your sadnes and mine be conuerted into pleasure. With this answere the Prince satisfied, departed, yet was hee ignorant of Palmerins intent, which was far otherwise then hee imagined: but pleased as hee was, he went into the presence Chamber, where many Knights were conferring of deedes of Armes past, to whom hee opened the fantasie of Palmerin, which caused a generall doubting of the Duke, setting him downe for vanquished, except Palmerins weaknes were his greater Friend.

CHAP. XXXIX.

Of the perillous Combat betweene Palmerin and the Duke of Sauoye, and the issue thereof.

THree daies together had the Duke of Sauoy maintained this quarrell, for the beautie of his Ladie Lucemania, & no knight as yet could get any aduantage of him, vntill the seauenth day, when Palmerin prepared himselfe to the fielde, and entred his tent, accompanied with Prince Lewes of France, Trineus, and many other Princes. The King with all his traine taking their standing to behold the Combat, Palmerin came armed forth of his Tent, hauing his Helmet, which was carried before him by two Squires with his Shield and Pace, and next to them came two Princes, who bare the portraiture of his Ladie Polinarda, which being sette on the Pillar, hee

claſped on his Helmet, and taking his Mace in his hande, marched to the Dukes Tent, and thus ſummoned him. Knight, thou haſt long enough defended the field, and to my great greefe that it hath béene ſo long, my turne is now come, and it is good reaſon I ſhould keepe it the reſt of the time: for the Ladie whom I loue, is not onely much more beautifull then thine, but beſide, excelleth all other whatſoeuer, and if thou wilt not confeſſe the ſame, I will not leaue thée with this Mace till I haue forced thée to do it. I know not ſaide the Duke, what thou canſt do, but I am of the minde, that I ſhall ſone quallifie thy ouerbolde brauing. At theſe words the Duke taking his Mace, deliuered Palmerin ſo ſounde a ſtroke on the heade, as made him to ſtagger, but Palmerin requited him well againe for it, and long had they fought together, and bruiſed each other very pittifully. till at length Palmerin gaue the Duke ſuch a cruell ſtroke betwéene the head and the ſhoulders, as hee fell to the grounde cleane bereft of ſence: when Palmerin taking off his Helmet, would not offer him any further violence, but ſetting his ſworde againſt his breſt, ſaid. Now am I ſufficiently reuenged on him, that ſo ill intreated the figure of the moſt fayreſt among Ladies. The Iudges of the fielde, thinking Palmerin would haue ſlaine the Duke, came running to him with theſe words. Content you Syr, hee is vanquiſhed, and hath no power to defend himſelfe. Whereupon Palmerin put vppe his Sworde againe, and leaning the Duke, went preſently to the Piller where his Ladies portrait ſtood, which embracing in his armes, hée placed higheſt, and Lucemania at her feete, ſaying. I beſeech you Madame to pardon your Knight, in that hee did no ſooner repell the famous iniurie offered you, and impute it not to feare, or want of courage, but debillity of body, which once a little recouered, I came to maintaine your honour, and heere confirme you for the moſt beautifull Lady liuing. While Palmerin thus contemplated his Miſtreſſe figure, the Iudges commaunded the Duke to bee carried into his Pauillion,

where

where, with soueraigne drinks life was got into him again, but when hee knew himselfe to be vanquished, and that in one houre hee lost the greatest honour of all his life-time, very conceit of greefe had well nere slaine him. No lesse was the sorrow of Madame Lucemania, but thee and her knight were got so much discontented, as Palmerin, Trineus, and Ptolome were ioyfull: but aboue all other, Prince Lewes of Fraunce, more pleasant then if himselfe had tryumphed in victory, thinking hee could not sufficiently extoll the renowme of Palmerin, calling him ỹ onely puller dolorie of the praude. That day did Palmerin encounter with seauen other knights, and in his conquests shewed himselfe not onely magnanimous, but mercifull, sauing their liues, and honouring his Mistresse with the humilitie of theirs. The nert day likewise after many braue exployts, beeing readie to leaue ỹ fielde because none came to resist him, on a sodain there entred a knight in blacke Armour, striped all ouer with Golde, and bearing in his sheelde of Azure the Golden Sunne, whose braue order of entraunce declared him to be a hardie knight at Armes, who aduauncing himselfe to Palmerin, said. My intent of comming hither (Sir knight) is to let thee vnderstand, that I am the Seruaunt and beloued of a Lade, who may not bee equalled with any other, and because I am enformed, ỹ thou maintainest thy Freend, to excell all Ladies whatsoeuer, I offer to proue the contrary, and will make thee confesse it. I neuer spake wordes more true, answered Palmerin, and heere abide to iustifie them: but this place is ordeyned to no other ende, then to make thee and thy like know, what vnaduised enterprises you take in hand. And one thing is required of thee, that before thou begin the Combate, thou sette vpon this Piller the counterfeite of her, whom thou perswadest thy selfe to excell my Ladie in beautie, according to the conditions of this field published through all Europe. That cannot I doo, answered the knight of the Sunne, for I haue no other picture of her then is imprinted in my heart, where loue hath

so lively figured her person, as she is daily presented to mes by her incomparable beautie, which cannot bee taken from me but onely by death. And if loue folde to the soule, (as diuers hold opinion) whole worldes cannot separate me from her. And therefore are all men vnworthy to receiue fruition (by their regard) of a thing so precious, which makes me imagine, none but my selfe worthy to loke on her diuine figure. Prepare thee therefore to thy Horse, and defende thy selfe. Palmerin desirous to know the name of this fayre Ladie, said. I see sir knight, that thou art meruailous proud and surlie, which make mee rather desire to Combat with thee then any other to abate this hotte honour: albeit this is contrarie to his conditions, who was the principall Authour of this enterprise: which is, that thou shouldest set on this Pillar her portrait whom thou so esteemest: yet this exception shall bee graunted thee, for the desire I haue to know what thou canst do, as also her name, if thou darest reueale it. To tell thee her name (answered the knight of the Sunne) I will not sticke with thee, and because in concealing it, I shall offer her wrong, nature hauing in her selfe done the onely worke of beautie: know therefore that her name is Polinarda, Daughter to the mightie Emperor of Allemagine. These wordes were so vnkesome to Palmerin, and troubled his thoughts in such sort, that hee knew not readilye what to answere: notwithstanding in midst of his choller, thus spake. By God knight, thou hast made a good choyse, for against her beautie will not I contende, hauing it in greater estimation and reuerence the thou canst haue: but I am readie to proue, that thou deseruest not to be named her knight, no not so much as her meanest Seruaunt. That shall we try, said the knight of the Sunne, before wee part: and albeit her excellencie deserue farre greater seruice then mine, yet so it is, that for the loue I beare her, and the affection I haue to obey her by some agreeable seruice, I may by good reason name my selfe hers. At these speeches Palmerin conceiued such iealousie, as without attending

tending any further matter, mounted in great anger on horsebacke, and met the knight of the Sunne so forcible, as both of them were sent to the grounde: whereupon they drew their Swordes, and charged each other with such furie, as their Armour and Shields were hacked in peeces, and the ground coloured with their expence of blood. No permission of breathing was suffered betweene them, but blood and death earnestly desired on either part, so that the King, the Lordes and the Iudges, reputed this for the strangest Combat that euer they saw, nor could they say who was likest to win the fielde, but if the one died, the other could not escape, so that the King moued with compassion, caused them to be seuered, and commaunded them to enter their Tents. Which motion liked well the knight of the Sunne, for long he perswaded himselfe he could not hold out, wherfore he mounted on horsebacke so well as he could and withdrew himselfe, Palmerin being wonderfully displeased, that hee could not obtaine the victorye of this knight. Soone after, the King and the Prince Lewes came vnto his Tent, and seeing him very sore wounded, would not let him stay there, but said, Beleeue me (Sir Palmerin) you haue great neede of rest, and your wounds I see are very dangerous, you shall therefore be conueyed to my Pallace, where all helpes that may be deuised shall be giuen, assuring you, that greater honour could neuer knight purchase, then you haue done. And though this last Combate were not ended, you neede not be displeased, the ills thereof importeth the death of the one or the other, and perhaps of both, which I would not haue seene, for two of the best Prouinces in my Realme. And mee thinks you should content your selfe, hauing receyued before such honour ouer so many Lordes and knights of name: come you therefore with mee, and Lord Trineus beare vs companie. Great thanks receiued the King of them for this honourable courtesie, and Palmerin went with him to the Pallace, where the Kings Chyrurgions take care for his Wounds, hee being lodged in the most stately Chamber

by the Court. Now the Prince Lewes beganne to loue Palmerin so derely, as hee could not bee an houre lastly of his cõpanie, desiring his health as his owne welfare: wherefore all things that hee imagined Palmerin toke pleasure in, would hee perfourme with his vttermoll endeuours, and would suffer none to hold him talke, but onely of matter that might yeld pleasure and delight. Notwithstanding, diuers knights conferring with him that euening, as concerning the knight of the Sunne: Palmerin auntwered them, that his minde should neuer be thorowly quieted, vntill, such time as he fought with him againe. The Prince, who still endeuoured to keepe him from sadnes, said, I beleeue (my lord) that hee will not easily be induced to deale with him againe, for you brought him into such estate, as hee will keepe himselfe hereafter out of your handes: and well I am allured, that had you continued but a little longer, the victorye had beene yours, for the knight was so weakened, that hee did nothing but defend your blowes. It pleaseth you (my Lord) to say so quoth Palmerin, but had hee felt such valeur in me, or such courage as beseemes a vertuous Combatant, hardlye could hee escape as hee hath done: neuertheless, I hope (with the fauour of Fortune) to meete him once more, and then we will trie who is the strongest. Much other talke they had, but Palmerin intreated the Prince, that all the portraits of the conquered Ladies might bee brought him, which were aboue an hundred, of diuers beauties and most strange fashions, and among them all could be found none second to Polinarda, but (as we haue said alreadie) that of Agriola the Princesse of England: who (by the report of a Gentleman present that hadde seene her) was much more beautifully then her figure presented. Such speeches they continued so long of the English Virgin, as Trineus, (albeit hee neuer saw her) became amorous of her, and at ỹ instant hee so solemnly vowed himselfe hers, as thence forward hee swore neuer to loue any but her, so that for her sake he thrust himselfe into many perillous fortunes, as in the following

discourse

diſcourſe of the Victory you ſhall reade more at large. From whence let vs returne to the Prince Lowes, who ſeeing ſo many portraitures of Princeſſes and Ladies, ſhould daily congratulate Palmerins good fortune, and embracing him, ſaid. So helpe me God, my noble companion, I would neuer deſire greater riches in the world, then to reſemble you, eſpecially in chiualrie, which in you is ſo ſurpaſſing all other, as you haue ended to your honor, what aduentures haue ſayled in. Oh how happy may the Lady account her ſelfe, that hath ſuch a knight? and were not the conditon to cruell towards my ſelfe, I could wish I were a Woman in her place, to haue ſo high rule and commaunde ouer you. At which words all preſent beganne to ſmile, yet ſhewing good countenance to Palmerin, for the affection they ſaw the Prince bare him, which is yet to this day a comon vſage and practiſe among Courtiers: but Palmerin ſomewhat aſhamed of ſuch ſuperſtitious prayſes, anſwered. Truſt mee my Lord, I account my happineſſe the greater that I haue done ſeruice to ſo high a perſonage and ſo good a knight as you are, deſiring to méete you in ſuch place hereafter where you may perceiue the good will I beare you, not onely for this high entertainment, which is more then I can deſerue, as for the pleaſure I haue to honor ſo good a Prince, which if the occaſion happen, you ſhall perceiue the experience. I haue ſpoken nothing (quoth the Prince) but what is more acquainted to others then my ſelfe, and if I ſhould conceale them, then will they bee moſt openly knowne, becauſe vertue doth ſo apparantly ſhine in them. Many other ſpeeches paſſed betweene them, and longer had continued, but that many Lords which came to ſee the Iouſts, were ready vpon departing, and therefore would take their leaue of the King, whereupon they were conſtrained to breake off, the Prince going to his Chamber of preſence, where hee gaue thankes to a number that honoured the Court with their preſence, and ſo one after another all departed, the Duke of Sauoye being one of the firſt, aſhamed (God knowes) to

be

be so conquered by Palmerin, and not abiding his Lady Lucemania sacwell. But Lewes did not serue the Duchesse so, for her loue continued as resolute as before, and she loued him as well conquered, as had hee beene the conquerour, whereof shee assured him by many amorous meetings, by which meanes the Prince stayed the Duke at the Court longer then himselfe would haue done. Lewes thus louing Palmerin as you haue heard, intreated the Duchesse to come and visit him, which shee accomplished the day following, when Palmerin spent many discourses with her, rather of loue then entring into religion, for hee perceiued by her countenance that shee had no will to become a Nun, where wee will leaue them together, and tell you who the knight of the Sunne was, that fought the last Combate with Palmerin.

CHAP. XL.

Who the knight of the Sunne was, and of his strange aduentures.

THe King of Hungaria, Father to the Prince Tarisius, that married the fayre Griana, Mother to Palmerin, had in his latter yeares a Sonne named Netrides, and after hee had long liued in rest and prosperity, hee dyed, leauing the yong prince Netrides, fifteene yeares olde, and in the custody of his elder brother Tarisius. This Netrides growing in good constitution of body and behauiour, being well beloued generally, so gracious, gentle, and well gouerned hee was, as the Lords, knights, Gen-

Gentlemen, and people of Hungaria, esteemed him more then they? King Tarisius, who beeing Crowned after his Fathers decease, loued Netrides as Brother-hood requyred, till Fortune (enuious of this Concord) not willing that the vertues of this young Prince should be there extinguished, chaunged his Loue and affection into exceeding hatred, by an occasion hereafter following. One day the King Tarisius walking in his Garden to take the ayre, left his Brother Netrides in the Chamber, accompanyed with the Queene, who without imagination of any harme, nor that his fatall starres would sort him any misfortune, satte downe in the Kings Chayre, as hee talked with the Queene, and continued there so long, till Tarisius came vppe and found him there sitting, which he toke in such ill parte, as in a great rage he thus beganne.

Who made thee so audacious and presumptuous to sitte in my Seate, against thy dutie and my liking: By mine honor thou hast done more then thou wenest: and if I see the like againe, or may I but heare thereof, thy Head shall pay the price of thy follie. Netrides, who of his owne Nature was humble and gentle, fell downe on his knee, intreating the King his Brother to pardon him, for what he had done was not with any intent or meaning to displease his Highnesse: but an ouer-sight, and that so he would permit it to passe. The King made him no answere, because hee toke Netrides reasons for no payment, but conceiued a secrete hatred in his minde by this occasion of so slender moment, which increased thencefoorward, as the matter prouoking a fiery Meteore: so that he did repine at his Brother so much, as hee would not once speake to him, nor affoord him a good countenance.

Then called hee to remembrance the loue of his people towards his Brother: And if this hatred should come to they? knowledge for so small a cause, hee imagined they would displace him, and make Netrides King. For which cause hee intended to haue him slaine, and the execution hereof he cõmitted to one of his Archers, but God (who is euermore the preseruer of the innocent) would not suffer such a damned deede

of

of Paradice to take effect. Which Tarisius perceyuing, and finding one day his Brother alone, enflamed with this discontented humour, saide: Netrides, thou hast offended mee more then I will now stand to argue on, I therefore bannish thee my Courte and Kingdome: and take that within three dayes thou get thee hence, and on thy life not to discouer it to any man, or take any one with thee to beare thee companie.

The young Prince obedient to his Brother, made answer, that hee would accomplish his charge, and so withdrewe himselfe into his Chamber, not declaring to any one his cause of heauinesse. Then willing one of his Squyres to saddle his Steede, departed away as close as hee could, forbidding any of his Seruants to follow him: and such expedition heemade, as not resting but one night in any Lodging, he left his Brothers Kingdome, wandering without any care of himselfe, or which way hee went, but went heere and there, as Fortune pleased to guide him. Hauing long time Trauelled in Allemaigne, his Money fayled him, in that at his departure hee was but badly prouided: yet could not his Princely minde abase it selfe to Beg, so that being without meate or drinke, or any place to rest himselfe in, ashamed of himselfe, he sought the meanes to shrowde him where none might discrye him, and so entring a great Forrest, very thick and set with Trées, shrubs, and bushes, hee esteemed that a conuenient place for him to rest in, wherefore alighting from his Horse, and turning him to feede, layde himselfe downe at the rote of a Tree, and thus beganne to breath forth his complaints. Ah inconstant Fortune, and to mée most of all inconstant: didst thou erect mée so high, and reiect mee now thus low? well then may I say, that more wrong thou doest a man in one houre, then right in all his life time: For if heretofore thou diddest lende mee pleasure and delight, that now thou makest mee pay for it: (and that with vsuries to rigorous) not leaning any hope to comfort mée. Ah tyrannous King, cruell, and vnnaturall Brother, thou hast with shame bannished mee, and brought mee into this poore estate wherein I must dye: Oh happy is

I might, rather then to liue in the vile estate of Beggarie. So saying, hee layd him downe among the Heards, and was surprised with such extreame feblenesse, as he fell into his lamentations againe, thus. Ah my Lord and Father, to soone diddest thou leaue mee, would God I then had borne the companie, or else that at this instant I might come to thee. Ah men of Hungaria, I am well assured (knowing the loue you euer bare mee) that you will pittie when you heare my afflictions and calamities: alas, I neuer deserued this vnhappy ende. And beeing vnable to continue longer speeche, hee there determined to finish his life. But better Fortune befell him then hee expected, by the meanes of an Auncient Knight named Lombardo, who being neere, heard all his dolorous complaints. This Knight being rich and of Noble blood, had neere that Forrest a strong, delightfull, and sumptuous Castle, and delighted to walke among the Woods for his recreation, as good happe it was for Netrides, that hee walked this Euening. He hearing these sadde and sorrowfull regrets, pittie so touched his heart, as the teares bedewed his cheekes: yet would hee not trouble him, while he continued his moanes, but afterwards came and tooke him by the hand, saying: Arise my Friende and take courage, for you are in the place where you shal finde more good to benefite you, then harme to offende you, wherefore cherish vp your spirites, and forget this your heauinesse, which may endanger you beyond recouerie. Netrides seeing this Honourable Gentle-man, with his bearde so white as snowe, hearing his courteous offer, and for him now so necessary, with ioye, feare, and bashfulnesse, all coupled together, accepted it, and humbly thanked him, albeit (quoth he) a contented death is better to mee, then a miserable and despised life. The Knight comforting him, answered him thus, that it was not in his power to chose life or death, but the Founder of the Heauens reserued that authoritie in his owne handes. With these words hee take him by the hand, and conducted him to his Castle, where hee was worthily entertained by the Knight himselfe, his La-

die

die and her Daughter, one of the fayrest Virgines in all that Countrey. Lombardo hauing heard all his misfortunes, and harde Aduentures, in the Night discoursed all the whole to his Ladie: wherefore (good Wife, quoth hee) entertaine him so well as may bee, for I assure you hee is descended of high degree: and if his manners and vertues be correspondent to his Byrth, wee will giue him our Daughter in Marriage, if so himselfe accept our Offer. The good Ladie misliked not her Husbandes opinion, wherefore the next Morning thee went to entertaine her Guest, saying: My Lord, your comming hether hath wel contented my Lord and Husband, and so please it you to stay heere, we will be very glad and faine of your good companie, which gentle offer Netrides accepted, thanking God and the Ladie for his happie fortune. Thus remained hee with this ancient Knight Lombardo, who afterwards neuer remembred him of his miseries in the Forrest, but intreated him so well, as though hee had beene his owne Sonne. Netrides seeing the Knightes Daughter so faire, and so well conditioned, and she regarding not only the vertues of his minde, but also his comely and well-featured Bodie, they beganne amorously to affect each other secretly, but Loue inuented the meane to reueale it openly: for Lombardo well noting the great discretion of this young Gentleman, and knowing him to be descended of bloud-Royall, resolued to cause him Marrie his Daughter, demaunding the question of Netrides, among many other speeches, if so hee liked to marry his Daughter. My deere Lord (quoth he) it is the summe of my desire, and greater honor cannot you bestow on mee, so please her to conceyue the same opinion I do. The marriage was solemnized with all expedition, with the presence of many Gentles, neighbours thereabout, who marueled the Knight bestowed his Daughter so, in that they estéemed Netrides but a poore Knight errant. It fortuned afterward that the ancient Knight and his Lady deceased, leaning they Daughter great with Childe, to the no little content of Netrides, that after all his sorrowes he would become a

Father.

Father. Three dayes before this Ladie fell in Trauell, shee Dreamed that shee was shut vppe in a very darke Chamber, wherevnto she could by no meanes get, and therefore called for helpe to one of her Gentlewomen. Then was shee aduised to take her Childe in her armes, and to stay there still, whereupon she beheld her Infant, and saw that his face somwhat resembled the beames of the Sunne, the brightnesse whereof chased away the Darkenesse, so that shee might behold the place as cleere as any other, saying: My Lord, forgette this heauinesse, and you shall reioyce by this Infant, for this is he shall reestablish you in the place you haue lost, and shall seate you in the Chayre with Honour, for which you were exyled thence, giuing you his Crowne, that Traiterously chased you from his Kingdome. Hee comforted with these words, take the Childe in his armes, and saide. Little soule, I pray God thy Mother speake truth, and that thou mayest be able to execute it. So saying, he espyed a furious man, who snatched the Infant forth of his armes, and notwithstanding all his intreaties and supplications carryed it away with him.

This sorrowe for Netrides made her giue a loude shreeke, when hee calling his Wife, demaunded the cause of this her sudden affright: whereupon shee rehearsed to him the whole manner of her Dreame, and reioycing thereat, saide: I hope (my Lorde) that it will so happen to you as I haue dreamed, and therefore comfort your selfe without feare of misfortune: Notwithstanding hee remained in many doubtfull varieties of opinion, till they vnderstood by effects the pretended certaintie of this Dreame. Now was come the time of the Ladies deliuerance, which was a goodly Man-childe, so fayre and well fauoured as one should lightly behold, being named Frysol, and shee would suffer none to Nurse it but her owne selfe, for the certaine hope shee reposed in him. The Childe growing in time to such comely stature, as eache one tooke great pleasure in beholding him, whereat the Mother was so glad, that albeit shee had afterwards two other Sonnes, yet shewed shee no such speciall loue towardes them as vnto

Frysol,

Fryſol, which procured ſome hatred betweene his brethren and him. This young Lord growing to fourteene yéares of Age, was in ſtature very tall, delighting himſelfe in ryding great Horſes, ſhoting in the Long-Bow, caſting the Barre, and diuers other Gentleman-like exercíſes, as alſo to chaſe in the Foreſt, where olde Lombardo met with his Father. So that on a day after long and weary Chaſing of the Hart, hauing ſweated very ſore, and growne marueilous dry for want of drinke, finding a little Spring by the foote of a Tree, hee lay downe and dranke, but afterwards hee became ſo ill and ſickly, as hée trembled, ſhiuering very ſore: So that one of his Squyres could hardly leade him againe to the Caſtle. Netrides ſeeing him ſo exceeding ill, was marueilous ſorrie, commaunding his Phyſitions to ſeeke ſome preſent helpe for him, who plyed him with ſuch wholſome potions, as his Feuer left him, but his Face and all his Bodie were ſo painted as he had bene a Leaper, which made him to be mocked of his other Brethren, and ſcorned of all the Seruants, except onely of his Father and Mother, which was ſuch a griefe to him, as hée would haue dyed with fretting at them, but his Father rebuked them, and comforted him in this manner.

I did hope (my Sonne) by thy meanes to be reſtored again to the Kingdome of my deceaſed Father: but now, how long it will be before, God knowes, if this ſtrange malady of thine be neuer holpen. Fryſol amazed at his Fathers words, deſired him earneſtly to report the whole circumſtance: which Netrides at length did, rehearſing how hée was Brother to the King of Hungaria, the harde entreatance hee had vſed towards him, and laſtly, hee tolde him the Dreame of his Mother. Fryſol ſtudying a long ſpace on his Fathers wordes, at length anſwered. My Lord, you are not ignorant of the Soueraigne power of the Higheſt, who by his diuine iudgement hath ſent mee this diſeaſe, that thus tormenteth mee: Euen ſo, when it pleaſeth him, he will take it from me againe, and giue mee health and ſtrength much more then euer I had before, with meanes ſufficient to giue you ayde and ſuccour,

accor-

according to the matter whereon you haue diuined. And albeit I feele so extreame anguish, as death may not be likened to it, yet doth this hope comfort me in such sort, that me thinks already I am become more healthfull: therefore my Lord dismay of nothing, but perswade your selfe there is comfort behinde. Theſe words were so pleasing to Netrides, as mere ioy caused the teares to trickle downe his cheekes, marualling at the wonderfull courage of his Son, enduring such terrible paines as hee did: wherefore what hee thought hee could not reueale, but withdrew himselfe into his Chamber.

CHAP. XLI.

How Frysol persecuted with his disease, and the mockery of his brethrē, determined to go seeke strange aduētures.

FRysol hauing heard the originall of his birth, as also the vision that appeared to his mother, was thence forward more pensiue then hee had beene before, and perceiuing his brethren continued their bad disposition, and day by day mocked him more and more, hee determined to forsake his fathers house, and to seeke aduentures, and remedie for his sickneſſe, if any were to bee founde. And being one day in the Forrest more melancholyke then accustomed, hee espied a knight bered with Leprosie come by the high way, mounted on a pore Palfray, to whome hee sayd. My Friend, I am infected with the same disease thou art, wherefore wilt thou suffer me to beare thee company,

and I will bee ready to do what thou shalt commaund mee. The knight perceiuing hee might gaine some benefite by Frysol, was well contented, and so bad him mount vppe behinde him. So washée glad to doe what was contrary to his nature, and in this life continued two yéeres, trauailing many countries, bearing continually the wallet, and what profit came hée deliuered his maister, reseruing nothing for himselfe but what hée gaue him, and bearing a mind so noble and vertuous, as hee desired rather death, then to enrich himselfe by any villainous or dishonest act. So many countries and prouinces had they trauailed, as at last they came into the Realme of Hungaris, when Frysol remembred that he was in his Vncles Land, who ledde a life so base and ignominious: hée was ouercome with excéding heauinesse, which ill agréed with his daungerous disease, so that his companion desired to know the cause of his sadnesse: but Frysol prayed him to content himselfe, saying that death was more agréeable to him, then a life so dolorous and miserable. At which words the knight growing in choller, thrust him beside his Horse, and rode away, leauing poore Frysol there, hauing no other comfort then to fill the ayre with his teares and complaints, till at length hée receiued succour by a young maide named Leonarda, the Daughter of a rich Countreyman that dwelt on a mountaine nére at hand. This maiden leasing her Fathers Beasts and Cattell to pasture, toke great delight in gathering hearbs and roots, wherewith to make oyntments for all woundes and diseases: and this day (by the diuine permission) shée chaunced that way where shée heard the mournefull lamentations of Frysol, whome when she beheld, ouercome with pittie and compassion, said. Alas my Friend, how came you into this desart and comfortlesse place, being oppressed with such a bad and dangerous sickneſſe. In good sooth mistresse (quoth hée) by no other meanes then the misfortune and displeasure of my life: Oh how happier were my death at this instant, then to liue any longer in this monstrous languishing

Friend,

Friend, answered the mayde, you ought not thus to dispayre in sickneſſe, but consider that the Lord and gouernour of the heauens and earth, doth by theſe meanes trie and proouue his people, whom if hée perceiue thankfull and patient in their afflictions, of reprobate enemies, he makes them his Friends and Children, onely by the ranſome of his beloued Sonne paide, If then you will put your whole confidence in him, I am perſwaded you ſhall ſone finde remedy. So cauſing him to ryſe, ſhée conducted him to her Fathers houſe, where for certaine dayes ſhée bathed him with wholeſome Hearbes, and annointed him with ſuch precious oyntments, as in ſhort time his diſeaſe forſooke him, and hee was as cleane as at the time hee dranke the Water: for which hee humbly thanking the maiden, ſaid. God make me able (fayre Virgin) to repute this wonderfull kindneſſe receiued at your hands, accounting my ſelfe more indebted to you, then to my parents that gaue me firſt life: and this perſwade your ſelfe, that whereſoeuer my body bee ſeparated from this place, my heart ſhall remaine ready to do you any ſeruice. That is my will & intent (quoth Leonarda, but thanke him chiefely that made mee able to helpe you, and in ſo doing ſhall I account my labour well beſtowed. Fryſol for this vnexpected good fortune, was hencefoorward very dutifull and louing towards Leonardas Father and her Brethren, as the readieſt Seruant he had in his houſe: but the good man eſteemed ſo well of him, as by no meanes hee would ſuffer him to be ſo painfull, but with ſuch fare as God ſent him, entertained and welcomed him, not ſuffering him to depart thence in the ſpace of a yeere and more. Fryſol often accompanying Leonarda to the fielde, ſhee ſeeing him ſo fayre and comely in perſonage, began ſecretly to affect him, yet would ſhe not acquaint him therewith, fearing more to offend then to be refuſed. So ſoone as Fryſol had thus recouered his ſtrength, he determined to ſtay no longer there, wherefore finding Leonarda at leiſure conuenient, hee ſayd. I know very well (faire Mayden) how much I am behol-

beholding to you, for the speciall grace and good I haue receiued by you, which inuiteth mee to make you this promise, that you shall not commaund any thing, but I will gladly accomplish it. And because I am desirous to trauaile after strange aduentures, I would request that it might bee with your willing consent, promising you to stay no longer hence then the tearme of three yeeres, in which time I will not fayle to visite you againe: and if my fortune so fall out as I am perswaded, I doubt not to recompence what you did for me: That which I alway feared (sir Frysol) quoth shee, is now come to passe: notwithstanding, seeing it is conuenient I should loue honour more then mine owne pleasure, I am content you shall goe seeke your aduauncement so well begunne: but I pray you not to cast your promise in oblivion. I will not to the death (quoth hee) do any thing that may dislike you, or against your will, and since you haue so freely graunted mee libertie, perswade your selfe my word shall bee my deede. So taking his leaue of his Father and Brethren, hee trauelled towards Allemaigne, where hee heard that Chiualrie was more maintayned then in any other place, and so Rode hee foure dayes together without any Aduenture: till passing through a Forrest, he heard (as it were) a great noyse of people fighting, wherefore making haste that way, he espyed an ancient Knight assaulted by sixe Villaines that sought to murther him, whome hee resisted so well as he could, albeit he had nothing but his Sword to defend him. The Knight espying Frysol, called to him for helpe, when hee (suddenly finding a young Tree, pluckt vppe by the roote, came therewith to the Villaines, thus saying: Why Traiterous Varlets, what prouoketh you to offer such shame to a Knight? wherewith hee tooke one of them so suddenly on the pate with his Tree, as hee neuer rose, to tell who hurt him. The Knight and he together, so behaued themselues, as three of those Villaines were laid dead before them, which the other three perceiuing, tooke themselues to flight: whereupon the olde Knight seeing himselfe so well deliuered, came

and

and embraced Frysol with these wordes. Now may I say my good friend, that my life had perished without your assistance, bethinke your selfe therefore how I may gratifie this gentlenesse: in meane time, I haue a house not farre hence, let me intreate you to lodge with mée this night, and I will make you the best entertainment the Country will afford. Whereto Frysol agreed, promising to leaue him in safetie before hee departed: for which the old knight thanked him, and as they went hee discoursed to him, how these villaines assailed him, because hee had enforced them to surrender certaine heritages, which vniustly they detained from poore Orphanes, and for that cause set spies to watch him, that they might set vpon him and kill him: which surely they had done (quoth hee) without your succour. In the continuance of these speeches, they arriued at his Castle, where many of his Squires marualed to sée him so sore wounded, but specially his Lady and his two Sonnes, to whome hee rehearsed the summe of his aduentures, and the great fauour and helpe hee found by Frysol, for which cause hee entertained him with exceeding honour. And so long abode Frysol there with the knight, till beeing desirous to receiue the order of knighthood, hee came to the knight in this manner. May it pleese you Sir to bestow on me horse and armour, I will go to the Emperours Court of Allemaigne, hee beeing the most renowned Prince in the world. The good knight séeing him so forward to chiualrie, gaue him horse, armour, and money for his iourney, whervpon hee set forward, and the third day after hee arriued at the Emperours Court, from whence (a little before) Trineus and Palmerin were departed towards Fraunce: which newes made Frysol earnestly desire his knighthood, because hee intended with all speede to trauaile thither likewise, in respect of the honour was there to be won. Frysol vnderstanding the Emperour was in the Chappell hearing diuine seruise, went thither, where beholding the Princesse Polinarda, hee reputed her the onely faire Lady of the world, thinking

thinking hée could neuer glut his eyes with regarding her: whereon, seruice being ended, he fell on his knée before the Emperour in this manner. Because I knowing (inuincible Lord) that you are renowned beyonde all other Potentates whatsoeuer, and that you make no small account of knights aduenturous: I desire that by your hand I may be numbred among them. The Emperour séeing him so yong and yet valiantly giuen, answered. I would be loth my friend to deny a request so reasonable, but I will first know if you be Gentle borne, or no. My Lord (quoth he) I sweare by the faith I owe to God and your Maiestie, that I am noble borne, and of the blood royall by my Fathers side. God forbid then (sayd the Emperour) but you should bee knight, and Fortune shéld you so well in chiualrie, as thée haue indued you with comely shape and beautie. Then was the Spurre put vppon his right héele, and the Emperour bad him rise a knight, commaunding his Daughter Polinarda to guyrd his Sword to him, which shée did, saying. Worthily and with happinesse (Sir knight) may you imploy the order you haue receiued. Madam (quoth Frisol) if hereafter any vertue or valour abyde in me, it shall be imployed onely for you, hauing thus honoured mée with my Sword, wherewith I hope to accomplish such déedes of armes, as shall renowne her name that gaue mée my weapon: but Polinarda made him no answere, because Palmerin was the onely Image of her thoughts. After Frysol was thus knighted, taking his leaue of the Emperour and his Daughter, he departed, making no small hast till hée arriued at the Iousts of Paris, where hee determined for his first déed of chiualrie, to enter the Combate for the beauty of Polinarda. But hée could not get thether so sone as he intended, for hée was hindred by the way with an vnexpected aduenture, which was, in a fayre forrest, where hée beheld foure knight carry away a Lady perforce, who seeing him, cryed: Ah good knight, for Gods sake succour mee: whereuppon Frysol couching his Launce, sent one of the

knights

knights headlong to the ground, and in short time wounded another in such sort, as now hee had but two left to resist him, on whom Frysol made tryall, how well hee could imploy the gift of Polinarda. The knights seeing the hard fortune of their two other fellowes, the one having broken his necke in the fall, and the other wounded past hope of recouery, toke the wisest way for themselues, posting thence so fast as they could ride, but Frysol would not follow, least they had some other company in ambush that might haue intrapped him, wherefore hee conducted the Lady to her mothers Castle, where hee remained that night, and the next day sette forward to Paris, where hee arriued at the time hee fought with Palmerin, according as it hath beene before rehearsed.

After the knight of the Sunne, (who henceforth shall passe by the name of Frysol) had left Palmerin, and was departed the field, the night was so obscure as hee knew not which way hee rode, so that the moysture of the euening dew did great harme to his woundes, as if God had not armed him with the better strength, hee was in danger not to escape with life. The very same day was the Duke of Gaule departed from Paris, to go ayde the King of England against the King of Scots, and Norway, who was Nephew to the Emperour of Allemaigne, for that they molested him with troublesome warres: and the Duke being benighted, was glad to pitch his Tents in a fayre fielde, through which it fortuned Frysol to passe, complayning of the danger hee felt himselfe in. The Duke of Gaule being abroade forth of his Tent to recreate himselfe, heard this sorrowfull noyse, which made him sende his men to see who it was, and to bring him with them to the Tent: whether when they had brought him, the Duke pitying his estate, demaunded whence hee came, and who had wounded him in that sort. Then discoursed hee the whole matter, how he had fought with the knight that ouercame the Duke of Sauoy, and so long the fight endured, that the darke night

and the king caused them to be parted, neyther of them as yet conquered, and because hee would not returne into the Citie, sought some Village where hee might conuenientlie lodge. The Duke of Gaule hearing the wordes of Frysol, esteemed him for a worthy and valiant knight, hauing so long endurred against Palmerin vnuanquished, wherefore hee sayd. Sir knight, you are very welcome to me: all the aide and succour I can giue you, you shall be sure to finde with hearty good will: assuring you, that there is no knight liuing to whome I wish more euill, then him whom you haue this day fought withall. So causing him to bee vnarmed, willed him to rest himselfe vppon his owne bedde, and made his wounds be dressed, abyding there eight daies for the health of Frysol. In which time, the Duke had imparted to him the warres of the King of England, which made him make more hast to be gone, or else he would haue kept him companie longer. My Lord (quoth Frysol) so please you to accept my companie, I hope to behaue my selfe so wel, as you shall not be discontented with me. The Duke thanked him, and reioyced that by this meanes so good a knight was preserued, and did him all the honour hee could deuise, taking him with him into England, where hee found the Country very much desolated with warre to his no little greefe: but leaue we them, and returne to Palmerin.

CHAP.

CHAP. XLII.

¶ Of the great courtesie the King of Fraunce vsed to Trineus and to Palmerin: And of theyr returne into Allemaigne.

SO diligently were Palmerins Woundes attended, which hee had receyued by the hand of Fryol, as not long after he recouered his health, whereof the King and the Prince Lewes were highly glad, and much more Trineus, vnto whom the King desired to giue his Daughter Lucemania in Marriage: which to compasse, he intended a sumptuous Banquet, whereto hee would inuite these twaine: yet first he would acquainte the Quéene therewith, and therefore beganne the matter with her thus.

I see Madame, that our Daughter Lucemania is of yeres sufficient for a Husband, and because I euermore desired her highest preferment, and for that I would know if the Prince Trineus to whom I could with she were espoused, were any thing in Loue that way affected, for hardly in my Judgement shall we find a greater Lord, being heyre to the famous Emperour of Allemaigne: for this intent (I say) will I ordaine a Banquet, whereto both hée and Noble Palmerin shalbe inuited, and our Daughter to beare them companie in the best sorte you can deuise. The Quéene, who more desired this Marriage then the King her Husband, answered. You doubt not (my Lorde) that I request her chiefest aduantage, wherefore let it bee as you haue determined, and shee shall be present as you haue appoynted. This matter thus proceeding

ceiuing, two dayes after were Trineus and Palmerin called to this Banquet, and to honour them the more, the King caused his Sonne Lewes, with a braue companie of Knightes and Gentlemen, to conduct them into the stately Pallace, where they were royally receiued by the King and Queene, so leade vppe into the Chamber appointed for theyr Banquet.

After they had washed, the King caused Trineus to sit by and Palmerin against him, aboue whom sate faire Lucemania his Daughter, beeing placed iust opposite to the Prince Trineus, the Queene to furnish the Table, sat downe by the King. And albeeit Nature had bestowed on the Princesse most exquisite Beautie, yet her sumptuous Accoutrements made her appeare most amyable: but all could not moue the heart of Trineus, to forget her, to whose Shrine he was dedicated. The Banquet ended, and the Tables withdrawne, Trineus daunced with the fayre young Princesse, Courting her with many honest and decent speeches, which made Lucemania suppose hée loued her: but the Prince noted it well enough, albeit his affections were bound to English Agriola.

In this time the other Ladyes were conferring of Palmerins Knightly valour, when the Counte of Armignac his Sonne, intreating the Duke of Orleaunces Daughter to daunce, was thus stayed by her speeches to the other Ladies.

You sée faire Ladies (quoth shée) that Palmerin hath misprized our Beauties, to reuenge our Iniurie, let vs fall vpon him, and shutte him in some place, where he may neuer come forth: For if hée escape vs, the Allemaigne Ladyes shall beare the honour from the French, which will bée to vs perpetuall disgrace. These wordes shee vttered with such a pleasaunt countenaunce, as moued all the other Ladyes to smile, whereupon the Duchesse of Burgundie answered. In sooth it is necessarie wee should do so, and let vs not suffer him to gette out of our handes so easilie, as hee did from the Knights that came to the Combate. All the companie liked this motion well, but the King said. Ladyes, I will not consent that Palmerin shall haue any wrong, because I haue

taken

taken him into my Guard. And who shall make recompence (quoth an other Ladie) for the wrong he hath done vs? You ought to suffer for satisfaction (said the King) and be glad that you had the meane to see the best Knight in the World, for mine owne part I promise you, I rest so contented. Palmerin hearing the King so commend him, bashfully thus answered. Alas my Lord, there is no such matter in me as pleaseth your Maiestie to report, but what my abilitie is, it remaineth to doe you service: accounting my selfe more then happy, by comming to your Highnesse Court, to haue knowledge of a Prince so Noble, and vertuous, and no man living (next my deere Lord the Emperour) that my command mee more then your Highnesse. Among other speeches, the King brake the matter of his Daughters marriage to Palmerin, desiring him to labour in the cause to Trineus, which he promised, but all in vaine: for after they had taken their leane to return towards Allemaigne, though Palmerin was earnest in the matter, in respect of the Beauty and Noblenesse of the Princesse, as for the support he might haue by matching with the Daughter of France, yet Trineus thus answered. I thanke you my Lord, for the good you wish me, as also the honour the King affords mee: but another beyond her (whose renowne hath conquered me) is Lady and Mistrisse of my affections. And because you are here from whom I will not hyde or conceale my most secret thoughts, know we that it is Agriola, Daughter to the King of England, to whom though my Father be an enemy, yet by your ayde, and mine owne good endeuours, I doe not doubt to compasse my Loue. You know my Lorde (quoth Palmerin) that I wish as well to you, as mine owne heart, and when occasion serues, thy all shall make manifest. And seeing you haue fixed your Loue on faire Agriola of England, imparting likewise the same so constantly to mee: I am perswaded you could neuer make a better choyse, therfore let nothing chaunge your opinion.

Thus rode they on with many sundry speeches, not a little gladdes they were returning to the Emperour, but Palmerin

merin, much more then was Trineus, for the great desire hee had to see his Lady Polinarda: wherefore with the consent of the Prince, he sent a Squire before to aduertise the Emperour of their comming: Before whom he had no soner done reuerence, but hee was presently knowne, and demanded in what estate his Sonne Trineus and Palmerin were, where he had left them, and what accidents had hapned in France? Then the Squyre rehearsed the Combates and Victoryes of his Maister against the Knights of Fraunce, and the Dukes of Gaule and Sauoy, with their royall entertainment by the King and his Sonne, how many Portraites of Ladyes Palmerin had conquered, with the whole circumstance of euery action. Whereof the Emperour, the Empresse, and all the Lords and Ladyes were maruellous glad, yet was not their ioye comparable to the Princesse Polinardaes, hearing the Squyre reueale the honorable deedes of her Loue: so that her conceyte might bee discerned by her countenance, and needes must shee thus demaund of the Squyre. I pray thee tell me my Friende, how fares my Lord and Brother, with his Noble companyon Syr Palmerin? The Squyre well aduised, because hee knewe the Loue betweene her and his Maister, sette his knee to the grounde againe, with this answere.

I left the Prince your Brother, accompanyed with my Lorde Palmerin, well and in good health: but chiefely my Lorde, who since you sawe him, hath wonne the greatest honour that euer Knight did. Afterward hee reported the manner of the Combats to her, and what griefe his Maister sustained in his sicknes, when hee could not be reuenged on the Knight that lost her Counterfeit, which the Duke of Sauoye placed at the feete of Lucemania: and last of all, the perillous Combat betweene his Maister, and the Knight of the Sunne. Which shee tooke such delight to heare, as shee made him repeat one thing manie times, and could not satisfie her selfe sufficiently with these worthy reports. Which the Squyre perceyuing, delighted as much to iterate euery thing, and saide, Beleeue mee Madame, the Loue my Maister beares to her,

for

for whose Beautie hee entred the Combat, in my opinion is incredible: For hee is more hers then his owne, and I haue seen him in such a pensiue sort thinking on her, as one could hardly iudge whether he were aliue or dead: fearing least any other should robbe him of his Loue: such is the iealousie of his vnspotted affection, albeit my Maister reputes his Ladie inmoueable. Polinarda changing countenance oftentimes at the Squyres words, answered. The Ladie should be very ill counselled, being honoured with the Loue of so good a Knight as Palmerin, to make refusall of his worthy seruice: and I promise thee, by the Faith of a Princesse, that if I knew her, for the vnwillingnesse I haue to heare him so complaine, I would endeauour to cause her like none but him, and therein to thinke her selfe the most happie among Ladyes. Wherefore (if thou mayst be so bolde) tell thy Maister at his returne, that I will be a meane to ayde him towards her he Loues: and therewithall, present him my fauourable Salutations, in that I euermore desired the fortunate successe of his Enterprise: not so much for the liking of his Ladie, being beloued of the best, as for the renowned Chiualrie that harbours in his heart. Those speeches ended, the Squyre returned to meete the Prince Trineus and his Maister, to whom he reported his talke with Polinarda: which Palmerin reioycing at, let fall all Iealousie, esteeming her now the truest Ladie liuing. The men of Gaunt, for ioy of his returne, that so worthily had deliuered them from the oppressions of the Enchaunted Knight, went forth in seuerall companyes, according as honour, yeares, and office directed them, to meete him, and so conueied him with signes of ioy to the Pallace, where the Emperour so much abased himselfe, as hee came downe into the open Courte to entertaine him, and glad likewise, to see the safe return of his Sonne Trineus, saying: My Sonne, right happie is thy returne: and you Syr Palmerin, perswade your selfe so Welcom as heart can deuise: assuring you, that your successe hath not a litle pleased me. And needs must I account that Lady especially bounden vnto you, for whose

sake

loue you haue paſt ſo many daungerous Combates, good reaſon hath ſhe to Loue you, in reſpect of your Trauells for her, renowning her ſo much by your Knightly Chiualry, ſo that if make you not recompence according to your merites, worthily may ſhe be condemned of Ingratitude. Alas my Lord (quoth hee) her Beautie commaundeth higher matters then all my Labours. Polinarda beeing in preſence, remembred well her Fathers words, and therfore ſhe intended to ſhunne that condemnation, ſaying to her ſelfe, Hee that winneth honour, ought to weare it. And he that commandeth the ſoule, may eaſily ouer-rule the Paſſions of the minde: Lette my Knight then be rewarded as hee hath rightly deſerued.

All this while, the Eyes of theſe two Louers ſo well diſcharged theyr office, as Palmerin wiſhed that Iuno had granted him ſo much, as ſhee did ſometime to Argus her Shepheard, that he might haue more eaſe in his affliction: for he thought it not enough, onely to beholde the Beautie of ſo rare and excellent perfection. Againe, hee was not a little tormented, becauſe Polinarda (to couer what ſhee would gladly none ſhould diſcern) caſt her looks on the ground, which ſometimes ſhe likewiſe compelled him to do: but her Preſence whome he eſteemed aboue all other earthly things, would not allowe him that conſideration. The Emperour at length commanded, that all the Figures of the Ladyes which hee had wonne in Combat, ſhould be brought before him: but when he ſaw ſo manie, and of ſo contrarie qualities, hee could not but commende Syr Palmerins victorie. Then were diuers iudgements giuen of the beautie of the Portraits, eache one of the beholders after their ſeuerall opinions. Ptolome made deſcription of whom they were, and who did entercombate on theyr behalfes, omitting at no time the honour of Palmerin: Whereat they all admyred: ſome of them commending their Complexions, others, their ſweete young yeares, and all-to-ther the valor and proweſſe of him that brought the conqueſt with him, whervpon the Emperour ſaid. In good faith Syr Palmerin, I bleſſe the time that Fortune ſent mee ſo good a knight,

knight, and thinke not to carrie away all the glorie of your victory your selfe, for I meane to haue part, because you gaue your selfe mine. And would the Ladie you Loue were in this Courte, or in my Empyre, to the ende that I might so assist you in your Suite, as yee might be both mine. My Lords (quoth Palmerin) the victorie is wholly yours, being gotten by your knight, and if the Lady I loue were not vnder your Regiment, then should I complaine of a greater matter then agreeing with you, being obedient to your Highnesse, as your humble Subiect and Seruant. With which answere the Emperour seemed highly contented: and Trineus comming to his Sister Polinarda, saide:

Trust me faire Sister, you are more indebted to Palmerin, then to any other knight in the World beside, and rather accept of him, then of the Duke of Lorraine, who maintaining your Beautie, was ouercome by the Duke of Sauoye, and your Picture placed at the feete of Lucemania, where yet it had remained, but that Palmerin Conquering the Duke, remoued the figure of the French Princesse in obeysaunce to you. Polinarda not content with the vndiscreete enterprise of the Duke of Lorraine, answered, In sooth good Brother the Duke of Lorraine is none of my knight, and I repute Palmerin, to haue more Bountie and valour then the Duke can haue of wit or courage: therefore great maruell that he was not slaine. The Emperour hearing Polinarda was offended with the Duke of Lorrayne, answered, you cannot (Daughter) forbid men to execute their owne pleasure, and if the Duke liked to enter the Combate for your Beautie, it was for the honourable good will hee bare you, and albeit hee could not reache his desire, yet haue you no cause to thinke the worse of him. Polinarda being a Princesse of so rare a wit and Iudgement, as any of her time, would multiply no more words, but continued silent: Neuertheless, Palmerin remembring the answer she made to Trineus, intreated her to keepe all the Portraits of all the Ladyes, determining to sent them to whome they belonged, according to their degrées in birth,

Wyth and honour. Which shee thankfully accepted, and spending this whole day in diuers delights, Palmerin beeing in the Euening in his Chamber, accompanyed with Protome, sent his Dwarfe to the Princesse, to appoynt the time of theyr next meeting: and shee seeing the Dwarfe, caught him about the necke, demaunding of him what newes hee had brought her?

None but good, Madame (answered the Dwarfe) my Master hath sent you the Bon-loir, and therewithall, his humble duety to your Highnesse: For, being your knight, and liuing onely to do you seruice, he hath good hope that your vertuous Nature will not forget, how many dangers hee hath past for your sake: and now dooth Loue appeale for his desired reward.

Wherefore (good Madame,) as you are heart-fast, vnite your selues hand-fast, giue my Maister life, your selfe comfort, and make me happy, by carrying of this Message: For I vowe by the Reuerend faith I beare you both, that I will not depart without some gracious answere.

Polinarda smiling to heare Vrbanillo speake so earnestly, said. The assurance thou giuest me of the truthe affection thou beareth thy maister, doth not a little content mee, and pittie it were so good a knight should labour all this while in vaine: Therefore perswade thy Maister, that to morrow at night I will meete him where we were wont, and there will I resolue him to his owne content.

CHAP.

CHAP. XLIII.

How Palmerin went in the night to the appointed place, to confer with his Lady Polinarda, and the amorous communication they had together.

VRbanillo with cheerefull countenaunce returned to his maister, declaring to him his talk with Polinarda, her sweet lookes, her gracious answers, how chiefely shee loued him, and lastly her promise to meet him in the accustomed place: yet is not this all, for before you depart with her, she hath assured me to resolue you to your owne content. And that is it I want (quoth he) for might I once receiue my content, then should I thinke my trauailes rewarded. And doubt you not thereof said the Dwarfe, if she be a woman of her word. Then Ptolome being present, asked the dwarfe if hee saw Bryonella. No in sooth (quoth he) she was not in the princesse Chamber, nor (to my knowledge) was she acquainted with my comming, yet dare I thinke she will be there with my Lady. The time being come, the Ladies were at the place with deuotion, answerable to those silent houres, and their Knights not fayling their appointment, what pleasure on each side was conceiued, is not to bee enquired, for all wishings are nothing in respect of their contentments. Polenarda hauing her friendly Knight before her, so sweete a blush eclipsed her countenaunce, as would driue nature into a studie to frame the like, and thus shee began. Alas my sweete Friend, in what paine, anguish and heauinesse of

heart, hath your absence brought me? what teares haue fallen from mine eyes, and drops of blod from my heart, by renting sighs and ceaseless acclamations, remembring our pleasures past, and present comfort, and the hope of better hap to come? What doloreus conceit hath often wounded me, thinking on so many hazards and perils as might hinder mee from seeing you againe? and not without a cause, beleeue me, for had you miscarried, neuer Lady sustained such a losse, in respect of your knightly valour, and the vnfained loue I beare you, whereof (before I depart) I meane assuredly to resolue you, in requitall of your honourable trauailes for maintenance of my beautie. And heereof perswade your selfe good knight, that to haue you, I refuse all other good fortunes whatsoeuer: and therefore I care not though it were openly known, how especially I praise you: desire, loue, and esteeme you. Palmerin confounded with this long expected comfort, and not able to endure with silence, interrupted her in this manner. By the faith of your sworne Seruant, sweete Madame, the perrils, mishaps, and dangers I haue past since my departure, neuer deserued the very least of your complaints, nor could my endeuour proue such, as your incomparable perfections merited, the onely remembraunce whereof, was sufficient to make me inuincible: wherefore sweete Philesse, if I haue wonne any honor, your fauour was the meane, and your beautie gaue me the vertue, streaming so plentifully from your chaste eyes, as the water from the Fountaine. To little purpose were it now to rehearse, the strange assaults, massacring thoughts, and violent flames, wherein I haue burned and continually bene crucified, since the houre it pleased you to let mee see Fraunce: vndoubtedly the very meanest of my sufferings was able to destroy me, without the resolute assurance of your diuine fauor, which triumphing ouer death, shall make me liue continually. So that the desire to let you know how assuredly I am yours, and the continuall wishing to see you againe, gaue mee victory ouer your enemies, and

brought

brought mee safe thorow all extremities, to honour you as I do at this present. It now remaines Madame, that you regard the truth of my loue, the permanence thereof, and the instant passions worse then death to mee, yet with this proviso, that I presume not of any action meritorious but your grace, which is able to strengthen mee in greatest debilitie. And no where know I to seeke for pittie and support of my cares, if not onely by her who hath the soueraigne power to chase hence the cruell and euer threatning menaces of death. For beare good Lord, quoth thee, thus to talke of death, considering I cannot liue one houre without you, or holde I any comfort of my life, but onely in louing you, to enioy you: so that what you endure, I suffer, and no passion torments you, but I haue a share therein, so deuoutly is my spirite consorted with yours. And therefore thinke not your oppressions greater then mine, for if you doe, it proceedeth by want of experience of feminine passions, the extremity whereof farre surmounteth your seare. For which cause, to giue some rest to our long and ouertrauelled desires, I giue you here my hand, and there withall a chast heart, accepting you onely for my Lord and husband, and to my promise call heauen and earth to witnes. Where is the wit so daintie, the tongue so flourishing, or the pen so diligent, as can conceiue, report, or set downe in perfect colours, the ioyes of these louers? You fayre Lordings, and you likewise fayre Ladies, that long haue traueled in amorous affections, and in the ende receiued the reward of your passions, by your owne conceits can imagine the content of these twaine: for Palmerin was in this opinion, that Iupiter had not the like pleasure with fayre Alemena, for whome hee caused one night to endure the space of three daies, as hee had with his gracious mistresse Polinarda. For now the manifolde strokes hee gaue for beautie, were here remembred, his daungerous trauailes in all places recounted, his absence with kinde gratulations welcomed, his teares, sighs, complaints, and sorrowes resolued,

and lastly, his long, vnchangeable and most faithfull loue, friendlie rewarded. Let vs not here forget, that Ptolome and Brionella were in the same predicament, for hee knowing her to bee of the noble and auncient ligne, beside, sole heyre to the house of Saxon, might count himselfe highly honored with such a Wife: and therefore the like coniunction was made betweene them, so that now those Knights and Ladies were espoused before God, there wanted nothing but the ceremonie of the Church to confirme it. But now comes Vrbanillo, and hee breakes off this pleasure, because the time was so farre spent, as they must needes depart: which with much adoe they did, leaning their Ladies examining their content, the Princesse some after, thus conferring with Brionella. Alas faire Friend, it is doubtfull what danger may arise, because you haue contracted your selfe to Ptolome without the Emperors consent: how will you answere when you are charged with the fault? Brionella who now feared nothing but the preuenting of her loue, answered, In soth Madame, you speake with great reason, you now giue counsell when the déede is done, and cannot be reuoked till it bee dispatched: would you haue all the good fortune your selfe, and suffer your Friende to enioy no parte with you? trust mee that is vnconscionable dealing, for hee that made you to loue, framed me to the selfe-same mettall. But I see you make the occasion to mee, to learne how to answere your owne déede: let vs referre all to him Madame, that appointed your choise by destenie, and mine by mine owne lyking. Many other pleasaunt speeches passed betweene them, and diuers times their knights came to visite them, till Fortune who will neuer suffer things long in one estate, sent an occasion to hinder this delight of their loue: for there was a Messenger come to the Courte from the King of Norway, Nephew to the Emperour, who being admitted audience, thus deliuered his message... Most thie Lord, the king of Norway my Maister, requires your assistance in his great distresse, against the king of England,

land, who with a mighty and puissant Armie is entered his dominions, where he hath made great waste and slaughter of his people, in diuers skirmishes and conflicts passed betwéene them, so that hee neuer had like neede as at this instant. Trust mee (quoth the Emperour) I will assist him with right good will, and his misfortune doth not a little greeue me, but I will take order for it immediatly, and my power shall be with him so soone as possible may bee: with which answer the Messenger departed. Now as concerning the cause of these warres, betweene the warres of Norwaye and England, it was procured by displeasure of succor that the King of Norway gaue to the king of Scots his brother, who helde warre with England about the taking of certaine Shippes: the Emperour likewise his heauy enemy, and for that cause he promised helpe so soone to the king his Nephew. Which when Trineus vnderstood, that his Father declared himselfe displeased with the Father of his beloued Agriola, (whose loue no occasion could alter) hee was greatly discontented, yet dissembling his conceit, determined rather to ayde the King of England, then his Cozin, and therefore intreated Palmerin to accompany him to his Chamber, where hee would acquaint him with some part of the sorrow hee conceiued, by the succour his Father would send to the king of Norwaye, against her Father whose seruant he had vowed himselfe, and therefore (quoth hee) let me desire you to conceale a request I shall make to you. You know my Lord, saide Palmerin, that I will no lesse obey you then the Emperour your Father, commaund therefore what you please, and be it in my power, it shall bee executed. So it is, quoth Trineus, that I would haue you not accompany the power my Father sends by Sea, but do so much for me, that you, Ptolome & my selfe (vnknown to any) may assist the king of England in his warres, by which meanes I doubt not to compasse the thing I most of all desire. And this I dare tell you, that my life is onely dedicated to her seruice, and so well doe I hope to imploy my

paines, that she shall haue cause to loue mee, and regard the paine I suffer for her sake: and but I gaine the fortune to purchase my loue, right soone and suddaine, shall you heare of my death. You that haue felt the like torments can censure of mine, which I dare not impart to the Emperour my Father, because of the hatred he beares the King of England: aduise me therefore good friend what I shall do.

These speeches were nothing pleasing to Palmerin, seeing hée must now againe depart from his Ladie: but because he earnestly affected Trineus, and knew how well hée might helpe him in his loue, answered. Assure your selfe my Lord, that I will labour diligently for your good, and shall assist you to my vttermost, in that you beare such loue to the Princesse. And I am of the opinion, that hauing receiued the order of Knighthood, which the Emperour your Father will not denie, it would auaile you much, to tell your Father how you desire (vnknowne) to aide the King of Norway.

For my part, if he demaund my aduise, I will like it so wel, as because the Armie cannot bee readie so soone, your honour, Ptolome, and my selfe, will ride before towards the King, and so may we accomplish what wee so earnestly desire. This counsell pleased so well Trineus, as he intended on the morrow to request his order of the Emperour: as also how gladly he would assist the King of Norway, and how necessary it was for him to go before the Armie, as Palmerin and he had deuised together.

CHAP.

CHAP. XLIIII.

How Trineus was knighted, and what happened to him afterward.



N the morrow, this young prince seeing that to accomplish his intent, it was necessary he should be knighted, he gaue attendance to find the Emperor at leisure, when hee might sollicite his highnesse with his suite: and vnderstanding that he was walking in his gallery, he went to him, and on his knee thus began. Dread Lord and Father, so pleased your Maiestie, it is now time I should receiue my order of knighthood, and more necessary now then at any other time, in respect of my earnest desire to aide the King of Norway my cozin in his wars. The Emperour marualling whence this humor should proceed, answered. Why Trineus do you thinke your selfe able to take so waightie a charge in hand: truly such honor is some receiued, but to maintaine it as it ought to be, and preuent the dangers incident therto, is more hard then you weene, and maketh proofe of the most corragious stomack, in that neither paine, feare or danger must hinder, what matter of so great consequence doth command. And perswade your selfe, that such as counselled you thereto, know scant themselues their duetie in those affaires, wherefore for a time haue patience, and deferre it till better abilitie: for I will send good store of other knightes in this expedition, who shall well excuse you to the king my nephew.

Trineus not contented with this answer, replyed. In truth my

my Lord, if I were not desirous to fulfill what is required in chiualrie, I would not so boldly haue made this demaund, therefore for such exceptions as you admitted, let mee not I beseech you be denied at this time: and let this induce you, that such as are borne to goueme Kingdomes, if they giue themselues onely to pleasure, without passing through the pykes of some dangerous hazard, they are not worthie to be lifted to such honour. The Emperour hearing the braue minde of his Sonne, and that his wordes sauoured of courage, conceiuing well thereof, answered. Since your desire is so earnest to be made Knight, I am well contented, but I would haue it done honorably, and before a greater assemblie then now is in our Court. Alas my Lord, said Trineus, there is no need of triumph before victorie: let such pompe remaine I pray you, till I haue wonne honour and account by my deedes. The Emperour ioyfull of the Princes good opinion, perswaded himselfe he should proue fortunate, wherefore he graunted his request, so that Palmerin might accompany him in his voyage. Of which condition Trineus was not sorrie, because in him consisted all his hope of successe: so his Father commaunded him to prepare himselfe for his order, whereupon Trineus made himselfe a costly Armour, and another for Palmerin, the deuises being changed, because they intended to passe vnknowne. Now had the Emperour leuied an Armie of tenne thousand good Souldiers, the conduct whereof was appointed to the Counte Tolano, a knight valiant and hardie, hauing had like charge in sundry occasions of warre: therefore so soone as all things were in readinesse, they were imbarked, and sayled with such benefite of winde and weather, as some after they toke landing in England. Where a while we will leaue returning to Polinarda, greatly discontent with her Brothers departure, because of Palmerin, and Brionella no lesse troubled for her friend Prolome: but the Princesse hauing newe afflictions for the absence of her loue, came to her Brother, saying. I know not (Brother) who hath aduised you to

venture

venture so dangerously, our Cousin having all assistance sufficient without hazarding your person, let mee then intreate you (good Brother) to affect occasions that promise better securitie. Better occasions Sister (quoth hee:) it is impossible, if it bee a thing allowable and vertuous to succour a straunger, how much more then is it to our own Kinsman, especially, such a one as is our Cousin of Norway? therfore I pray you bee of good comfort till my returne. And if it so happen that my Father in my absence intend your Marryage, looke that you consent not till I come home againe: for my not being here will serue you for a sufficient excuse. Which Polinarda promised: and her word so past, wrought her in no small dread afterward, as you shall finde in the discourse following.

So soone as Trineus was prouided of all things fit for his Knighthood, he came to the Emperour in this manner. I desire you (my Lord) to accomplish your promise, hauing done my dutie as you commanded mee. With right good will my Sonne, sayde the Emperour, goe arme your selfe. Then went hee, Palmerin, and Ptolome, Armed to the Chappell, Trineus being in greene Armour, figured all ouer with hearts of Golde, and in his Shielde was pourtrayed a Knight vnarmed, holding in his hand a Bowe bent, with an Arrowe ready to shoote against a great Tree, whereon hung a Scrole, which had written in it in Letters of Golde, this Motto: Madame, quand Mourray-ie? Whereby he meant, that the Loue which made him enterprise this Voyage, should beare him company till death. Palmerins Armour was all blacke, declaring his mourning for his absence from his Lady, and in his Shielde for his Deuise, was figured a goodly Eagle, shrowding a little Bryde vnder his wings: declaring thereby the fauour he had receyued of his Mistresse. Some after came the Emperour to the Chappell, where hee Knighted his Sonne put his Spurre on his heele and gyrded his Sword about him: afterward they went to Dinner, and spent the whole day in many pleasures, for ioye of this newe Knight. Palmerin and Ptolome to comfort their Ladies before their depar-

departure according as they were wont, when the Princesse Polinarda thus beganne. Alas my Lorde, what griefe will your departure be to mée? with what patience do you thinke I am able to endure it? perswade your selfe, the very conceit of your absence will bee my death, or at least a cause of such danger as I shall neuer recouer. Bee well aduised therefore how you deale with mee, for the intent of my Brother might be broken, if you would labour in it: but if it may not be, then saue my life by your speedie returne. These words were deliuered with such teares and reking sighes, as Palmerin might well perceiue the vehemencie of her griefes, and answering her heauinesse with as earnest oppression, saide: Sweete Ladie be perswaded, and temper your sorrowe with patience, considering the vnion of our spirites makes a simpathie of Afflictions: If then for my sake you will not pacifie your selfe, yet to shilde your owne perill, let mee intreate you to be resolued, in that my returne shall be with such expedition as you will commaund. But if you continue thus in Melancholie, you will too soone bewray what as yet should be concealed, and so may great harme ensue to vs both. Wherefore I desire you to moderate your impatience, and to thinke well of my departure, which is chiefly to seeke out a knight, against whom I haue fought in France for your Beautie: as for any other matter you may beleeue me.

Whereupon hee reported his Combat with the Knight of the Sunne, which made the Princesse (as well for Palmerins promise, as the account hee made of Fryol) somewhat better quieted, to answere. If it be so my Lord, that your returne will be with such speed, I shall then enforce my selfe to beare the burthen of my Cares with as much patience as I can, and see you fayle not your appointed time: but tell mee I pray you, what Armes beares the knight of the Sunne, you speake off? which Palmerin describing, Polinarda remembred him, saying: My Lorde, I know now very well what hée is, For eyght dayes after your departure towards France, the Emperour my Father knighted him, commanding

ding

ding me forgyue him with his Sworde, which I could not but obey: wherein the Knight glorying, solicited me with affections not liking me, which I pray you reuenge, being the man whome the matter neerest concerneth. After many other amiable conferences, the Knights humbly take they? leaue of they? Ladies, and in the morning betimes, the Mariners called on Trineus and his company to haste aborde, because the wind serued well for England, which they performed with all spéed, hauing first taken they? farewell of the Emperour and the Court. So hoysing sayle, they set on to Sea, and in good time came within the kenning of England: where wee will forsake them a while, and returne to the Emperours Armie, which he sent to the King of Norway his Nephew.

CHAP. XLV.

¶ How the Armie of the Emperour of Allemaigne arriued in England vnder the conduct of the Counte Tolano: and how they were discomfited.

Heareof it hath béene already, howe the Emperour of Allemaigne promised the messenger of Norway, to lend his maister the aide of tenne thousand men at Arms, of whome the Count Tolano was made Generall, and they arriued in England, without any resistance. The Counte vnderstanding by his Auant-courreurs, the Order of the Enemyes Armye, and where the King of Norwaye was Encamped, raunged his men in good order, and marched toward they? Forte, which the King had made

in

in the Duchie of Gaule, and which hee had destroyed during the time the Duke was in France, hauing there fortified the the strongest Cittie, and the Hauen that stood fittest for their commoditie. Crenus at his returne with Frisol, as you haue heard, vnderstanding the people of his Countrey, assembled his people together, and with the aid of the King of England, came within a dayes Journey from his enemies. The Countie Tolano, hearing thereof, appointed his men in seuerall companies, and the next day he gaue such sharpe skyrmishes to the Gaules, as they were constrayned to keepe within their defences. Hereupon the Duke determined to bidde them Battell, and to helpe him in his attempt, hee caused an Ambush of a thousand Light-Horsemen, to place themselues in a Forrest neere adioyning, of which companie Frisol was the Leader: and to prouoke the Norwayes to the Fielde, hee sent out certaine men at Armes well prouided, who scowted heere and there, to the ende the Allemaignes, who had bene so hote the day before, should be compassed with the secret ambush, which fell out according to Crenus his expectation, For so soone as the Allemaignes sawe the Englishmen so scattered, they dislodged themselues, and followed them, with the whole Armie of the King of Norway, because they were perswaded that they betoke themselues to flight: but the Gaules not dismayde with their comming, being but foure thousand Horse-men, and tenne thousand Foote-men, came valiantly against the Allemaignes Ensignes, and then beganne a very fierce Encounter, but the Englishmen wise and politique, fearing misfortune, came on with their Rereward towardes the Forrest where the Ambush lay. When the King of Norway ignorant of their intent, suddenly made after them with the greatest parte of his Power, but they had a worse welcome then they expected, for the Englishmen aduertised what they should doe, gathered vppon the Forrest side, charging their Enemyes with such a sharpe Assaulte, as in lesse space then an houre, two thousand of them were slaine. Frisol perceiuing that the time was come to shewe himself, calling his

squa-

squadron togither, eyed: Upon them valiantly our Friends, the spoyle is ours. So they entred pell-mell among the Remains, making such slaughter of them, as was wonderfull to beholde: for albeit they thought not of this accord, they were so euer ioyned with vallance, as when they came to the eyelet they could do nothing, but were driuen before right, such valour shewed Frisol, and his freshe supply, forcing them to flight, and they following them, boldly gat to take the Cittie of Tomar, which was strongly fortified. Which when the King of Norway perceyued, hee staied not long after them, because he saw it was not best for him, and therefore fled after them for companie at the hard heeles, and got the Cittie in good time, or else they had all perished. Thus remained Crenus Maister of the Fielde, and following his successe, the next day begot the Cittie of Tomar with Siege, swearing neuer to depart from thence, till he saw the Cittizens eyther through the Gates or the Walles. Yet had this courage of his beene soone cooled, if Frysol (like a good Captaine) had not cherished up his men, when Crenus at one Saillie of the enemie lost two thousand men, and therefore saide. Why how now my louing Friendes and Companyons? will you flye or fainte at the houre of good Fortune? suffer you not to purchase the victorie so highly esteemed? know you not that you deale with people halfe conquered, and altogither discouraged? Courage then my Brethren, courage, and let vs not exchange our Reputation with their feare and fainting: you giue me double strength good Friendes, if but with your good countenance you will make them knowe what cowardly creatures they are. Follow me (braue Englishmen) and this very day will we giue them punishment, as their Treason and Rebellion hath well deserued. There words renewed each others courage maruellously, so that the Duke with a freshe supplie beganne againe thus to animate them. You knowe my good Friendes, that although wee are but a handfull in respect of them, what successe wee haue already had in these our encounters, so that with greater ease may wee now con-

quer

Conquere, weakening them so mightily as wee haue done: Let vs not dismay then, but witnesse that the worst man amongst vs, is more Valiant and hardy in Armes, then the greatest Lorde that is in they⁊ Companie, eache man therefore cherish his hope, and beate our Enemyes to they⁊ very teeth. The day following, the Enemies came forth at a Postierne-Gate, and helde the Dukes powes very good play, and the Norwayes being very well appoynted with Bowes and Arrowes, gauled the Horse so cruelly, as they were gladde to take they⁊ Campe: Whereupon the Counte Tolano in hope of the day, followed vpon them with his Allemaigne Courtlaces, which Frysol perceyuing, mette him in the face with his English Squndaron, and giuing the spurres to his Horse, ranne with his Launce quite through his bodie: Whereat the Allemianes much amazed, when they saw they⁊ General fall dead from his Horse, determined valiantly to reuenge his death, but Frysol and his men dealt with them so roundly, as the formost of them were glad and faine to make them way. Yet had they hemde in Frysol, with such a troupe, as if the Duke had not speedily come with rescue, they had taken him: and then beganne the sharpest bickering: For the Duke of Gaule and Frysol with they⁊ men, so beset⁊red them, as the Allemaignes cleane discouraged, beganne to disorder themselues, and with the Norwayes fledde to the Cittie, so fast as they coulde, where Frysol and his men had entred, but that the King of Norway not daring to come into the Fielde, was there with man sufficient to resist his entrie. Thus remained the victory of the Duke of Gaule, by the braue pollicies of Frysol and his men, hee being generally commended of the whole Armie: and thus ret⁊ed the Allemains and Norwaye, to they⁊ shame and dishonour. After the Retrait sounded by the King of Norway, hee sent to the Duke to demaund truce for foure and twenty-houres, to the ende they might bury the dead, among whome was the Counte Tolano: which being graunted him, hee causes the Countes bodie to bee Embalmed; who by the counsell of his Lordes and Captaines,

was

was sent home into his Countrey. The King and his company secretly in the Night embarqued themselues, to ioyne with the King of Scots, who expected his comming, and then the Cittizens sent word to the Duke, that by the breake of daye they would yeld vp the keyes of they? Gates to him: whereupon Frysol was Lieutenant-Generall for the Duke of Gaule, and entred honourably the Citie of Tomar, where the Englishmen refreshed themselues for two or three dayes, to recompence they? paines with profite and pleasure. The Enemie was no sooner departed vnder Saile, but there arose such a terrible Tempest, as the most part of they? Vessells perished in the Sea, and the other were so scattered, as they? had lost the sight of one an other: yet was some small number remaining with the King, as well of Allemaignes, as of his owne Countreymen: So getting safe to shore in his Kingdome, he determined a reuenge for his great ouerthrow, but he could not compasse his intent, as you shall vnde hereafter.

CHAP. XLVI.

¶ How after the Princes Trineus, Palmerin and Prolome, were arriued in England, they went to the Court, and what torments the Prince endured for his Loue to the faire Lady Agriola.

TRineus, Palmerin, and Prolome, being landed within foure dayes iourney of the Kings Campe, which was prepared against the K. of Scots, were aduertised that the King staied but the comming of the Duke of Tintriel, and then he went to bidde his enemy battell, for that hee had boldly presumed vppon parte of his Realme,

Realme. The Gardens of the Pyrle where they Landed, seing they were Straungers, would suffer them passe no further, till they knewe their Names, whither they went, and what they came for: Palmerin answering on the behalfe of them all, saide:

God Friends, we are Grecian Knights and travel strange Countreys to seeke aduentures: and because wee heard that your King mentaeth warre against his ancient and malevolent enemie, the K. of Scots, wee came to offer our selues and our service to him, so please his Maiestie to accept it. This answere so well contented the Officers, as by their meanes they were conducted to the Courte, where they were honourably entertained, and two dayes together were there Feasted with the King: In which time Trineus understood, that the Quéene and her fayre Daughter, were about twentie miles thence: Whereupon, the next morning they toke their Journey thither, and by Dinner time they came where then the Quéene lay. But it fell out so happily for Trineus, as before they came to the place where the Court abode, they met the Quéene and her traine, who daily went to a chappell, not a quarter of a mile from the Cittie, to heare divine service, as she kept it for a continuall exercise, and with her was the fayre Agriola her Daughter. The Quéene and all her Ladyes alighted from off their Palfreyes, they entred the Chappell, the Prince well regarding the Goddesse of his heart, who belike making her Prayers more briefe then her Mother, came forth with her wayting Ladyes, to walke under a companie of greene Trées neerendioyning. Trineus seeing her a Creature, so rare and excellent, made doubt in a matter of allyances, least he should bee surprized as Acteon was, when he found Diana bathing among the Nymphs. He being thus carried away with marvellous conceyt of her Beautie, saluted not the Princesse as she passed before him, nor hearde Palmerin, who reproved him for omitting his courtesie: but wading further and further into this Amazous furie, spake so lowde, as he was easily hearde in this manner:

O heauens, will you suffer the perfections of a Ladie so diuinelie accomplished, to be ỳ cause of my vndeserued death: when may the time come for me, to let her vnderstand my desire to do her seruice: or how might shee know the loyall affection I beare her: One of the Ladies of honor attending on the Princesse, reputing his words vnwise & ouer-bold, answered. Why Sir knight, where learned you so little courtship, as when the fairest in the Westerne world passeth before you, you make no gentle gesture or salutation: I doubt not what is counted honestly and vertue among men of qualitie, with you is esteemed harsh and incivill, which makes me repute you more meete for the kitchen, then to beare the honourable office and rich Armes of a knight, as you do. Trineus as it were awaked out of a traunce, said. Ah sweete Ladie pardon me, for by my faith, I can neither tell what you said, nor well where I am my selfe: for euen as you ended, I felt such a passion strike me to the very heart, as death will sone arrest me without remedie. The Ladie, who knew not his meaning, checked him againe, thus. Were it not better then for you to be in the field, then here in this folish and vndiscrete pensiueneste: It is true Ladie, (quoth the Prince) that at this time I haue shewed my selfe vnmannerly, and a slender Courtier, yet is not the blame altogether to bee throwne on mee, ignorant who the Ladie was which you speake of: for wee are straunge knightes, and are come farre from this Countrey, with intent to aide and succour the king in his warres, with our vttermost endeuours. Notwithstanding, because we haue with no more regarde done our dutie to your Mistresse, may it please you to entreate her on our behalfe, to pardon this offence: for satisfaction whereof, wee will go serue the king her father in battell, where we doubt not so well to behaue our selues, as shall deserue our pardon, if so be shee will not at this instant so fauour vs. And I gladly would, faire Ladie, that such seruice should bee done by her commaundement, for our strength and vertue by her affections augmented, will at-

tribute the honor to her that so graciously afflicted vs, wherfore, so please you to make knowne our good intent towards her, we shall for such kindnes remaine indebted to you. The Ladie toke pleasure in hearing Trineus, especially perceyuing the zeale of him and his companions, to imploy their valour on the Kings behalfe, which caused her immediatelie dw this message to the Princesse, who at that instant (as a thing fatall to her) was wounded with loue: whereupon she sent them answere by her Gouernesse, that thee entertained them as her Knights, and as her Seruants desired them to goe aide the King her Father, yet would shee not consent to pardon them, till the renowne of their exploytes might shew them to deserue it. Trineus toke this answer for better aduantage then the Princesse thought on, accounting himselfe happy by such a good beginning. and therefore saide to the Ladie, I thinke my selfe (fayre Ladie) one of the most fauoured by fortune, hauing the meane to obey your Mistresse in her commaund, and hope to execute her charge in such sort, as I shall deserue the grace shee doth now denie mee, yet with all humilitie on our behalfe, I intreate you, to yelde thankes for her princely kindnesse. The Lady returning to Agriola, accomplished what Trineus desired her, whereupon shee turned herselfe, and gaue them a countenance of fauour, which was answered by Trineus, Palmerin, and Ptolome, with great reuerence, & the Princesse, (shewing herselfe not too stately towardss the Knightes) with her hand and gesture gaue a signe of her content, which was not a little welcome to Trineus. Then the Quéene comming forth of the Chappell, with Agriola and her traine mounted on horsebacke, taking their way to the Court againe: but when Trineus had lost the sight of them, wonderfull verations began to assaile him, so that hee sayde to Palmerin, Ah, my good Friend, how happie may that man account himselfe, whose fortune honors him with the beautie of Agriola? Ah sir Palmerin, I féele my selfe so exceedingly tormented, as I doubt my death will be inevitable. But

tell

tell me the truth and dissemble not, how thinke you of my Mistresse: is shee not a Ladie more then divine: In good faith my Lord, said Palmerin, what the Knight in France tolde vs, was but fables, in that she exceedeth report beyond all opinion: notwithstanding, it is necessarie for you to nourish your hope, having thus spoken to her, and bewrayed your afflictions, not doubting but this good beginning of your enterprise will cause the ende fall out to your content. So rode on these three Knights, pleasing their humors with their severall indgements of their Ladies, yet Palmerin had seene such matter in English Agriola, as, but his plighted promise to Polinarda, was of force sufficient to chaunge his fancie. The next day they arrived at the King of Englands campe, where, because they would not be knowne, they pitched their Tents beyond all the other: and soone after came the Duke of Trinetriel, bringing with him a number of hardie men at Armes, so that in short time the Kings strength was such, as they exceeded their enemies in number. Hereupon the King assembled his counsell, and concluded, that the next day they would goe seeke out the King of Scots, who in two encounters had the upper hande, which made him so presumptuous, as he perswaded himselfe utterly to confound the King of England: who raysing his power, followed so diligently, as the third day after he encamped within halfe a mile of his enemie, that had besieged the Towne of Corsania, and had brought it ready to yelde, but that the King prevented it by the strength he brought.

CHAP. XLVII.

Of the cruell battell betweene the King of England, and the King of Scots.



When the King of Scots vnderstood the comming of the King of England, and that in all hast hee would bid him battaile, hee would no longer busie himselfe in besieging Corsania, but retyred a little for his better aduauntage, conferring with his Captaines about their present arayres, concluding to offer the enemie no skirmishes, because thereby they would know their intent: notwithstanding hee gaue order to prepare for battaile, because hee knew the King of England came for no other purpose. The Englishmen not suffering the Scots to haue any leysure to fortifie themselues, were by the King the next morning commaunded in aray, and all wings and squadrons appointed: the Duke of Trintriel was made leader of the auauntgarde, wherein likewise were Trineus, Palmerin, and Ptolome: and to the Dukes Brother was committed the charge of the arreargard: and being all ready to march on, the King himselfe beganne this Oration. I thinke my Friends, that no one of you, but sufficiently is acquainted in what respect wee continue this warre, namely, to defend the honour and reputation of our Realme, and to saue the liues of you, your wiues and children, and your goods, which the enemie would violently spoile and take from you, intending to throw perpetuall bondage and slauerie on your necks. Will you not then defend your liberties? will you not

riot maintaine your auncient renowme, which is to bee Lordes and commaunders of the Scots? assure your selues, that how strong soeuer our enemie be, I hope with the aide of God, your inuaunted courages, and the right of our cause, to make a noble and victorious conquest. For I know that our enemie hath not one man in his Armie, endued with such an entire hart and magnanimous courage, as you are, nor that baineth his title of honour with his life, as you doe: and therefore if we march on valiantly, continuing resolute and confident together, euerie man labouring for his Prince, Countrey, friendes, and fellow, and God for vs all, your forwardnesse will make them fearefull, and your vertis countenaunces enough to conquere. Euerie man then bee cherefull, with a desire to vanquish. And here I vow to you on the worde of a King, that if fortune standes so well with vs, as to winne the day, neuer shall the Scots hereafter dare to lift vp themselues against vs. Thus did the King of England animate his men, and so marched on in good aray to the fight of they? Enemyes, who by this time had enpaled themselues in order of Battell: they? Auant-gard conducted by the Marquelle of Monthel, the King of Scots himselfe in the maine Battell, and the Rere-ward led by the king of the Isle of Magdalen: and as the King of England had encouraged his Souldiers, so began the King of Scots to encourage his men in this manner. The time is now come (loyall Subiects, and deere friends) that the prise of the English must be abated by the valour and prowesse of the Scots, so that if you set before your eyes the occasion which calleth vs to the Fielde, there is no one of you but will blame his Progenitors, for hauing so long time to seeme, what by true Patrimonie belonged vnto them, and by the Kings of England, (most Tyrannous Vsurpers) against all right, violently taken from our Auncestors. Wherefore you may then recount your selfe, and reenter on those possessions, from which your Fathers (against all right and reason) were expulsed. Duty bids challenge it at your handes, being the good not onely for your

selues, but for your children and countrey? Would you then lose so good opportunitie, To vanquish things so lost? Shall your hearts more timorous then your enemies? are your minds made of worse mettall then theirs? No, no, I assure I assured that the least among you, is of higher vertue and account then the best in their company. If it hath bene their custome, as they themselues vaunt, to triumph ouer vs, let vs learne them to confesse with patience, that they haue no such right or custome to vanquish, as in three seuerall battailes already we haue sufficiently made knowne, with what fortune and vnconquerable spirites you entertained your enemies. Dismay no more now (my good Friendes) then you haue done, let each man (I woulde make his entreaunce amidst his foes, and faueur one anothers life, so shall sweete successe returne you with victorie. The King hauing ended, they discerned the English power eager to encounter, and so the Armies meeting, began a dreadfull and daungerous battaile. There might you heare the Drummes thunder, the Trumpets sounde, the Clarions ring, the Phifes warble, Launces shiuered, knights dismounted, footemen scattered, heades beraued, armes and bodies wounded, some crying, other dying, a matter more then lamentable to beholde, and so long continued this cruell and bloodie conflict, as the most part of the Vauntgarde were slaine, sore wounded, or taken prisoners. Which when the King of Scots perceyued, being a Prince so hardie and valiaunt as might be, commaunded the maine battaile to giue the Charge, in the midst whereof he was in person: whereupon the fight begaune againe much more fierce then before, so that you might haue heard the Horses scarme, the Armour clatter, and on euery side beheldst good and venturous knights giue vppe their liues. At this furious onset, Palmerin seeing the Scots to retyre for aduantage, cryed to the King of England. Why how now my Lord, how you forget your selfe? why do you not follow on with your maine battaile, seeing the enemie playes vpon aduantage? cheerefully let vs vpon them, for the day

will be ours. The King seeing that Palmerin counsaile was verie expedient, commaunded his men to march on lustily, which they did with such courage, as not one of them but was thorowly busied. Palmerin fearing least Trineus should bee ouer venturous, because the young Prince was a martiall gentleman, desired him not to runne to farre into daunger, but keepe by him, to the end the one might succour the other, if necessitie required. With these words hee ranne vpon the Scots like an angry Lyon, and no man durst withstand him, they saw him make such slaughter: the King of England following him at an inch, shewing such fiers resistemonte of his inuincible heart. On the other side, Trineus met with the Kings Brother of the Isle Magdalen, piercing his Launce quite thorough his bodie, so that hee fell dead among his owne Souldiers: and Ptolome all this while was not idle, but where ere hee came, he layd his enemies at his feete, so that the Scots wondered at the behauiour of these three knights. When the King of the Isle Magdalen, beholding the death of his Brother, incensed with vnspeakable anger, ran fiercely among the English, till hee came where Trineus, Palmerin and Ptolome were, one of his Knightes shewing the King the man that slue his brother, whereupon hee making towards Trineus, lifted vppe his Sworde, and thought to haue slaine him; but Palmerin stepping betweene them, sayd. Mine Captaine, to me, and so the King and hee encountered together so terribly, as Palmerin was wounded in two of three places, for which hee made such recompence to the King, as fastening his Sworde on his Helmet, cleft his head in twaine: that done, hee fell dead to the ground. The sight hereof enflamed the Scots with such rage, as like mad men they [illegible] and raging among the English, as vowing [illegible] of the Isle Magdalens death, as to auoid their [illegible] who's danger they feared. In this sore [illegible] of England and Scots, met together, who charged [illegible] with their terrible strokes, as the King of England [illegible]

horsed and sore wounded: but Trineus being at hand, seeing his dere friendes Father in such perill, buckled with the King of Scots so valiantly, as hee gaue him many a cruell Wounde, and had not his men made hastie to conney him through the throng, he had beene slaine by Trineus, so was the King of England mounted againe, and reuenged his foyle on his Enemie with marueilous Valour. There triumphed the three Grecian Knightes, with inexplicable honour, the Englishmen making such hauocke among the Scots, as bitterly displaying, they flede: one part to a Forrestnere at hand, and the other part towardes the Sea, to their Ships, the king getting into one of them to saue his life, by the helpe and meanes of one of his knights, that lent him a good Jennet of Spaine, to escape away withall. And so sailed thence the King with greater shame, then did the Emperor Antonius from Octauius Cæsar, leaning his men fiercely pursued by the English, who terrified them in such sort, as many of the poore Scots chose rather to runne into the Sea, and drowne themselues, then to fall into the handes of their conquering enemies.

CHAP. XLVIII.

Of the retreate of the King of Englands armie, and the honour he did to the three strange Knights.

After the King of England was Maister of the fielde, hee caused the retreate to bee sounded, and his men called together, commaunding likewise that search should bee made through the field, to succour such as were sore wounded, and to burie the deade, least the ayre

ny?e should bee infected, whereupon the Englishmen fell to the spoile of their enemies, chiefly their bag & baggage which they had left behind them. In the meane while the King withdrew himselfe into his Tent, where remembring the great service of the three strange knights, hee commanded his Nephew Cerides to seeke them immediately, who found them in a Scottish tent, binding vp their wounds: and being not a little glad of his good fortune, hee came to Palmerin, saying. Gentlemen, the king my Vncle earnestly desireth you to come to him, because hee will neyther enter the towne nor disarme himselfe, till hee heare some tidings of you. Seeing it pleaseth him, said Palmerin, to commaund, wee humbly obey, wherefore wee pray you sir to returne his maiesty our dutifull thankes, and diligent attendance. After Cerides was departed, they resolued among themselues (at the earnest request of Trineus) that Palmerin should bee the chiefest among them, and him they would honor as their Lord, because the prince feared to be knowne if such account should bee made of him: so went they presently to the kings Tent, where they were no sooner entered, but the king (albeit hee was sore wounded) arose from his Chaire, and imbraced them lovingly one after another, not suffering them to kneele before him, but honorably thus spake to them. Worthy Gentlemen, hold welcome you are I cannot expresse, for I account my selfe so highly beholding to you, as the Realme of England hath sustained this day great foyle, but by your fortunate valour: thinke then worthy Lords, wherein England may recompence you, and on my word it shall not bee denied: in meane while I pray you let mee have your Companie, because I will see your hurtes carefully attended. The knights with great reverence accepted the kings noble offer, and were conducted into a fayre Tent next the kings, where the Chirurgions with great diligence dressed their woundes, and afterward they came and supped with the king. And because the king intended on the morrow to goe visite himselfe at the

Towne

Towne of Corſania, which before had bene ſtrictly beſieged by the Scots, to giue God thanks for the happy victorie, a famous Sermon was made before him, by the Archbiſhop of Canterbury, to whom likewiſe hee gaue order for entertaining of ſuch as had bene ſlaine of account, and in that place for memorie of his good fortune, hee cauſed a goodly Monaſterie to be builded, and diſpatched a Poſte preſently to aduertiſe the Queene and the Noble Lords of his good ſucceſſe.

Now was his Maieſtie very deſirous to knowe the three ſtraunge knights, that had ſo valiantly aſſiſted him, eſpecially, the man that ſaued his life: whereupon, the next morning he went to ſee them, demanding how they fared. For (qd he) we will now ſet forward to Corſania, where wee will make you better entertainment then we can do here in the Fielde. Then mounted they all on Horſbacke, and rode to Corſania, where the King remained, till he and his knights were better recouered. And where the King made the Duke of Tunnel L: high Marſhall of England, committing to his charge fiue thouſand men, commanding him to chaſe all the Scots ſwith of his kingdome, whereſoeuer he could find them, and to ſeize to his Highneſſe vſe, the Townes and Caſtles, which they before had in vſe: which the Duke executed with ſuch expedition, as hee left not a Scot in any Village or Hamlet, placing faithfull Officers for the King in euery Iuriſdiction.

During theſe labours of the Duke, the King euery day viſited theſe three knights, and finding Palmerin at a time conuenient, hee requeſted to knowe of whence hee was, and the names of his Companions. Let me intreat you (qd. he) not to hyde your ſelues frō me, becauſe I ſhall not be in quiet till I knowe, that I may remunerate your deſerts according to your perſons. Palmerin, who now feared to be diſcouered, could not readily well deuiſe what anſwere to make, yet at length in great humilitie, thus ſaid, Wee would deſire your Maieſtie, that it might ſo ſtand with your good liking, as this time to excuſe the knowledge of our preſent affaires, as alſo what wee are: yet thus farre will I reſolue your Highneſſe

that

that wee are all Gentlemen of Greece, nourished in the court of the king of Macedon, who in seeking strange aduentures, haue trauelled many Prouinces, and now at length came into your kingdome, well stored at this time with knights Errant, and gouerned (as we well perceyue) by a King so gratious, as no king where we yet haue come doth the like. For this cause my Lorde, as also vnderstanding that the king of Scots mooued warre against you, came we into your countrey, to ow you seruice in all obeysance, as the very simplest among your Souldiers, Trust me said the king) I haue well noted your seruice, and a man might be deceyued in expecting better assistance. For which I rest yours, in ought I may, while I liue: But if you would gaine your selues, that should I know to whome I were indebted, & also that my Subiects might honour you accordingly. What (qd. Palmerin) will neither profit nor preiudice your Maiestie, let iustice then betwixt you, the disdaine you shall owe seruice vnto your Highnesse. The king seeing he could not get what he would, changed his talke, saying: (Alas if you say, that on the day of Wakefell was Arthegall in black? Yea my Lord, said Palmerin, and this knight (pointing to Trineus) is my Brother, who sauued you from danger against the king of Scots. Knights friends (quoth the king) this made mee so importunate: And may it like you to stay in my Court, I will regard you according to your speciall deseruings, as the onely knights of the world, in my fauour, yeelding thanks to Heauen, for the good I haue receiued by your meanes. Humbly vnto the three knights requested the king remaining for a while to soiourne with him.

CHAP.

CHAP. XLIX.

¶ How the Queene of England was aduertised of the victory against the King of Scote, and the ouerthrow of his whole Armie.



Hen after the King of England had sent tydings to the Queen of his good fortune, and the honour hee intended to the three Knights of Greece: the messenger was so speedy, as the second day following hee came where the Queen kept her Court, & presented her the letters from the King her Husband, reciting the whole manner of the Battell, with the rare exployts of the three Grecian Knights, and how one of them preserued the Kings life, omitting nothing that was needfull to be reported, and how the King intended to come with the three Knightes in great Royaltie to London, and therefore shee should prouide equall Entertainment. The Queene highly contented with these Newes, demaunded of the Messenger if hee knewe the three Knights, that gaue aide-fance to the King. No indeed Madame, answered the messenger, neyther yet did I see them, but at the time I was dispatched with my message. Agriola finding in her selfe the puissance of a little god that made Loue, suddenly suspected that these strange Knightes were they which shee saw at the Chappell, and therefore saide. I pray thee tell me my Friend, what Armes beare the Knights? One of them Madame, (quoth hee) who seemes the very best Knight in the world, is in green Armour, and that is hee that saued the King your Fa-

hearts

thers life, when the King of Scots had néere slaine him, but he remounted my Lord, giuing his Enemy such a dangerous wound with his Launce, as it was greatly doubted hee had killd him, he lost so much blood, and this was one of the principall occasions of our victorie. This Knights Companion in black-Armour, behaued himselfe with wonderfull Chiualrie: for as a Lyon makes hauocke in a Heard of Cattell, so did hee cut, slash, and mangle the Scots, as the very hardyest durst not abide before him. The thirde is in blacke Armor, sparckled all ouer with white Roses, a Knight of no lesse courage then his companions, and one that fought for England, with incredible prowesse. Let mee die, saide Agriola to the Quéene, if these be not the Knights that past by this Cittie, when we went to the Chappell to performe our exercise: and therewithall shee rehearsed what speeche her Gouernesse had with them, and what shee commaunded them. In soth Daughter (quoth the Quéene) your Gouernesse and you may well be blamed, for the slender account you made of them: I pray you therefore when they returne, let your former fault be sufficiently recompenced. That shall I not faile to doe saide Agriola. So the Quéene honourably rewarded the Messenger, sending him backe with answere, that the Kings charge should be effectually executed. The King aduertised of the Quéenes replye, sette forward with the Knights of Greece, and his Traine to the Court, and by the way, remembring the power sent by the Emperour of Allemaigne to the King of Norway, hee said to Palmerin. I cannot sufficiently maruaile, gentle knight, why the Emperor should declare himselfe mine enemie, and gaue assistaunce to the King of Norway, against mee, considering I neuer did any thing might deserue his displeasure: but I assure by the faith of a King, that I will reuenge my wrong, and let him assure himselfe, that while I haue one foote of ground or a dozen of my Soldiers to helpe mee, I will neuer haue peace with him: to molest me within mine owne dominions: by God, my Friends, I cannot forget it. These words greatly displea-

sed

sed Trineus, but especially Palmerin, who answered. In my opinion my Lord, the Emperour did but reason, and as dutie bonnd him, in respect he could not honestly refuse to ayde the King of Norway his Couzin, and hereof I can assure you, in that I haue sometimes beene in his Court, that hee is one of the wisest, and best gouerned Princes that euer I could heare of. Wherefore (bee it spoken vnder correction) your Maiestie should forget this light offence, and consider if the like had beene done towards you, you would haue no lesse. When the King heard him so support the Emperours cause, hee presently iudged him to bee of his Courte, and therefore saide. Are you he Syr, that wonne such honour and renowm in France, at the Combat maintained by the Prince Lewes, for the Loue of his Ladie: If you be so, I pray you do not denye it, for I shall hencefoorth thinke my Courte most happie, to harbour the most Excellent, among all Knightes: and I promise you I am so iealous of mine owne concepte, as you can hardly perswade mée otherwise, such Experience haue I made of your Bountie and vertue. Palmerin blushing at these his words, and doubting least he should now be certainly knowne, answered. We most humbly haue intreated your Maiestie heretofore, and so we do now again, that you would not enquire of whence we are, suffiseth your Highnesse, that wée are his humble Seruants, in any thing that shall like him to commaund vs. The King this hearing, repented himselfe that he had beene so importunate, for hee feared least his speeches would make them forsake his companie, wherefore by this time being comm néere vnto his Pallace, he sayd, What I haue saide Gentlemen, I hope shall not offend you: in my excuse admit my earnest desire to know you. By and by ouertooke them the Duke of Tinteriel, who went to restore the Crowne, (as you haue heard) what the Scots vsurped, and he aduertised the King, that the Quéene and her Ladies were ridden to a Castle about foure miles from London to solace themselues: whereupon the King resolued to ryde thither: whereof the Prince Trineus was not sorie, such

was

was his desire to see his faire Friende, whose Loue still crossed him with so many Passions, as hee seemed a man of another World, and did not his wounds seeme somewhat to couer his Disease, hardly could hee haue found out any shifte to conceale it so closely, wherefore hee beganne with Palmerin thus: You know my chosen Friend, that the good hope of my Loue made leaue my Fathers Court, and to preuent my meaning consisteth onely in you: Nowe in respect of my forcible Captiuitie, being vnprouided of strength, sence, or any meane to discouer my Loue to her, who onely can helpe mée: I intreat you by the inuiolable league of our amity, that whē you shall chaunce to speake with the Goddesse of my life, my paines and anguithes may serue for my Salutations, and imparting to her the extremitie of my sorrowes, shée may well perceyue in what estate I am, and what néd I haue now of her gracious pittie. These words were deliuered with such store of sighes and teares, as Palmerin was amazed thereat, albeit hee knew how heauy the burthen was, and how it exceeded patience in suffering, comparing his absence from his Piltrelle Polinarda, to bee as insupportable, as the presence of fayre Agriola, (not daring to speake to her) was to Trineus: whereupon he answered. My Lord repose your trust in this matter on me, which I doubt not but to handle in such sorte, as you shall haue no cause to bee Mal-content, or the Princesse any reason to be ingratefull. But what thinke you if my Dwarfe did carrie this message? in my opinion (through the whole world) you could not finde a more fitte fellow, such is his subtile and present inuention, as hee will proue the onely string to your bow. Alas sayd the prince, I care not who were imployed herein, so I were sure of comfort. Then was the dwarfe called, to whom Palmerin in this sort began. It is wel knowne to thée Vrbanillo, with what good will I would do any seruice I could to my Lord Trineus, as well for the incomparable kindnes I haue receiued of my Ladie his Sister, as for the affinitie I hope shall one day be betweene vs by his meanes. So often haue

I

I made Experience of my loyall seruice and fidelitie, in my chiefest and very neerest affayres, as well may I imparte to thée, the secrets of my Noble Companyon, perswading my selfe of thy surety and secrecie. It now remaines that thou pleasure the Prince Trineus, in breaking his Loue to the Princesse Agriole, as thou diddest for mée to my Mistresse Polinarda: but aboue all things haue regard, that thou bewray not of whence, or what wee are, yet must thou assure her, that the Prince is one of the greatest Lordes in all Europe. My Lord (quoth the Dwarfe) I was neuer yet disobedient to you in all my time, and very loath were I now to beginne: but because I am such a little withen fellow, you make mee your Broker in these perilous Loue-matters. Notwithstanding, I will doe it though I dyed for it, esteeming my life well bestowed to pleasure such Princes.

There can no inconuenience arise heereby to thée (quoth Palmerin) but profit euery way: be not enemie then to thine owne good. That will I neuer (saide the Dwarfe (and well might the Ladie bee iudged vnprouided of reason, and very farre from vnderstanding, if she make refusall of the Princes honourable offer: the King himselfe (if hee knew it) would imagine his dayes blessed: the issue of this Enterprise can not but sort to good. The Dwarfes words pleased so well Trineus, as hée toke him in his armes, saying: I commende my selfe and my happinesse to thée. Let me alone (quoth Vrbanillo) if I bring you not heards that shall cole this hote Feuer, then let mee neuer bee counted for a tall man: So went hée about it as you shall vnderstand hereafter.

CHAP.

CHAP. L

How the King of England went to the Castle to the Queene and her Ladies, and of the honourable entertainment made to the three strange Knights.

NEwes being brought to the Quéene, that the King was not farre off, shee sent a verie honourable traine to meete him, and with them his sonne the yong Prince Fredericke, ten yéeres olde, but beautifull and of such perfection, as promises great hope in time to come. Hee having made reuerence to his Father, and the other Princes, demaunded for the straunge knightes, and saluting them with such kindnesse as was rare in a Childe, hee to be betweene Trineus and Palmerin, giuing them hartie thankes for they friendly succour to his Father, without which, sayd hee, as the Quéene my Mother tolde mee, he had dyed, and wee all bene distressed. By this tyme they were come to the Castle, all the way so thicke pestered with people, as there was no roome to strike among them, euerie one crying, Happie be the knights that foyled our enemies. So entring the Castle, in the vttermost Court they mette the Quéene and her Ladyes, among whom sayre Agriola shyned, as beautifull Venus among the other starres, wherewith the Prince of Allemaigne was so rapt in the head, as an offendour with his guilt before a Judge, so that not regarding what yong Fredericke, or the other Lords courteously said to him, hee was readie to fall beside his horse with ouermuch gazing: But Palmerin inwardly twitching him softly

softly, said. Fie my Lord, what meane you to forget your selfe thus? see you not her that is ordayned yours, and will you not triumph in your happie sight, but sitte as one vterly discouraged? For shame let passe this pusillanimitie, and with cherefull countenaunce goe giue her the good morow. The Prince did so, but with such timerous conceits, as hauing saluted the Daughter, he durst not speake to the Daughter: who imagining the best, and that bashfull reuerence did so with holde him, shee came to him in this manner. Are not you sir, the Knight in the greene Armour, that not long since promised one of my Ladyes to ayde my Father in his warres? I am sayde Princelle, quoth hee, and what I haue done, was at your commaundement, the vertue whereof gaue me such strength, as some of the Scots haue felt to their cost: but had I gone vnprouided of such fauour, I am perswaded I could neuer haue returned aliue. It remaines, faire Ladie, that according to the request I then made your Ladie, it would please you to remitte his offence, who deserued the sharpest punishment can bee deuised, for not honouring that Princelle, which carryes the Palme from all Ladyes liuing. In trueth, my Lord, sayde the Princelle, not onely is your fault to bee forgiuen, if it could be named a fault, but also ought I to recompence you to my vttermost power, seeing by your meanes my Father in safetie, and the Realme of England delinered from the tyrannous seruitude of the Scots: wherefore you may assure your selfe, that if I can stand you in any stede towards the King my Father, you shall commaund me to my vttermost. The Prince returned her a thousand thanks, and sayde. Beleeue me, Madame, the very least title of your good will, is recompence to mee more then sufficient, and would prouoke such affection in me towards your seruice, as you could not demaund the thing, but I should with dutifull willingnesse performe it, as I doubt not but better occasions shall make manifest vnto you. Then entred they the great Hall, where such a sumptuous banquet was prouided,

pzouided, as will aske more time to report, then leysure will annit. Likewise here to set downe the wonderfull passions of the amorous Prince Trineus, in regard of a Lady so exceeding in perfections, surpasseth my capacitie: but he that is seated so opposite to so faire a creature, and loues so earnestly as Trineus, yet dare not speake least he should be spyed, may iudge of that which I cannot vtter. But seeing the liberty of speech was denied, the spedy eye posted betweene them with swifte conueyances, and still mute cheere countenance the straunger knights, till fearing to be taken tardie, she closely conferred with the Pzincelle Eufemia, daughter to the Duke of Norgalles, saying: What thinke you Cozen of these strangers? are they not the semelyest personages that euer you saiwe, both in fauour, countenance, good grace and hardinesse? I am of the opinion, that although they report themselues but as simple knights errant, they be doubtlesse great Lords, descended of Noble and Pzincely parentage: as one may easily gather by their ciuill and vertuous behauiour, which is euermore the witnesse of true Nobility. These words caused Eufemia to marke well Trineus, as her Cozen Agriola did, which beeperceiuing, and iudging that they talke of him, his alterations were so sensible as they might be easily discerned: for the more they eyed him, the greater was his torment, till the Table being withdrawne, he had some ease in opening his minde to Palmerin, whose comfortable words were as good to him as restoratiues. Agriola on the other side escaped not free, for her ease was no greater when she arose, then when she sate downe, and that must belittle, hauing so vainly a dily before her to fill her stomacke.

The next morning, the King and the Ladies mounted on horse-back, setting towards London, (God knowes the Pzince was not farre behinde them, liuing onely by the regard of her, with whose rare beautie hee could neuer satisfie his eyes. And as they rode they saiwe a Forrest, the King seeing the Trees so greene and delightfull, and because

the heate of the day hindered their trauaile, hee caused his Pauilions and Tents to bee there presently pitched, and intended to dine there vnder the cole trees. Dinner being ended, hee would needes go course the Hare, wasting the afternoone in that pastime, and on the next day, rode to chase a Hart which was taken in the foyles, and therewithall a huge wilde Boare, the mightiest that euer was seene, hauing wounded him in so many places, as the Dogs and Bloodhoundes might easily tracke him. Afterwarde they roused a fallow Deere, when the Huntsmen made the woods ring so brauely with winding their Hornes, and the Greyhoundes pursued the course so speedily: as Pelemedes choise was not comparable to this, till in the ende the Deere was taken. These pleasures finished, the king with his companie returned to his Tents, shewing to the Queene and her Ladies the fruits of their pastime, saying. I promise you Madame, I thinke these Grecian knightes greeu in euerie thing: for as in chiualrie, so this day haue they shewed themselues excellent woodmen, as none in our trayne may compare with them. By this time the Table were couered for Supper, all which time was spent in discoursing of their sports: till the good night giuen on all sides, the three knightes withdrew themselues into their Tent. All these pleasures made not Vrbanillo forgetfull of his Maisters charge, wherefore practising how to accomplish it effectually, hee found meanes to to come acquainted with the Ladyes attending on the Princesse, and in respect he attended on the knights of Greece, he was licenced the oftner into their company. The next morning, the king and the knights walking into the Woods, the Dwarfe watching time to deliuer his message, made so many walkes and returnes before the Princesse Pauilion, as at last she espyed him, and calling him to her, sayd: I pray thee, my Friend, by the faith thou beareſt thy Maister, tell mee the trueth of a matter I shall aske of thee: Madame (quoth the Dwarfe vpon his knee) command what you please, for there is nothing

(my

(my Mistrisse prejudice excepted) but I will truely tell you. Which of the three, sayde the Princesse, is thy Maister? My Maister (quoth the Dwarfe) hath not his second in all perfections, he it is that was in the blacke Armour, who in the battell for your Father did so many wonderfull exployts, as farre exceedeth the fabulous reportes of sir Gawine or Launcelot du Lake. In soth (quoth shee) so haue I heard, and beside thy dutie reserued to thy Maister, I see thou canst set him forth for a most hardie knight: but tell mee of whence he is? what are his companions? and why do they make it so daintie to be knowne? Herein Madame, sayde he, I cannot with my dutie aunswere you, for I am restrayned by a former promise, not to reueale the least matter that may be hurtfull to them. Nuertheless, in regard of the reuerent good will they beare you, and that I would not haue you offended with such an abiect creature as I am, I would gladly tell you some thing to your content, so you will promise me on your princely worde, that what I reueale shall neuer be discouered by you. Perswade thy selfe thereof, sayd the Princesse, and loke what thou sayst, by my honor, shall neuer turne to thy after harme. Then know sayre Madame, (quoth hee) that the greene knight is of the most noble and illustrious house in Europe, louing a Ladie as his proper life, for whom hee hath left his Countrey, parents & friends, to come and do her seruice. The blacke knight, as I haue alreadie tolde you, is my maister, and further then this I may not tell you. What am I the neare my desire, quoth shee, by this aunswere? eyther thou shouldest haue said nothing, or else thoroughly satisfyed mee, for now I can not bee quieted, till thou tell mee what Ladie it is, that the greene knight loues so dearely: let mee not make so many intreaties, for I promise to thee againe, by the faith of a Princesse, that neuer shall any creature know it by my meanes. You vrge me so farre, quoth the Dwarfe, and haue made me such great promises, as I am constrayned (beyond the charge giuen by my maister) to acquaint you with the truth, in

respect, the fault will be greater in you to make refusal, then in yeelding. Resolue your selfe therefore good Madame, that the braue greene Knight, so rich in Armes, but more in minde, is the Prince Trineus, Sonne to the Emperour of Allemaigne, so passionate in loue, and so depriued of liberty, by deuout seruice to your excellent bountie: as against both dutie and nature, hee hath deceiued his Father, feigning to come ayde his Kinsman the King of Norway, where contrariwise, he hath shewed himselfe his mortall enemie. And to no other ende hath he thus offended both Father and Cozin, then to make knowne his long & laborous desires, to make you Lady and Mistresse of him and his: and such is his feare to be refused, as he endures more torments, then the martired bodye of poore Prometheus. Bee not then the cause (sweete Ladie) that a Prince so famous, and a Knight so gentle, shall buy his great good seruice to your Father and Countrey, yea the most loyall loue hee beares to you, with vntimelie, vnfortunate, and cruell death. Thinke with your selfe, is it not the highest among all honours, to be Wife to such a Lord, and Empresse (in time) of renowned Allemaigne? Is it not perpetuall report, to bee Lady and commaundresse of the principall parte of Europe? Let not him beare record that a bodie so adorned, and countenaunce so milde and gracious, can entertaine tirannie or crueltie: yea Madam such crueltie, as if you receiue him not into your fauourable conceit, you shall procure the death of the truest Knight in loue, that euer liued. The blacke knight is the renowned Pulmerind'Oliua, the wonder of the world for valour, conquering in Fraunce the Duke of Sauoy, in maintenaunce of his Ladies beautie, fayre without compare: conforming his Sheelde and Armour, equall to his mourning thoughtes, for his absence from her that tryumphs in his Loue. The third Knight, so adorned with White-Roses, is called Ptolome, Loued by a Ladie well worthie of him. It now remaineth Fayre Princesse, that you make the Prince Trineus equall with the rest in Felicitie, for you haue the Maiden-head of his

loue

lone, which with honor you may entertaine into your chaste thoughtes. Thus haue I acquainted you with such a secrete, as no creature but your selfe could haue got of mee, and the vanger to fall into your misconceit, hath made mee such a blab: leauing all you haue heard to your gracious construction. Agriola, meetelie sacre enough in lone before, but now vtterly denied of longer libertie, hearing the wordes of Vrbanillo, was surprised with such a strange alteration, as a long time she was driuen to silence, not able to vtter the secrete conceits of her minde, yet at length (to shadow her suddaine change from the Dwarfe) shee sayde. Ah my Friende, thou acquaintest mee with matter altogether incredible, is it possible that Trineus Sonne to the Emperor of Allemaigne, would venture into this Court, considering the mortall enmitie betweene our Fathers: Trust me my Friende I cannot credit thee. I renounce mine owne soule saide the Dwarfe, if it be not as I haue told you: then iudge Madame what acceptaunce shoulde bee made of his service, when loue to you exceedeth nature: may it not bee termed lone surpassing all other, eyther registred in antiquities, or present memorie: If it should bee, quoth shee, as thou sayest, it is beyonde my power to returne condigne recompence, yet in respect of thy secrecie, I dare assure thee, mine owne opinion of him hath so ouer-maistred me, as in honorable modestie he may commaund, and I am not so well nurtured to disagree. But if eyther by my wordes thou hast gathered, or by any chaunge of countenaunce perceiued, the suddaine yeelding of a flexible nature: interprete it in this good sort, that Princes affections make each other melt, as steames of one mettall, which I charge thee conceale from him, as thou regardest my word and his safetie. Pardon me Madame, (quoth the Dwarfe,) it standeth not with my allegeaunce to obey you herein, what a villaine might I be accounted, and vnworthy the name of a faithfull seruant if I should hide these happy tydings from him, to ease those torments that euery houre threaten his death: Yea

Madame, did my maister but thinke I would so abuse him, well deserued I to be torne in peeces. Well, quoth she, if thou findest time conuenient, tell him, but no other I charge thee on thy life: and withall certifie him, that I would not for my Fathers Crowne hee should be knowne. Feare you not, good Madame, sayde the Dwarfe, they are alreadie so well aduised, as none but your selfe can any way endaunger them. It sufficeth that the Prince vnderstande your pleasure, which I will impart to him when the King is returned: so kissing her hande hee departed, leauing her so highly contended, in assurance of the loyall loue of Trineus, as she neuer determined any other Husbande, yet would she not disclose her minde, no not to Eufemia, her secret companion, thinking herselfe too much bewrayed, because the Dwarfe knew it. Soone after the Queene sent for her, to walke in the cole shadow of the Trees, where not long they stayed before the King returned, who reported what pastime they had all that morning. The knightes hauing saluted the Queene and her Ladies, Trineus saluting the Princesse Agriola, was so transported as hee scant knew where he was. The Princesse likewise fired with a stedfast eye on him, as wounded both him and her selfe together, her complexion so aptly deciphering her sickneſſe, as the Prince perceyuing it, sayd to himselfe. Ah loue, hast thou wrought so happily for mee, as my Ladie knowes my secrete afflictions: shall I bee so fortunate, as she will take remorse on my Passions: sweete hope perswades me so, for the often change of her Diuine countenance, telles me there is some mercie in working. The King and Queene departing into their Pauilion, Trineus and Palmerin did the like into theirs, the Prince taking Vrbanillo aside, demaunded if he had any good newes for him. If you will graunt mee one thing (saide the Dwarfe) I will tell you such tydings, as cannot but content you. Demaunde what thou wilt (quoth Trineus) and by the Faith of a Prince, thou shalt not be denyed. Then beganne the whole discourse hee had with the

Prin-

Princesse, and and what deuotion he had for the recouery of his health. Iudge you in what rare humour the Prince now felt himselfe, without question he imagined himself in a more beautifull Paradise, then euer was inuented by Epicurus himselfe, and embracing the Dwarfe, he said. Ah my good friend, what wilt thou that I giue thee: tell me what thou demaundest: thou hast my whole life so much at thy command as thou mayest liberally share out thine owne recompence, but seeing the beginning is so good, no doubt, much better remaineth behinde. Why my Lorde (qd. the Dwarfe) you knowe, I was borne to do you seruice, commaund what you please, and I will accomplish it. Then shalt thou (saide the Prince) returne to my Mistresse againe, and kissing her hand, present her from mee this Emerald, desiring her to weare it for my sake: with remembrance to pitty his painfull miseries, whose life and death is onely in her hand. Vrbanillo taking the Ring, Trineus and Palmerin, went to sporte with the King, and the Princesse at their Entrance regarding Trineus, perceyued well by his countenance that hee vnderstood her Message, for that his blood was now risen cheerely in his Face, which before was sunck down with much languishing: So that shee imagined her selfe more happy, in beeing so beloued, then to Loue, and knewe not well how to dissemble her ioy.

Ah poore Trineus, the paine thou hast endured, in attending the wished houres to speake with her, farre surmounteth the torments of Leander, awayting when Phoebus would goe Bathe himselfe with Thetis, and the Marine Goddesses, that he might afterwards swimme to his affiances Heroe: and had not shee giuen thee a better signe by her Eye to aduenture, I would haue reckoned thee more infortunate, then the betrothed Spouse to the prisoner of Abydos. Now had Trineus bashfully taken the Princesse by the hand, when vnhappylie one came to aduertise the King, that the Hart he had chased the day before, was now again gotten within the toyles, that if it pleased him to Hunte in the morning, hee should no doub (kill him with little labour. These newes were so welcome

come to the King, that because hee would the next Morning more early goe to his Pastime, he withdrew himselfe for that Night, the Queene and Agriola likewise departing to their Pauillion. So that Trineus encounter was thus preuented, and hee with Palmerin returned to their Tent, but trusting still on the Dwarfes diligence, that he should perfect all things to his heartes desire, and to perswade him the more, Palmerin thus beganne. I haue this hope my Lorde, seeing already so many good signes, that you cannot any way be deceyued in your Loue: and this I would aduise you, Fortune being so fauourable, and assisting you to her very vttermost, you should not henceforth shewe your selfe so Feminine, but in hardy manner reueale vnto the Princesse, when you shall finde her at conuenient leysure, both how you Loue her, and what fauourable grace you expect at her hands. I must confesse, that Letters and Messages are able to do much: but the Person being present, and knowing how to request, and how to bee answered, is more auayleable a thousand times: and in briefe, no Messenger can bee like himselfe. I speake not this, as though my Dwarfe were vnfaithfull, but to this ende, that shee might receyue no occasion of displeasure. In how many daungers haue Gentlemen beene plunged, onely by the bad construction of their Seruants message: the readyest wit that is cannot number them: therefore if you find opportunity, attend no other suter then your selfe. This counsell well liked the Prince Trineus, wherefore hee determined to speake to her himselfe, so soone as time and leysure would permit him, and in this resolution they went to their rest: but the remembrance of Polinarda, would not suffer Palmerin to sleepe: comparing his ioy in her presence, with his tormenting Passions now in her absence, breathed forth many sighes, and shed many teares, till at length he began to slumber, wherein hee thought hee discerned this sight. Being in companie with the King, hee saw forth of a darke Caue a dreadfull Lyon, who with open throte set vppon him, and assayled him in such manner, as with his nayles and teeth hee rent

rent his Armour, and put him in very great danger of his life, so that he stroue in such sort in his sleepe, as Trineus being in Bed with him, awaked him, demaunding why hee struggled so earnestly. Palmerin thus awaked, desired God to withstand all his euills, and afterwards recounted to Trineus the whole effect of his Dreame, and said. It will not be much amisse my Lord, that to morrow we ride Armed in the Kings companie, for such Illusions, albeit they commonly fall out vntrue, yet can Presage no good to follow. I like your counsell well (answered Trineus, and Ptolome got armed as well as wee. In the morning they arose, and Armed themselues, all saue their Helmets and Launces, which their Squyres carryed, and in this sorte came to bidde the king good-morrow: who maruelled much to see them so prepared, and doubting they had receyued some occasion of offence, demaunded what moued them so to be Armed. You know my Lord (qd. Palmerin) that a Knight ought euermore to be ready for all Aduentures: and not knowing what inconuenience or danger may happen, before such time as we shall returne againe, we haue Armed our selues to preuent the worst. The king not discontented with this answer, mounted on Horsebacke, and comming to the Chase, had excellent game at Deere, Hart, Bore, and wild Buffell, wherin he tooke such exceeding pleasure, as he determined to stay there fiue or sixe dayes longer. But in the place where he supposed himselfe safe, and free from all hazard, suddenly he was solicited with the changes of Fortune, for the Muane and her daughter Agriola were in marueilous danger, as you shall reade in the discourse following.

CHAP.

CHAP. LI.

¶ How the Queene of England and Agriola her Daughter, were in danger to be rauished by the Giant Franarco, and of the succour they had, by Trineus, Palmerin, and Ptolome.



THe King returning from the chase with his compante, little minding any vnfortunate euent, and conferring with Palmerin, till they drewe neere vnto they? Tents: at length they heard a great tumult, and behold a Squyre making towards them, so fast as his Horse could gallop. Palmerin doubting some vnhappy chaunce, and remembring his dreame, said to the King: Neuer credit me my Lord, if this Squyre come not to you about some special affaires, as well may be gathered by his speedy pace. At these words the Gentleman came to the King, reporting how the Giant Franarco, Lord of the castle of Carbones, since his departure came to his Tents, and frō thence had violently taken the Quéene and her Daughter Agriola, notwithstanding the resistance of many Knights, who striuing to defende her, lost they? liues. The King with these words, stroken in wonderfull griefe, saide.

Ah Gentlemen, this villanous Traytor hath notoriously wronged vs: How is it possible to recouer them againe, before they be dishonoured? Trineus and Palmerin, moued at these bad newes, asked the Squyre which way he went with the Quéen and her Daughter? In truth my Lord (quoth he) I cannot tell you which way hee toke, wee all were so troubled,

bles and miſuſed by his Traine: except they went along the Foreſt, and ſo are gone to the next Village. Then Palmerin claſping on his Helmet, and matching his Launce from his Dwarfe, galloped amayne after the Giant, not ſpeaking a word to Trineus, who accompanyed with Ptolome, rode a pace after him, and as they paſſed by the Queenes Tent, they ſaw the Ladyes and the Gentle-women heavily lamenting, eſpecially Euſemia, the chiefe Companyon to the Princeſſe Agriola. Diuers Knights beſide armed themſelues to purſue the Gyant, but Trineus not a little enraged, followed the tracks of the horſe, demaunding of all he met, if they ſaw the villaine that had ſtolne away the Ladyes. As concerning this Giant Francisco, you muſt note that he was the cruelleſt tyrant, and moſt notable Felon in all the Reaume, having a dayes Journey from the Foreſt where the King hunted, a Caſtle ſo well fortified, and furniſhed with Munition and all things neceſſarie, as in England was not the like, which was left to him by the death of his Father, who forcibly tooke it from a Lorde his Neighbor, and diuers other places, eſpecially the Iſle Magdalen. Where ſucceeded his therby all dignitie, after the death of the eldeſt Brother, who (as you haue heard before) was ſlaine in the Battell by Palmerin, and he vnderſtanding the death of the King of the Iſle Magdalen, was ſo highly diſpleaſed, that although hee had alwayes before borne dutie and allegeance to the King, he now ſolemnly ſwore to reuenge his Brothers death, being ſo feared of the whole Countrey, that none durſt enterpriſe to deale with him. So to reuenge the ſlaughter of his eldeſt Brother, with diuers other of his Kindred and Friendes, likewiſe ſlaine in the Battell, hee ſtrengthened himſelfe with thirtie hardie knights, intending to diſpleaſe the King ſo much as he could. And hearing that he was comming to London, to feaſt the knights that were the cauſe of his great miſchiefe, but chiefely him that ſlew his Brother, came with his company this way, in hope to finde them all vnprouided. And comming that Morning, the King was gone on Hunting, he found thoſe he

deſired,

desired to weete withall, for the hatred he bare them, thinking himselfe sufficiently reuenged, if hee could carry away with him the Queene and her Daughter: which he accomplished to his owne desire, causing them mount vppe behinde two of his knights. The Gentle-men that were left to keepe the Queene companie, very much offended to see such villany offered they? Ladie and Mistresse, defended her so well as they could, but all auailed not against the Giant and his power, because they were well armed, and they with the Queene were vnprouided, so that a number of them were slayne, and sore wounded, and more had bene, but that hee feared the returne of the king, which made him in hast ride from thence with his spoyle, sending them somewhat before, and loytering behinde himselfe, to fight with any that shuld come to reskew them. Trineus hauing gotten the sight of them, came posting to the Giant, saying: Stay trayterous thiefe, for thou mayst not so carry her away that is worthy the greatest Lord in the world. With these words they ranne fiercely togither, Trineus giuing the Giant a sore wound on the shoulder, but the Prince receiued such a mighty stroke from the Giant, as he fell from his Horse with his heeles vpward. Palmerin being not farre off, and doubting least the Prince had beene slaine, came in a great rage to Franarco, saying: Monstrous enemie to manhood, what maketh thee so saucie to lay violent hands on Ladyes of such account? By my Sworde villaine, I shall make thee derely to pay for thy follie. So couching they? Launces they met together, the Gyant saying, but Palmerin gaue him a shrewde wounde on his bodie, and they? Horses roughly shouldring one another, as their Maisters were both throwne to the ground. Franarco (being heauy and vnwaldie) had such a fall, as easily he could not recouer himselfe. But Palmerin nimbly getting vppe againe, gaue the Giant such a wound on his right legge, as the flesh hung downe pittifully to beholde. The Giant being not able to stand any longer on that Legge, set his knee to the ground, being gladde to defend the strokes of Palmerin, who reached him such a sound

blow

blowe on the Forehead, with the hilts of his Swoorde, as the Giant along on his backe, when Palmerin sone setting his foote on his Breast, with his Swoorde deuided his head from his shoulders. During this Fight, Trineus and Ptolome, made after the Queene and her Daughter, whome the Gyaunts Knightes droue cruelly before them. Now was it matter well worthie memorie, to see the braue behauiour of these two Knightes, but chiefly of Trineus, before his sweete Mistresse, whose presence endued him with such exceeding courage, as he thought himselfe able to conquere the whole World, and therefore sufficient for them all, were they as many more in number. But strength doth not alwayes equall courage, and Louers thinke more then they are able to doe, as to Trineus perill it had now fallen out, but that a Companie of the Kings Knights pursued, whereupon begunne a hote encounter betweene them, and Trineus cõming to the knight that had Agriola behinde him, set him sone beside his Horse, with his neck broken in his fall, so that the Princesse getting forth of the throng, and seeing her beloued so valiant in prowesse, betweene ioy and griefe, she said: Ah happie Knight, the Myrrour of such as follow Armes, I desire thy high Fortune may praise, as thou and thy good companie may haue victorie ouer these Traytors. Now may I bee well assured of the Loue thou beares mee: For which, (if we may safely escape this hard hunt) perswade thy selfe not to passe unrecompenced. Trineus hearing the words of Agriola, was enflamed with such a spirit of conquering desire, as breaking in among the thickest, his strokes gaue witnesse he fought for a wife. But the Giants Knights were men of such prowse, as the fresh supply that came were all well neere slaine, and doubtlesse the rest had borne them company, but that the King and Palmerin, with fifty Knights more, came to assist them: for Palmerin hauing slayne the Giant, mounted on his horse, because it was one of the goodliest that euer he saw, and espying the King comming with his traine, set on with him, and found Trineus in great danger, because so many of

his

his side were slaine, but this fresh assistance brought by the King, was the meanes that all the Giants knights were slaughtered, and they kneeling downe thanking God for their victory. The King alighting, came and embraced the Queen, saying: How happy may we thinke our selues Madam, hauing so well preuented this trecherous villanie? For neuer did I think to see you againe, but that God and these knights so highly befriended vs. The Queene and her Daughter were as yet so dismayed, in remembrance of their former daunger, as beholding so many lye slaine before them, and ioyfull beside being so fortunately deliuered, as betweene these extreames, they knew not what to say, but desired speedily to set forward thence, which they presently did, the king commaunding his Nephew Cerides, to see Fraparco and his men burned to Ashes, and honourable Sepulture to bee prouided for the other. When the Queene heard that Fraparco was dead: Tell mee my Lord (quoth shee) who hath done such a gracious act to kill that monstrous villaine: Euen his Madame, saide the King, that was cause of my victorie in Battell, the knight heere in blacke Armour, to whome I am so farre indebted, as I cannot imagine any recompence sufficient for him: and this can I not speake without great maruell, seeing such rare Valour performed with so little daunger on his behalfe. Long may the good knight liue and prosper, said the Queene, that hath so defended vs, and may they all three be most happy in all their affaires, for their knightly seruice to the Realme of England. While these speeches endured, Trineus being sore wounded, was brought betweene two squyres, and set vpon his horse, but the King, the Queen, and chiefly faire Agriola was glad, when she heard there was no such danger but hee might well escape it. Wherefore mounting all on horseback, they rode to see the Giants bodie, which made Agriola repute Palmerin for no lesse then his Parte commended him. Then the King commanded to vnarme the body, and one of his knights should bring away his Helmet and Sheelde, which would be tokens sufficient for him,

to

to recouer the Castle of Garbones which he seized on, and all other things belonging to the Giant, hee sent the Count of Bonneroy with fiue hundred men to confiscate and returne to his Maiesties vse. The Count well knowing such matters would not easily be accomplished, if they in the Castle should make resistance, therefore politikely hee sent the Giants Target and Helmet before, as sent from Franarco, who was with the king, and they should open the gates because they were comming thither, for witnes whereof they shewed the giants signet of armes. The guard so credulous, & thinking it impossible for any man to conquere the giant, opened the gates, whereupon the Count presently entred with his power, putting all to the sword, not sparing any, not so much as the giants yonger brother, who escaping alive from the battel, was the cause why Franarco dealt thus villanously. Thus did the Count yeld the Castle into the kings obeysance remaining Captaine thereof vnder the kings authoritie, the like he did in many other places, where the people aduertised of the Giants rebellion, and that the Castle of Garbones was taken: there was none would resist the kings commaundement: whereof the Count was not a little glad, returning as sone as hee could with the glad tidings of his successe to the Count, certifying the king how all things happened.

CHAP. LII.

Of the conference Palmerin had with the Princesse Agriola, after he had slaine the Giant Franarco.

By this time the king was come to his Pauillion, where he caused his Chirurgions diligently to attend the three knights, for the curing of their wounds, who found that the prince of Allemaigne was worst of all hurt, yet the king vnderstanding he was in no danger of life, was the better pacified, because he loued him dearely, and intended to honour him so much as lay in his power, promising not to depart thence till hee recouered his health: and because hee would preuent like misthances, he caused diligent watch to be made euerie night, as though hee hadde lien in field encamped with the enemie. During the princes sickneſſe, hee was oftentimes visited by the Quéene and fayre Agriola, not vnthankfull of the courteſie receiued by him and his companions, and for which they requited him with manifold thankes. Trineus estéeming himselfe worthily recompenced, séeing that heauenly spectacle, whose presence healed a greater wound then any hee had receiued in fight, desiring the continuance of the outward hurts, for comforting of his inward oppreſſions. And while the quéene thus conferred with Trineus, Palmerin came to the princeſſe Agriola, séeing the time so lawfull and commodious, that hee might thoroughly acquaint her with matter long enough beſore premeditated, but because shee was desirous to talke with him, she first began in manner following. I know not sir knight, how the king my Father will satisfie the great

seruice

seruice you haue done him, in so many hazards to his Realme and himselfe: but for mine owne part, I thinke my selfe so bounden, that after life, which hee gaue me by generation, my deuoted soule shall remaine to honour you. And if these occasions failed to giue me iust cause to thinke my selfe happie, what lesse account may I make of that vertuous Prince Trineus your companion, who came into this Countrey onely for my loue, as I am perswaded: yet doubtfull to be lightly carried away with report, I should accept it for more sound assurance, so please you to speake the truth herein. Madame (quoth Palmerin) if I haue done any seruice to the King or you, it is rewarded with much more then sufficient, seeing it pleaseth you to make such account thereof, and I promise you, you haue two knights wholly at commaund for the loue of the third, who is so confidently bolwed your friend and seruant, as no man in the world can bee more, & this is he that lieth wounded in his bed, the princely sonne and heire of the Emperor of Allemaigne, in which report my Dwarfe hath not deceiued you. And giue my word this credit (Madame) that since the time hee first heard of your excellent beautie, being then in Fraunce, hee neuer had other determination, but to spend his life in your gracious seruice, and making refusall of many faire Ladies, especially of Lucemania, daughter to the most christian king of Fraunce, set downe this princely and commendable resolution, neuer to espouse any other but you, so it may stand with your liking to accept him for your husband: thinke then aduisedly sweete madame, of the incomparable happines ordained for you, and stand not in your owne light to lose so good fortune. In truth my Lord quoth the princesse, I were well worthy to be reputed among the number of most hard harted and ingratefull Ladies, if I should not loue the prince Trineus, were it but for the danger he remaines in for mee, and the vnfaigned loue which you say hee beares mée. And thus farre I presume my Lord on your credit, that if it were otherwise, you would not disguise the matter to me in

this maner, much lesse deceiue such a Lady as I am, which (notwithstanding) would bee to you but a slender conquest. Therefore you may assure him on my behalfe, that the loue I beare him is more then he thinks, and very far exceedeth his iudgement, as the proofe hereof (in time) shall deliuer true testimonie. Madame, quoth Palmerin, his onely desire in this world you haue faithfully vnderstoode, in you then it consisteth to preuent the contrarie, by mercifull regarde of his afflictions, and your presence will appease the anger of the Emperour your father, in that so nobly hee would enterprise (though against his will) to ayde the King your Father onely for your loue. And this will bee the meane that the conceiued pleasure of the Fathers, shall conclude in the happie coniunction of their Children. My Lord, quoth the Princesse, I will do what shall please my father and mother to command me, and no otherwise, considering the danger I may fall into by yéelding my honour to any preiudiciall occasion. Palmerin who had no other feare but to bee knowne what himselfe was, thus answered: I am perswaded madame, that your iudgement is so perfect, that to attaine a place of such dignitie, and a husband so royall as the Prince Trineus, you will not stand no friuolous tearmes, nor be carried away with any light or feminine feares, séeing that (setting apart these doubts) you shall worthily accomplish the thing which shall make you the most renowned Lady vnder the Occident. I pray you Sir Palmerin, quoth she, referre this talke to some other time, for the answere of such a high and weightie matter, deserueth to be excogitated with leysure, for oftentimes wée see, that such actions suddainely and slightly performed, causeth more repentaunce afterward then is expected. Yet thus farre I venture, and so faithfully perswade him, that hee is the onely Prince in the world I would accept for my husband, if they were so agréd, to whome God, nature and dutie hath bounde mée: and to let him vnderstand my willing desire towardes him, I will speake to him my selfe, assone as the Queene is departed.

parted.

parted. But long after the Dwarfe returned to the King, leauing her Daughter with two of her Ladyes to comforte the prince, whereupon Palmerin taking her by the hande, brought her to the bedde side where Trineus lay, to whome she made very curteous reuerence, & trembling with modest bashfulnesse, said. How face ye gentle knight? I coulde wish your hard fortune doth greatly displease me, and if I coulde beare part therein, beleeue me I would gladly endure the paine: for it is good reason that the cause of the harme, should haue a portion of the torment, gratifying you with a Maidens thankes, for your good assistance without any deceit. Trineus was so rauished with her presence, and hearing her speake so friendly, in whom consisted the safetie of his life, as he could not vtter the ioy he conceiued: which the Princesse well noted and Palmerin likewise, who answered her in this manner. It cannot be but my Lord Trineus will soone amend, hauing the sopatus medecine so neere him, that is onely able to helpe him: and with these wordes he left them both together, to acquaint each other with their secret afflictions: when the Prince giuing a grieuous sigh, said. Faire madame, to accomplish what you commanded the first day I saw you, I did my deuoire to execute the effect of the charge, albeit not to sufficiently as I could wish: yet since that time I neuer enioyed one minute of rest, till this instant, when mine eyes delighted with your sweete presence, gaue hope to my heart of further comfort. For this onely cause (faire mistresse) haue I forsaken my Parents and countrey, regarding nothing more then this present happinesse, whereby my woundes are cured, my spirit contented, and my heart from all dangers sufficiently recouered, so that no griefe can now molest me, whiles your gracious fauour thoroughly confounded all. And in so might I imagine my vnfortune beyonde all other, where not this fearefull doubt left to trouble it, that scanning disdaine should be his in such rare perfections, as oftentimes it commeth so to passe: therefore I be-

such you Madame, may it stand with your liking to re-
solue all doubts by your direct opinion, and herein shall I
account my selfe more honoured, then were I Monarch of
the whole worlde. Loue hauing then so wounded the Prin-
cesse, as for a while she was driuen to silence at length with
dew the passion, and raised her returne this answer. Alas
my Lord, I know (ere this) so certaine of your affection to
wards mee, in respect of the dangerous trauailes endured
for my sake, as you neede not seeke any other proues, then
what mine owne heart was fully resolued on: and so I
continue still, expecting the day to make vs both fortunate,
which I would haue you as yet dissemble, lest crooked mis-
hap any way preuent vs. As she was proceeding in her dis-
course, the Queene entred the Tent againe, by which occa-
sion Tirreus could not say what he intended, wherefore ta-
king her secretlie by the hand, wrong her fingers with such
a trembling passion, as all the night following he lay medi-
tating on his goddesse Agriola, and the comfortable an-
swere shee gaue him. If the young Prince were in such tor-
ments, his Lady beare him companie, thinking on the spe-
ches past betweene her and Palmerin, and this euening
the Dwarfe (not comming before to speake with Agrio-
la) presented her with the Diamond from the Prince, which
shee kindly receiuing, in recompence thereof sent him a faire
Diamond, rewarding the Dwarfe liberally for his paines,
who among the rest of his talke, highlie commended the
vertues of the Prince, which increased her loue so confi-
dently, as shee assured him of the Princesse faith, that
death could not change her setled affection. Tirreus fully
resolued heerein, geue such cheerefull phisicke to his heart,
and the Chirurgions such diligence to his woundes, as
within seauen or eight daies hee was able to beare armour:
whereupon the king departed thence towardes London,
where the strange knights were entertained with mettai-
lous honor, the Lords, Knights, Burgesses, Officers and
other Citizens, welcomming them with great pompe and

royaltie,

royalty, saying, that Palmerin and the knights that delivered the Emperor and her daughter, from the cruell Giant Fraxedo, with diverse other salutations, whereat Palmerin and his friendes were greatly abashed. Passing on to the Palace, all the way they were still pestered with rare shewes and pastimes, and the knights lodging there, appointed to every Chamberlain their Guests, causing open Court to be kept for eight dayes space, for the honour of these knights. And entertainment of all friendly conuersation in all kinde of pastimes and sports and delights that might be deuised, there was no spare. Now sende all the Princes, Lords, and renowned Knights in England to the Court, except the Duke of Gaule, who excused himselfe by the warre in his owne Province, which yet was not the chiefest cause of his absence, but the shame he reputed to himself, was his foyle in Traynce, when he entred the Combatte for the beauty of the faire Princesse Agricola.

These knights thus worthily intreated, they were at no time denied entrance into the King and Queenes chambers, by which meanes Tarentus might when himselfe pleased conferre with the Princesse, till the last banning all other, the Prince thus began his complaint and discourse. You may easily presume (most diuine Ladie) in behalfe of combats I continually endure for your loue, and no helpe is expected but the onely hope of your fauour, to which as you have promised to my especiall sufficiency, I doubt not but you will persever in that gracious opinion, and what promise hee hath made of my deuises to you, I think not but I observe with religious care and diligence, though not sufficient to equal your deserts yet be carefull gratitude shall not insult against me. So many thanks (quoth the Princesse) I acquaint you my Lord, as your opinion and her imagined loue to both, and accounting you for my friends, which is a higher degree, I discharge you of my seruice, and (mine honour guarded from blame) I shall judge my selfe so happie to yeld

you are content, knitly I will fulfill your wil, notwithstanding any
daunger to ouer selfe. But I pray you tell me my Lord,
what is the intent of your loue in this actione? Madame,
(quoth the Prince) Sir Palmerin, who is now come to
beate vs company, shall vndoubtly enforme you, so please
you to tell your consent ouer herewith. Palmerin thus entred, and
imagined that all was made and agreed betweene Agriola and
his, wherefore he sayd to the Princesse, God speede you
Madame, pardon me, I should all you Ladie and Mistres to
the Prince of Allemaigne, for I doubt not but you haue
chosen him for your husband: Agriola blushing and
smyling hereat, made no answere. Wherefore Palmerin
went forward in this manner. In faith Madame if you
haue done so, I would counsell you to accomplish it presently,
and prouide to goe with vs to Allemaigne, where the
Emperour will entertaine you with such gracious fauour,
as you will not lose if you beare the minde of a Princesse:
beside, you shall be the meane of euerlasting peace betweene
the King your Father and his Maiestie. To which woordes,
Agriola thus discreetly answered.

I promise you my Lord, there is no Prince this day liuing, whom I would more gladly accept for my husband,
then the prince Trineus, notwithstanding, for me to departe without the knowledge of the King or Queene my
Parents, is an act in (mine opinion) farre dissenting from
duetie and honest reporte. Therefore my Lord, louing my
honour as you say you do, I pray you let our behauiours
be with better wisedome, least we both fall into daungers not
recouerable. Palmerin perceyuing Agriola contrary to the
most necessary occasion, vsed such arguments, and playd so
well the Oratour, that the poore Princesse had no power
to resist: considering the great loue this deare the Prince
Trineus, which made her yelde more easily to his perswa-
sions, so that she agreed to accomplish their determination,
and depart with them towards the Realme of Allemaigne.
Trineus ioyes now exceedes measure, and Palmerin (for)

hys

(his sister) was no lesse contented, in respect hee should the sooner see his Faire Mistresse Polinarda, whose very remembrance gave him life, as the Ayre doth the Camelion.

But Fortune beholding each thing prosper as liked their Fancies, would no longer play her Pageant, crossing them with the unhappiest Stratagem that ever could have befallen to such Noble Princes, as in the sequell shall bee largely discoursed. They little expecting such variable chance, are earnestly following their serious Enterprize, which was secretly to convey Agriola with them into Allemaigne, for which purpose they made provision both of Shipping, & skilfull Pilots to conduct them, transporting all their necessaries aboard, at what time this Aduenture following hapned in the Court of England.

CHAP. LIII.

How in the time of this pleasant and great Assemblie, there came a Damosell to London, who desired the King to doe her Iustice against a Knight of his owne Court.

During the time that this Royall company remained at London, minding nothing else but pleasures, pastimes, and Courtly recreations, there came a Damosell so faire as might be, accompanied with two grave Ancient Knights, and a lusty Champyon bravely armed, with three comely Squyres attending on him. The Damosell entring the Pallace, came before the King, and thus her tale began

began in this maner. Dread Lord, hauing long time heard your good Iustice to vnderstandes your Subiects, without any fauour or exception of persons: I am the more bolde, (albeit he that hath iniuryed me, is pretendedly reputed for a man of good qualitie, and holdeth place of authority in your Court) humbly to craue of your Highnesse one Requeste, against the most false and disloyall Knight that euer liued, for whom when I do but once remember, more weighty and grieuous oppressions fall vppon my soule, then this wretched body of mine is able to endure.

Damosell, (sayde the King) I shall right gladly relieue your heauinesse, if it lie in my power to do it: therefore tell mee the cause of your sorrow: and what hee is that hath done wronge you. Knowe you, my good Lorde (quoth she) that I loued a Knight so dearely, as contrary to the liking of my Parents and Friends, and too much forgetfull of mine owne selfe, I take him to my Husband, & in a good opinion of him, thinking hee loued me so faithfully, as his fained shewes and counterfait behauiour gaue demonstration, but the Traytour had no other meaning then falsely to beguile and deceiue me: For after I had made him Lorde of mee and mine, and brought him to a Castle of mine, so strong and fayre as any in your Highnesse Dominions: the Traytour expulsed mee thence violently, pretending that we were so neere allyed, as he might no longer account mee for his Wife. Since which time, notwithstanding al the humble intreaties I haue often made: he will neyther restore me my goods & Possessions againe, nor yet accept me as his espoused Wife. Wherefore I beseech you my Lord, as becomes a good and vertuous Prince, for the honour of Nobilitie, and regarde of Womanhood, you will be pleased to take pittie on a poore distressed Ladie, and that in such a rightfull demaunde, you would do me Iustice, which I had sooner demaunded, but could not by the occasions of your troublesome Warres.

Ladye, sayde the King, as yet you haue not named the man that hath offered you this haynefull iniurie. My Lorde quoth

quoth shee, this is the man in your presence, named Myseres, a vile Traytour, and publike Adulterer. And if so bee hee dare affirme that I haue spoken any untruth, I haue here brought a knight with me, who by Combat shall make him confesse his Falshood and Treason, so please your Maiestie to graunt my Request. Myseres, (quoth the King) howe answere you this accusation and offence, wherewith this Lady chargeth you? Myseres beeing suddenly driuen into this dumpe, knewe not well what to saye: yet at length, (with humble reuerence) he thus beganne. My soueraigne Lorde, if credit may be giuen to the first countenance of accusations, without hearing howe the Partie accused can iustifie himselfe, I doubt not but your Maiestie will presently condemne mee: but when the matter is once well debated and discided, they which seemed at the first vnreprooueable, are found malicious and slaunderous persons, and the accused, Innocent and free from blame, as here your Highnesse shall most plainly beholde.

The matter whereof this Lady detecteth mee, is forged, and villainously inuented: For to mee belonged the Castle she quarrelleth for, he tendred from my Predecessors, to whom I am the true, lawfull, and legitimate Inheritour. Now it is, that this dissembling Woman, by sweete speeches, Feminine guiles, and secret decrets, oftentimes practised to winne mee for her Husbande: but knowing her behauiour such as beseemed not a Woman of modestie and vertue, I would not heare her, much lesse consent to match with her. And this is the onely cause of her complainte, in hope that you, (being aboue all other Princes, most benigne and honourable,) with constraine me to wedde her, in respect of your absolute authoritie, as the dutifull obedience wherein I am bounde. When the knight which came with the Lady, had heard Myseres blame her in this sort, hee stepped before the King, with these wordes.

It is great folly (my Lord) in Myseres, to denye a matter so apparantly and well knowen, although it were put to the

iudge-

iudgement of honeſt perſons, his common good report might cauſe him to be beleeued: But the poore Lady declareth that her right and Title may be cleared by Combatte, wherein let him confound her if he can, or elſe receyue reward for his notorious offence. On her behalfe therefore, my Lordes, I ſaye and will maintaine, that Myſeres is a moſte diſloyall Traytour, and his owne mouth ſhall confeſſe it, or elſe this Day will I take his head from his bodie. Myſeres feeling himſelfe ſomewhat touched, grewe into great choller, and albeit the ſhame hee did the Ladie, deliuered him culpable, and made him doubt the iſſue of the Combatte, yet as it were in a marueilous rage, he anſwered the Knight, that hee falſely belyed him, and was ready to make tryall thereof in ſingle Combatte, if it pleaſed the kings Maieſtie to appoynt it. And I doubt not (quoth hee) to make thee paye for thy raſhneſſe, and force thee confeſſe thy want of diſcretion, in giuing credite to the trothleſſe complaints of this deceytfull Woman. Then was it ordayned, that this difference ſhould bee decyded by Armes: Whereupon the Ladyes Knight ſpake thus to the King. Seeing it hath pleaſed your Maieſtie to graunt the Fielde to Myſeres and mee, may it pleaſe you (as it is the cuſtome) to commaund that he deliuer Hoſtages: to the ende that if hee be vanquiſhed, the Caſtell may bee deliuered into your hands, for to bee ſurrendred in Juſtice where it appertaines. Good reaſon (ſaide the King) and therefore Myſeres, you muſt before you enter the Fielde, accomplith what this Knight in equitie hath demaunded.

Then Myſeres called one of his Brethren, whome hee requeſted to ſtand as his Hoſtage: and doubt not before the Sunne be ſette, but I will diſcharge my ſelfe and my pledge. With which wordes hee departed the Hall, to Arme himſelfe: But becauſe the Day was to farre ſpent, the matter was deferred vntill the next Morning. The King and his Lordes, ſeeing the Ladies Knight in ſuch reſolute aſſurance, marueiled of whence, and what he was, for none there knew him but Palmerin, who neither coulde gueſſe aſſuredly who

he

he was, but by the golden Sunne in the Azure Shield, which made him remember that at the Iouftes in France, the perilous Combate without Victorie on either fide, was fought betweene him and this Knight. Palmerin being glad to fee the man he long loked for, and purpofing now to be fully reuenged on him: fecretly went forth of the Hall, commanding one of his Squyres, to conuey his Horfe and Armour the next morning out of the Cittie, becaufe if he vanquifhed Miferes, at his returne he intended to fight with him, or if Miferes had the better, yet he fhould not depart thence againe with life.

Now you muft vnderftand, that this young Knight which came with the Ladie, was the Knight of the Sunne, named Friſoll, who euer fince the Combatte performed betweene Palmerin and him, remained with the Duke of Gaule, and was of him highly honoured for his worthie Chiualrie. Of whom when this diſtreſſed Ladie hearde, ſhe made her complaint of the wrong Myſeres had done her, and Fryſoll pitying her eafe, promiſed to ayde her in the recouery of her right: and ſo came with her to the King of Englands Court, to the great griefe of the Duke of Gaule, who made Fryſoll promiſe him to returne againe after the Combatte: but Fryſoll was much more deſirous thereof then the Duke, in reſpect of his faire Sifter, becaufe he was moſt ſpecially beloued of her.

Thus Palmerin following his enterprife, feared to be preuented, becaufe the Field was appoynted by the King, in the ſame place whereby intended to meete with Fryſoll, and beſide, Palmerin and the Duke of Norgalles, were ordained as Iudges of the Fielde, which hee would not willingly haue taken vpon him, doubting by that meane to be hindred of his other pretended determination. Now the time being come that the Knights ſhuld to the Combat, the King and the Ladyes came to the Scaffolds, and the two Iudges were placed in their Tent, accompanied with many Princes and honourable Perſonages.

After that the Heraulds had commaunded the Champy-

ons

aus to doe their best deuoyre, then they claspt their Helmets, and fetching their Carriere, mette with such puissance, as Myseres brake his Launce on Frysolls Shields, not vnhorsing him in his Saddle: But Frysoll running his Launce quite through Myseres bodie, caused the false traytour to fall downe dead to the earth. Then he alighting, and opening Myseres Helmet, and seing no life in him, came to the Iudges, saying: You may now perceyue my Lords, whether he that offered this Ladie iust, vsurper, hath receyued his due desert, or no: So that now (I say) if there remaine yet any thing elle to doo for recouering of her right, I am heere ready to maintaine her cause. Palmerin, who was not very well pleased with this Victorie, answered: Knight, you haue done enough at this time, pray that other affayres may proue as prosperous to you hereafter, and in anger went forth of the Field, commanding the body of Miseres to be brought thence, which was afterward interred with great honour.

Frysoll hauing thus vanquished Myseres, the Ladie for whome he entred the Combatte, fell on her knees before the King, desiring him to surrender the Castell which Myseres vniustly detained from her. In soth Lady (quoth the King) it is reason you should haue Iustice, and your owne deliuered you: But know you his name that defended your quarrell?

My Lord (quoth she) in concealing his Name, I should offer him great wrong, concealing the Bountie and Prowesse of the man, which hath not beene sparingly shewed heeretofore, in presence of the Duke of Gaule, against the King of Norway, whose army was discomfited by the worthy valour and policie of this Knight, who calleth himselfe by the name of Frysoll, the Duke of Gaule, bringing him forth of France at his last Voyage, and euer since hath so dearely Loued him, as he were his owne naturall Brother. I promise you, Ladie (saide the King) you made no ill choyse of your Knight, For I haue heretofore hearde of his Actions, and am not a little glad that now I know him, wishing he were one of my Court, because a King accompanied with such persons, must needes

nedes imagine his Countrey happie. And in respect he is so braue a Champyon, it is impossible but that hee should bee a wise and decreete Knight: Wherefore I pray you cause him come hether to me: which they presently did. And hauing saluted his Maiestie with Honourable reuerence, the King embraced him with these wordes. Welcome Sir, you are most heartily welcome: I could wish you were one of my Knights, in respect that my Court should be the more honoured, and I might requite your paines, better then I can on a suppen.

High and mightie Prince (qo. Prisoll) in assisting this distressed Ladie, I haue done but my dutie: but if I could any way doe your Highnes seruice, I know no Prince liuing, for whom I would more gladly employ my selfe. And at this present time vrgent affayres excuse me from staying here any longer: Neuerthelesse, I intreate you my good Lord, (if it may stand with your fauorable liking) to repute me among the number of your Soudyours and Seruants. If it must needes be so (saue the King) you shall do what pleaseth you, yet will I reckon you amongst those to whome I owe continuall loue and affection. And although the death of Mysenes doth somewhat grieue mee because I made some estimation of him: yet for your sake shall I deliuer the Ladie her Castell, which you haue conquered with such Knightly Cyualrie. Prysoll humbly thanked his Maistie, and departed with the Ladie, which way they came: But Palmerin very much offended at his departure, and earnestly desiring to be reuenged on him, commaunded his Dwarfe to marke well which way they went.

The Dwarfe diligently fulfilling his Maisters charge, returned, and tolde him which way they take: Whereupon, he being desirous to follow, without giuing any knowledge thereof, to his Companyons, left Trineus to conferre with his faire Mistresse Agriola, and departed the Court so secretly, as neyther the Prince nor Ptolome suspected any thing. And so accompanied with the Dwarfe Vrbanillo, hee came

to

to the place where as his Squyre stayed with his Armour, where, when he was Armed, hee mounted on Horseback, thus speaking to his men. Returne you to the Cittie, and there expect my comming: As for thee Vrbanillo, thou shalt say to the Prince Trineus, that he must pardon mee, though I did not acquaint him with the vrgent occasion of my departure: which I was more enforced to do than he thinks on: Nevertheless, pray him take no paines to enquyre after me, because I doubt not to returne very shortly, although not so soone as hee would: yet pray him to vse so little speech thereof as may bee. The like mayest thou say to Prolome, and to them both commende mee most heartily: With this strict charge to you both, that vppon the paine of your lives, neyther of you do follow me, nor cause any other to make search after me.

So taking his Launce, hee galloped that way which the Dwarfe shewed him they were gone, and then hee with the Squyre returned to the Cittie, making very sorrowfull Lamentation, because they thought they Maister would returne no more, in that he would not be knowne whither hee went, yet would they not bewray nothing they Maister had forbidden them. Trineus and Prolome were marvellous sorrowfull, especially the Prince, who without the Dwarfes assurance of his Maisters short returne, had followed to goe seeke him: yet not throughly contented with Vrbanilloes perswasions, the King himselfe came to comfort him saying: You must thinke (good Syr,) that your noble Friend is gone about some strange Adventure. For you know he never enterprised any thing, but it returned him to honour. If heretofore for the Loue of his Ladie, hee shewed himselfe without his Pere in Chivalry, thinke you hee will not regarde his reputation, and premeditate his Actions before hee runne to farre in daunger? Content your selfe I pray you, for if his returne be not the sooner, I will cause such provision to bee made, as hee shall be found againe. The Princesse Agriola likewise intreated him not to bee disquieted at the absence

of

of Palmerin, for with the helpe of God and his friends, quoth she, his returne will cause as much ioy, as his departure doth greefe. All this could hardly content Trineus, for hee dreamed in his sleepe, that the Knight which slue Myseres, was he against whom Palmerin entred the combat in France at what time they could not ouercome each other. And remembring what ill will Palmerin bare him, vehemently suspected that for this cause he followed him, which imagination somewhat comforted him, and he reputed the Knight vnwise if hee medled any more with Palmerin.

CHAP. LIIII.

How after the death of Mseres, Palmerin folowed Frysol, whom he had slaine, but that a Damosell intreated his life.

All that day Palmerin trauelled, and most part of the next, yet could hee heare no tidings of the Lady and Frysol, which made him ride in great melancholly, till at length meeting with a Damosell, mounted on a goodly Palfray very richly harnessed, of whome hee demaunded, if shee mette not a Knight Armed, who bare in a Shelde of Azure a Golden Sunne, and with him a Ladie attended on by many Squires. Truelie Sir, quoth the Damosell, if you will grant me two requests that I shall demaunde, I will bring you to him you seeke for, before to morrow the third houre of the day. Palmerin who was wonderfull desirous to finde out his enemie, granted to any

thing shée would desire: on condition (quoth hée) that you shewe mee the Knight. Followe me then sayde the Damosell, for I will accomplish that I haue promised. So rode they together, and among other speeches, Palmerin asked her if shée knewe the Knight, and what his name was: The Damosell aunswered, that shée knewe not the Knight, but shée was very well acquainted with the Ladie in his companie, and this night (quoth shée) they minde to lodge at a Castle of mine Auntes. In the Euening they arriued within the sight of the Castle, where they alighted from their Horses, and entred a little thicket, for feare of being séene, and the Damosell hauing a flagon of Wine, and a Pastie of redde Déere in a Paunde at her saddle bow, Palmerin and shee refcelhed themselues therewithall: but all that night could not Palmerin settle himselfe to sléepe, watching the Castle Gate, least in the time of his sléeping his enemie should escape him. The next morning, so soone as the breake of day appeared, Frysol came forth of the Castle with his company, wherefore Palmerin not a little gladde, sayd to the Damosell. Now (Lady) is your promise performed, for this is the Knight I séeke: if therefore you will any thing with me, I must intreate you to follow mee, for I would hee verie loath that hee should escape me.

With which wordes he mounted on horseback, galloping after Frysol so fast as the Horse coulde away, and ouertaking him, sayde. Stay a while Sir Knight, thinke you to passe away in such sort? haue you forgot your wordes at Parris, to the Knight that guarded the Duke of Sauoyes Tent? now is the time I hope to correct your presumption, when thou shalt well perceiue, that thou neyther deseruest to be Seruant to the Princesse Polinarda, nor art worthie to talke of her honourable name. Frysol thus staying knewe by Palmerins wordes, that it was hee against whom he fought the Combate in France, whereupon hee aunswered.

Truly

Truely Sir Knight, I haue not as yet forgotten what I then sayd, nor is the beauty of Polinarda, or my loue to her so little, that my desire to her service should not bee now remembered, nor will I forbeare to confesse it still, for feare of thee or any other whatsoeuer. And if thou hast sought mee forth in this quarrell, thou hast found mee so ready to defend it: as I will more willingly choose to die, then deny any part of my dutie to that gracious Princesse.

Palmerin beeing so angrie, as he would not multiplie any more words, but encountred his enemie so valiantly, as they brake their Launces, and yet could not vnhorse each other, then drawing their swords, they laide so cruelly vppon their bodies, as their shieldes being broken, their Helmets battered, their Armour defaced, and their flesh so greeuously mangled, as neither of them both could iudge who was likeliest to winne the victorie. Til at length Frysols Horse saying vnder him, fell to the grounde, and hee so weakened with his great losse of bloud, as hee coulde not recouer himselfe, before Palmerin came to him, thinking to haue parted his head from his shoulders with his sword, which when the Ladie sawe, for whom Frysol had slaine Myseres, shee fell into most pittifull acclamations, not sparing her louely tresses of haire, but with very great impatience renting them violently, made the ayre to eccho her lamentable complaints. Which the Damosell seeing that guyded Palmerin, and moued with compassion of her exceeding griefes: fell on her knees before Palmerin, intreating him to giue ouer the fight. But he, fayning that he heard her not, because Frysol with rough struggling had got on foote againe charged him with such violents strokes, as Frysol (being of inuincible courage) requited him with as worthie chiualrie.

Againe the Damosell came on her knees to him, intreating him to giue ouer the fight, saying. You know my Lord, that before you came hither, you promised me two requests and this I make one of them, that you continue no longer

Combat against this Knight, and in so doing I shall acquite you of part of the promise which you made mee. Palmerin chasing like a furious Lyon, answered. I pray you Damosell aske some other thing, for in this matter, of force you must pardon mee. In soth saide the Damosell, if you denie mee my demaunde, I will complaine at the King of Englands Court, and there will I declare you periured, for ill it besemes such a Knight as you are, to make promise to a Lady and not observe it. By God Lady, said Palmerin, you doe mee great wrong, in with-holding mee from reuenge on him, whom aboue all menne in the worlde, I hate most deadlie, vnhappie was the houre wherein I mette you: and so mounting vppe on horsebacke, he galloped away in verie great anger. When the other sorrowfull Lady sawe that Palmerin was gone, and had left her Knight, with great ioy she embraced the Damosell that had procured it, thanking her for shielding the life of a most noble Knight, for which courtesie she remained bound to her during life.

What I haue done, (quoth the Damosell) is for the loue of you and this Knight, sweating to you by the faith of a Gentlewoman, that I haue another thing to aske of the Knight which is gone, that concerneth me verie neere-lie. Notwithstanding, your teares moued mee with such compassion, that I stand in daunger to lose what I shall neuer recouer, yet in respect the cause was so honest and vertuous, I doe not repent what I haue done: but because he remaineth indebted to mee for another request, I must nedes leaue you and follow him, so mounting vpon her Palfraye, shee rode after Palmerin with all the haste shee possibly could make. And in her iourney wee will leaue her, returning to Frysol, whose woundes being very dangerous, the Lady bounde them vppe so well as shee could, till they came at their next Lodging, where by good Fortune was a Lady so well seene in Chirurgerie, as in short time shee cured his woundes whole and sounde. Frysol so

well

well recouered, departed thence with the Ladie, because the thirde day following they should bee at the Castle, whither alreadie was come Hermes, one of the king of Englands knights, being sent by his Lord the King to deliuer the Ladie her right: which Hermes did according to his charge, entertained the Ladie honourably, deliuered her the keyes of the Castle, and commaunded all the subiects to reuence the Ladie, which they refused not to doe, but were glad of her comming. For ioy hereof, were very solemne feasts prepared, and the Lady recounted to Hermes, Commissioner to the King, how Frysol fought the Combate by the way, against the knight of the blacke armour: whereby Hermes presently knew, that it was the straunge knight, who had left the Court, vnknowne to his Companions, ozany of his Friendes, whereof hee was not a little glad, because hee iudged that these newes would be welcome to the King. Wherefore so soone as he had accomplished his charge, and seated the Ladie quietly in her Castle, hee departed, intending to follow Palmerin till he found him, trauayling the way was assigned him by the Ladie.

Frysol stayed there with the Ladie till hee had perfectly recouered his health, and then without any other recompence for his paines, but onely a Horse, because his owne was slaine, and a new Armour, his owne being spoyled, hee returned to the Duke of Gaule, who reioyced greatly to haue his companie. But when the Duke vnderstood how discourteously he had beene vsed by the blacke knight, who was so highly fauoured in the English Court, he desired by all the meanes possible to bee reuenged on him: so that being in a Castle on the Frontiers of his Duchie, yet within the King of Englandes Dominion, hee vnderstood the blacke knight should passe that way, because he could not else returne to the Court. Now perswading himselfe for resolute vengeance, hee pitched his Tents in a fayre Meadow neare a Bridge, and there placed twelue knights,

the most hardie and valiant men in all his Dukedome, who should maintaine this order: that no knight should passe over the Bridge, vnlesse hee entred Combate with those twelue knights one after another, and such as were vanquished, should submit themselues to the Dukes mercie, either for their deliuerance, or to remaine his prisoners, and the horse of the partie foyled, should belong to the conqueror, but if they were vnmounted, the passenger should goe on his iourney, and take their Horses with him. This aduenture thus established, many good knights were ouercome, because it was a verie harde matter to vanquish the twelue knights, and escape: But the Duke take no little pleasure herein, who detained Frysol more by constraint then otherwise, for his anger so vehemently encreased against Palmerin, as no delight or pleasure could expiate his reuenging desires.

CHAP. LIII.

How Palmerin went with the Damosel to accomplish the promise he made her, and what befell him.

PAlmerin (as you haue heard) departed from the Damosell in a rage, because he could not execute what hee intended, wherefore hee deuised to deale some other way, and to single forth Frysol in such conuenient place, as one of them should die before they departed. And as he was imagining some other way to ouertake Frysol, the Damosell had now againe recouered his company, saying. I pray you Sir knight, conceiue no ill opinion of me for hinde-

ring

ring you from killing your enemie, whom yone haue left in verie great ieopardie, considering what bountie and courage is in him, and which your selfe perhaps will bee sorrie for. Wherfore I pray you forget this displeasure, and determine to fulfill what you haue promised, which if you will doe, you must go with me.

Beléeue me Damosell, saide Palmerin, you shewed but little courtesie, so often hindering me from the thing which aboue all other in this worlde most tormenteth mee. What vnhappie bodie are you? but more vnhappie the houre I mette with you: but seeing it is reason I should keepe my promise, leade the way, and I will not faile to follow you. So rode they on, and for foure dayes space hée would not speake an word to her, and faine hee would haue left her company, but that he could not with honor forsake her. The next day, as they rode by a Riuers side, Palmerin espied a Knight standing with a Bow and arrow in his hand, which he let flie at his Horse and killed him. Palmerin impatient by remembrance of Frysol, and angrie that the Knight had thus killed his Horse, made towardes him so fast as hee coulde, but the Knight was suddenly got on the further side of the Lake, and Palmerin vp to the middle in water before he was ware of it, and now he could neither sée the Knight that slew his Horse, nor the Damosell that came in his companie. Palmerin being in great perplexitie, when he saw nothing but water round about him, and féeling hee was vpon a Bridge, beheelde a marualous deepe streame running vnder it, and at the end thereof a goodly Castle. Walking along the Bridge toward the Castle, amazed at this contrary aduenture, he espied a knight on the battlements of the Castle, who saide. Stay a while Sir Knight, one shall come presently and open the Gate.

Palmerin knew not what to say, but determined to defende himselfe if any came to assaulte him, so the Castle Gate being opened, he entred with his sword drawne, yet was there no man that displeased him, but euery one made

him humble reuerence, with verie good wordes and gentle countenance, declaring by their behauiour, that hee was more then welcome thither. Thus walking on to the inner Court, there came towardes him a Ladie, accompanyed with many Damesels, and knights, also shewing thereful gestures, and the Ladie taking Palmerin by the hand, sayd.

Ah, gentle knight, right welcome are you to this place, and heauen bee praysed for the good it doth mee, to see you here, that is able to accomplish the thing, which no other as yet could bee able to finish: enter hardily in good assurance, for you will wee make all the honour that we are able. Palmerin beleeuing the Ladie, was brought into a maruailous goodly Chamber, where certaine Squires holpe to vnarme him, bringing him a gorgeous Mantle to wrappe about him. This done, he was conducted into a large Hall, where the table was couered, the Ladie entertaining him so nobly, as in the King of Englands Court hee could not be be better. The feast ended, and the Tables withdrawne, the Lady began to deuise with Palmerin, saying. Long time (my Lord) haue we desired your comming, as the man in whom our only helpe consisteth: for by your valour we are perswaded to be delinered from the misery wherein I and mine haue too long time bene detained.

I beseech you Madame, quoth Palmerin, to tell me your affayres, as also what the knight meane to kill my Horse, and why you entertaine mee with so great kindnesse. If you will promise me, said the Lady, to accomplish a needfull occasion, and which I thinke is destinied to you: I will resolue you, otherwise, I shall but lose my labour. If it be a matter reasonable (quoth Palmerin) and that a knight may compas, spare not to tell mee, for I will do my indeauour therein. Graunercies gentle knight sayd the Lady, the circumstance of the occasion followeth in this sort. This Castle (my Lord) sometime belonged to my noble Father, a knight so hardie and valiant as any in these parts, in whose yonger years

loue

Loue so ouer-ruled him, as hee affected a Lady of no lesse qualitie and condition then himselfe, by whome he had a Daughter: at whose byrth hie Lady and Wife deceased. My Father being yet in the flower of his youth, matched the second time with a Lady of a very Honourable and ancient discent, by whome hee had mée the first Childe. My Sister at fourteene yéeres of Age, my Father oftentimes would haue richly Marryed her to her great aduancement, whereto she being vnwilling, by my Fathers consent, shee remained with her Mothers Sister, whose skill was very great in all Sciences, by whose counsell my Sister caused a goodly Pallace to be edified, and a strong Tower in an Isle on the other side of this Castle, where afterward they made their continuall abiding.

During this time my good Father louing me dearely, so as he matched mée with a wealthy and Noble Knight, excelling in all perfections, but chiefly in Chiualrie, by whome I had a Daughter a yéere after our Espousal: but the more my griefe, my good Husband and Father both dyed, within short space after my Childes byrth. Now my Daughter beeing come to the yéeres of Marryage, her Beautie made her desired of many noble Lords: but because I still reputed her too young, I denyed all her Suters, which afterward turned to my very great detriment. For my Sisters Aunte had a Sonne, the most mis-shapen, deformed, and worste conditioned Knight, as all the Countrey could not shew such another, yet became hee so amorous of my faire Daughter, as hee requested his Mother to demaund her of mée for his Wife: but when I hearde thereof, you may well perswade your selfe that neuer Woman disliked any thing more, and yet to this time do as much as I then did: So that I made her answere, how that I would rather desire my Daughters death, then so to dishonour her, because hee was altogether vnworthy of such speciall fortune. Notwithstanding this sharpe repulse, hee continued his Amorous desires to my Daughter, so that hee earnestly perswaded his Mother to permitte him to take her away from mée perforce: to which suite the vndiscreet Mother con-

consented, either moued with pittie, or ouercome by the importunate soliciting of her, so that one day (vnder colour of a friend meeting me to be merry) he robbed me of my daughter. This wicked traitor had long before that time intended this treachery, compacting the matter secretly with villaines and theeues, by whose assistance he carryed away my Daughter, shutting her vp in a strong Tower, whereof I told you. And because he feared that I would gather some strength to reskew her, considering how well I was beloued of my neighbours, he preuented me by a strange enchantment, enuironing the Castle and the Tower with such a marualeous water, as no knight should enter vpon them without their consent.

Now that themselues might come forth and return again at their pleasure, they deuised a litle Boate, which is guarded by two fierce Lyons, and a puissant knight that had charge of them, so that none comes to them but whome they list. Since this vnhappie time did I neuer see my Daughter, whom this damnable villaine (which most of all greeues mee) immediatly violated and rauished at his pleasure, swearing nowe neuer to take her as his Wife, but to vse her as his Concubine: and besides all this, the false Traytour in despight of mee, and to reuenge the wordes I gaue him, doth monstrously abuse her, and most (vnmanly,) whippeth her daily with Roddes, which my Sister hath often intreated to be spared, but he by no meanes will be perswaded. Thus seeing my selfe out of all hope to recouer her againe, haue euer since continued in earnest Inuocation to Heauen, that some notable vengeance might punish this Villain: and such fauour haue I found in my deuout Imprecations, as first of all, his owne Mother was chastized with a cruell disease called Saint Anthonyes Fyre in one of her Legges, which so grieuously tormenteth her, as no remedie can be found to asswage the veration. Her Sonne vnderstanding hereof, would haue slaine my Sister, accusing her to procure his mothers infirmitie by her Learned knowledge: Whereupon my

my Syster leaving her life, and watching time conuinient for her purpose, made an escape from the Villain hither to me, being sorry that her Aunt should thus Iniuriously deale with me, and promised to worke the meane that I should recouer my Daughter. These good words not a little pleasing mee, I would neuos know how I should come by my Daughter again, whom vnto times past had beene so yeelding to mee, whereto she thus answered.

If it is so good Syster, that I cannot now remedie the forcible Enchauntments I haue already made for your Daughter, (though gladly I would) if it laye in my power, wherefore you must attende the comming of a Knight, who excelleth all other in Valour, Vertue, and Prowesse: for he shall passe the Water, kill the Knight, enter the Tower, and deliuer my Niece your Daughter againe vnto your full ioye. As concerning the Knight: good Syster, that shall so valiantly passe the Water without feare, and fully accomplish my former Enchauntments: For him will I leaue with you an excellent good Sword, a very sumptuous Armour, with diuers other gifts to bestowe on him, because my selfe shall not liue to see him, which cannot be, for very shortly after my Syster died. Now knowe you Sir Knight, what is required of you, therefore take some pitie on mee, and for my deliuerie out of other, and bolden Aduentures your selfe in this Honourable taske, as bounden hereunto by Vertue and necessitie of relation.

Deare Aunt (saide Palmerin) your discourse hath bene strange, and good reason moueth you to request deniall: but I assure, because your wrongs are the greater that I enter heauen ofte, which may in some sorte pertaine to you, that the Offender cannot long escape, without shame and veniable to his endles Infamy, for heauen will not suffer it, by all meanes wherefore I hope to reuenge your Daughters rape. And truste me deare Ladie, I am sorry I came not in your Syssters life time, because shee could haue resolued mee in a doubtfull matter: Yet neuertheless, I will doe so much for you, as if

the

thee were liuing. But I much marueil what is become of the knight that slewe my Horse, and the Damosell that conducted mee hither. As for the Damosell (quoth the Ladie) shee shall come anone to attend vppon you: but the knight was onely a matter of Enchauntment, deuised by my Sister, to discouer the man that shoulde finish this Aduenture. And the Damosell whereof you speake hath brought hither many knightes to this Lake, but when they: Horses were slaine, none of them durst bee so hardie as once to enter the Water, but onely you, being predestinated to this Aduenture. In this and such like talke they spent the day till Supper time, and afterwardes was Palmerin conducted to his Chamber, and being layde in Bedde hee could take no rest: Firste, for griefe that hee had not slayne Frysoll, and then againe, by the strange tale the Ladie tolde him: Wherefore rising the sooner in the Morning, hee went with the Lady to heare diuine Seruice in her Chappell, where hee desired of God that he might preuaile against these Conjurations, and vanquish the knight that hadde so much abased his Order.

Returning from the Chappell, the Ladie among other talke thus saide: I see Sir knight that your Armour is broken and much defaced, that one may judge you haue not kept it vole in your Armorie, wherefore I thinke you met not with your Friend, when you were enforced to so dangerous tryall: But as I vnderstand by the Damosell that was your guyde hither, you returned him sound payment for his paines. To supply your want, I will bestowe an Armour on you, which my Sister long since prouided for you, and with carefull regard kept close in her Chest: therefore let mee intreate you not to refuse it, in respect it was not prouided but for speciall purpose: beeing needefull for the present occasion you must now Entreprise. Palmerin would not refuse her courteous offer, wherefore opening the Chest, there lay the Armour, couered with white Taffata, whereon was written in Letters of Gold this Inscription: These Armes were made for the good Kni: Palmerin d'Oliua, sonne to the most royal King

that

that at this Day liueth in all Greece. That worthye present greatly delighthd Palmerin, because heerein his desire was somewhat satisfyed, which was to knowe the estate of his Father: Wherefore in midst of this pleasing humour hee saide, to his Ladie, I perceyue fayre Madame, that your Syster knewe more of my Destinie then any other: For seeing shee could so truely describe my name, I needemake no great doubt of her further Iudgement. So taking away the silke, beheelde there a more sumptuous Armour, then that which halting Vulcan made for Achilles, at the earnest intreatie of Beautifull Thetis, beeing most curiously chased ouer with Flowers of Golde, and the Shielde of Steele, all engrauen with rare Deuises, such as well might beseeme the greatest Prince in the World. Palmerin presently put off his owne Armour, and inuested himselfe with the Ladyes gift, which so well agreed with him in euery poynt, as the like could hardly bo framed for his bodie.

When hee was thus Armed, he desired the Ladie to shew him the way, that might conduct him to the place where hee should discharge his promise, for that hee would delay no further time in a matter of such weight. The Lady commanded three of her Squyres to conduct him, who ledde him along a narrow Path-may, which brought him to the Enchaunted Water, so deepe and daungerous, and there they shewed him the Boate to passe ouer in, which was fastened with a great Chayne to a Tree, whereupon Palmerin sought the meanes to vndo it: But so soone as he layde hand on the chayne, to plucke it towardes him, there rushed presently forth of the Enchaunted Water two mightie Lyons, who violently assalted Palmerin in such forcible māner, as they got him down on the ground vnder them, yet he recouered himselfe quickly, and valiantly encountred those hydeous Monsters, who had such a Diuellish Charme on them, as that no Sword could any way hurte or wound them. Palmerin perceyuing that all his valour was in vayne, called to Heauen for help, in this great necessitie, and commending his abilitie to the Highest pro-

Protection, and his heart to the gracious regarde of his Mystresse: Hée gaue one of the Lyons such a cruell stroke betwéene the Eyes, as hee tumbled headlong into the Water, and was afterwardes séene no more, and sone after him hee sent his other fellow for companie: But hadde not his Armour bene of extraordinarie Vertue, doubtlesse this should haue bene his last Aduenture.

Not a little ioyfull of this happy Victorie, hee entred the Boate, and with one of the Dares he beganne to Rowe, but nowe was he surprized with a wonderfull daunger, for the Water arose in huge Billowes, beating and tolling the Boate so fearfully, as he had very much adoo to saue and kéep the bottome from turning vpside downe. In this perplexitie, which hee could not deuise how to mittigate, a matter of greater misfortune yet befell him, for suddenly a marueilous great, huge, and ougliе Monster started out of the Water, which laboured by al the meanes he could to ouerwhelme the Boate. So that now was hee constrayned to forgoe his Dare, and drawe his weapon to resist this Monster, which terrified him so cruelly on the one side, and the Waters so dangerously on the other, as he was not in the like hazarde, when he fought with the Serpent on the Mountaine Artifæria.

To comfort him in this contagious extreamitie, hee implored his Diuine assistaunce, whose onely prouidence must nowe defende him, else had the raging and distempered Water, or the rauenous Monster that gaped for his life, deuoured him. But he that in greatest perrilles, was euer of vndaunted spirite, made such harde shifte to rowe with his Sworde, as in despight of the Monster, and the hurling waues of the Water, hee landed on the other side: when immediatly all the commuration ceassed, so that neyther Water, Monster, Boate, or any thing else might then bée discerned. I leaue you to imagine, whether *Palmerin* were gladde or no, that he had so happilie escaped this danger: for ioye whereat he fell vpon his knées, and with hea-

ued

ued hands and eyes to Heauen, gaue thankes vnto the Highest, for his deliuerance. His prayer being ended, he went to the Castle, where he heard a most grieuous and dolefull complainte of a Lady, saying:

Vnhappy be the houre of my Natiuitie; Alas, is it possible that in all the whole World, any Ladie may compare with my miseries? Palmerin attentiuely marking these speeches, knewe well it was the Imprisoned Ladie: wherefore mowed with compassion, hee called with aloude for one to come open the Gate, and so long hee called, that at last the Knight hearde him, who loking forth at a windowe of the Forteresse, saide: In an euill houre (Knight) commest thou hither, and I muche maruell what foolish presumption hath guyded thee to this place, seeing thou canst no way escape my hands: but in my courtesie it remaines, eyther to spare thée, or yeelde thée to a most cruell Death, although my Enchauntment hath hitherto suffered thy Passage: Thou art marueilous hardy (quoth Palmerin) there at the Windowe, but if thy courage bee such, as to deale with mee hand to hand, I shall make thée vnderstande, that thy lofty wordes cannot shelde thée from my Swoorde: For I will pull downe that stomacke, and reward thy inexorable Tyrannie, to that good Ladie I hearde complaine, whome like a Villaine thou takest from her Mother. Come downe I pray thée (if thou be not afraide) and thou shalt see what entertainment I giue to such as thou art.

Are you Syr (quoth the Knight) such a corrector and reformer of Vices? Darest thou but tarry til I come downe, I shall teache thée the way to be better aduised. So Arming himselfe presently, hee mounted on Horsebacke, and came forth at the Castle Gate: Whereupon Palmerin thus spake to him. There is ouer great oddes, Syr Knight, you to be on Horsebacke, and I on foote, you shall shewe small knighthode in offering me such wrong: I pray thée (of courtesie to alight) otherwise I shall bestowe such a currying on your Palfraye, as your Seruaunt afterwardes shall take but small paynes with

with him. The Knight of the Castell made as though hee heard him not, and ranne fiercely with his Launce against Palmerin, who escaped his Enemie, with his Sworde gaue his Horse such a stroke on the legge, as hee past by him, that the Bone being cut in twaine, hee fell to the ground, hauing one of the Knightes legges so fast vnder him, as hee was not able to recouer himselfe. Palmerin willing to helpe him vp againe, gaue him halfe a douzaine such raps about the Pate, as he lay quiet enough, without any mouing: Whereupon he vnclasped his Helmet, when the Knight hauing some aire, began to grapple with him, and drawing his Pocket-dagger, gaue Palmerin a shrewd Wound therewith in the right Thigh, in recompence whereof, at one stroke hee toke his head from off his shoulders. The Squyres and Seruants that belonged to the Castell, who came forth to see the issue of the Fight, ranne apace backe to the Castle againe, to shut the Gates for their owne safety: But Palmerin (albeit hee was hurt, preuented them, laying about him so roughly on euery side, as hee swore, that if they would not bring him to the Imprisoned Lady, they should all presently dye the death. Many of them with feare, tumbled headlong into the Ditch, others on their knees asked for mercie, promising to doo what euer he commaunded them: whereupon hee said to him that had the Keyes. Arise quickly Villaine, and conduct me to the Prison, or I shall paye thee for thy lazinesse. The poore fellow almost frighted out of his wittes, brought him directly to the Tower where the Ladie was, whome they found naked from the middle vpwards, and so grieuously beaten, as all her Bodie was goreblood, which the Knight had done that morning, for a Dreame he had the Night before, howe her Mother would sende a Knight thao should take her thence perforce, and murther him, in which opinion he came to the Ladie, saying. I perceyue that thy Mother and Friends labour to get thee from mee, and practise my destruction by all the best meanes they may: but now for their sakes thou shalt derely abye their dealing. And with these wordes the Villaine

to

so cruelly whipped her, as she was ready to giue vppe the ghoste, and so left her in hope she would haue dyed. Palmerin finding the Ladie in this lamentable plight, sayde. Arise good Ladie and leaue your sorrowfull acclamations, for the villaine that thus misused you, hath had such absolution for his deserts, as he hath left his heade in signe of his penaunce: and if you will depart with me towardes your Mother, I will shew you the Traytour where hee lies now quiet enough. Ah my Lord, (quoth the Ladye) is the Trayterous Scloto deade, that so monstrously wronged me? He is Ladie, sayde Palmerin, you neede feare him no more. Then Heauen be praysed (quoth she) for this happy daye, and among all Knightes be you the most renowned, for euer, with which wordes shee arose, and wrapping a furred Mantle about her, without any other garments on her body, shee went with Palmerin, and passing by the place where Scloto laye slaine, lifting her eyes, and hands to Heauen, she sayde. O my God, how is thy name to be praysed, so iustly punishing the treacheris and disloyaltye of this villayne: Ah Traytor, how worthily hast thou receyued this death, which is not rygorous, as thy mercilesse tyranny hath bene to me.

Heere you must note, that so soone as the Knight was deade, all the enchauntments about the Castle were presently finished, the great Lake beeing consumed after Palmerins passage, so that the Ladies Mother aduertised thereof, came to meete Palmerin: embracing her daughter with such exceeding ioye, as they could not speake to each other theyr teares so hindered them, at length the Mother kneeled before Palmerin with these wordes. Ah worthy Knight, how happye haue you this day made mee? all my former greefes (by your meanes) beeing now conuerted into singular contentation. As she would haue proceeded in her gratulations, she perceiued the bloude to trickle downe Palmerins Armour: which shee sorrowing to beholde, sayde. Me thinkes Syr Knight you are hurt

sore wounded, I beseech you grant me so much honour, as to repose your selfe a while within my Castle, where I doubt not to vse such diligent care, as you shall be whole and sound in very short time. Palmerin not minding to refuse her offer, returned with the Lady, and being vnarmed, was brought to his Chamber, where the Lady dressed his wounds, and he was so well entertained as heart could deuise. Then went the Ladies Squires and Seruants to Selotes Castle, from whence bringing all things that were of any value, they burned the Traitors body, and putting his head on the poynt of a Lance, they placed it on the top of the Tower for a perpetuall memory. The next day came people from all parts of the Island, to see the Knight that ended the enchauntments, and among other, the Damosell that conducted him thither was one, who on her knee thus spake to him. Now am I satisfied Sir Knight, and you discharged of the promise you made me, which was onely for the deliuerance of this Lady, whom you haue valiantly conquered from the tyrant that tormented her. I beseech him, who euermore hath regard of the poore afflicted, that his pleasure may be to send you like, or a better aduenture, whereby you may accomplish all your hautie enterprises. So will he I doubt not, said Palmerin, and that was one from which you did waded me: but I shall neuer be merry till I find him againe, though then at your intreaty he escaped my hands so well. And Fortune speede the matter so happily, quoth the Damosell, as Peace and Friendship may be united betweene you: for if either of you miscarry, it were great pitte, considering the great valour wherewith you are both nobly furnished. Let come what will sayd Palmerin, neuer shal other agreement be betweene vs. With these words the Damosell held her peace, for she perceiued by his answere, that he was not halfe pleased with the other Knight.

CHAP.

CHAP. LVI.

How Palmerin trauailing through a great Forrest, espyed a Dwarfe enter into a Caue, whom hee followed, and found there a knight, with whom he had much conference.

SO long continued Palmerin in the castle with the Ladie, till his woundes being healed, and he able to beare Armour, hee sayd to the Lady, Madame, by the helpe of God and your diligent endeauour, I find my selfe in good constitution of body wherefore with your fauourable licence, I meane to morrow to depart hence, because occasions of great importance so commandeth me: yet this assurance will I leaue with you, that in any place where I shall come hereafter, your wonderfull courtesie hath gained such power ouer mee, as at all times I remaine to doe you any pleasure.

The Lady right glad of Palmerins noble offer, and her Daughter thankefull for her benefit receiued, returned him many thankefull gratulations: but seeing they could no longer detaine him, for his speeches were such as he would needs be gone, thus said:

Gentle knight, seeing it likes you no longer to soiourne here, but that you think it expedient to depart, I would gladly present you with a simple gift, not as recompence of your painefull trauailes, but onely that hereafter you might remember from whence it came.

Then toke shee out of a Coffer two rich and precious Ringes, and presenting him one of them, she sayde. You shall giue this Ring to her whome aboue all other you most esteeme, the Ring containing this speciall vertue, that the longer shee weares it, the more shee shall loue you, and day by day shall her loue so vehemently encrease, as all aduersities and troubles shee shall beare with patience, that by meanes of your loue maie any way endaunger her.

This other Ring is of a contrary vertue, which you must giue to the Ladie your deere Freende beloued, and to him may you safelie say, that any occasion whatsoeuer, cannot plucke it from this Ladies finger: for this is the nature thereof, that the Ladie which weares it, shall not bee disparaged, and neither intreaties, giftes, or whatsoeuer besides, cannot compell her, to doe any thing contrary to her liking. If it come so to passe that shee were beloued by any other, then him shee now affecteth, shee shall beeable by vertue of this Ring, to quench all such libidinous desire in her sollicitour, and cause him neuer afterwarde to moue her with any dishonest request. As for these stones of so rare and excellent qualitie, you must note that they were precisely chosen for you by my Sister, and placed as you see them, by her superficiall knowledge in the Magicall Sciences, that in time to come they shall doe such seruice, as no Jewels (of what value soeuer they were) might bee able to doe the like.

Besides these, shee gaue him diuers other Jewells to carry to his Lady, for which hee humbly thanked her, and taking his leaue of her and her Daughter, who shedde many teares for his departure, hee mounted vpon Horsebacke, and trauailing thorrow a great Forrest, hee espyed a Dwarfe, whom hee iudging for to bee his Seruant Vrbanillo, because he waas of his stature, and very much resembled him, he called aloude, Heare a thou tall fellow,

how

how camest thou in this place, so vnfrequented and vnhabited: The Dwarfe being in a great feare, ranne so fast as he could into a great Caue betweene two Bushes, which made Palmerin alight and follow him, and very farre went he into the Caue not seeing any body, till at length he came into a little Roome, as it had bene cut out of a Quarrie, which had light into it by a little chinke cut thorow a Rocke: and here hee found a young Knight layde vppon a bedde, at whose feete lay the Dwarfe, all quaking and trembling with his late feare, whom Palmerin now saw that hee was not Vrbanillo, wherefore hee saluted the Knight, saying:

I must intreate you Sir Knight to pardon me, because I entered so boldly, neither knocking first, or calling for any of your Seruants: Albeit I desired to speake with this little man, but nothing could induce him to tarry my comming, for he fled from me as I had bene a Diuell. Whereupon perswading my selfe, to finde some other body here more courteous, I followed him at the harde heeles, with no other intent, but onely to know how I might possible get forth of this desolate Forrest, wherein by misaduenture I haue lost my way, for I would not willingly stray too farre, least I should bee forced to remaine here as an holy Hermite, considering my profession is cleane contrary. To preuent such chance, I thinke it was Gods will I should follow your Seruant, let mee therefore intreate you, to know what you are, and wherefore you liue here so solitary, shunning as it seemeth the company of men: protesting to you, that if I may in ought assist you, whereby to draw you from this obscure life, I will with all my heart accomplish it, though it were matter that should concerne my life.

The Knight raysing vppe himselfe, and sighing so bitterly as life and soule would haue parted in sunder, answered. Alas noble Knight, seeke not to vnderstand

the depth of my sorrow, in respect the remedy is all together impossible: yet in that your demaund proceedeth from such a gentle Spirite, as pitties the miseries of despised creatures, I will acquaint you with some part of mine estate.

Know then gentle Knight, that I am the most forlorne Woman, whose vnfortunate life exceedeth all mens whatsoeuer, for this world affordeth me nothing but mishappe, disgrace, contempt, and all tormenting griefes, as for delight and pleasure, they are lothsome to me, my Moneths, Weeks, Daies, Houres and Minutes, being continually accompanyed with all extreame passions. My greatest ease consisteth in dolorous Lamentations, remembrance of passed infortunes, sad Regrets, and insupportable Melancholy. In briefe, I am onely he, whose companions are, a troubled spirit, thoughts confounded with frustrate hope, hauing vtterly lost the light of those gladsome Sunnes, whereof the one shined in my face, the other in my heart, that now nothing is left for me but a life despised, yet welcome to me that am so disdained.

These words were vttered with so many sighes, such floods of teares, and halling his flesh with such impatience, as would haue relented euen a heart of Adamant, which moued Palmerin by gentle perswasions, to request of him the cause of his disquiet: and so long hee continued his importunate intreaties, that the Knight at length thus answered. Gentle Syr, so well contenteth me the sorrowes which I suffer, that in hope of any remedie, I would not bewray them: but seeing Fortune hath thus conducted you hither, in respect of your gracious and affable nature, as also that you shall not repute me vndiscreete and misgouerned, I will satisfie you in the cause of my sadnesse.

True it is, Syr Knight, that I haue hitherto, and euer shall, Loue a Ladie, Daughter to a Knight my neighbour,

bour, she being (in my iudgement) one of the fairest Ladies in the whole world. And now perceiuing by her behauiour that she loued me as well, or rather more, which indeed she did not: for her I accomplished all things that a Knight could for his Ladie, aduenturing mine honour, and my life in all daungers for her sake, yea, nothing might be refused for the diuine Mistresse of my thoughts. Perceiuing my selfe to be so equally loued, and my passions to growe beyond my abilitie, finding occasion to acquaint her with the secrets of my heart, I desired her to pittie my oppressions, which if shee refused to doe, shee would loose her louer, and his life withall. For I was so solemnely vowed to her seruice, as shee could not commaund any thing so hard and dangerous, but by her fauourable regarde would bee most easie to mee. Whyle wordes could draw no pittie from her, but displeased and in great anger shee answered. That I might not be reckoned among those Knights, who deserued the loue of a Ladie of her calling, and thencefoorth I should not be so hardie, as to speake to her, or come in her presence. Goe quoth she, and follow her loue that gaue thee thy Faulcon, wherein thou takest such pleasure, and neuer maist thou turn againe to me.

With these wordes shee flong from me to a Windowe, where I was wont alwaies to stande and talke with her, beguiling the time in no lesse contentation, then those happy soules in the Elysian Fieldes, such was the rare beautie, good grace, and singular courtesie of my (sometime) beloued Lady Valerica. I cannot denie, but that a Ladie bestowed the Faulcon on me, but in any such respect as my Ladie imagined, God knowes is most vntrue, nor could death compell me so much to abuse my chosen Mistresse.

Seeing my Ladie then so rigorous, and her answere so seuere, yet assured of mine owne innocencie and loyaltie: I was surprized with such surpassing heauinesse, as

euery houre expected when my feeble spirit would forsake his long despised habitation. My Lady being thus resolute in her owne opinion, and disdaining all meanes I shewed to perswade her, despairing likewise of any after hope: I determined with my selfe, to abandon all company, as vnworthy of their societie, and then betooke my selfe to this brutish kinde of life, where I might without any impeach, breath forth my continuall complaints.

In this resolution I came to this place, without the knowledge of my Lorde or any other, this Dwarfe onely excepted, who euermore hath bene my most trustie Seruant, and fetcheth my necessaries at a village neere adioyning, and by his honest perswasions, hath many times withheld me from committing violence on my selfe. Thus haue you heard in breefe the cause of my sorrow, the depth whereof cannot be considered or valued, but by such as haue in like manner tried and suffered, the disdaine and ingratitude of vnconstant Ladies.

Palmerin hauing heard the fortunes of the Knight, repeated to him the graces and fauours of his Lady Polynarda, what honour shee did him in her Fathers Court, and how hee was in daunger to receiue the like rewarde, as the Knight did of his Valerica: and fearing indeede that his misshappe would sorte to that issue, hee fell downe at the feete of this poore refused Louer. The Knight perceiuing, that the repetition of his misfortune was cause of this alteration, breathing forth a vehement sigh, hee said:

Alas wretched Caitiffe that I am, hath my destenie made mee so vnhappie, that enduring an extreamitie worse then death, I cannot die, and yet hee that did but heare my misery hath lost his life: I will not liue any longer to preiudice any other man, but will now make way to the ende of mine owne troubles. So then he drew forth Palmerins Sworde, and offered for to thrust it into his

his body: but Palmerin retayned to his former estate, started suddainely vppe, and catching him fast in his Armes, sayde.

How now my Friende? Will you be so inconsiderate, that for such a little temporall paine which your body endureth, for to condemne your soule to everlasting perdition? And though your Passions touch you so severely, as that you will not affoorde any pittie to your selfe: let me now intreate you to forbeare this bad humour. For not without great reason haue I sustained this sudden motion, remembring the vnspeakable comfort I receiued by one, who by false suggestions, or slaunderous reports (which woundeth more deepe then the Fatall weapon) may in like sorte be chaunged into such conceyte, as her Judgement may excéde a Hell of torments.

Yet can I not denye (your Ladie hauing with such open shame refused you) but you haue great occasion to grieue thereat, yet not to stretch the extreamity so farre as to dispaire, or worke iniurie to your calling to memory howe light the opinion of a Woman is, how suddenly she will alter, and how prompt shée is to Jealousie, especially when shee loueth effectually. And if heretofore shee loued you fervently, it is impossible but she should féele some part of your anguish, and more violently (I thinke then your selfe can. Trust then in him that hath all hearts at commaund, repose your selfe constantly on his good Providence, for he will not leaue you frustrate of your honourable intent, standing with Justice, and perfect integritie.

As Palmerin continued these comfortable perswasions the Dwarfe couered the Table, and then sette before them such a small proportion of Pittance, as he had prouided, and when they had well refreshed themselues, Palmerin toke his leaue of the Knight, promising him (if hee coulde by any good meanes) to giue some ease to his oppressions. Varnan returned him many thankes, commaunding his Dwarfe to conduct him into the High-waye, beeing not a little sorrowfull

rowe full to leaue his companie, who then had so well aduised and comforted him. Palmerin beeing come into his ready way, sent backe the Dwarfe, and rode on till he was got out of the Forrest, intending to finde out the Castle where Valerica remained, because hee would somewhat solicite the cause of the poore solitary Varnan. So ryding along in this determination, he espyed a Knight and two Squyres before him, the Knight thus speaking to one of his Squyres. I knowe not whether it bee time as yet to enter the Garden: or if Madame Valerica be as yet come thither? Goe see if that shee be there, and make thy return quickly to me againe. Palmerin hearing the name of Valerica, knewe well that it was she for whome the solitary Knight liued in such penitiuenesse: Wherefore being moued with with pitty of his miseryes, he sayde to himselfe: See here the false treacheryes of a trothlesse Woman, so vnhonourably to forsake the man that loueth her so dearely, and now to preferre the villany of this intercepting Traytour? But I shall teache him ere I goe, what a penalty belongs to the preuenting of a loyall knight, and comming to the Knight, hee sayde thus. Art thou a man Villaine? that would forestall the Loue of the best Knights in England? Now by my Swoorde, thou shalt dearely pay for thy disloyaltie. With these woordes, hee lent him such a sound stroake on the head, as hee cleft it therewith to the very teeth.

The two Squyres seeing their Maister slaine, beganne to haste away: but Palmrin caught him that was sent to the Garden, to whome he sayde. Come on Syrrha, if thou louest thy life, bring me where the Lady is: If thou dorest not, thou shalt neuer followe thy trade any longer. The Squyre by no meanes durst doo otherwise: So he brought him to the Wicket, where Valerica was wont to receiue in her Louer, and knocking with his finger, as his Maister was accustomed: Valerica opening the doore, and thinking it had bene her Friende, cast her armes about Palmerins Necke, who brought her in his armes forth of the Garden, commaun-

ding

ding the Squyre presently to followe him. Valerica much abashed hereat, sayde. How now I weene Friende: whether will you carry mee? knowe you not, if my Father heande hereof, that neyther of vs durst approache before him?

Tush Madame (saide Palmerin, these are but woords, there is no remedie, but you must goe with mee. So that neyther with teares nor Requests would hee bee intreated, but presently mounted on Horse-backe, causing the Squyre to helpe the Lady vp before him, because he would be sure shee should not make an escape from him, and ryding away towards the Forrest, because the darke Night drewe on, hee left the roade way, seeking some fitte place where they might conueniently repose themselues for that Night. At length he found out a little Thicket, where they alighted, and hee turning forth his Horse to Pasture, take off his Helmet, and came to the Ladie, desiring her to be contented with such harde Lodging for that Night: But when she beheld that it was not her friend, wringing her hands shee thus exclaymed, Alasse, vnhappy wretch that I am: How treacherously am I thus deceiued: What mishappe may be comparable to mine, hauing lost my deere Friende, and abyding at his pleasure that hath cruelly murthered him? Ah harde Fortune, why art thou so inconstant, to exchaunge my former pleasures into this grieuous Stratageme.

Palmerin hearing her so impatient, sayde: You must thinke Lady, that what hath happened, is by Diuine permission, who hath thus appoynted this contrarietie, to punish your lasciuenesse, and your exceeding disloyaltie towardes him, who loues you deerer then his owne soule: and for your loue leades a most austere life, in the very desolate and vncomfortable place of this World. And seeing he hath thus long endured such hardnesse for your sake, it is good reason that you should in some sorte participate with his miserie. Feare not therefore, for I haue spoken nothing of him, but what I haue seene: and that by great chaunce haue I thus brought you away from your Fathers house, meaning by Gods good fauour

(this

(this humor forgotten) to cause you match with him, whose true loue aboue all other hath deserued you. Ah misery incomparable, said the Lady, I see now it is in vaine to shunne what the destenies haue appointed, how falls my fortune from ill to worse: Must I now goe with that coward Varnan, whom hitherto I haue continually despised: I had rather die a most shamefull death.

I know not Lady what you thinke, said Palmerin, but in my opinion, Varnan is much better then you esteem him, and a better knight then he, that could defend his Pate with no wiser policie: wherby may you call him coward, and loue the other that liues to do you seruice. So long they stood on these tearmes, vntill a knight passed by them, to whom Valerica cried. Helpe gentle knight, for God sake pittie mee, and deliuer mee from this traytor, who falsely hath beguiled me, and violently brought me hither against my will. What art thou said the knight, that thus dishonest this Lady: I shall teach thee better knowledge of thine order before wee part. Palmerin quickly bridling of his Horse, & claspīg on his helmet, said to the knight. What art thou that wouldest take her from me, whom I conquered euen now by my Sworde: follow thy way, or I shall shew thee what discipline I vse to fooles, that will meddle with matters aboue their capacitie. Wouldst thou so obstinately stand in thy trechery: saide the the knight: Marke what will be the end of thy presumption.

CHAP.

CHAP. LVII.

¶ How Palmerin haung thus brought away Valerica, conducted her to the Caue, to her beloued Vernan, and there confirmed the agreement of theyr Loue.

BEfore we passe any further, you shall vnderstande that the Knight thus contending with Palmerin, was Hermes, one whom the King sent after the Lady with Frysoll, to make deliuerance of the Castle, as you haue heard before: he being Palmerins Friend, yet neither knowing other. For Hermes toke such regard of the Ladyes complaint, as he marked not Palmerin before he put on his Helmet. Palmerin seing that Hermes would nedes try his Fortune, encountred him with such a rough stroke, as downe he fell to the ground, Hermes thinking his head was shiuered in a hundred pieces: So Palmerin called Hermes Squyre, commaunding him to helpe vp the Ladie, or else hee would send him after his Maister. The Squyre alighted and holpe vppe the Ladie, rewarding her with an infinite number of curses, because his Maister had spedde so ill by her meanes.

Trust me Lady, (quoth Palmerin) though you thinke my labour but ill bestowed, yet such is the regarde of the solitary Varnan, as to finish that Hell of torments which hee suffers, I must nedes holde better opinion of my paines. With these and many such like speeches he beguiled the time, till they came neere to Varnans Caue, who to take the Ayre, was there walking vnder the Trees: but when hee sawe Palmerin returned, and a Lady with him, yea, perceiuing wel that it was faire Valerica, they were no sooner alighted, but he

(this humor forgotten) to cause you match with him, whose true love above all other hath deserued you. Ah misery incomparable, said the Lady, I see now it is in vaine to shunne what the destenies haue appointed, how falls my fortune from ill to worse? Must I now goe with that coward Varnan, whom hitherto I haue continually despised? I had rather die a most shamefull death.

I know not Lady what you thinke, said Palmerin, but in my opinion, Varnan is much better then you esteem him, and a better knight then he, that could defend his Mate with no wiser policie: worthily may you call him coward, and loue the other that liues to do you seruice. So long they stood on these tearmes, vntill a knight passed by them, to whom Valerica cried. Helpe gentle knight, for God sake pittie mée, and deliuer mee from this traytor, who falsely hath beguiled me, and violently brought me hither against my will. What art thou said the knight, that thus dishonorest this Lady? I shall teach thée better knowledge of thine order before wee part. Palmerin quickly bridling of his Horse, & clasping on his helmet, said to the knight. What art thou that wouldest take her from me, whom I conquered euen now by my Sword? follow thy way, or I shall shew thée what discipline I vse to fooles, that will meddle with matters aboue their capacitie. Wouldst thou so obstinately stand in thy trechery? saide the the knight: Marke what will be the end of thy presumption.

CHAP.

CHAP. LVII.

¶ How Palmerin hauing thus brought away Valerica, conducted her to the Caue, to her beloued Vernan, and there confirmed the agreement of theyr Loue.

BEfore we passe any further, you shall vnderstande that the Knight thus contending with Palmerin, was Hermes, one whom the King sent after the Lady with Fryssoll, to make deliuerance of the Castle, as you haue heard before: he being Palmerins Friend, yet neither knowing other. For Hermes toke such regard of the Ladyes complaint, as he marked not Palmerin before he put on his Helmet. Palmerin seeing that Hermes would nedes trye his Fortune, encountred him with such a rough stroke, as downe he fell to the ground, Hermes thinking his head was shiuered in a hundred pieces: So Palmerin called Hermes Squyre, commaunding him to helpe vp the Ladie, or else hee would send him after his Maister. The Squyre alighted and holpe vppe the Ladie, rewarding her with an infinite number of curses, because his Maister had speede so ill by her meanes.

Trust me Lady, (quoth Palmerin) though you thinke my labour but yll bestowed, yet such is the regarde of the solitary Varnan, as to finish that Hell of torments which hee suffers, I must nedes holde better opinion of my paines. With these and many such like speeches he beguiled the time, till they came nere to Varnans Caue, who to take the Ayre, was there walking vnder the Trees: but when hee sawe Palmerin returned, and a Lady with him, yea, perceiuing wel that it was faire Valerica, they were no sooner alighted, but he

he caught her in his armes, saying; Is it possible sweete Fortune, that after so long mishap, and when all hope was vtterly gone, thou canst affoorde me this gracious fauours? Ah happy Eyes, that haue powred forth such showers of teares, what felicity may compare with yours, contemplating now the rare beauty of your Mistresse? May it be, that after so many insupportable torments, the meane therof should returne such pleasure, comfort, and sollace? Depart then teares, pack hence lamentations, griefe, torments, and all melancholy conceits, get you elswhere, & in the most Barbarous countreys of the world make your abiding, for the commands you hence, in whom consists my special contentment. Oh fortunate knight, how may I recompence this inexplicable kindnes, surmounting all other that euer was heard of? Impossible is it for me to requite this fauour, though all my Possessions, life, bodie, and spirite, were bound to your seruice. But Heauen will supplye my want, and continue you in as great happinesse, as your noble Bountie hath brought me comfort.

Forbeare these speaches (said Palmerin) albeit I had done a thousand times as much, yet should I but accomplish what one Christian owes to another. I pray you therefore let vs goe into your Caue, least we be espyed, and so preuented, beside, I am so ouer watched, as I cannot stand on my feete, through the very want of sleepe. Valerica seeing her selfe in such an vncouth place, and in his custodie shee most detested, her angry stomache would not suffer her to speake one word: but when she hadde a while rested her selfe, on a seate of fragrant Yearbes and Flowers, which Varnan diligently prepared, Palmerin saide: Beholde Madame Valerica, see in what place, in what solitarie, austere, and sharpe kinde of life, your Varnan liues by your commandement, now seeing time and Fortune is so fauourable, let not your rigour and disdain excede they? mutabilitie. Consider a little, what griefes he hath endured in this comfortlesse place, which verily haue bin so great, as all the pleasures in the world, cannot recompence the very least of them. I beseeche you then, if heretofore you

haue

haue boꝛne him hard liking, let it now be foꝛgotten, and if vnaduisedly hee hath any way offended you, let his long toꝛments and surpassing loyaltie serue now foꝛ satisfaction, and take him to your Husbande, as the most perfect and faithfull Louer in England. You likewise Syꝛ Varnan, without remembꝛance of your passed miseries, oꝛ her too rigoꝛous refusals heretofoꝛe, take her as your Lady and wife, and in all honoꝛ vnite your self to her by present speeches: foꝛ seeing I haue bꝛought her hither, it will remaine a continuall repꝛoch to me, if you would not accept her as your Spouse and wife. Ah my Lord (qd. Varnan) with right good will shal I accomplish your command, so may it stand with my Ladies liking, foꝛ heerein consists the whole sume of my desires. Ah miserable beyond all other (saide Valerica to Palmerin) must I by a varlet be subiected to so vile an extremitie, and constrained to take him foꝛ my Husband whome I cannot affect, hee beeing the most false and cowardly Knight that euer I knewe? Must I against my Fathers will, and by my Tꝛaytoꝛs pꝛocurement, that hath so much abused me, as no vertuous Knight would so haue wꝛonged a Lady, be thus compelled to my Mattiage heauen cannot like heereof, and rather will I die, then doo the thing shall returne me such repꝛoch. Then shꝛiked she so pitifully as though she had bene quite distraught of her senses: which Varnan beholding, beganne thus to complaine. Ah gentle Knight, what griefe is it to heare her in these toꝛments, whom I loue much better then mine owne life: and foꝛ whom I rather desire to die, then not to enioy her with her owne liking. I cannot liue seeing her in these afflictions, and therefoꝛe conuey her againe to her fathers house, and no sooner shall she be departed hence, but life will foꝛsake this foꝛlorne Carkasse, then shall my death assure her how faithfully I loued. Palmerin seeing the obstinacie of Valerica, sayd. By God Lady, I thinke in all the world is not a moꝛe cruell and disloyall woman then you are, pꝛesuade your selfe, that if I take the paine to carry you againe to your fathers Castle, I shall doo your errande

there

there in such sort, as all your life time repentance will hardly excuse you. And to speake the truth, Varnan doth much more then you deserue, if you well remember your selfe, and for you are so stubborne, I shall giue you the desert (offering to draw his Sword) that such ingratefull and trecherous women worthily merit. Valerica afrayde when she saw him in such choler, and doubting hée would discouer her incontinent loue past, threw her selfe at his féete, desiring him to appease his anger, and she would obey what ere hee commaunded. For (quoth she) séeing my fortune hath brought me into his company, who for his vnfeigned loue to me, hath so long suffered wonderfull calamities: well might I be estéemed of brutish nature, if I did not acknowledge it, therefore I will be his wife, and giue him my faith heere in your presence. Palmerin well pleased with this aunswere, toke her vp by the hand, and taking Varnan by the other, espoused them there together by solemne promises, and afterward laide him downe to rest himselfe a while. Then Varnan taking Valerica in his armes, with sweete kisses and amorous speeches, expelled all former heauinesse, estéeming himselfe the happiest Knight in the whole world, hauing now at length obtayned the fauour of his Mistresse, giuing her to vnderstand, how acceptable the gift of pittie was, cõming from so rare a creature to her languishing beloued. Palmerin séeing them so well agréede, would now depart and leaue them to their fortune: but by earnest importunitie of these louers, he stayed there longer then he entended. Now was the loue betwæne these twaine, far greater then they hatred had bene, so that after they had stayed three or foure dayes in the Caue, with such entertainment as the Dwarfe could make them, they departed to one of Varnans Castles, and there obtained peace with the said Parentes of Valerica, continuing long time together in comfort of their loue, and ending their liues in loyaltie thereof.

CHAP.

CHAP. LVIII.

How Palmerin, after he departed from Varnan and Valerica, met with two Ladies in chase, one of them giuing him a Faulcon. And what happened to him against the Duke of Gaule his twelue Knights, out of whose hands he deliuered Hermes.

WHen Palmerin saw Varnan and Valerica so well contented, after many offers of their seruice, and kinde adieues deliuered on al sides, he left them in their Mault, and set forward on his iourney, lodging that night in an auncient knightes castle, where hee vnderstood, how the brethren of the slaine knight, besieged Valericas father in his Castle: Wherefore he turned an other course, and leauing the broad way that guided to London, he met two ladies accompanied with three squires, who had cast off a faulcon and a Martin to flie, the sight whereof so highly contented him, as he would needes tarry to see the end thereof, which made one of the Ladies thus speake to him. I see sir knight you haue no haste on your iournie, because you stay to behold our pastime, therefore if you will go with vs to a water hereby, you shall there see a braue flight indeede, such worthy game is there so plentifull, & my faulcon so good as she will neuer faile. Palmerin who aboue all pastimes loued Hawking, rode with ỹ Ladies to ỹ Marshes by their Castle, where they had such excellent sport at Heron, Duck & Mallard: as the day beguiling them, Palmerin was forced to stay with them that night. When they were come to the castle, Palmerin

merin manned the Ladyes Faulcon so well, as though all his life time he had practised to be a Faulconer. The Lady seeing him so braue a Gentleman, so courteous, affable, and comely in behauiour, and that hee tendered her Hawke so gently: was immediatly surprised with his Loue, so that she desired to knowe of whence he was, whom she could so gladly affoord to those for her Beloued, and hauing long earnestly beheld him, she said. Syr Knight, that I might entertaine you as your estate beseemeth, I pray you tell me your name, and whither you trauell. Lady (qd. Palmerin) I am a mere straunger, who by Fortune on the Sea was brought to this Countrey, and because the King had warre against the Emperour of Allemaigne, I remained a while here as a Souldyour, attending a prosperous winde, to transporte me home againe into my Natiue Countrey. The Lady hearing this, and iudging him one of the Famous Knightes, that came to the Court, loued him more earnestly then she did before, prouiding such surpassing delights and delicates for him, as shee wished that Night had beene a yeere in length. The Tables withdrawne, and many pleasant speeches past betweene Palmerin and the Ladyes Daughter, shee conducted him to his Chamber, wishing (if her Honour might so auouche it) that Palmerin neuer might haue any other Bedfellow. But leauing him to his good rest, she departed to her Chamber, where small store of sleepe sufficed her that night. In the morning, Palmerin called for his Horse to be gone: the Lady very sorrowfull so soone to forgoe his company, but seeing shee had no meane to holde him, she said. Seeing your departure Syr may not be denyed, I would present you with the Faulcon, which yesterday did so specially content you, which if you so please to accept for my sake, I shall not be vnmindefull of the honour you haue done me, chiefly, that you vouchsafe to staye here this night, being as welcom hither as the King himselfe.

Seeing it is your pleasure Madame (said Palmerin, to be) stowe your Faulcon on mee, I accept it as the onely thing you could giue me, and by the faith of a Knight I promise you,

that

that I will keepe it for your sake, and neuer part therewith, if by force or villany it be not taken from me. The Lady so ioyfull hereof as might be deuised, caused the Faulcon to be brought to him.

Here must you note, that this is the selfe same Lady, which sent the Faulcon to Varnan, and loued him so dearely as after she vnderstood hee had forsoke the Countrey, she gaue her selfe altogether to this recreation. Her Father perceiuing she was affected, suffered her to take her pleasure, sending her euermore the best Haukes that could be gotten. But it came so to passe, that two Faulcons so friendly giuen, and in the like sort taken, proued very vnfortunate to both the Knights, causing them to curse the houre, that euer they accepted the Ladies liberality, came neare her Castle, or saw her Haukes, as you haue already heard by solitary Varnan, and hereafter shall perceiue in Palmerins fortune, he being departed from the Lady, rode two dayes together without any aduenture, till at length he came to the Tent, where the Duke of Gaules Knights guarded the passage, which stant pleased Palmerin, because he imagined if he fought with them, he should be deceiued in his intent, and not see Trineus so soone as he would, whom he left at the Court expecting his comming, wherefore he would haue turned another way, but one of the Knights called to him. Returne coward returne, thou shalt not escape without tryall of thy manhood, for we must make proofe whether there be any in thee.

Palmerin not knowing where to set his Hauke, and very loth to lose her, was not desirous to Ioust: but seeing that with honour he could not refuse it, aunswered. It is small courtesie Sir Knight to challenge the man that hath no will to your sport: but if there be no remedie, your will be fulfilled, albeit I hope you will first repent. I see thou canst prate well, quoth the Knight, and beleeue me thou wert wise if thou couldest so escape: but seeing thou art so long before thou art roadie. Ile bring thee to such a place where haukes shall not hinder thee, and in one yeere thou shalt spare

the wearing of Bootes and spurres in such a comfortable place, as the Sunne nor day light shall offend thine eyes. I hope I haue learned, said Palmerin, to keepe my selfe from such places: but I would faine knew the gentle Chamber Page, that is so skillfull in waiting with his Pantofles, as he can teach knights errant how to weare them. The knight being angry, called forth the rest of his companions, among whome he espied Hermes prisoner, his Helmet lying by him, and his armes pinnioned: therefore to reuenge his wronge, he called his Squire, saying; I pray thée my Friend loke to my Hauke a while, for I am come to defende thy Maisters honour, and calling to the Dukes knight, saying; Come sir let vs dispatch quickly, for I haue earnest business in another place: the knight laughing at him, answered. Why how now Captaine? thinke you to passe hence so easilye? Heere are sufficient to stay your hasty iourney, eleuen more must talke with you, the worst of them able to abate your pride, for your horse lackes a stable, and wée will prouide him one. So touching their Launces, they met together with such force, as the Dukes knight was throwne from his Horse, his shoulder being broken with the weight of his fall: Palmerin arresting the knightes horse for his owne, gaue him to Hermes squire in keeping, saying; Because the knight is not willing to get on horse-backe againe, holde this for me, and I may lye at ease to see the fortune of his fellowes. Then came another knight from the tent, whom Palmerin welcomed in so friendly manner, as hee lay not able to stirre hand or foote: with this one Launce he vnhorsed foure more, and brake it so valiantly on the seauenth knight, as while he liued he meant to iouste no more. With a fresh Launce he dismounted all the rest, none of them being willing to deale with him any further: wherefore Palmerin came to Hermes, saying. What do you sir knight? Why take you not the best Horse among all the dozen? That shall I Sir, seeing you commaund me, albeit not long since you serue me as these knights are: yet God be thanked

that

that by your meanes I am delivered from imprisonment, wherein these knights intended to keepe me, because I unhorsed foure of them, and at the first encounter my horse was killed, which was the cause of my foyle and taking. The knights (quoth Palmerin) have now leysure to rest them, for they were troubled before with watching for passengers: I doubt not now but we may quietly passe the bridge, for I see none of them offer to hinder us. Hermes mounting on horse-backe, commaunded his squire to take a fresh one for him likewise, and so they rode on together reioycing at this good fortune. They had not ridden the space of a mile, but Hermes demaunded Palmerins name, which when he knew, in great reioycing bad farewell: Ah worthy knight, now is my travel ended in search of you: trust me, I would refuse the best citie in England, in respect of the great friendship I have found at your hands, as also for the comfort your presence will bring to our dread Lord, and your noble companions, who long time have repented your desired returne. As they rode on in these speeches, they came to a fayre fountaine, where Palmerin would alight to refresh himselfe, and to bind up such small wounds, as hee had taken in fighting against the knights of Gaule.

CHAP. XI.

How Fryſol was deliuered out of Palmerins handes, by the meanes of Colmelio his Squire.



VPon a time that Palmerin toulted with the knights of Gaule, the duke himſelfe was gone on hunting, by meanes whereof, hee loſt the ſight of the paſtime, which afterward he repented, becauſe he had with him the moſt part of his knights, ſo that no one was left in his Caſtle but Fryſol, that might be counted of any value, who beholding ſo many knights foyled by one, marualled not a little what hee might bee, and after long conſideration of his haughtie exploits, hee ſaide to himſelfe, I cannot thinke this knight to bee the man, againſt whom I combatted ſometime in Fraunce. yet know I no man liuing but hee, that could performe ſuch rare chiualrie. Now, becauſe Palmerin had changed his armor, he verily imagined that it was not he, yet was he deſirous to know, but doubtfull to follow him by reaſon of his former experience: againe, if hee ſhould ſuffer him to paſſe without ſome triall, he iudged it would returne to his great diſhonour, wherefore hee reſolued to aduenture his fortune. And in this determination hée came to the dukes ſiſter, who loued him intirely, as you heard before: ſhe beginning with him in this manner. I cannot ſufficiently marueil ſir Fryſol, how you haue ſuffered in your owne view, my brothers knights to be ſo ſhamefully confounded by one paſſenger: I deſire you ſweete friend, if euer you bzake launce for a Ladies loue, that for my ſake you

will

will deale with that proude knight, and make him knowe that you can abate his courage, giue his head framed of the hardest hammered walle. If you fulfill my request, you shall do an acceptable deede to my brother, and to me such seruice, as I shall hereafter requite to your owne content. Madame (quoth Frysol) I did intende to fight with him, but seeing it pleaseth you so graciously to commaunde me, no danger can withholde me, because the worlde can witnes, what great reuile so honorable a Ladyes fauour is, to the knight that liues to renowme her name. So departing from his lady he presently armed himselfe, and mounting on a lustie Courser, followed the way that Palmerin was gone: the 12. knights not a little glad therof, well hoping that he wold reuenge their dishonour. Frysol continued his trauaile so long, til at length he came to the fountaine where Palmerin refreshed himselfe, who had no sooner espied him, but surprised with great ioy, sayd to Hermes, I am sure this knight comes hither is to seeke me, wherefore I intreat you by the reuerend loue you beare to your best beloued, not any way to hinder that fight betweene vs, til the end deliuer victorie to one side or other: for he thinking to reuenge the reproch of his fellow, hath followed me to performe what they were not able. Then Palmerin sodainly clasping on his helmet, mounted on horsebacke, and taking aduantage of the plaine field, because it was most conuenient for the combat, which Frysol perceiuing, scornefully sayd, I thinke Sir knight, you are some kinde of prophet, because you deuine so well the cause of my comming: vnhappie wes it for you to preuaile in such sort against the duke of Gaules knights, which you must now pay for with too late repentance. If I did them any harme, sayd Palmerin, it was their owne seeking, and by your arrogant speeches it may be presumed, you are one of the same company: but the loue of the Dukes sister, cannot shelue you from your deserued recompence. At these words, Frysol well perceiued, that this was the knight he so much doubted: Neuertheless

leste his courage was so good, as remembring the promise he made to his Lady, gaue spurres to his Horse, and they encountred with such brane chiualry, as the shiuers of their Launces flew vp into the aire, and then they assaulted each other so roughly with their Swordes, as well they might be esteemed right valiant Champions. No mercy was intended on either side, for Frysol was determined to die or conquere, and Palmerin held the same resolution, so that the ground was coloured with their bloud, their armour and sheldes battered in peeces, and no hope left on either side of life. But as alwaies some mischance or other followes a noble mind, so fell it out with Frysol, for in their close buckling together, Palmerin had got surehold on his sheld, which Frysol striuing forcibly to recouer, the buckle brake in sunder, and with the sodaine breach thereof he fell downe backward, when Palmerin leaping from his horse, said. And let me neuer hereafter bee called Palmerin, if now I do not reuenge my selfe sufficiently. Which words when Frysols squire heard, he came hastily and fell at his feete, saying. Noble knight, I beseech you for the honour you beare to armes, to pause a while, & tel me if you be Palmerin D'Oliua, for if you be, I am your brother, who haue suffered great paine and trauaile to finde you out. Palmerin presently knew Colmelio, the sonne of Gerrard his foster father, whose sight was so ioyfull to him, as casting away his sword, he ran and embraced him about the necke, saying: My deere friend Colmelio, the most welcome man in the world to me. How happie may I account my selfe quoth Colmelio, to finde you when all hope was past: hauing trauailed so many countryes, and all in vaine: if then you loue me as you make protestation, let me intreate one fauour at your hand, that you forget your anger towards my maister Frysol, and giue ouer your fight, for long time haue I serued him as my Lord, and well hath hee deserued much better seruice then mine. Colmelio, saide Palmerin, the thing thou demandest is inestimable great, neuer-

nerthelesse such is my comfort hauing mette with thee, as I graunt thy request, and happily hath hee nowe escaped with life, considering what occasions haue past vs heretofore. So taking Colmelio by the hand, he said to Frysoll, Sir knight, at your Squires intreaty, I suffer you quietly to departe, and mete with mee againe at any time you thinke good: but you shall goe lake another Squyre, for Colmelio at this time shall goe with me. Frysoll being wounded in many places, and very faynte with losse of his bloud, might easily be induced to this agreement of peace: But rounning to Colmelio, he saide: Wilt thou forsake thy Maister, and goe with his enemie: Trust me Sir (quoth Colmelio) you must nedes pardon me, if in this matter I chance to offend you: for to forsake him I forsoke my Fathers house, and haue continued a very laboursome search. If thou will nedes goe (said Frisol) and that my intreaties may not dissuade thee, I will pray for the successe of thy desires, and thy Aduancement to honour, and while I liue I will make account of thee as my Friende and Brother. So returning as he came, he beganne in this manner, to exclaime against Fortune. Ah cruell and inconstant Lady: sufficed it not thee to dishonour mee before mine enemie, but thou must now robbe mee of my Squyre I loued so dearely: but sith thou dealt with them of highest Calling, for infinit Kings and Potentates hast thou deceiued, and (before their chiefest enemyes) dishonoured: such hath bene thy treachery to mee now at this instant, that I may iustly complaine of thee while I liue. As he continued these complaints, he mette diuers armed Knights that came to assist him, and the Duke himselfe in companie among them: who demaunded of Frisol, whither his enemy were slaine, or sent away vanquished. Vanquished (saide Frysol) thinke you so good a Knight may bee so easily vanquished. Then he discoursed his whole successe: which the Duke hearing, exclaymed on his Hunting, that hee was not in presence when Palmerin passed: wherefore hee would nedes followe him, but onely that Frisol intreated him to the contrary, because the Night ap-

approched so neere, as it was impossible for him to ouertake Palmerin. The Duke in a marueilous rage, for that his enterprise fell out no better, returned with Frysoll, and an houre within Night they came to his Castle, where he called for his best Chyrurgions, charging them to giue diligent attendance on Frysoll. When the Dukes Syster heard the misfortune of her Friende, she came hastily to him in his Chamber, and after many swéet kisses, saide: I beseche you my Lord forget my folly, for I was the cause of your mischaunce.

Madame (saide Frysoll) where no offence is committed, what néeds any remission? If my Fortune haue beneill, it is not for mee to complaine on you, for your Request tended to myne owne honour: but I must be content with my happe, though it hath sorted to so bad effect, and this doth yet comfort me, that I receyued my foyle by the onely Knight in the Worlde. And if the Heauens please to lengthen my dayes, I shalbe desirous to do him seruice, for there is no man liuing to whom I could better affoord it. Now néede I not mistrust, hauing tryed him so often) if hee be worthy the loue of diuine Polinarda, for hee (beyond all others) doth best deserue it.

Why, how now? (quoth the Lady) are you so vnwise, to honour him so much, that hath so iniuryed you? and which is most childish, to desire his seruice? Goe then and séeke him whom thou so louest, for by my mine honour, I more despise thée now then any man in the Worlde, thou making such reputation of him, whom thou oughtest to pursue with mortall hatred. Frysoll smiling thereat, said: Madam I must néeds say so, séeing no ill words can amend mischaunce: So without any answer, shee flowng forth of his Chamber. The nexte day, the Duke called all his Knights, commaunding them to restraine the passage no longer at the Bridge, intending to go to the Court, so sone as Frisoll had recouered his health.

CHAP. LX.

¶ How Palmerin, Hermes, and Colmelio, returned to London, and the good Entertaynment the King of England made them.

After that Fryſoll was returned from the Combat, Palmerin after many and lun-dry embracings of Colmelio, went with him to the Fountaine, where he left Hermes, all three together, making no ſmall ioye, Colmelio for his happie finding of Palmerin, and hee for the loue of his ſuppoſed Brother, and Hermes, for the com-fort he ſhould bring the King his Maiſter, being able now to acquainte his Highneſſe with Palmerins Name, which hee was loathe that any in the Engliſh Court ſhould know, wherefore he ſaide: Howe can you tell (my Lorde) heere-after hide your Name, though you haue beene daintie of it all this while. It is true Sir (quoth Palmerin) albeeit I little thought to bee diſcouered ſo ſone: but ſeeing it is ſo come to paſſe, my hope is in the Higheſt, who will defende mee in all mine attempts. Now tell mee Colmelio, what newes in Greece? Truly my Lorde (quoth hee) the diſcourſe will be long and tedious: therefore if you pleaſe to mount on Horſe-backe, it will ſerue well to ſhorten the thought of our Iour-ney. So as they roade towardes London, hee beganne to diſcourſe, in how many places hee had made ſearch and ſought him in Greece, and how at length hee hearde of him at Ma-cedon, by report of his conqueſt of the Serpent, at the mun-taine Artiſæria, which was the meanes that had reſtored the King of Macedon to his former health. And afterwardes, how

how hee left Greece trauelling into Allemaigne, and from thence into England, at what time the Emperours power was discomfited: and hearing great Fame of Frysoll his late Maister, hee spent some time in his seruice, not doubting but by his meanes to finde the man hee loked for. Palmerin was somewhat moued, hearing Colmelio so commend Erifol, wherefore he demaunded of him, if hee knewe any thing of that Knights lignage. No my Lord (quoth he) but I can assure yee, that hee is one of the most gentlest Knights in the world, and hee concealeth his Parentage very secretly, which makes me iudge hee is descended of roy all byrth. After Colmelio had ended his discourse, hee repeated to him some parte of his Fortunes, in the ende perswading him that hee would remunerate his paines in seeking him, and in time manifest the loue hee bare him. By this time they were come to the Citty of London, Hermes riding before to the Palace, where hee aduertised the king, howe Palmerin was returned to the Cittie, which newes so highly contented the king, as oftentimes he embraced Hermes, for bringing the man he long desired to see: but Trineus and Ptolome exceeded him in ioys, and presently both mounted on Horse-backe, to goe meete with their Friend, when so many Embracings, Courtesies, and kinde Gratulations had passed between them, as is vsuall at the meeting of long absent Louers: Ah my good Lord and Friend (quoth Trineus) how long hath hard Fortune kept you from mee? and why did you departe, not vouchsafing a Farewell? What earnest occasion might cause such an vnkinde departure? Trust mee, I perswaded my selfe in respect of the long continuance of our Amitie, that death could not procure such a seuere Enterprise. My deere Lord (quoth Palmerin) it seemeth you haue some cause to complaine of mee: but when you vnderstand how matters haue happened, you will not condemne me altogether. For at the time of my departure, I thought verily to returne the next day following: but such importunate affayres continually fell out, as that I could not returne vntill this very instant. Ptoloms saide as

much

much as Trineus did, notwithstanding, this fortunate meeting forbad all further accusations, and they became as good friendes as euer they were. So rode they to the Pallace, where the king attending their comming, perceiued at length they were entred the Hall, when Palmerin falling on his knee, kissed his highnesse hand, who very honourably embracing him, saide: Where hath my noble friend bene so long? What crooked fortune hath caused your so long absence? you departed from vs in blacke Armour, I pray you tell vs, where did you conquere these sumptuous Armes? by the loue you beare to chinalcis and to mee: satisfie me in my demaund. Palmerin seeing the king coniured him so straightly, reported the truth of all his aduentures, how he had that armour of the Ladie whose daughter hee deliuered, and left his owne there broken in peeces. The king embracing him againe, saide: I cannot be perswaded, but all especiall aduentures, high good fortunes, and cheefest honours in the world, are onely reserued for you, and among all the rest, most marualous is this of the Castle in the enchaunted Lake, which many knights haue heretofore attempted, but returned with the losse of their Horses, Armour, and with great dishonour. Welcome are you for these happie tydings, as also for your gentils courtesie to Frisoll, who is a knight of most honourable reputation. But in regarde of your wearysome trauells it is very requisite that you now should goe to rest your selfe: therefore lette some bodie helpe to disarme you, and betake your selfe (on Gods Name) to your Chamber. Palmerin reputed the kings Counsell most expedient, and therefore did accordingly as he commaunded him: So hauing reposed himselfe a while, hee came to see howe the Queene and her Daughter fared, who would not suffer him to depart thence, before he had likewise acquainted her with all his fortunes: especially the whole circumstance of all his Trauells at the Castle of the Lake. But night being come, and euery one betaking themselues to rest, Palmerin demaunded of the Queene haue he might

to his desires, and what he had concluded as concerning his loue? Ah deare friend, said Trineus, why aske you mee that question? do you not thinke that hauing so lost you, I likewise was disappointed of any meane to helpe mee? know then, that at this instant I am in the middest of all my misfortunes, for so badly hath it happened, that I am now further from Agriola then euer I was, and I shall tell you how. Not many days since, as I was familiarly deuising with my Ladie, the Duke of Gaules daughter chanced to heare such amorous speeches as passed betwéen the Princesse and me: whereby she gathered, that Agriola made som estimatiō of me whereupon she laboured to cause my Mistresse in short time mislike what I had so long trauelled to perswade her with as thus.

That ill beséemed a Princesse of her account, soso gracious discent, and daughter to such a mighty King, to conferre with strangers, or vouchsafe a listening to any thing they sayd: for they were none such as she reputed them, but after they had brought a Ladies honour into daunger, they then were satisfied, as they vsed it for a custome among their companions. And so well could she, féede the Princesse humour, with these suborning and spightfull detractions, which séemed vnto her as swéete and friendly perswasions, that in steade of the little loue I lately conquered, I finde nothing but frownes and disdaine, that she will scant afford me a looke. Which discourtesie hath well neare driuen me to dispaire, in regard of her slender opinion of mee, as being so hindered onely through your absence. Often I determinde with Ptolome, to leaue the Courte and follow you in trauaile: but the King by no meanes would permit mee, sending many of his owne Knightes, because I should not goe: yet was I resolued, that had you not come, no displeasure whatsoeuer should haue held mee héere: but to finde you I intended, or loose my life. This falleth out verie hard, quoth Palmerin, for by these meanes we shall stay here God knoweth how long: besides. Hermes knoweth my

name,

name, which makes me doubt least we shall be revealed: the Emperour likewise may be offended at our long tarriance. In regard of all this, good Prince, I thinke it best, that we send your Squire and Vrbanillo my Dwarfe, to advertise his Maiestie of our affaires, and how by reason of the tempest, we were cast quite out of course so farre, as we could not by any meanes assist his Armie, not doubting but to see his Highnesse in very short time. In the meane while, we may practise meanes to win the Princesse favour againe, and so in good time depart hence, with the honourable prize that we came for. Trineus was newly reunited with these speeches, wherefore he desired, that betimes in the morning he would dispatch their Servants towards Allemaign. Which, Palmerin failed not to do, in respect of a dreame he had the night before, for he imagined that he saw his Lady Polynarda in marvailous heavinesse, and that she said to him. Alas my Lord, what shall become of me? For I am wrongfully sought to be separated from you. This fearefull dreame so discouraged him, as he sent thence his Dwarfe, to shew her what trouble he had with his dreame, and how constant he remained in his love to her.

CHAP.

CHAP. LXI

How Palmerin promised the Princesse Agriola, to conuay her out of England, with his friendes, which hee performed to the speciall content of the prince Trineus.

EArly on the next morning, Palmerin arose, and wrote a letter to his Lady Polinarda wherein hee secretly put a ring, which shee gaue him when hee departed from her, straightly commaunding Vrbanillo that hee should diligently attende on the Princesse till hee came, which should bee with all the speede he could possible. Ptolome likewise wrote to his Ladie Brionella, and these Letters dispatched, the Messengers immediatly sette forward on their iourney. From this time Colmelio was Palmerins Squire, which pleased him very well, because hee knew that Palmerin was nobly borne, so that by his meanes in time hee should rise to preferment. This day the king would ride abroade a Hunting, which gaue Palmerin occasion to see the faulcon flie, beeing reputed by the king and all his traine, to be the best that euer flew. In this time of recreation, Hermes reported to the King, that the knight so long absent was named Palmerin, and the same knight that wonne so much honour in Fraunce, which so well contented the king, as he more and more desired his companie: summoning all his Barons and Lordes to his Court, where he made such feastes, triumphs, and other sportes, for the honour of the noble Palmerin and his com-

companyons as the like had not beene of long time before.

At night, when the Maskers, Pummeries and Mo-rifcoes were in presence, that Palmerin espyed conuenient time to talke with the Princesse, he toke her aside to a Windowe, and thus began. Madam, before I begin what I haue to acquaint you withall, I must giue you this ring, as I was commaunded by the Lady of the Castle in the Lake: the singular vertues thereof are such, as I intreat you to keepe it continually on your finger: which Agriola receiuing, with a curteous reuerence, faithfully promised to accomplish his request: then Palmerin, with earnest affection on his Friends behalfe, thus continued his discourse. I cannot but marueil, sayre Princesse, you beeing a Ladie of so speciall qualitie, renowned among the most vertuous creatures in the world, for your rare integrity and profound iudgement, that you will be gouerned by the vnaduised perswasions of other: which I would not beleiue, had not the Prince Trineus certainely assured mee, how since my departure, in stead of fauourable countenance, and the intreatance beseeming so great a Lorde, he can haue nothing but frownes, disdaine, and coye regarde, which is as easie for him to indure, as a thousand deaths one after an other. Assure your selfe so farre beguiled, as your councellers dissuade you from your chiefest good, desirous to withhold you from the height of honour, whereof you cannot fayle beeing matched in Marryage with the most vertuous and worthie Prince Trineus. Make you no small account, that hee being one of the most Noble States on the Earth, hath left his Parents, his Friendes, and Countrey, hath past so many solitary, strange, and vncouth Regions, hath aduentured the iniurie of the Seas, beaten with so many bitter blasts, and raging billowes, euery minute in daunger of Shipwracke, and all for your Loue? Thinke you that hee being Sonne to the Emperour of Allemaigne, attending euery day the rule and gouernmēt of the Empire, that he came hither to you in hope of your rich dowrie? No truli mee, Madame, and I thinke your owne Conscience doth so resolue you, that neere home

hee could haue found other, endued with larger possessions then this Realme affords you. But hearing the fame of your manifold vertues, rare life, choise beautie, and all other good gifts, hee was willing without regard of his owne estate, to thrust himselfe in daunger, yea, to forget himselfe for your loue, which hitherto hee hath with religious service intreated, and except you intertaine him with more gracious fauour, hee is in danger of life. Which if it should happen by your occasion, for euer you shall bee noted of monstrous ingratitude, and Christendome should sustaine a losse vnrecouerable. How far such a thought ought to be from you, I leaue to your owne construction. If hitherto you haue knowne mee, a knight readie to support the causes of Ladies far beneath your height, thinke you I haue not greater reason to honour you? yea not to moue you with any request, but what may euery way aduance your credite. And though my Lord Trineus were not of the blood imperiall, yet might his gentle heart, vnfeigned loue, and surpassing humanitie, cause you to make choyse of him, aboue all other whatsoeuer they be. But seeing it so falles out, that you will not regard good counsell, following rather the perswasion of meane capacities, whose iudgements may not reach to so high occasions, continue in your obstinacie, and marke the end of such indiscreet censures. I see that our company is yrkisome to you, therefore (sooner then you imagine) we will remoue that occasion. I know well enough, that you intend to match with the duke of Gaule, who is but your fathers subiect: so refusing the degree of an Empresse, you shall tarry in England, and bee a Duchesse. Thinke you, that if my Lord matched not with you, the greatest Princesse in Europe, would not triumph in his loue? Yes certainly Madam, when you may at leysure sit downe and recount your losse, which you sustained by flatterers and parasites. Thinke what will be the danger after our departure, the Emperour his father, not minding to pocket the losse of his late armie, will send such a puissant

strength

strength into England, as the King your father, nor the duke your husband that must be, will scant excuse the whole ruine of this countrey. The meane to prevent this mishap, and assure your continuall tranquilitie, is in entertaining the counsell I haue giuen you: where otherwise your selfe conceite, makes way to manifold misfortunes and dangers. Thus concluding his speeches, in great heauinesse he turned from her, whereat the Princesse inwardly greeued, for the Ring which he had giuen her was of such vertue, that after she had put it on her finger, shee was wonderfully affected toward Trineus, as she could not thinke on any other: wherefore in this sudden change, and trembling with the doubtfull conceit of her owne spirit, she called Palmerin to her, thus answering. Alas my Lord, and onely comfort in these heauy passions, what feare hath these hard and rigorous speeches brought me into? It is very true that following the counsell of yong Ladies like my selfe, haue bene perswaded to cast off the Princes loue, accounting him but a simple knight errant: but now being assured of his nobilitie, loyalty, and great gentlenesse, and that he would not request (as I hope) any thing contrary to vertue and honour, I beleeue what you haue said, and submit my selfe to your discretion, as willing to obey any thing you shall commaund me. Yet this I must request, that aboue all things mine honour may be defended, for rather would I suffer mine owne losse for euer, then this famous realme or my father should be any way endangered. Beleeue me Lady, quoth Palmerin, if thus you continue, you may well venture to gaine this generall benefit, for hencefoorth there will none be so hardy, as to molest your father with warre, hauing matched his daughter with the great Emperours sonne of Allemaigne. To confirme this promise, you shall giue me this white hand which I kisse, as the hand of the soueraigne Lady and Empresse of high Allemaigne, that you will not shrinke hereafter from this honorable determination; but for your owne regard, you must

conceale this Contract from your most trustie Friendes, and dispose in such sorte of your selfe: for I hope to compasse the meanes and opportunitie, that you shall leaue England, and goe to the noble regions of your most worthy Lord and Husband. What I haue promised (sayde Agriola,) I will performe, and with what speede you shall thinke conuenient: albeit I repose such trust in you, that hauing bene so fortunate hitherto in your Enterprises, you will be most carefull in accomplishing these daungerous intentions. Thus before they departed, the marriage of Trineus and Agriola was concluded, and because they would not as then be suspected, they kept into the Daunce, next the young Prince, shewing very amiable and pleasant gestures: which Trineus (in his often turning) diligently noted: imagining that Palmerin had not so long conferred with his Ladie, but that some assured resolution was determined, yet hee dissembled his inward ioyes so cunningly as he could. Each eye was fixed on these two braue Knights, the Ladies and Gentle-women perswading themselues, that they neuer beheld more Noble personages: deseruing like estimation for their speciall Chiualrie, as also for their Mountie and Courtly Ciuilitie.

Thus passed the Feast in all kinde of pleasures, and these two Knights withdrawing themselues into their Chamber, Palmerin discoursed to Trineus his talke with Agriola, and how he had with such cunning pursued the matter, that in the ende he had obtained what hee demaunded, reporting the sequele of the gentle conclusion he made with the Princesse.

Those ioyfull newes draue the Prince into such a quandarie, as hee could not expresse his secrete content, wherefore Palmerin awaking him out of his musing, sayde: As I am true Knight, I neuer thought that a man of your estate could be of so slender courage. What countenance would you vse in a matter of sorrow, when such dainty tydings make you so effeminate? Be of good chere Man: Agriola is your owne, and none but Trineus must be her onely Lord and Husband. I must confesse my Lorde, (sayde Trineus,) that my behauiour

nior, but little beseemes my calling: but that cause thereof is, that I know no defect in my selfe that may be esteemed worthy the least favor of my Lady. Beside, these entwes brought me such speciall contentment, as I am no longer mine owne, but in her onely I live, and thee holdes the ballance of my danger or felicity, in that I was borne to be her servant. But now I desire you my Lord, seeing the occasion offereth it selfe, we hinder it not by any negligence: for if now we lose the favour of the time, we never (I feare) shall recover the like, therefore let us so soone as we can, provide all things ready for our departure. Refer that to me, quoth Palmerin, be you as ready as I shall make provision. The next day hee went to the maister of a ship, to know when time would serve for their secret departure, who answered him, that the time was then very convenient, the winde serving prosperously, and the Sea calme and navigable, and hee would furnish him with all necessaries for his passage. Quoth Palmerin, see that your men and all things be in readines, that we may launch away upon halfe an houres warning. So departed the maister about his busines, and Palmerin to the prince Trineus, whom he informed with these glad tydings, now nothing remaining but to know the princesse pleasure, she being likewise as ready to depart as the most forward. But (quoth Palmerin) how shall we safely get you forth of the Court? I will, sayd the Princesse, this night feigne my selfe sicke, and for my greater quiet, cause my Ladyes to absent my Chamber, and so secretly will I escape disguised to the backe gate of the Pallace, which is not far from my lodging, whereto I may passe unseene of any, and from thence goe with you safely to the Hauen. This practise was faithfully concluded betweene them, and Agriola withdrew her selfe closely to her chamber, where at night she began her counterfeit sicknesse, commanding her Ladyes to leave her alone, because she would see if shee could sleepe a little. Her Ladyes little thinking of her secret deceit, went to their

owne lodgings very pensiue and sorowfull, which Agriola, perceiuing, couered her selfe with her night mantle, and came to the place where the knights staid her comming. Palmerin taking her vnder his arme, conuaied her in that maner to the princes chamber, where they altogether laide downe the order for their embarking. Trineus extolling his happy fortune, seing his Lady so ready to accomplish his desire. They arming themselues, and taking with them the princelle costly iewels, wherof she had plentifully stored her selfe, they came to the hauen, where they found the ship and mariners ready, and getting all aboord, the winde seruing for their auaile, they set saile, and before day they got farre enough from London.

CHAP. LXII.

How the king of England and the Queene were aduertised, how their daughter Agriola was conuoyed away, and of their sorrow for her departure

THe Duke of Gaules daughter, who continually was bedfellow to the Princelle, absenting her selfe very long from bed, fearing to disquiet her Ladie, being sicke as she supposed: but comming at length to see how shee fared, finding the bedde emptie, and Agriola gone, shee presently made a great out-crie, whereat the other Ladies came, and altogether amazed at this sudden aduenture, went to the Queenes Chamber, where they reported how the Princelle was gone. but how, or when, they knew not. The Queene at these tydings suddenly arose, and comming to her

daughters

daughters Chamber found it too true, which made her fal into such pitifull acclamations, farre surpassing those of Maguelons, when she lost her friend Peter of Prouince in the wood.

In these lamentings shee returned to the king, whose heauines exceded iudgment, for the losse of his daughter, and then came diuers lords and gentlemen, who declared that the strange knights were likewise departed. Which raised such a rumour through all the Citie, that they had stolen away the Princesse. The King vnderstanding the generall sorow for his daughters absence, said. In sooth my friends, if these knights haue done such seruice for mee, they haue sufficiently recompenced themselues, in doing me the greatest dishonour they could deuise: yet will I not condemne them so much as my daughter, for that I am perswaded shee procured this mischaunce. But now I well perceiue what credit a man may repose in his enemy: for Palmerin euermore serued the Emperour of Allemaigne, then hardly could hee be true to mee. Yet is it in vaine for me to blame him, or his companions, if they toke the aduauntage of their owne intents. But now there is no remedy, my daughter is in the company of most chosen knights: if she haue done well, or ill, hereafter her deserts will answer her misdemeanour. Thus the King would not suffer any pursute after them, though the Queene and her Ladies earnestly intreated him: her answering that no such mone should be made, for a child so vngratefull and disobedient, but hauing committed an action so vile and enforme, she should no more account of her as her childe. And well may we (quoth hee) so refuse her, in that shee would leaue her parents, and depart with straungers: happie might wee haue accounted our selues, if we had lost her in her infancie. The Queene seing her lord so impatient, appeased his displeasure so well as shee could, because shee would not moue him too much. Within few dayes after the Duke of Gaule arriued at the Court, who most of all

grieued at these vnhappy tidings, wherefore hee perswaded the king to proclaime open warre against the Emperour of Allemaigne, assuring him, that the knight which most commonly accompanied Palmerin, was Trineus the Emperors sonne. When the king heard the Dukes speeches, forgetting his anger, he reioyced, esteeming himselfe happy, and his daughter wise, in matching her selfe with such a husband: and if she had made her choyse among all the Princes of the world, shee could not haue sorted out one comparable in honor. In breefe answered the duke, that for a daughter so lost, hee would not seeke the death of his louers and subiects: but being one of Fortunes changes, he could not withstand it, and thus the king wisely and patiently endured his griefe.

CHAP. LXIII.

How Vrbanillo and the Prince Trineus Esquire, arriued at the Emperours Court, and what great ioy their coming procured.

IN this place our history taketh occasion, how the king of Fraunce daily expecting newes from Palmerin, as concerning his intent of marriage, betweene his daughter and the Prince Trineus: but seeing hee heard no tidings at all, hee determined to send his ambassadors to the Emperor, electing for cheefe in this embassage the Count of Armigane, to whome hee gaue full power and authority to conclude the marriage betweene Trineus and his daughter Lucemania, as also of the

Prince Polynardo with his sonne and heire. The king dispatching all things for his Ambassage, sent many barons and knights of name to accompany the Count, to countenance the matter with more royaltie and magnificence, and in this manner they came to Gaunt, where the Emperour being advertised of their arriuall, made no great account thereof, such was his griefe for his sonnes absence and Palmerins, of whom he could not heare any tidings, as also for the foyle his Armie sustained in England. But while the messenger from the Ambassadours of Fraunce stayed with the Emperour, Vrbanillo and the Princes Squire entered the hall, whose presence highly contented the Emperour, as embracing them very lovingly, he demaunded for Palmerin and his sonne Trineus, when they deliuering their letters, and the Emperour perswaded thereby of their speedie returne, was greatly contented, saying to the Ambassadours messenger. My friend, seeing I haue heard such long looked for tidings of my sonne, you may returne to the Counte your Maister, desiring him to come when hee thinks conuenient, and he shall be heartily welcome to mee: with this answer the messenger departed. Then the Emperor taking Vrbanillo by the hand, said: Tell me now I pray thee, how fares thy Maister: where is he: is my sonne with him? My gracious Lord, quoth the Dwarfe, where your noble sonne abideth, there is my Maister, both of them in good disposition, and highly honoured. And hereof I can assure your Maiestie, that you haue a sonne, who good reason ought to bee numbred among the best knights living, for such honourable experience hath hee made of his worthinesse, that perpetuall memorie will record his deedes of chiualrie: what else remaineth you shall know at their comming, which will be soone so as they can possibly. I euer perswaded my selfe, said the Emperour, that in the company of so good a knight as Palmerin, my sonne could not but purchase credit and honour: therefore seeing they haue such prosperitie of healthy, I care the lesse for their stay, but welcome

are

are they whensoeuer they come. By this time Polynarda heard of the Dwarfes arriuall, which greatly pleasing her she sayde to Brionella, I pray thee sweete friend go speedily and seeke the Dwarfe, that wee may knowe what is become of our Lords and my brother Trineus. Brionella, who longed to heare of her loue Sir Ptolome, whom well she knew to be one of the company, with all speede accomplished the Princesse commandement, and found the ioyfull messenger with the Emperour, who tooke great delight in the Dwarfes reports: but his Maiestie perceiuing with what cheerefull countenance shee came to bring Vrbanillo to her Ladie the Princesse, bad him go with her, hoping by his meanes his Daughters extreame sadnesse would be comforted. Brionella being forth of the Emperours presence, embraced him many times to know his tydings, when the Dwarfe not ignorant of the Ladies passions, deliuered Ptolomes letter to cheere her: but when the Princesse saw Vrbanillo comming, with the teares in her eyes shee ranne apace to meete him, and casting her armes about his necke, embraced him very often, saying: Tell me Vrbanillo, tell me, how fares my brother and thy Maister Palmerin? Madame, quoth the Dwarfe, so well as your owne heart can wish, and will ere long bee heere with you. Then deliuered he the letter from Trineus, which certified her of his short returne, and that he would bring with him the thing she most esteemed. But the wag knowing she expected other matters, and that her brothers medicine was not sufficient for her cure, he gaue her his masters letter, when she hastily breaking open the seale, found the ring which her loyall friend had sent her, and after she had welcomed it with many deuout kisses, she put it on her finger, with these words. I charge thee keepe this token safely, in witnesse of the knights gentlenesse that sent it, whom my heart hath made speciall choyse of aboue all other. Then reading the letter, and discreetly considering (not without great effuse of teares) the sweet words, humble

ble supplications, entire excuses, and extreame passions, that her friend continually suffered for her loue, deliuering mee my bitter sighes, she said: Ah my true and loyall friend, I beleeue well, and take in good part your cause of absence, being assured, that if possibly you could returne sooner, nothing should stay you from the place, where the onely remedie of your dolorous greefes abideth. But seeing for my loue you may not forsake my Brother, I pray you for your continual safetie, and speedy conduction to your longing desires, that mine eyes ouerwatched with tedious expectation, and my heart neere tyred with restlesse wishings, may by your presence be thoroughly comforted. Afterward Vrbanillo briefely reported to her the noble actions of his Lord and Maister, the loue of Trineus to the Princesse Agriola, describing her beautie and rare perfections, whereupon Polinarda thus answered:

Beleeue me Vrbanillo, if the Princesse be so faire as thou saiest she is, her great vertues and firme loyaltie likewise comparable, enuy and false report shall not impeach her, to be reckoned among the most happy Ladies of the world, and her desires will be as honorably effected, as with vertuous thoughts she first began them. The like I doubt not will happen to thy maister, for fortune hath euermore so specially fauoured him, as now it were against reason she should alter her countenance. So departed the Dwarfe from the Princesse, returning to the Emperour, who by no meanes could get any other tidings of his son then what you haue heard, which made him doubt the dwarfe iuggled with him. The next day the Emperor sent his chiefest Lords and Barons, to conduct the French Ambassadors to Court, which was sumptuously hanged with Tapistry, especially the great hall, which was adorned with costly cloth of gold and rich Purple, as it had beene the Pallace of Salomon. The Ambassadours entertained with maruellous royaltie, and hauing deliuered the summe of their Ambassage, the Emperour answered, that hee would conferre thereon with his

Councell,

Councell, in the mean while they might returne to their lodgings. After they were departed the Hall, the Emperour demanded of the Princesse, Electors, and the rest of his Nobilitie, if these marriages of his sonne and daughter, with the heire and Princesse of France, might not bee graunted, as well for the vtilitie and honour of the Empire, as for the generall benefit of Christendome, commaunding them to speake their iudgements without feare. The Lords altogether aunswered, that the motion was so good and the alliance so honourable, as it was no way to be misliked. I will then (quoth he) talke with the Empresse, that she may vnderstand her daughters opinion, & then my Lords of France shall be answered. So leauing them he went vnto the Empresse chamber, to whom hee reported his agreement with his Councell, which pleased her likewise marualious well: but when she had a little considered on the matter, she aunswered, that but little could be said before Trineus returned home againe. You reason well, quoth the Emperour, but in meane time I pray you sound your daughters iudgement that we may returne our brother of Fraunce some certaine aunswer. Which she promised to doe, and so departing from her Lord, she went to her daughers chamber, where hauing commanded her Ladies aside, she thus began. Faire daughter, it is the Emperours pleasure and mine, that you marrie with the eldest sonne and heire of Fraunce, and your brother Trineus with his sister, for he is one of the most renowmed Kings in Europe, and his son recounted among the best knights of the world: for which good fortune you may thanke the heauens, that so great a Prince offers his Sonne to be your husband. Aduise your selfe of your aunswer, for by your opinion must the Ambassadours be dispatched hence, who came to the Court for nothing else but to conclude these honourable marriages. Polinarda hearing the words of her mother, was surprized with such sodaine heauines, as she could not tell what to answer: but fearing the Empresse should perceiue that her loue was alreadie determined

termined, with a sadde countenance thus replyed.

Madam, you know what promise I made my brother, the day when he departed from the Court, in the presence of you, and all the Nobilitie, that I would not Marry before his returne: and me thinks I were greatly to be blamed, and well worthy grieuous reprehension, if I should so falsifie my word, which I cannot do, without impeaching of myne Honour. And herein shall I follow the laudable vertue of the Emperour my Father, who euermore esteemed his Promise aboue all earthly possessions. Beside, I can assure you that my brother will neuer marrie with the Princesse Lucemanie: For hee Loues one many degrees beyonde her, and (may I speake it without offence) one of the most beautifull Ladyes that euer Nature framed. Thus Madame, my Father and you haue excuses sufficient and availeable, wherewith to answere the King of Fraunce. It may bee (quoth the Empresse) that your Brother loues else-where: but I can tell ye, that neither hee nor you shall do any thing, contrarie to the Emperours commandement. Polinarda, seing her Mother persist in her opinion, bitte in her sorrowes with many secrete sighes: yet knew shee so well how to dissemble her passions, as the Empresse could not discerne her priuate meaning. So returned shee to the Emperour, aduertising him of her Daughters answere: wherat he was so offended, as in great anger he came himselfe to his Daughter, saying: Why, how now Daughter? Are you so bolde to disobey my commaundement? Or dare you repugne against my will? All is to no end that you haue doubled with your Mother: For (will yée or no) it shall be as I haue appoynted. I knowe right well dread Lorde and Father, (quoth she) that I ought no way to deny your good pleasure: But yet rather will I dye a thousand deaths, then consent to matche with the Sonne of Fraunce, considering what promise I haue made vnto my deere Brother: and if I should but once so farre dishonour my selfe, as not to regard what I haue promised, I should thinke my selfe vnworthie hereafter to be called your Daughter. Thus stood she resolute

in

in her answere, and therewith shedde such a boundance of teares, as the Emperour was constrayned to tell the Ambassadours, that the marriages could not bee concluded till the returne of Trineus, notwithstanding hee graunted all the articles of their embassage. The princesse qualifying her greefe as well as shee could, sent for the Diwarfe, and taking him by the hand, sayde. Alas my friende, I am now in the greatest perplexity in the world, nevertheless, one thing comforts me: that thou beholdest the true loue and loyaltie I beare thy maister, which never shall be broken, what ever become of me. And would to God hee were nowhere, then would I speake it openly without feare of any, that I am his, and he myne. Madame, quoth the Diwarfe, if you continue faithfull to my maister, perswade your selfe of his assurance, for he building on your constancie, takes such continuall pleasure in remembring you, that it is the onely meane that preserues his life: and you may bee bolde to credit me, that if your brothers loue did not with-hold him, hee would haue bin here long ere this, but he will come soone inough (I hope) to end this doubt. As for me, I am of the opinion that heauen will not suffer so good a knight to die, but first will permit him to see his mistris. Die? quoth the princesse, sooner let all the knights in the world ende their dayes, and the eldest Sonne of France likewise, though hee loue mee so dearely, so might I bee rid of these importunate Ambassadours. The Emperour seeing hee could get no other answere of his daughter, concluded with the French ambassadors, that so soone as his son was returned, hee should be aduertized, and so for that time they might depart: but the empresse and hee first bestowed on them many rich presents, and so in short time they arriued againe in Fraunce, where great ioy was made in hope of these marriages, albeit they little thought the Prince Trineus would tarrie so long. Above all other, the French prince was most ioyfull, hearing the Countie of Armignac report the wonderfull beauty of Polinarda: but

shee

the good Lady was of an other minde, for shee had rather betake her selfe to a Cloyster, then to breake her Faith to Palmerin, whom shee loued so constantly. Thus leaue wee her conferring with Vrbanillo, returning to Palmerin, and the Prince Trineus.

CHAP. LXIIII.

¶ How Palmerin beeing thus on the Sea, caused Trineus there to marrie the Princesse Agriola.

THis Noble company beeing thus on the Sea, hauing Winde at will, sayled with such expedition, as in foure daies they had gotten farre enough from England, and the Prince seeing the Princesse Agriola very pensiue and sadde, comforting her with many sweete welcomes and kisses, and taking her by the hand, thus spake.

O Soueraigne Creatour, howe shall I render sufficient thankes and praise to thee, in graunting mee the onely thing I desired? Ah sweet Madame, and my onely deere Mistresse Agriola, how much is your Seruant indebted to you? Hath any Knight more cause to honour and extoll his Lady then I? Beleeue mee fayre Princesse, such are the rare effects of your gracious Nature, and I so toyfull of my happy Fortune, as neyther Friend or Father shall fetch you againe from me. If my life might endure the length of ten mens, and euery day I should accomplish wonders in your good Seruice, yet could I not remunerate the least parte of your Princelie deserts. But if your Loue be such to mee, as I am right well assured

it

it is, let me intreat you to forbeare this heauinesse, and banish from your thoughts your melancholy humours: for seeing you so sadde and pensiue, I suffer a torment worser then death it selfe. For let me perceyue (how little soeuer it bee) that my presence may bee to your liking, and our present Enterprise somewhat more pleasing: I flye to the Heauens with conceit of happines, and value my Fortune aboue the reach of humane capacity. In stéd of teares, let vs vse quainte tearms, and for these dumps, pleasant imaginations: perswade your selfe Madame, you are now in his custodie that honours you for your vertues, reuerenceth you for your diuine perfections, extolleth you for incomparable merites, and liueth for you, with his very vttermost endeuors. Thinke not Madame, though you haue left your Parents, the fault is not pardonable: For the new allyance wherein you haue combined your selfe, shall one day glad you with your speciall content: that what you do imagine now a dangerous offence, will bee imputed an act of prouident and Princely discretion. Then shall you finde it true, what Palmerin hath spoken, and his promises of preferment, and Imperiall dignitie, shall be both rightly and sufficiently performed. Let these perswasions, if not my intreatyes, excell these Passions, and procure better comfort. Madame (quoth Palmerin) though you haue left your Natiue Countrey, consider the occasion, the loue of a mighty Prince, and the Heauenly appoyntment, that your noble vertues should be coupled together, hath brought you from England, to sit on the Imperiall seate in Allemaigne.

Now carefull haue we haue bene of your honour, your selfe can witnesse, no motion beeing offered to preiudice your lyking. That you are contracted before the onely Immortall witnesse, you will not denie: Therefore to preuent all ensuing daungers, the actuall Ceremonie shall be heere celebrated, and the Royaltie thereof onely Solemnized, when wee shall come into Allemaigne. So if Hymen claimes his due, you may graunt it without any reproache, and Iuno will as well smile at her sacred Offering here, as if it were in Bower, or Hall,

hall, The credite of Princes, are charie, and angrie Parents may hinder, what heauen doth further: but the deede done, it cannot be recalled, nor can you be diuorced but only by death, and pittie were it, loue so well begun, but should continue, therefore (so please you) let it be performed. The Princes both agreed, they were married requiting their chaste loue, with a simpathie of vertuous desires: but this time of delight and pleasure had small continuance, for Fortune enemy to prosperitie, accompanied with her eldest sonne Mischance conuerted their ioyes into sorrow, teares, and pains vnspeakable, as you shall reade hereafter.

These Louers thus riding merrily on the streame, suddenly the Sea began to swell, the winde changed roughly, the skies were troubled, and such a dangerous tempest beat vpon their ship, as the Pilot, Maister, and Mariners knew not what to say, and fiue dayes together they were in this perplexitie, sometime forward, then againe backeward, that no hope of life was expected, but euery one prepared themselues for death, the implacable messenger of God, for they could desire no other remedy. Agriola not accustomed to these dangers, was marueilously discomforted: but Trineus perswaded her with many examples, in that such stratagems were vsuall on the Sea, albeit, she to end the feare she saw before her eyes, would often times haue cast her selfe into the raging waters. At length the tempest ouer-passed, they descryed an Iland, whereto with the helpe of their Oares they coasted, shrouding themselues vnder the sides of an high mountaine: and although the place seemed casuall, yet there they determined to cast Anker, vntill the Seas were more calme and quiet. Being thus vnder the Lee, and defended from the winde with the huge Roche, Palmerin came vpon the hatches, to see what iudgement he could make of the Iland, and so delectable the country seemed vnto him, as he was desirous to goe on shore, taking his Faulcon on his fist that was giuen him in England, so with no other defence but his Sword, he went to view the soyle, not suffering any body

to beare him company. Trineus and Agriola perswaded him to the contrary, but all would not serue: for the scituation of the Countrey pleased him so well, as he walked on in great contentation, not minding to returne againe to the ship, till toward the euening.

CHAP. LXIII.

How Trineus, Agriola, Ptolome and all their Marriners, were taken by the Turks, after that Palmerin was gone to view the Island.



The Historie reporteth, that while Palmerin was thus absent, there arriued foure or fiue Turkish Galleis, who likewise glad to shun the tempestuous weather, cast Anker neere to Trineus ship, and seeing no body on the decke of this strange vessel, because (seeing no harm) they were all at rest: they enuironed it about, and hauing boorded it, the Captaine of the Turks called to them, saying: What? are ye asleepe within, that ye let us boord ye without any resistance? by the reuerence of our gods we shall awake ye: but little to your ease. So came the Souldiours on boord after their Captaine, who put the Pilote, the Maister, and many of the Mariners to the Sword, sparing none but such as they pleased to ransome. Then searching the Cabins, they found Trineus, Agriola, and Ptolome, whom they toke prisoners, by reason they were vnarmed, as also somewhat sickely after their rough passage. The rouing Captaine or Pyrate, named Olimael, noting the

the singular beauty of Agriola, commaunded her to be carryed on bord his Galley. When the Princesse sawe her selfe so hardly handled, and that her Lord was prysoner with these villainous Moores, so that perforce they must abandon one another: she brake forth into pittifull acclamations, and loking on her husband, thus spake. Ah my Lord, how hard and strange is this fortune? haue we escaped a tempest so daungerous, now to fall into this mercilesse extremitie? Oh that you and Syr Ptolome had bene Armed, that these Moores might haue bought our liues with the Sword: But despightfull chaunce hath so thwarted vs, as no meane is left to preuent our perill. Ah Palmerin, how greeuous is thine absence, and how displeasant will our mishap be to thee? how much would thy valour now auaile vs, being vterly destitute of any succour or refuge? I know our mishap will so offend thee, as I feare thou wilt do some outrage on thy selfe. With these words she fell downe among them in a dead traunce, the sight whereof so enraged, Trineus and Ptolome, as snatching weapons out of the Moores hands, they laide about them so lustily, that in short time they had slayne halfe a score of them. But vnable were they to contend against so many, wherefore being taken againe, they were bound so cruelly with Cords and Chaines, as rent their tender and delicate flesh in many places: and being so conuayed into another Galley, their Squires likewise prisoners with them, the Moores toke what they pleased out of the Ship, and when they had done, set it on fire. Then presently they weyed Anchor, and launching away, made haste, least any reskew should follow them, so that quickly they lost the sight of the Iland, and Olimael comming to see Agriola, assayed by any meanes to allwage her heauinesse, embracing her in his armes, and promising her great riches if shee would be pacified. But all his speeches were in vaine, for shee seeing the Moore imbrace her, with angry stomacke like a Lyon enraged, caught him by the haire and the throate, saying: Thou villaine Dogge, thinkest

thou I take any delight in thy company? How dareſt thou traitourly theefe lay hande on mee? And ſo roughly did ſhe ſtruggle with Olimael, as if his men had not aſſiſted him, ſhee had ſtrangled him: notwithſtanding hee toke all patiently, perſwading himſelfe, that by gentle ſpeeches, ſmoothe flatterings, and large promiſes, hee ſhould in time win her to his pleaſure. So came he forth of the cabin, with his throat and face brauely painted with Agriolaes nayles, waſhing away the blod, which made comely circles about his phiſnomie: then called hee the Captaines and chiefe of his companie, willing them to ſhare the bootie among them, and hee would haue nothing but the Princeſſe for his parte, for hee was ſo inueigled with the beautie of his priſoner, as he had no delight but onely in beholding her. In this manner then he beſtowed his priſonners, Trineus hée gaue to one of his Cozins, and Ptolome to a Knight that ſerued the Soldane of Babilon, the Squires and the pelfe hee gaue among the common Souldiours. But when the Prince ſaw hee muſt nedes leaue his Lady, and each man would carry his priſoner whether him pleaſed: his greefe for his wife, and ſorrowe for his friendes, I leaue to your iudgement, as not able to be expreſſed. Yet ſome hope of comfort hee repoſed in Palmerin, that by his meanes (being eſcaped their hands) he ſhould get againe Agriola, elſe was there way lefte to helpe him. Ptolome who dearely loued the Prince, before they parted, thus began. Why how now my Lord? where is your wonted prudence and diſcretion? Where is that conſtant magnanimitie, which in ſo many fortunes heretofore you vſed? what? is it loſt, or haue you forgot it? What meane ye? will ye be ſubiect to paſſions, as a weake effeminate perſon? You that are ſprung from the moſt auncient noble and generous race of Chriſtendome, eſtéemed for a moſt couragious and vertuous Knight, will you bee driuen into theſe ſad and deſolate opinions? What then would a Turke, Moore or barbarous Myrmidon do in like afflictions? when he that hath aſſurance of his God, & knows

that

that all persecutions, fortunes and mishaps, are prowes of his fidelitie, and the meanes to attaine eternall quiet, shewes these vnrulifull behauiors, as though he had lost all meanes of hope and comforte. If the body be afflicted, let the spirite be animated, and armed with patience, against all infirmities of the flesh. Leaue these soft countenances for Women, and if you will not perswade your selfe, that these troubles happen for the encreasing of our ioy, it may bee the meane that God will forsake vs. Then neyther feare or dispayre I pray you, for hee that suffered vs to fall into those Moores handes, both can and will deliuer vs againe. As for your Lady Agriola, doubt not of her vnconquerable loyalty, for shee hath in her custody a iewell of such vertue, as no one can dishonour her against her owne lyking. Comfort her selfe then in the power of the highest, and repose your selfe on the constancie of your Lady, with this certaine perswasion, that this crosse and aduersitie hath fallen vpon vs, for our greater good and aduauncement hereafter. Then came Olimael, and interrupted they' talke, commaunding nine or ten of his people, to conuay Trineus into another Galley, and Prolome into that where his Maister was, that so they might depart, to recouer the rest of they' Galleys, which were scattered from them by reason of the tempest. And so they departed one from another, the Galley wherein Trineus was discrying a goodly Ship of Christians, whereof they beeing glad, sette sayle with the winde towardes the Christians, who rode awaye so fast as they could, and had escaped, but that they met full with certaine Pyrates of Natolia, who ioyning with the Gallyes, in the ende boorded her, and parted the spoyle among them: the winde suddenly beganne to chaunge, so that they were constrained to flye for succors to an Iland in the kingdome of Persia, which they reached in good time, glad to shelde themselues from daunger: These Pyrates thus come to Hauen, went all on shore to refresh themselues: but they had no sooner sette foote on land, such enchantments [illegible]

pearsed through the whole Isle, as they presently knewe not one another. But to acquaint you with the manner of these Enchauntments, you must note, that the Isle where they landed was called Malfada, which name was giuen it by the Lady thereof, which was called likewise Malfada, the most subtill Magitian of her time: so that we may say of her, as the Poets feigned of the auncient Circes. And albeit she was issued of Christian Parents, yet hauing such familiarity with the Diuell and his maligne spirites she would not acquaint her selfe with any godnesse towards Christians, but daylie practised their harme and destruction. And for this intent, she had of a long time before Enchaunted this Island with such Charmes, that what Shipping soeuer arriued there, could neuer depart thence againe, much lesse such as once entred within the Island. They being thus stayed, Malfada would come her selfe, and chose such as shee liked, the rest she transformed into Harts, Wolues, Dogges, Beares, and all manner of Beasts. Such likewise as she toke with her into her Forcerelle, when he hadde abused them to content her owne pleasure, shee would cast them forth, transforming them as she did the other: In briefe, shee was worse then a Diuell, this Island was a very disguised hell. This wicked woman knowing that more vnfortunate people were Landed at the Hauen, called her Seruaunts, and came to see them: but she made no great account of them, wherefore shee commaunded her trustyest Seruaunts to take away all the Riches forth of the Shippe, conuerting it by her Enchauntment, that it seemed like a bottomelesse gulfe. Afterwards at her pleasure, she transformed them that came into it: Among whom Trineus was changed into the shape of a very fayre Dogge: not that hee was so, for that is a thing against nature, and which God no way will permit that Man shall take any Brutish shape, or a brute Beast assume any humane forme. For the Magicall dispositions thus holde their Arte, that the Enchaunted deeme themselues Beastes, and of that was this disfigured Captiue: notwithstanding, these distressed Captiues had natu-

naturall reason and humane power, but the benefit of speech was taken from them. And thus was Trineus transformed, which he seemed not to mislike, for not remembring himselfe, he forgot all his beaute passions marueling only at his suddaine mutation. And here will we leaue him in his straunge deformitie, to report what befell to the Princesse Agriola, after that dolorous separation betweene her Lord and her.

THus Gentlemen haue we left the Prince *Trineus* transformed into the shape of a Dogge, in the Isle of *Malfada*, by the Enchauntresse: the Englisth Princesse *Agriola*, in the custody of the Turkish Pirate *Olimael*: *Ptolome* and *Colmelso* carried into *Aethiopia*, and *Palmerin* raunging in the Islande with his Hauke for his delight. Right straunge will be the meeting of all these friendes againe, after the hazards of many perillous fortunes. For *Agriola* thus separated from the Prince her husband, is maried to the great Emperour of *Turkie*: how wonderfully the ring which *Palmerin* gaue her, preserues her chastitie, will bee worth the hearing. How *Palmerin* counterfeiting himselfe dumbe, doth many rare exployts in the Isle of *Calpha*, will be as acceptable. How *Palmerin* gaines his *Polixarda*, *Trineus* his chast wife *Agriola*, *Ptolome* his *Brionella*, and all Honors meeting together in the Emperours Court of *Allemaigne*, will be so strange as the like was neuer heard: and all this performes the second part, which shall be published so soone as it can be printed.

FINIS.

A. Mundy

Honos alit Artes,

THE SECOND PART, OF THE HONOVRABLE HISTORIE, OF *PALMERIN D'OLIVA.*

Continuing his rare fortunes, Knightly deeds of Chiualrie, happie ſucceſſe in loue: and how he was crowned Emperour of *Conſtantinople.*

Herein is likewiſe concluded the variable troubles of the Prince Trineus, *and faire* Agriola *the Kings daughter of England: with their fortunate Marriage.*

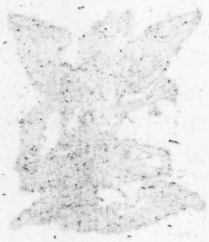
Tranſlated by *A. M.* one of the Meſſengers of her Maieſties Chamber.

Parere aut abſtine.



LONDON,
Printed by *T. C.* and *B. A.* for *Richard Higgenbotham* and are to be ſolde at his ſhop, at the ſigne of the Cardinals hat without Newgate, 1616.

THE SECOND PART OF THE HONOVRABLE HISTORIE, OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.



TO THE RIGHT HONOVRABLE AND HIS VERY GOOD LORD *EDWARD DE VERE, EARLE OXENford*, Viſcount Bulbecke, Lord Sanford of Badeleſmere, and Lord high Chamblerlaine of England.

A. M. *wiſheth the full iſſue of his noble deſires.*

PRomiſe is debt, my good Lord, as the Prouerb auoucheth, & debt muſt needes bee paide, as reaſon requireth: the one not arguing ſo much liberalitie in ſpeech, as the other doth vertue in accompliſhing. Whē I preſented your honour the firſt part of this Hiſtorie, I promiſed to haſten the other to the ſelfe ſame Patrone: whereto I haue bene vehemently induced, by the gracious and affable receite of the former, and therefore (kiſſing your hand) I offer the concluſion of worthy *Palmerin*. Nor hath it beene ſo tedious and troubleſome to mee in the tranſlation,

as I hope you will conceiue delight thereby in the reading: howſoeuer it prooue, I neede not deſpaire, hauing a Iudge ſo honourable, who meaſureth good will farre beyond abilitie.

Your Honours in all
humilitie. A. M.

TO THE FRIENDLY READERS.

THough long, yet at length Palmerin *is finished, and hauing endured so many bitter brunts in search of aduentures: after all, now remaineth either to bee commended or condemned by your censure. Condemne him you cannot with reason, considering all his actions haue beene so honourable: as too malicious were the man would deale so hardly with him that hath giuen no occasion of offence. Commend him then you must, in respect of his manifold vertues, thrust all together in the face of Fortune, onely for your delight and recreation.*

As concerning his sonnes Palmendos *and* Primaleon, *the one is kept vnder his Mothers wing the Queene of* Tharsus, *and the other sporting in the Court at* Constantinople *: not daring to set foote in the stirroppe after Knightly exercises, till they heare how their father speeds. If he haue that fauor his deeds deserued, then on goes their Armour, and in the chiefest places of Christendome will they shew themselues, with repetition to the world of wonderfull aduentures.*

But while they expect good newes or bad, Paladine

ſonne to the king Mylanor *of* England, *is poſting to you: what he and the noble Prince* Manteleo *of* Millaine *doe, in knightly affaires of moſt noble Chiualrie, the Hiſtorie ſhall deliuer: which is already on the preſſe in good forwardneſſe. From my houſe at Cripple-gate this ninth of March.* 1588.

Yours to his vttermoſt
Anthony Monday.

THE SECOND PART OF THE AVNTIENT AND HONOVRAble Hiſtorie of *Palmerin D'Oliua*.

Continuing his rare Fortunes, Knightly deedes of Chiualrie, happie ſucceſſe in Loue, and how hee was crowned Emperour of Conſtantinople. *Herein is likewiſe concluded the variable troubles of* Trineus, *and faire* Agriola *of* England, *with their fortunate Marriage. &c.*

CHAP. I.

¶ Howe Olimael preſented the Princeſſe Agriola to the great Turke, who immediately became amourous of her: and what rewardes and preferment the Pyrate receyued for his gyft.

AS yet I am ſure you cannot chuſe but call to your memorie in the firſt parte, howe the Pyrate Omaliel diuided his Priſoners, reſerruing for himſelfe none but the King of Englands Daughter, hoping in time to purchaſe her liking. And being alone with her in the fairest Cabin in the Galley, he deuiſed by all the beſt meanes hee coulde to comfort her: But yet all his

his labours were lost, and bestowed in vaine, for he would not receyue any kinde of sustenaunce, desiring euery houre to dye, hauing so lost her Lorde Tripeus. Hee seeing that layes speeches, offers, gifts, & other enticements proper to perswasion, could not compasse ỹ thing he desired, he grew into Choller, intending to gaine his pleasure perforce, so that after many threatnings, with rough violence he would nedes ravish her. Agriola seeing that her feble strength could not long withstand this cursed Turk, albeit she straue and rested so well as she could: therfore with deuout prayer shee called on God, desiring him to take pittie on her, and not to suffer that villainous Ruffian to dishonour her.

Her Prayer being ended, Olimael beganne in such sort to tremble, as he staggered backwards foure or fiue times, and so exceedingly was he surprized with feare: as hee was constrained to leaue her, and withdraw himselfe into another place. The Princesse, though she were amazed at this sudden chaunge, and noting with what terror the Captain departed: yet was shee greatly comforted by her happy deliuerance, imputing the whole worke therof to the Almightie prouidence, and the vertue of the Ring that Palmerin gaue her: wherefore with a thankfull heart, and eleuated eyes to Heauen, she said: Oh celestiall Father, how great and infinite is thy Goodnesse: how happy is the Creature whom thou regardest with the eye of pittie: assuredly I now perceiue, that such as in extreamitie haue recourse to thee, shal no way perish. Then taking the vertuous Ring, and kissing it many times, saide:

Vnualuable Iewell, giuen mee by the best Knight in the world, how carefully will I keepe thee: how true is that saying: That great persons, giue great presents; Hence forth shalt thou be kept (for the loue of him that gaue thee, and for thy singular vertue) in the place where I vsually store things of greatest price. So taking a little Chayne of Golde, which serued her as a Bracelet, she fastened this worthy Iewell thereto, and put it about her Neck, so that the

the sumptuous Stone laye glittering betweene her Pilke-white Brests, a prospect so rare and delicate, and of no lesse power to drawe the beholders eyes then the Adamant, the Amber, or the Jeate can by their vertue: Beside so wonderfully repleate with sweete regard, as I dare affirme that the moste cruell Tyrant in Turkie, would stand amazed at those two hauntie Mountainets, more mortified and humbled then the Aged Hermites of Thebaida. Olimael yet quaking at this sudden altercation, durste presume no more to offer her villanie: but by rich gyfts and presents sought to perswade her: All which availed not, for as hee got but little profite by his violence, so winne he much lesse by his treacherous offerings. So Sayled they eyght dayes together, Olimael not able to compasse Agriolas loue, nor hearing any tyding of the Vessells that were lost, neyther of his Cozin who had Trineus captiue, which grieued him as nothing coulde doe more, in that hee was so unprouided, as wel he could not present himselfe before his Lord, to whom he had promised to bring store of Christian Prisoners, and nowe in his hotteste Loue so lost his time, as eyther the Tempest or shipwracke, had spoyled him of his owne companie. In this doubtfull opinion, he debated with himselfe, that the great Turke did earnestly attect fayre Ladyes: so by the meane of his beautifull Prisoner, her imagined to be entertained with good countenance, and his losse would be past ouer with forgetfulnesse: Wherefore he commanded their Pylot to make toward the Port of Orobant, where as then the great Emperour of Turkie sojourned, and thether they came in short time after. Notwithstanding, as a Seruaunt well instructed, notdaring to abuse the familiaritie of his Lord, hee sent one of his knightes to excuse his cause, and to report, that by casuall mischaunce hee had lost his men and Galleys: but if his Maiestie pleased to forget his mis-fortune, and receyue him into his accustomed Fauour, he would bring him one of the fairest Ladies in Christendome, and descended of most Royall Parentage. The

Em-

Emperour being Lasciuious, and more addicted to vnchast desires then any in his Dominion, hearing this Message, was surprized with the onely report of her Beauty, as immediately he became passionate for her Loue: sending the Pyrate word that hee could not bring a more desired present, and therefore remitted all his offences, promising him greater fauour then euer he had. And because no contrary occasion may hinder his comming (quoth the Emperour) thou shalt carry him this Letter, sealed with mine own signet, that hee may no way doubt of his assurance. The Knight taking the Letter, and kissing the Emperours feet, according to the custome, returned to his Maister, deliuering him the answer he had receiued. Olimael ioyfull thereof, caused Agriola to clothe herselfe in her most sumptuous Garments, and so with all his men set forward towards the Court. Now although the Princesse was all blubbered with teares, and halfe dead, to see her selfe in the power of these Strangers, professed and sworne Enemies to her Faith and religion: yet could not the rare perfections of her Beautie be shadowed, but the glimse thereof set euery Eye to wonder. And as she looked about her, to see if any of her company were landed with her, she espied Ptolome, whom they minded secretly to conuey from her: but she beholding him so sadde and sorrowfull, crept towards him, saying: Ah my deere Friende Ptolome; what dreadfull chaunce hath Fortune throwne vppon vs: but well may I content my selfe, for this is a iust scourge for mine offence, and vndutifull obedience to the King my Father. Ah my Lord and loyall Husband Trineus, neuer shall I see thee againe, for God doth know whether these villains haue sent thee. Ah noble Palmerin, who was wont heretofore to comfort mee, too much hast thou failed vs, all thy former promises are now altered: for in stead of Imperiall soueraignty, pleasure & honor, I am requited with pouerty, griefe, shame, & mockery. Ah Death, sweete death, too long desired death: why commest thou not to ende all these miseries? But God wil not per-

permit thée, becauſe by my torments and afflictions, I may feele the weighty burthen of my offences, and large bountie of his mercies.

Ptolome ſeeing her in this mournfull iteration, ſaide, It is no time now (Madame) thus to diſquiet and offende your ſelfe: but rather (as wiſe and well governed) to beare theſe aduerſities, euen with as great content as your former proſperities, taking in good part whatſoeuer ſhall happen, for I am in good hope, and my minde perſwades me, that we ſhall be deliuered by noble Palmerin, who I am well aſſured endureth greater griefe in his libertie, hauing loſt vs, then we can do in this our impriſonment. Olimael ereding augris to ſee Agriola weepe, violently pulde Ptolome from her, charging his men, not to ſuffer him once to come within her ſight, which he ſuffered patiently, becauſe he ſaw it was in vaine to kicke againſt the pricke. When they came to the Pallace, and admitted to the Emperours preſence, Olimael kneeling downe before him, and kiſſing his foote, preſented Agriola to his Maieſtie: who ſeeing her of ſuch a rare and wonderfull Beautie, ſaide to Olimael.

This Preſent (my Friende) is of ſuch ſurpaſſing value, as thou couldeſt neuer honour me with the like: God reaſon is it therefore, that a gyft ſo precious, ſhould be rewarded with like recompence, and ſo perſwade thy ſelfe I will, that thou ſhalt ſay the Emperour is bountifull. As for the Ladie thou haſt giuen me, I perceiue is ſo faire and gracious, as I intend neuer to haue any other Wife: and that I may reſpond her with the greater magnificence, I will ſtaye till the hallowed day of my Coronation, when all my Princes, Barons, and Knights, will be heere aſſembled, and then in their preſence ſhall our Nuptialls be ſolemnized. Now had the Emperour a woman captiue, named Hyppolita, who was a marchants Daughter of Scicilie, and better ſkild in all Languages then any Ladie in the Courte, for which hee made ſpeciall account of her, repoſing great confidence in her, and acquainting her with his chiefeſt ſecrets: wherefore hee ſent for her before

Agriola,

Agriola, and saide: Hyppolita, I giue you this Ladie in kéeping, commaunding you to intreate her as our owne person, and that all meanes may be practised, to cause her forsake this sadde Melancholie. In conference you may shew her what Honour and happinesse shee shall receyue by falling into our hands, and what incomparable Fortune it is to her, whome we shall please to accept for our Wife. All which Hyppolita (with great humilitie) promised to accomplish, and so conducted her into a most Princely Chamber, the same couered all ouer with cloth of Tissue, and hung about with most sumptuous Tapistrie and cloth of Golde, as hardly might the richnesse thereof be valued. There Hyppolita caused the Princesse to sitte downe in a Chayre of estate, which was purposly prouided for her, demanding her Name, and of what countrey she was.

The Princesse answered, that shee was of England, but further of her state she would not bewray. Hyppolita speaking perfectly the English tongue, toke great delight daily to commune with her, and because Agriola shoulde the better like of her conuersation, shée tolde her that she was likewise a Christian, but that by constrainte she followed the Law of Mahomet, and his Alchoran. In further speeches, shee acquainted her with the estate of the Sultanes, in the Court of the great Emperour of Asia: which communication serued well to weare away the time, albeit the Princesse toke small pleasure therein. Olimael in consideration of his Noble présent, was created high Admyrall of the Mediterranean Sea, and furnished with greater store of Foystes and Galleyes, then he had before.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

¶ How the great Turke summoned all the Kings and Princes his subiects, because hee minded to holde open Court: and how hee marryed with the Princesse Agriola his Prisoner.

HYppolita being daily conuersant with the Princesse Agriola, because she had so good knowledge in her Language, at length the Emperour himself came to her Chamber, and to the ende hee might the better behold the Princesse, he sate him downe in a Chayre opposite to her, and there hee sate a long time, not able to content his Eyes with loking on her, and beholding her excellent Beauty: for speake to her he could not, because she vnderstood not the Turkish language. Wherefore he commanded Hyppolita to request her name, and whether Parents were: which to satisfie his Maiestie, she did: Agriola thus answering her. In vaine Ladie seeke you to knowe of me, the thing which death cannot force me bewray: Let it suffice you that I am a poore Gentle-woman, the moste vnfortunate that euer liued: with which words she wept very grieuously. The Emperour moued with pittie, departed to his Chamber, so surprised and inflamed with her Loue, as he could take no rest one minute of the Night: considering with himselfe, that seeing shee esteemed so little of the richnesse she saw in his Pallace, and refused the offers made her by Hyppolita, that doubtlesse she was extract of some Noble Linage.

The next morning he called his foure Secretaries, commaunding them to write to all the Princes of his Empire, that

that they should not faile to honour the day of his coronation with their presence, and to bring with them their Nieces and Daughters, and this they should do on paine of his displeasure: all which was performed with present expedition. In the meane time, he caused divers sumptuous ornaments to be prepared, with all manner of precious Jewels could be devised, and these he daily sent to Agriola, but all those presents, promises, and munificent entertainment, could no way move her, not so much as to graunt him a gracious countenaunce. He likewise sent for the Damell Ladies to his Court, that they should keepe the Princesse company: but she would be consorted with none but Hippolita, of whom she had so prettily learned the Arabian tongue, as many times she could indifferently answer the Emperour. But when he beheld her continually pensiue, and that by no meanes she would be comforted: hee doubted least his presence did offend her, and therefore he forbare so often to visite her. For so dearely he loued her, as for the halfe of his Empire, he would giue her no occasion of discontent, hoping in time (which is the Lord and conqueror of all things) to alter that humour, and purchase her loue, which he desired with earnest affection. But note at this day, where may we find a Lady so vertuous & wel gouerned, eing captiue as Agriola was, & could not be won by such a mighty Emperor, considering her youth and beauty, & the wonderfull riches incessantly offered her. Yet the highest Lord so protected her, that the more liberall the Turke was in honours and perswasions, the more loyall continued her loue to Trineus, whose perfect image so ingraued in her hart. And not fearing torments or death, she boldly answered the Emperor, that he trauailed in daine, for shee might not loue him, in that she was married to an Husband, more noble euery way then hee, and none but him she would loue while she lined: yet made he no great account of her words, considering what frailtie commonly is in women. The day being come of this great preparatio

and

and al the Princes present to understand their soueraignes will, she being placed in her imperiall seate, said. That she intended to take to wife, one of the most beautifull Ladies in the world, and for that cause he sent for them, to vnderstand how they liked thereof. Their answere was, that they liked well thereof, and would gladlie honour her as well beseemed them. Then sent he for Agriola, and before them all, saide vnto her, that it was his pleasure to accept her for his Wife, and therefore she should prepare herselfe on the morrow to be married. The Princesse abashed at these speeches, fell downe before him in a dead traunce, whereupon, by the Queenes and Ladies present, she was conueyed into her Chamber, where being againe reuiued, she began most pittifull and dolorous lamentations: so when all the company had left her, that she was alone with Hippolita, falling downe on her knees at her beds sete, shee thus begaune.

O my God and benigne Father, pittie the poore distressed creature, and forget the offences I haue heretofore committed: for what is a sinner, vnlesse thou in mercie suffer her to come before thee: Wilt thou then vouchsafe (O wonderfull worker of the whole world) one eye of pittie vpon thy humble forsaken seruant: and suffer her not to fall into subiection, to the vowed enemie of thy holie word, arming me so stronglie in this temptation, that I no way iniurie my Lord and Husbande Trineus, but rather graunt this desolate spirit, may leaue this body and the world together. Ah my honourable Lord Trineus, where art thou now: that thou art not heere to defende the shame and wrong this Tyrant offers thee: what, art thou dead: or hast thou forgotten me: No, no, so well am I assured of thy fidelitie, as no torment can diuert thee from me. Yet if I knew directlie that thou art not liuing, the lesse would be my feare to follow thee: for then the greatest pleasure this Pagan could do me, were to make mee happie onely by death. But for the matter is vncertaine, and that I liue

hi hope once more to see this: I will patiently endure all afflictions whatsoeuer, so I finde Arcites as is the loue. Wherefore vowes of the Princesse to goddesse Hippolita, as one could hardly iudge who was most passionate, yet at length she thus spake to Agriola, I beseech you good Ladie to leaue these grieuous lamentations, and regard the high estate, honor, and dignitie, that you shall haue in marrying with my Lord. Rather perswade me (quoth the Princesse) to manifest disloyaltie: for such preferments, if they be not gotten iustly and by vertue, they ought not to bee coueted, but to be shunned as deadlie Serpents. Thus spent they the whole night, & in the morning came the Quenes and Ladies newly come to the Court, to bid the sorrowfull Bride good morrow in her Chamber, attyring her in wonderfull gorgious vestures, after their Country maner, farre beyond the royaltie of Helena, after her arriuall at Troy. Betweene foure Kinges shee was brought into the great Hal, and from thence conducted to the Temple, where they were espoused by the Mosti. To recount here the royall solemnitie in the Temple, the Maiestie and vnspeakable dignity at the Pallace, the excellent Cõedies, rare triumphes, Masques, Momeries, Morrices, & such like courtly pleasures, would be a matter too prolixious: for they are not to our purpose. Let it then suffice ye, that after they were magnificently intreated at Dinner and Supper, the daunsing began, & God knowes how the Turkes, Moores, Arabes & Medes, sette forth themselues in their deuises and sports before their Ladies, much like the Satires and horned Faunes, giuing new inuasions on the Nimphes of Diana. But all these merualos, ioyes, and follies, could not chaunge the Princesse countenaunce, for she continuing in her pensiuenes, these sports were worse to her then the tormentes of death: aboue all, fearing the losse of her chastitie, which was a Iewell neuer to be recouered. The pastimes ended, by the Quenes and Ladies she was conducted to the nuptial bedde, so braue and stately, as the Prince

Aeneas

Aeneas when he came to Carthage, vnto Dido of Carthage, and there was the vnfortunate Bride committed to her rest. Some after came the hastie Bridegroome, calling for Torches that he might behold the Goddesse her honoured, and as he was preparing himselfe to bed, he was troubled with such feares, passions and apoplexie, as now he seemed more like a ghost then a man. Perforce he was constrained to forsake the Chamber, when the extremitie of the sit-some-what allwaging, and his former lowe passions freshlie assailing him, comming to the Princesse againe, heavily he thus spake.

Ah Agriola, Ladie and sole Mistresse of my heart, I thinke thou art some Goddesse, or (at least) exceeding al humanitie: so strange is this aduenture, as neuer any man (I thinke) heard of the like. Alas, cannot thy anger be appeased: nor thou induced to leue him, who for thy sake endures most horrible torments? I pray thee be not the cause of my death: or if thou needes wilt, suffer me first to enioy the fruites of my desires. Know my Lord answered Agriola, that with my will you neuer shall enioy it, & if perforce you seeke to dishonour me, assure your selfe I am resolued, rather to suffer endlesse miseries, then to violate my faith to my loyall Husband: for such is my trust in God, that hee will not forget such as call on him. But in respect thou hast not bene cruell to me, nor hast exercised mee with any tyrannie, I shall suffer thee to lye vpon the bed by mee, as my Brother might do, and sometime (though it be more then modestie) embrace thee in mine armes: but if further thou presumest, thou maist not be permitted, but shalt lose that fauour, thy selfe, and me together. Mdaame, quoth he, in graunting me that courtesie, you saue my life, for I haue many Concubines to qualifie those passions, and neuer will I attempt your dishonour while I liue, if I but offer the motion, refuse me for euer. I shall therefore account of you as my Sister, and death shall not make me do contrarie to your appointment. The yong Princesse glad of his

solemne promise, gaue him a kisse or two more, and suffered him to embrace her: but other kindnes could he neuer obtaine, contenting himselfe with this, because he loued her so specially. At fifteene daies end, the feastes being ended, the Princes tooke their leaue of the great Soltane, who with many rich presents sent them home into their Countries. Thus remained Agriola with the great Turke, and the Knight to whome Olimael, had giuen Ptolome and Colmelio, sailed with his prisoners into Aethiopia: and thenceforward vsed them not as slaues, but as Gentlemen of good qualitie, especially Ptolome, whom her reputed a hardie Knight, and a man borne to great enterprises.

CHAP. LXII.

How Palmerin after his recreation, returned to the sea side, and seeing the Shippe and his company gone, made great lamentation, and what after followed.

Before in this History you haue heard, how Palmerin walking on shore with his Faulcon on his fist, desired to see the pleasantnes of the Isle, and finding so many delights to withhold him, returned not toward the Ship till it was neere night: but when he came thither againe, and could not see the Ship nor any one to question withall, he was greatly amazed, running heere and there, yet all to no purpose. Sometime he imagined that Trineus had betrayed him, because he had acquainted him with his loue towards his Sister: and then againe resolued himselfe on the contrary. All about he looked

ken for his companions, not knowing what to think: whether they were caryed away by Pirats, or taken Prisoners by the Inhabitants of the Island. In the end, having compassed in his minde all imaginations he could, and seing that by his reward of pleasure he had lost his Friendes: he entred into many sorrowfull lamentations, farre exceeding Cadmus when he lost his Souldiours by the horrible Serpent, curssing and exclayming on himselfe, as he had bene guiltie of the death of his Father. Alas (quoth he) why did I not remember these wretched misfortunes by poore Varnan? whose sorrowes was likewise procured by a Hawke, in an hapelesse houre was this wicked Wyrd given me. Ah trecherous and deceiuing strumpet, I thinke thou art some incorporate Fiende sent from Hell to inure the most constant Louers: and therefore gentle Diule, or rather enchaunted diuell, thou shalt neuer hereafter displease any other, so taking her by the necke, he pulled her in peeces, and said.

Ah sweete Ladie Polynarda, how contrary is Fortune? and how unhappely our desires prevented? well am I assured, if Trineus come to the Court without me, it will endaunger your life, and the onely thing that shaldes mee frō death, is comfortable hope to see you once again. Therfore diuine Philtrelle, I call for your succour, that by your gracious assistaunce, I may endure these vehement occasions. Ah gentle Princelle Agriola, how haue I deceiued you: but in requitall of your wrong, no rest nor ease shall possesse my soule, till I haue brought Trineus and you to as great ioy, as by my meanes you haue received discomfort. In these complaints he laide him down under a Tree, and so wasted the time till morning came, when seing no creature to speake withall, nor any meane for him to passe the Sea: he determined to trauaile through the Island till he might meete some bodie to conferre with. Thus hauing no defence, but his sword under his arme, hee walked along, and at length he met a Mayde with foure Spanielles,

and a Marlin on his fist: whom hee humbly saluting, demaunded the name of the Countrey, and if there were any shipping neere for his passage. The Moore perceiuing by his language, that he was a Thessalian, in great anger answered, Art thou come so farre to seeke thine owne misfortune: by Mahomet I shall welcome thee hither with a vengeaunce. So laying hand on his Semitary, Palmerin perceiuing by his gesture (though he vnderstood not his talke) that he wished him no good: wherefore drawing his sword, he gaue the Moore such a stroke on the head, as he cleaued it to his very teeth, and said, By God villaine, thou shalt not take me prysoner, or send me into the Sea to seeke my ransome, and so may all discourteous varlets be serued, as resemble thee in conditions. Thus leauing the Moore dead, he tooke an other way, least if he should bee followed, hee might fall into daunger: but seeing he was vnarmed, and could not speake the Arabian tongue, hee imagined that at length he must needes be taken. Hereupon he returned backe to the Moore, and taking his garments, left his owne there, and thence forward determined to counterfeit himselfe dumbe: by which subtiltie hee thought to escape vnknowne, and preuent his imprisonment, till he founde meanes to returne towards Allemaigne againe. The day stealing on a pace, and darke night approching, he came to a faire Fountaine, of the cleerest water (in his opinion) that euer he saw, where he laying him downe to rest, consumed the night so quietly as he could. On the morrow he began to remember his miseries, his daungers past, and such as were imminent, the conceit whereof made him very melancholly: so after he had eaten a little breade, which he found in the Moores budget, according to the manner of Diogenes, he laid him downe againe and slept.

CHAP.

CHAP. VII.

How Palmerin counterfaiting himselfe dumbe in the Ile of Calpha, was found by certaine Turkes, as he lay a sleepe by the Fountaine: and how he was receiued into the seruice of Alchidiana, Daughter to the Soldane of Babilon.

NOw that you may the more easily vnderstand, in that which followeth, the full intent of our discourse, you must call to memorie, how Gamezio, who was slaine before Constantinople by the Prince Florendos, as you haue heard in the first part of this History: was Son to ỹ Soldane of Babylon named Mysos, & Brother to Maulicus, who at his death was a very yong Prince. Mysos vnderstanding by his Subiectes ỹ Gamezio, the hope of his declining age, was gone by the summons of Atropos, to the habitatiõ of his Gods, could not afterward enioy any health of body, or quiet in mind, and therefore ere a yeere was fully expired, he went to seeke his Sonne among his equalles in the fieldes of Elysium. Before he toke this iourney, wherein no creature returneth againe, hee charged his succeeding Sonne Maulicus, to reuenge his Brothers death: being perswaded, that himselfe should not be discharged of his infortunate remembraunce, in the other world, if he failed to accomplish his latest commaundement. Maulicus, not to hinder his departure promised he would, yet could he not fulfill it, beeing troubled in his own kingdoms, more then 20. yeeres after.

But after he had reduced the rebellious Prouinces into obedience, he maryed with the King of Armenias Daughter, by whom he had the Princesse Alchidiana, one of the most beautifull and gratious Ladies in her time: who being come to age of experience, was so loued of her Father, as he would neuer suffer her out of his sight, so that he made denyall to all such as requested her in marriage. Alchidiana, when she vnderstood her owne singularity, desired the company of the most beautifull Ladies in Asia, because she held this opinion, that when ỹ fayrest were present, beauty would then be most splendant. For this cause shee sent to Prince Guilharan, Sonne to Polidia her Mothers Sister, that hee should bring his Sister Ardemia to the Court, who was counted the Paragon through all the Monarchy of Babylon.

She being come to the Cittie of Calpha from whence the name of the Island was deriued, her Cozin Alchidiana deuised all the meanes she could to entertaine her withall, and among other Courtly recreations, they daily vsed hawking and hunting. It so came to passe, that these Princesse and Gallants of the Soldans Court, now ryding to they⁊ pleasure, the Knights delighting the Ladyes in beholding the braue voltages of their Horses, and their swiftnes in course like the winges of *Pegasus*: after chovse of many places for game, they came by the Fountaine where Palmerin lay a sleepe so soundly, as he neither heard they⁊ horns nor hallowing. Which when one of the Women perceiued, intending to make all the other laugh, hee allighted from his Horse, and comming to him that meant no body harme, sayd. By Iupiter this sleepy fellow is drunke, but I will awake him, that hee may iudge the ꝓize of our course: with which words he gaue Palmerin such a blow on the eare, as made him turne his heade on the other side. Palmerin suddainly starting vp, and seeing him stand scorning that thus had strooken him, he drew his sworde, and therwith sealed the Woman a quittaunce for his life, whereat the

the other Ambushed, came to reuenge theyr companyons death: but Palmerin casting his Mantle about his arme, layd about him so lustily, as he sent fiue more after their fellow, and any one that came neere him, he layde at his mote, eyther maimed or slaine outright. Alchidiana marueilling at this stratageme, as also to heare the outragious noyse of the Moores, came riding towards them, demanding what hee might be, that made such hauock in her presence: The Knights gaue place to the Princesse, so that she came very neere to Palmerin, who inraged like a saluage Boare in the wood, made a bloody massacre among the Moores, e whē she beheld his braue and comely featured bodie and hardy courage, thee perswaded herselfe that he was descended of high and Noble byrth, and if thee sought not meanes to cease this turmoyle, it would proceede to a greater daunger: therfore (moued with pittie) she commanded her people on paine of theyr liues, to holde themselues quiet while she demaunded the cause of this tumult.

Palmerin well pleased that the Princesse so succoured him, imagined by her exceeding Beauty, and sumptuous ornaments, that thee was theyr Soueraigne, wherefore casting himselfe at her feete, offered her his Swoorde: which courtesie not a little contenting her, saide: I know not my Friend, whither thou be Knight or Squire, but whatsoeuer thou art, seeing (of thine owne good will) thou hast thus yelded to me, I will defend thee against all other. Wherefore tel me what hee was, that against my will did first assayle thee? Palmerin with reuerent obeisance, made signes of his thankfulnesse, and with such good countenaunce dissembled to be dumbe, as one would haue iudged hee had neuer spoken. This poyeman (quoth Alchidiana) the Gods offered great wrong, in depriuing him of speech: for this I will say, (hadst thou vtterance) thou wert one of the braueste accomplished men of this world, both in sweete complexion, courtesie and hardinesse. Notwithstanding, thou must needs be high in theyr grace, being able to encounter with so many,

and

and defend thy selfe so worthily as thou hast done. Then was she certified by an ancient Knight, that one of the Squires of her Chamber smote him as hee lay a sleepe, which he reuenged in such sort as she had seene. Trust me (quoth she) the dumbe man did as well beseemed him, wherefore in respect of his ciuilitie, and that he can so well correct the ouerboldnesse of soles: I will entertaine him as one of our Court, forbidding any to wrong him, as they tender my fauour and their owne liues. So commanding buriall for the dead, & prouision for the wounded, she went to her Pauillion, which was not farre off, willing Palmerin (by signes) to goe with her, deliuering him his Sword againe, and saying he would be her seruant. Humble graces did Palmerin requite her withall, and in signe of his obeysance offered to kisse her feete, but she would not permit him, and taking him vp by the hand, sayd: Loke that hereafter thou go not from me, whereto by signes he consented, knowing that by her meanes he should be safely protected. While these courtesies on either side endured, the Princesse Ardemia & the other Ladies entred the Pauillion: but Palmerin earnestly beholding Ardemia, was amazed at her wonderfull beautie, imagining that shee much resembled his Ladie Polynarda, so that breathing forth a vehement sigh, he could hardly with-hold himselfe from speaking. The tables being couered for their hunting banquet, very choyce delicates were serued in on great plates of Gold, garnished with very pretious and costly stones, which caused Palmerin to marualle not a litle, who the Princesse seeing so sad, said: How now my Friend: dost thou not thinke thy selfe safe in my presence? Beleeue me on my word, if any one displease thee, he shall presently die the death. So causing him to sit by her at the table, intreated him so well, as he had beene one of the chiefest Barons in her Fathers Court. The Tables withdrawne, the Hunters had started the Hare: which was so narowly pursued by the Hounds, as to saue her selfe, she ranne into the

Prin-

Princesse Vaillion, but the Greyhounde, was so speedy of pace, as he caught her in the presence of Alchidiana, who with her owne handes tooke her from the dogge, and gaue her in keeping to one of her Pages. By this time it drewe towards night, wherfore each one mounting on their Palfrayes, set forward to the Citie: the two Princesses hauing no other talke all the way, but of the singular behauiour of the dumbe knight. They riding faire and easily, because Palmerin trauelled by them on foote, Ardemia beholding his goodly Sword, demanded of him if hee were a knight, which he by signes made known vnto her, whereof Alchidiana very toyfull, said, that thee would present him to the Soldan her Father, and for this cause, the more she beheld him, the greater pleasure she conceiued in him. Being now come to the Gates of *Calpha*, there stood many knights ready with lighted Torches to conduct the Ladies and their traine to the Pallace, which was so rare and sumptuously edified, as Palmerin was amazed to see such roialtie.

All the way Alchidiana had the dumbe knight by her side, giuing him her hand to alight frō her Palfray, which he did with exceeding reuerence, and nothing discontented with his office: but many knights and Princes there present, murmured thereat, thinking him not worthy to come so neere her, nor might he be so suffered, but that the Princesse somewhat enamoured of him, would suffer none to contrary her pleasure: hnd leaned on his arme al the while she went vp the staires of the Pallace, to giue the good euen to the Soldane, who staied his daughters returne in the great Hall. Still leaned she on Palmerin, till shee came to her Father, who sat in a magnificent Chaire of estate, hauing the resemblance of the firmament ouer his head, (after the Turkish maner) so garnished with Rubyes and Dyamonds, which with the lights of the Torches shined most gloriously: whereat Palmerin wondred, conducting the Princesse with so braue gesture, as many reputed him

some

some Noble personage, and others (enuiously) thought the worst of him.

The Soldane, who loued his Daughter as you haue heard before, arose from his Chayre to welcome her home, demanding what sporte she had on Hunting, and if she had brought any Venison home with her? Certes my Lorde, (qd. she) we haue better fortune then you thinke on: but before I declare the manner thereof to you, will it please you to giue me what I haue founde this day? The Soldane, not able to denye his Daughter any thing, liberally graunted her request. A thousand thankes, good Father (quoth she) this dumbe Knight hath your Maiestie giuen me, who (in his owne Defence) hath this day slaine certaine of your Knights, and hereof you may assure your selfe, that hee is one of the most hardyest Gentlemen that euer came into these partes. Seeing it is your request Daughter (quoth he) I could be well contented to graunt it, but how shall I answere the Friendes of the murthered, to whome I haue alreadie promised, that for his offence he shall be deliuered to the Lyons? So, which of these graunts ought best to be kept, yours, being my Daughter, wherein Nature rileth, or theyrs beeing my Subiects, which the Lawe commandeth? I may not be iudge herein, saide the Princesse: Notwithstanding, mee thinks (vnder your Highnes correction) that you haue bene but hardly counselled, to giue a sentence so cruell, hauing not yet hearde or seene the partie. And albeit hee were guiltie of blame, as hee is not, but before his condemnation, hee ought to be hearde how hee could cleere himselfe, but if hee must dye, I hauing assured him life, and taken him into my defence, the disgrace is so great to mee, as mine Honour must remaine for euer condemned. And you my Lord and Father, whose Authoritie may discharge me of this reproache, if you refuse now to assist me, the griefe hereof will be my death. These words shee spake with such affection, and so beautie weeping, as would haue moued a stony heart to pitty her: wherefore Maulicus touched with

naturall

naturall remorse, sayd. You shall perceiue Daughter what I haue deuised, to the end my word may not be impeached: He shall be put into the Lyons Denne, and suddainly taken out againe, by this meanes I shall keepe my promise to his accusers, and satisfie your earnest desire. And the better to content you herein, his enemies shall be perswaded that he escaped the Lyons with life, and then will I giue him safety throughout all my dominions. The Princesse fearing the blood thirstie desire of the Lyons, could not so content herselfe, which Palmerin perceiuing, that the Father and Daughter thus contended for him: fell downe on his knee before the Soldane, making signes that he should accomplish his promise, for he feared not the daunger of his life. Maulicus mistaking hereat, perswaded his Daughter that being so hardie, he might escape: therfore to content herselfe, for things should be handled in such sort, as the knight should no way be endaungered. These wordes somewhat contented the Princesse, caused Palmerin to be conducted to his Chamber, charging him that was appointed to attend on him, to see that he were very honorably vsed, and in the morning to bring him againe before her Father. The Soldane and his knightes spent all that euening, in diuers iudgments on the dumbe knight, each one being glad of the Soldanes sentence: but Alchidiana was so pensiue (considering the dangerous hazard hee should passe) as she flong to her Chamber, refusing all sustenaunce, and spending the time in dolorous complaints, desiring rather her owne death, then the dumbe knight should be any way harmed.

CHAP.

CHAP. V.

How Palmerin was put into the Denne among the Lyons and Leopards, and hauing killed three of them, escaped valiantly.

PAlmerin being brought to his Chamber, which was one of the most sumptuous in all the Pallace, according as the Princesse had appointed: he made signe to the Gentleman that attended on him, to withdraw himselfe, for hee was accustõed to be alone in his Chãber, which he immediatly did, being loth to offend him. Palmerin being alone by himselfe, gaue thanks to the God of heauen, who in midst of his misfortunes, caused such a gracious Ladie to fauour him so kindly, as defended his life when he was in daunger, and by whose meanes he conceiued good hope to escape his enemies handes, and to returne safely towards Allemaigne. His meditations ended, he betoke himselfe to rest, and in the morning, Linus the Gentleman that had him in charge, came and presented him before the Soldane, who commaunded him to be caryed presently to the Lyons. Alchidiana vnderstanding that the dumbe Knight was with her Father, sent him a rich Mantle of Scarlet, desiring him to weare it for her sake: which hee putting about him went frankly with his keeper to ỳ Lyons Denne, where ỳ doore being opened, he boldly entred, desiring God to assist him in this perrill. Palmerin being in ỳ Denne, because none of the Lyons should get forth to hurt any other, howeuer

God

God disposed of him: made fast the doore after him, and with his sword drawne, and his Mantle wraped about his arme, went to see how the Beastes would deale with him. The Lions comming about him, smelling on his clothes would not touch him: but (as it were knowing the blood royall) lay downe at his feete and licked him, and afterward went to their places againe. But there were among them three Leopards, that furiously came and assayled him, the formost whereof he paunched with his Sword, that he was able to do no more harme. The other two, although they had torne his Mantle, and put him in very great daunger, as they that looked in at the windowes and creuises perceiued: yet to their no little admiration, in the end he slew them both, and so went forth of the Den again, to whom Linus came and louingly taking him by the hand, brought him to the Soldane, to whom hee discoursed his fight with the Leopardes, and how gentle the Lyons had beene to him.

The Soldane greatly astonished hereat, made more estimation of him then he did before, and because the Lions refused to touch him, reputed him of royall parentage. Whereupon he sent for his Daughter, praying her to intreate him not as a Knight, but as a noble and vertuous Prince, considering his behauiour so well deserued. The Princesse entertained him very graciously, and hearing the successe of his happy fortune, spake thus in the hearing of them all. Because euery one shall know, Sir Knight, how much I honour your good gifts, I will cause my Father so well to loue you, as hee shall repent himselfe a thousand times of the daunger he put you to: and so very louingly embracing him, desired pardon on her own behalfe, because she suffered him to be thrust to the Lions. Palmerin in signe of attonement, & that he was nothing displeased, kissed her hand, and sitting downe in a Chaire by her, beheld Ardemia, who resembled his Mistresse so equall in beauty, and could not hold his eye from her, so that hee conceiued such

pleasure

pleasure in his regard, as he iudged it sustenance enough to maintaine life. But she that was ignorant of the cause, presumed that he loued her, wherfore thence forward, she began so amorously to affect him, as she enioyed no rest but in his presence. Thus were these two Ladies Alchidiana and Ardemia touched with one disease, and that so sharply to the quick, that the least torment they endured (seeing he could neither speake nor vnderstand their language) was worse to them then death. And so it fell out, that each of them thinking herselfe best beloued, cõcealed her thoughts from the other, and would in no case be reputed amorous, least so her desires should be discouered. Alchidiana for arguments of her loue, gaue him Horses, Squires, Seruaunts & Pages, so that the greatest Prince in the Court was no better equipped then he: & in this fortune such was his minde, that for all the honor and fauour ỳ Soldane and his Daughter bare him, he did not outreach himselfe in behauiour, but was so benigene and full of courtesie, that each one loued & desired to be familiar with him. And if any enterprise of Iustes or Tourneyes were in hand, Palmerin was ỳ formost in the field, and caried the prize away from all what soeuer, which incited Moulicus to loue him in such sort, that he entertained him into such special credite, as he wold neuer resolue on any matter of importance, without his shew of good lyking. And albeit the Princes of the Court shewed him good countenaunce, yet Enuy (that neuer can rest in ambitious harts) caused them in the ende to raise slaunder against him: which Palmerin perceiued, but being vnable to remedie, awayted conuenient time for his departure, notwithstanding the earnest affection Alchidiana bare him. He knew likewise so well to disguise his matters, that so often as the Princesse would hold him in talke, hee still feigned not to vnderstand her: which made her iealous towards Ardemia her Cozin, who by Alchidianaes iniuries, and Palmerins refusal of her loue, lost her life, as you shall read in the Chapters following.

CHAP.

CHAP. LXII.

How the Prince Maurice sent his Ambassadours to the Soldane, to desire safe conduct for his comming to the Court: to try if he could find any knight there, able to deliuer him of an extreame trouble, that hee endured by enchantment.

During the time that Palmerin was thus esteemed and beloued, in the court of the great Monarch of Assiria, vpon a Sunday after dinner, as the Soldane was in the great hall conferring with his Daughter, and many other great princes and Lords present: there entred a Page knight arme, except his Helmet, Gauntlets, which were carryed after him by two Squires, and making his solemne reuerence, humbled himselfe at Maulicus feete, saying: Most high and renoubted Monarch, my soueraigne Lord Maurice, sonne to Prince Palmeria, kisseth your highnesse hand, sending to require your gracious safe conduct, that himselfe may come to your Court, to trie among all your knights, if there be any one so loyall and valiant, as can deliuer him from a torment he endures, the most cruell and strange that euer was heard of, and happened to him in this sort.

The King Palmeria, great Gouernour of the Powes, and Father to my Lord, being vnable (through extreame age) to weild the gouernment of his Realme, gaue the administration thereof, and made his Lieutenant generall

my Lorde Maurice, a knight so hardie and puissant as any of his time, and so renowned for his bountie, sagacitie, and brave lineaments of bodie: as there is none of the Kings of Iudea, Egipt, Æthyopia, and neighbor Countreys round about, but gladly desire his Alliance and Friendship. So that many have sent their Embassadours vnto him, presenting their Daughters and Kingdomes to him, the greater part whereof he hath hitherto refused, excusing himselfe by his Fathers age and his owne youth. But as often times it happeneth, Fortune enemy to all good endevors, not suffering him to remaine in quiet, permitted that the Queene of Tharsus, the fayrest in all the Orientall partes, a young Widdow and rich, as is very well knowne: after shee had sent him many presents of incomparable valew, intreated him to come and see her, shadowing in this message, the great desire she had to match with him. The Prince seeing benigne and curteous, would not deny her, but in short time after iourneyed to her. The Queene entertaining him with great royaltie, and seeing in him farre more gracious and beautifull gifts, then before she heard reported: was so surprised with Loue, as in stede of loking to be lowed, herselfe was constrained to demaund, knowing so well to declare her desirous and affectionate passions, as the Prince moued with amorous pittie, graunted what she requested, without any further condition or promise, presuming on himselfe, in respecte of her great and favourable entertainment, that he would not leaue her for any other. But herein was she deceiued, for the yong Prince having staid with her tenne or twelue dayes, desired leaue to depart, saying: that he had receiued Letters from his Father, which commaunded his spedie returne home againe, promising her, (if so his Father consented) to take her in Marryage, and that with such expedition as might be. The Queene somewhat contented with this answere, thinking he would performe what he promised, let him departe. He being come home into his owne Countrey, forgot his Loue to his new

Friend,

Friende, and by his Fathers commaundement, marryed with a young Princelle, Daughter to the King Lycomedes. The Queene hearing these newes, was almost dead with very conceite of griefe, and conceiued such hatred against the Lord Maurice, as she determined to be reuenged on him, whatsoeuer came after. And the better to compasse her intent, she sent to search out one of her knights, a learned Magician, promising him, if hee would helpe her to be reuenged on him that so deceyued her, she would make him one of the chiefest of her Realme. The Magician who euermore was desirous to please her, promised her to worke such a deuise, that Maurice should endure such cruell torments, as herselfe should be constrayned to pittie him. And to accoumplish this practise, hee only desired the King her Fathers Crowne, which was one of the richest in the whole World: which Crowne hee Coniured in such sorte, as the Diuell himselfe coulde not imagine the like, and comming therewith to the Queene, saide:

Madame, you must sende this Crowne to the Prince of Pelmeria, desiring him for your sake he will weare it on his head in the chiefest affayres of his estate, which he immediately will accomplish: but this I dare assure you, that hereby he shall suffer so many verations, as he would endure a thousand deaths if hee could possible, to be deliuered from this torment, which he shall neuer be, till the most loyall louer in the World take it from his head. The Queen so ioyfull hereof as could be, sent the Crown to the Prince, who receiued it thankfully, and beholding it so sumptuous, suddenly put it vpon his head: But presently sieive out of his head such a flame of fire, as it had beene the blaze that commeth from a discharged Cannon. Then called hee for ayde and succour, making the greatest Lamentations that euer were heard: but all was to no ende, for no knight or Lady there could do him any good: and so all the whole day hee remained in this cruell martyrdome, burning alius, yet not perishing, resembling the Salamander in the extreame fire.

fire. When his people saw that they could procure him no ease, they sent two of the greatest Lords of the Realme to the Quéene, who humbly intreated her to pitty the Prince: and to recompence the faulte he had committed, hee should take her to his Wife, and endowed her with those honourable possessions belonging to him. The Quéen entertayned them very Noblie, and after shee had vnderstood theyr message, answered:

My Lordes, the marriage betwéene your Maister and me is intollerable, and no way can hee now Contract himselfe againe: For I remembring his disloyaltie, and he the torments he suffers by my meanes, it were impossible that we should lovingly liue together, therfore in this matter you shall excuse me. And let him know, that seeing hee was so presumptuous, contrary to his faith and promise, to refuse me for his Wife, I now so much disdaine and contemne him, as my heart by no meanes can bee induced to loue him. And no other remedie, there for his torments, but that hee séeke through Asia, Europe, and Affrica, a Louer so perfect, who by his loialty may ease the paines he suffers, for his treachery and treason. With this short answer depart my Countrey: for your Maister is so vnworthie of fauour, as for his sake, I hate his people.

The Eubassadours marueling at this Fatall destény, returned to theyr Lord, to whō they reported the Quéenes answere, and what remained to ease his affliction, which more and more encreased his griefe: wherfore séeing what he was enioyned to do: The next day he left the Court, entending not to stay a day in any place, till hee should finde a Knight so vertuous & loyall. Thus hath he trauelled Æthyopia, India, Tartaria, and the greater part of your Dominions, but as yet he hath found none to remedie his misfortune: but if any other disloyall Knight in triall touche the Crown, his veratiōs are far more greater then before. For this cause most mighty Lord, hauing heard the great fame of valiant Knights in your Court, especially of a straunger

Knight

Knight being dumbe, who came hither but of very late time: hee desires your Maiestie, his assurance granted, to suffer him to trie his fortune here, if in your presence he may finde any helpe, or else to seeke further in other Princes Courts. These are the principall points of my charge, may it please your highnesse to consider of mine answer, hom I shall returne and certifie my Maister, that you may likewise see an aduenture most maruellous.

CHAP. VII.

How the Prince Maurice came to the Court of the Soldan of Babylon, where he was deliuered of his burning crowne, that tormented him, by the loyaltie of Palmerin.

MAulicus, wondring at this strange discourse, thus answered the Moore. You may (my friend) returne to your Maister when you please, and say from vs, that he shall be welcome to our Court, with as safe assurance as our own person: as well for his valour and bounty which I haue heard greatly esteemed, as for that we are desirous, to see so strange an aduenture ended in our presence. And we cannot sufficiently maruaile, how he could be so forgetfull of himselfe, that after his faith broken, he could extinguish her remembrance that loued him so vnfeignedly: but herein may we behold the soueraignty of confident louers. Go then and certifie him of our pleasure, and that we

we pray our gods his coming may be in such an houre, as he may depart to his content: yet am I greatly afraid that he shall not finde any knight in our Court, but that either sorfaited or failed toward s his Ladie. The More kissing the Soldans hand, and humbly taking his leaue, returned to his Lord, leauing the Soldane and his Knights admiring this rare accident, so that he exorted euery one, to aduenture his fortune at this Crowne, to giue the greater assurance to their Ladies, of their loyall fidelitie: but many of them were herein deceiued, for in steed of prayse & glory, they receiued shame & reproch, as you shall see here after.

The Prince aduertised of the Soldans answer, in hope of good successe, set forward on his iourney, and the next day following he came to Calpha, where Maulieus caused him to be honourably lodged in the Cittie, because that day he would not come to the pallace. On the morrow after that Lethea wife to the Soldane, her Daughter Alchidiana, the faire Ardemia, with many other Ladies and Princes were come into the hall, to see the tryall of this noueltie: Prince Maurice vnderstanding how the Soldan with all his Courtly assistants stayd his comming, went to the Pallace, accompanyed with an hundred Knights, all clad in mourning blacke, in signe of their continuall sorrow for their Princes mis-fortune. There was he very royally entertained, the Soldane causing him to sit by him, in a sumptuous Chaire of estate, of purpose prouided, and after many welcomes and kinde gratulations, the Soldane demaunded how he felt himselfe, and whether he sustained any ease of his torment. Ah my Lord, quoth the Prince, I cannot expresse to your Maiesty the pain which I feele, being a thousand times worse to me then death, euery houre enforcing me to despaire, but I must endure it with what patience I can, till incomparable loyaltie discharge me of this burden. With these words he lamented exceedingly, so that each one was moued to pittie him, for such a burning flame continued in the Crowne, and so furious heats

pre-

procéded from his mouth, as sette the Hall in meruaylous hotnes, yet consumed he nothing at all, but in euery part was so formall as any other man. Beloued Cozin, said the Soldáne. for my selfe, I will not enterprise to meddle with your Crowne, for I do not imagine my selfe so fauoured of loue, as I can finish that wherein so many haue fayled, nor would I willingly séeke mine owne dishonour, being farre vnable to profit you: as for my knightes, let them make proofe of their loyaltie and spare not, and sée which of them can winne the honour of this aduenture. Hereupon Guilharan, Brother to fayre Ardemia first entred, and cõming to the enchaunted Prince, sayd. Trust me my Lord, since I began my profession in loue, I neuer committed any preiudice to my Lady, therfore will I try to ende this enchauntment.

Then earnestly beholding Alchidiana, for whose loue onely he came to the Court, he approched to the enchaunted Prince, and puld so hard as he could at the Crowne, but he crying aloude, sayd, For Gods sake Sir knight strine no longer, for if by disloyalty I could be cured, I see you are able to giue me remedy. Alas, in all my life I neuer felt like payne, by any knight that tryed his fortune, great néede haue you to do seuere penuance, if you will bee fauoured by loue any more, towards whom you haue so heynously offended, for my infirmitie may not be holpen, but by loyalty, firmnes, faithfull pursuit, cõstant perseuerance, and such other honoured vertues esteemed in loue, whereof you haue not the least particular. Thus retyred this new louer, more ashamed then a Virgin to hee séene lightly disposed, and so sette downe among the other knights, whose fortune proued as effectuall as the first, to their owne disgrace, and great torment of the languishing Prince. The kings and auncient Princes, seeing the yong knights could do no good, put themselues in deuoire, each one conceiuing so well of himselfe, as if their fortune serued to ende the aduenture, their yeares should carry the honour,

and they be renewed for euer by their Ladies: but their vaine conceit and desire to accomplish an impossibilitie, much abused them, so that they shamefully remained frustrate in their intents, and the paines of the inchanted Prince greatly augmented, who thus spake to them. Truly my Lords, it is the custom of your auncient and audacious opinions, to extoll your loues and valour: but for any thing I see, your olde yeeres haue much lesse merited amorous mercy, then the indiscreet and vnconstant dealing of these yong Princes. Then seeing that no other offered to proue his vertue, deliuering many grieuous sighes, he said: Vnhappy wretch that I am, how much more had it beene to my ease and benefite, if the Queene of Tharsus (whom I so heynously offended) would haue contented her selfe in her reuenge, as cause me to be peecemeale torne in sunder, then thus haue deliuered me into this insupportable vexation, the ende whereof will neuer be accomplished, seeing that this honourable Court of my Lord the Soldane, I find no one can giue me comfort.

Palmerin hearing the Lamentation of this amorous Martyr, fell into a profound imagination, and after he had long regarded Ardemia, who so liuely resembled his Mistresse Polynarda, said within himselfe: Ah sweet Madame and onely Mistresse, vouchsafe at this instant to assist me, for by your succour I shall now make proofe of my faithfull and inuiolable loyaltie: which neuer in ought offended you, if not at Durace in affecting Laurana, whom I simply thought to be the Lady, who was so often promised in my visions. But seeing my thoughts neuer sorted to effect, as also that I was deceiued in your name: that ought not be imputed to me for any trespasse, and therefore diuine Goddesse be fauorable to me. Then suppriſed with suddaine ioy, he beganne againe earnestly to behold the Princesse Ardemia: who imagining herselfe onely beloued of him, cast forth a bitter sigh, and turning to Alchiana, sayd: Ah Madame and my deere Cozin, what great fault hath this

cruell

cruel Quéene committed, appointing her Magique in such sort, as loyall and faithfull Ladies may not bee suffered herein, for deliverance of this yong and beautifull Prince: doubtlesse he should sooner receiue helpe by them then by Knights, for much more loyally do they loue then men, and are in their affections firme and constant. Alchidiana, who felt herselfe touched with this intricate fury, whereof the faire Ardemia complained: suddainly conjectured, whereto her sighes and faultring speeches tended, which raysed priuate conceit, and such a vehement attaint of iealousie, as she would not aunswer any word, but feigning to smell some discontented sauor, turned her face the contrary way. Palmerin loking round about him, and seing none would meddle with the aduenture: fell one his knee before the Soldane, crauing leaue by signes to try his fortune, which he granted, and in a laughter, said: Goe thy waies dumbe knight, and in such an houre maist thou touch the crowne, that all the honour may fall to thy share. Then Palmerin hauing his eye fixed on her, who in beauty did paragon his onely Mistresse, exalting his minde with an intire sigh, secretly sayd:

Ah mirrour of excellency, although my body bee farre distant from you: yet am I in spirit day and night in your presence, being so confidently assured of your loue, that is no iote inferiour to mine, which very thought makes me thinke you present before me. Wherefore cheefe Mistresse and Gouernesse of my life, you shall now receiue the honor, that by the vertue of your faithfull Seruant you ought to haue: for I hold my selfe towards you, so innocent and pure, as néedes must answerable successe repay so good deseruing. Then laid he hand on the burning Crowne, which he toke from his head so easily, as though no enchantment at all had held it: and then ceassed the vehement heate in Maurice, and from his mouth came odifferous and swéete sauours, as euery one present delighted to séele thym. The Prince so ioyfull as could bee for his deliuerance, as may

well

well be coniectured, prostrated himselfe at Palmerins feete, and with vnspeakeable ioye, thus saide: Most Noble and fortunate Knight, how much am I bound and indebted to thee: right happy was the houre of thy Byrth, but much more happy my Journey to see thee: let my word suffice, I so farre deliuer my selfe yours, as my selfe, my subiects, my possessions, or whatsoeuer els is mine, I freely offer to your disposition. Palmerin, who euer bare the mind of a valiant knight, was displeased that so great a Prince should honour him with such reuerence, wherefore with great humilitie he toke him vp in his arms, causing him to sit down where before he did: But the Soldane and all his Lords greatly amazed, not so much at his courtesie, as his gracious Fortune, did him all the honour could be deuised: but hee bashfull of this ouergreat kindnesse, kneeled down before Maulicus, shewing by signes that himselfe was altogether vnworthy of such honor, but his Maiesty, to whome that rich Crowne worthily appertained, which hee presenting the Soldan kneeled down to kisse his feet, but Maulicus would not suffer him, & taking him vp by the hād, said: Sir knight, we hartily thank you for the great pleasure you haue done vs, promising you by the faith of a Prince, that this crown shalbe kept in our Treasurie, in witnes that we had in our Court, the most loyall and honourable among all Knights. In recompence whereof, wee giue you this Citie, with all th'appurtenances thereto belonging, and to morrow will we put you in possession therof. Oh that it pleased the immortall powers, and their great prophet Mahomet, to deliuer you speech, whereof you are destitute: For I sweare by their high and immortall Name, wee would make you the greatest in all our kingdoms. Palmerin with humble gesture returned his thankfulnesse, signifying that he would haue neither Cities nor Castles, but that it sufficed him to be one of his Knights: notwithstanding, the Prince by importunate meanes gaue him rich gifts, & for his sake stayed there more then two moneths.

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

¶ How the Princesse Ardemia, enduring extreame passions and torments in Loue, made offer of her affections to Palmerin, which he refused: wherewith the Princesse (through extreame conceyte of griefe and despight) suddenly dyed.

EAsily may be cõiectured, the great pleasure of the two fayre Ladyes Alchydiana and Ardemia, beholding the only man whome they both loued as their liues, aspyring to obtaine the honour of the Enchaunted Crowne: For each of them seuerally perswaded herselfe, that hee had thus aduentured in honour of her Loue. And as they returned from the great Hall to their priuate Chambers, Alchidiana came and toke Palmerin by the hand, and walking onwards with him, thus spake:

Ah gentle Knight, how are you to be regarded aboue all other? I know not why the Gods should depriue you of speeche, except that in all things, this onely excepted, you should be perfectly resembled to them. Oh how happy is shee that might but aduenture to make you her Seruaunt: doubtlesse, if in her appeare so singular perfections, as apparantly shewe themselues in you: Well might it be reputed a rare coniunction, when the Celestiall dispositions gouerning they humaine affections, hath united you in so amyable alliance.

The Gentleman that attended on the Princesse, greatly murmured at this priuate Familiarities: but she was so immoderate in her affections, as Virginall modestie was

now

now forgotten, and careleſſe of regarde, openly ſhewed her deſires. Thus were theſe two Ladyes now, much more amorous of the dumbe knight then before: So that they were not well, but eyther in his companie, or thinking on him. Alchidiana remaining iealous of her Cozin, ſeemed not to loue her as ſhe was wont, but deuiſed all the meanes ſhe could, that ſhee might be ſent to her Fathers Court againe: yet ſhe that little made account thereof, ſought opportunitie to bewray her Loue to Palmerin, and by happe ſeeing Alchidiana in the Gallery, conferring with two of her Ladyes, ſhee entred alone into her Cozins chamber, where ſitting downe on the Bedde, ſhee compaſſed manie imaginations, how ſhe might diſcouer to the dumb knight, the ſecrete fire that was kindled in her Breſt. So long ſhe ſtayed there, till Palmerin came, becauſe about that time he was wont to viſite the Princeſſe Alchidiana. Ardemia ſo glad hereof as could be poſſible, ſuddenly ſtarted vp, and ſaluting him with more then common Reuerence, taking him by the hand, and cauſing him to ſit downe by her vpon the Bedde. Then enflamed with wonderfull paſſions, ſurpaſſing Paſiphaes deſire to the brutiſh Bull, when ſhe met him in the Wood made by Dedalus, ſhee beheld him with ſuch a piercing countenaunce, as the leaſt glimſe whereof, was able to confound the reaſon of the moſt conſtant perſon, as the aſpect of the Sunne in the ſigne of Leo, doth the eyes of the beholders, & of force to warme the coldeſt complexion, although it were an Eunuche himſelfe in her preſence. Then deliuering three or foure bitter ſighes, fetcht from the very bottome of her heart, as cruell as the ſtriuing pangs of death: ſhe toke a rich Dyamond from her finger, and put it on Palmerins, with theſe words:

Oh ſweete Friende, and onely comforte of my ſoule, let me intreate you to weare this as an argument of my loue, thereby to knowe, how well you eſteeme of mee, aſſuring you, that I am ſo deuoted yours: as if you vouchſafe to daigne me the fauour & honour by iourneying to the Court

of

of my Father with me, I neuer will haue any other Husbande but you, and there shall such account be made of you, as well beseemes a Knight so noble and vertuous.

Ah diuine defence of my life, and more worthy to be beloued then Loue himselfe, misdeeme not of these speeches so aduenturously uttered, by a young Ladie, and unmarried: for the fervent Loue I beare you is such, as I am constrained (forgetting the decent regard of a bashfull Virgin, who naturally is shamefaste) to esteeme of you honestly, and as is conuenable to mine estate. Then seeing the Gods, the place, the occasion, & the time permits mee to bewray, that which I dare not otherwise manifest: Haue then fayre Knight some pittie on me, & let me enioy assurance of that grace, for which I liue in ceaselesse torments. With which words she embraced him, & sealed so many sweete kisses on his hand, as apparantly deciphered her earnest affection.

Polinarda amazed at this strange accident, because shee was a Pagan, and contrary to him in Faith, that making no answere, but following the example of chaste Ioseph, who refused Zephirah Wife to Putiphar, great Prouoste to the King of Egypt: started from her suddenly, and being moued with displeasure, departed the Chamber, thinking in himselfe, that such occasions more ouer rule the hearts of men, then all other matters that might bee deuised, and only the practises of hellish Pluto. Then calling to his Ladie for assistance, said to himselfe. Ah sweet Mistresse, succour now your Seruant, for I rather deeme a thousand deaths, then to violate the chaste honour of mine Loue, or to giue that fauour to this Lady which is only yours. Alchidiana by chance seeing Palmerin when he entred her chamber, & perceiuing him to depart againe: imagined presently the truth of the cause: wherefore entring the Guarderobe, which was adioyning to her Chamber, she closely stood and heard all that had passed, and at his comming forth spake him in this manner.

Not without great cause (gen Knight) didst thou take

the

the Fatall Crowne from the head of Meurice, for in thée is more firmnesse and continencie, then is in the disloyall Ardemias unchaste desires and villainy: but in an unfit time did she rip open her unmaidenlike affections, for I will publish her shame to every one, and cause her to be lesse esteemed then a knowne offender.

Palmerin fearing that in her Choller shee would do no lesse then she saide, fell on his knée before her, intreating her by signes to forbeare, or otherwise it would be his death. Shee seeing him so fayre and gracious, and thus to humble himselfe at her feete, qualified her displeasure, promising to keepe it in secrete. So Palmerin withdrewe himselfe to his Chamber, leaving the two Ladyes now together: but Ardemia agrieued at the dumbe knightes refusall, would not reueale her wrong to Alchidiana, (who so soone as Palmerin was out of hearing) thus beganne. Why, shamelesse Ardemia, thinkest thou thy Beauty of such value, that the knight, to whom my Father and I gaue done so great honours, would leaue vs, and depart with thée: trust mee thou art farre from thine account: For if thou vauntest to do him such honour in thy Fathers Court, as his Nobility deserueth, it consisteth in my power to exalt him more in one houre, then thou canst do in a thousand yéeres, mightest thou liue so long. I did neuer thinke that such audacious and incontinent tempting a man could euer enter thy heart: but if such be thy disposition, thou oughtest rather to contain thy selfe within thy Fathers Court, where thou mayest haue leasure to follow thy base affection, with some Varlets or Youthes attending on thy Father, then to offer such a motion here in my Chamber. Hence, hence, forth of my presence: For I will not keepe companie with such an intemperate Woman. What regard hadst thou of thy great linage, or the place from whence thou art descended? Yea, what comfort wilt it be to me when I shal heare, that a Lady issued of the blood royall, should be more shamelesse and impudent then a Strumpet, a villaine, or an high way

beg-

begger? Many other such like hard speeches vsed Alcidiana, all which greeued her not so much, as to be despysed of him, whom she reputed as passionate for her loue, as shee was for his.

These high words of the Princesse, caused the Ladies attending on Ardemia to enter the Chamber, which made her then breake off, because she would not haue euery one know the matter: and they seeing their Mistresse so sad and discõforted, brought her to her owne Chamber, where on her bedde she sorrowed so impatiently, as each one feared she would murtie her selfe, and fayne shee would, but that their presence hindered her, therefore shee deferred it till better opportunitie. And because she had spent the most part of her yonger yeeres, in reading the workes of Poets, as well Greekes as Arabians, shee remembred the mournfull Tragedie of Biblis: which caused her to frame a Dyttie, that she had translated from the Greeke poesie of Sapho, into her vulgar speech, and turning towardes her Ladies and Gentlewomen, she began in this manner.

The lamentable Dittie of *Ardemia*, *dying for loue.*

MVse not (faire Virgins) at Ardemia,
Although her end be hard and dolorous:
For death is pleasant as mine elders say,
To any Ladie sometime amorous.

For as the Swan in colde Meander *glyde,*
By mournfull notes foretelles her speedy death:
So my complaint doth bid me to prouide,
For sweetest loue makes hast to stop my breath.

The

The yll that endlesse and vnceſſantly
Torments my heart, is faire and choiſeſt beauty:
And this vnhappy awkward deſtiny,
Falls to my lot through ſpotleſſe loyalty.

For fond conceit that ouer-rulde my witte,
More wretched then faire Biblis *maketh me:*
And he I loue more ſtony hard is knit,
Then Caunus *who could ken no courteſie.*

Yet Biblis *often times could eaſe her heart,*
By ſweete deuiſing with her lonely frend:
But he I honour, reeks not of my ſmart,
Nor will vouchſafe one gracious looke to lend.

And as her ſorrowes chiefly did ariſe,
Becauſe the ſecrets of her loue were knowne:
So I reueald, each one will me deſpiſe,
Which death can ſtint ere it to farre be blowne.

Vnhappy wretch, that could not this foreſee,
And be more charie of ſo choyſe a thing:
But all too late I wiſh the remedie,
Therefore my folly doth due guerdon bring.

If loue that is eſteemd a power diuine,
Vnto his Seruants giue ſo ſharpe reward:
what merit may vile hatred then reſigne,
Vnto his vaſſailes that his Lawes regard?

Oft haue I heard mine ancient elders say,
That such as laue not, are vnworthy life:
Yet doth my loue imagine my decay,
And throwes my hope into whole worlds of strife.

And yet the paines I wish for my mischance,
May not be valued with my present woe:
For to compare them is meere dalliance,
And neither sense or reason should I show.

Life is to me lothsome and burdenous,
All pleasure seemes to me tormenting hell:
Ah poore refused, and abused thus,
Must thou needs die for louing all too well?

O sacred Venus, patroneſſe of loue,
In this distreſſe wilt thou not pittie me?
And thy faire Sonne that thus his shaft did proue,
Will he forsake me in this ieopardy?

If you forsake me in this iust request,
And will not fauour what you did procure:
Giue leaue to him that bringeth all to the rest,
And he will ease the torments I endure.

You fatall Sisters that haue spunne my thred,
And now thinke good it should be cut in twaine:
Fulfill the taske as you are destined,
And let my heart abide no longer paine.

Come sweetest Death, expected too too long,
End all the euills vnhappy Loue begun:
If thou delay, I challenge thee of wrong,
Hast then good Death, that Loue and Life were done.

Her complainte thus finished, shee commaunded her Ladyes to departe the Chamber, and beeing alone by herselfe, shee againe beganne to consider, the rigorous refusall of Palmerin, the conceite whereof grieued her so extreamely, as also the reproachfull wordes of her Cozin: that making a conscience of her sorrowes, and raging with extreamitie of this despight, brake the veynes of her heart in sunder, and the Arteries of her body, as the blood issued forth at many places abundantly, and therewithall in shorte time she was strangled.

The nexte Morning, her chiefest Lady that attended on her, and loued her exceedingly, came to the Beddes side, to see how shee fared: but finding her dead, and so besmeared with her owne blood, gaue such a lowde shrieke, as Alchidiana and her Damozels affrighted at the noyse, ranne in all haste into the Chamber. The Princesse knowing the cause of this mischaunce, was marueilous sorrowfull, assuring herselfe, that those wordes she spake in her anger, occasioned this bloudie stratagem. And the rumor of this mishap was so sone spread through the Pallace, as all the Ladies, Damozells, Knights, Squires, and others, came to beholde the hard Fortune of Ardemia. What Lamentation was made on all sides, is not to be expressed, especially the Ladyes attendant on Ardemia, and her Brother Guilharan, who brought her with him thither: but her Gouernesse not able to endure the burthen of her heauinesse, without feare or dreade of any, thus openly complained. Ah swete Princesse Ardemia, the flowre of Beauty, how deere haste thou bought this precious gift: for I know assuredly, that for

this

this cause onely thy death happened: vnhappy was the houre when thou didst leaue thy Fathers Court, to accõpany the Princesse Alchidiana. After her moanes, & the funerall pompe accomplished, the Soldane erected her a most beautifull Tombe, with a sumptuous Coronet on the toppe thereof, being vpheld by two inestimable Pillers of engrauen and guilded Alablaster, the like whereof were neuer seene, since the first King of Greece. Yet was hee ignorant in the case of her death, and Palmerin not imagining whence this inconuenience did arise, was so sorrowfull for the death of the Princesse: as day and night hee mourned for her, and at length remembring her wordes to him, and doubting his vnkindnesse to bee the cause of her death, saide within himselfe.

Alas fayre Princesse, must I (at the first motion) driue thee to despayre: had I dissembled a little, or temporized the matter, thou hadst not fallen into this extremity, but my onely wilfull indiscretion, is cause of thy losse. O female sexe, how are you subiect to casuall passions: Yet needes I not wonder at this present mishap, or from the beginning of the World, the Woman hath bene so sudden and voluntary to the effect of her desires, were they good or euill, but especially in the action of loue, as neyther feare, honor, shame, torments, no nor death could diuert her from her vndiscreete fantasies. Here of beare record Hypermnestra, Myrrha, Deranira, Scylla, Phedra, Thisbie, Oenone Phyllis, Salmacis, Hero and Dydo, whose deathes were procured onely by lauish loue. O diuine wisedome, that hast suffered me to fall into this luckelesse accident, protect mee from any further disaduantage, seeing thou hast taken her hence, who gaue some ease to mine affections, in that so liuely shee resembled my sweet Mistresse, whom I desire to serue with continuall loyalty. I now perswade my selfe, that this loue was not accompanied with vertue, and that for my good it hath so chanced: forget mee not then, but so enable me, as in such bad occasions, I swarue

not from my vietie. And such is my confidence in thy promises, as no temptation shall preuaile against me: but this captiuitie once discharged, I hope to direct my course pleasing in thy sight, and to performe such gratious seruice, as thy name shall be exalted and glorified for euer. So long continued he in this silent contemplation, as Alchidiana perceiued him, which greatly displeased her: but fearing anyway to offend Palmerin, she durst not say what she thought, liuing in hope, that her Cozin being dead, she should now compasse the effect of her desires. Ardemia enterred in her honourable Tombe, Guilharan her Brother with his traine, and the Ladies that attended on his Sister, returned into Armenia, where great sorrow was made for the death of the Princesse, and the renowne of her beautie, blazed the report of her death through euery region.

CHAP. VII.

How Amarano of Nigrea, eldest Sonne to the King of Phrygia, vnderstanding the death of the faire Princesse Ardemia, who was newly promised him in marriage, made many greeuous lamentations for her losse. And how Alchidiana discouered her amorous affections to Palmerin.

SO farre was spread the report of the strange death of the Princesse Ardemia, as at length it came to the hearing of Amarano, eldest sonne to the King of Phrygia, the most valiant & redoubted knight of that country: as well for his great prowes & deeds of arm, which he before that time accomplished in Asia, as for his affable nature

nature, vertue & courtesie. This yong Prince, being in the King his Fathers Court, hearing commended beyond all other Ladies of the East, the faire Ardemia daughter to the King of Armenia: at the very sound of the Trumpe of this blazing Goddesse, and setting the newes down for true, from her affecting speech, he became so amorous of her, as he had no content but in thinking on her. Hereupon, he sent his Ambassadours to her father, to request her in marriage, whereto right willingly he condiscended, and now at the instant, when he intended to goe visite her, newes came to the court of her admirable death, which for a while was concealed from him, because each one doubted the conceit thereof would cause his death. For they knowing the loue he bare her to be so vehement, as he understanding her straunge kinde of death, they thought it impossible, but it would arise to very scandalous inconuenience, yet in the ende hee heard thereof: but to set downe heere the griefe, teares, and complaint of this yong Prince, is more then I am able, let it therefore suffise you, that his sorrowes were such, as euery houre his death was likewise expected. It was likewise told him, how through the enuie of Alchidiana, she dyed, and that (for certaintie) she was one of the cheefest causers thereof: which moued him then into such an alteration, as he swore by the great Prophet Mahomet, to reuenge her iniury, so that the Soldane should for euer remember the daunger in suffering so great a treason. In conclusion, he intended to take with him, two hundred chosen knights, all clad in mourning for the decease of their Maister, and foure of his brethren, knights of great hardinesse, and so well they iourneyed, as they came within twentie miles of the Soldans Court. But that we may not too farre swarue from our intent, Alchidiana, ioyfull (as you haue heard) for the departure of Guilharan and his company: from thence forward sought all the meanes she could, to conferre with Palmerin alone at her pleasure. And labouring thus in her tormenting passions, as it is com-

mon to all Louers, such account shee made of her Beauty and Riches, as shee imagined that Palmerin would not dis-her: but rather would repute himselfe happy, to haue that at his pleasure, whereof so many Kings and great Lordes had bene denyed. And in this opinion, the next time that Palmerin came to her Chamber, she beganne with him in this manner.

Now Syr Knight, what thinke you of the death of Ardemia, who falsely would haue seduced you to goe with her hence? Did she not committe great treason against mee if she had preuailed? but right well is she rewarded, and as I desired. Thinke then no more of her presumptuous folly, or the ridiculous conceyte of her vaine Loue, which she had made her pretende, to cause you forsake my Fathers Court: where you haue receyued so many speciall honours, chiefely of his Daughter, who loues you dearely, and intendes to make you Lorde of all her Possessions. Beleiue me Syr Knight, if hitherto I deferred to acquaint you herewith, it was in respect I doubted her: But now shee being gone, esteeme hence-forth of me as your own, and to beginne this our Alliaunce I honour you with all that is mine, and my selfe to be disposed at your pleasure. For my hart, which is onely subiect to you, applyes it selfe to your liking, and can wish nothing but what you will commaund.

How long haue I desired this happy day? How often haue I contemned and despised my selfe, in not daring to breake the seale of my affections, which now I haue aduentured to your knowledge? As for that which now troubleth mee is only the want of your speeche, which the Gods haue depriued you of, being enuious of your manifolde perfections. Alas my Lord, why did they not endue thee with that benefite: that in declaring my desires, thy aunsweres might returne reciprocall pleasures?

Some in their loue delight themselues with embracing, kissing, and such ceremoniall behauiour: as for mee, amorous, priuate, and Familiare conference, I repute a chiefe con-

content. Yet hath Loue one shaft in his Quiuer more pleasing then all these, being the onely argument of each others resolution: in respect whereof I commit my Honour into your protection, prizing, esteeming, and chusing you aboue all men in the world beside. Palmerin exceedingly abashed at this answer, and hauing recourse to his only comforter, lifting his eyes to Heauen, thus priuately Inuocated. O God, deliuer me from this enemie, and suffer me not to fall in consent to this temptation: for I thinke her a Diuell incarnate, and sent to deceiue me. Impossible is it that a maiden, by nature modest & bashfull, would let slip such effronted and audacious words. The conceite heereof so vexed and offended him, as the Princesse feared he would haue died: not with conceit that like hap might come to Alchidiana, as did to Ardemia, but because he should so wickedly sin against his owne soule, and falsifie his Loue to his sweetest Mistresse. Yet knowing that this sadnesse would not satisfie the Princesse, he faigned to swoune, his colour changing in such sort, as one would haue iudged him past recouery. Alchidiana was so grieued hereat, as she could not imagine what to say: but seeing that Palmerin seemed now not to vnderstand her, and before had by signes still reuealed his meaning, saide: By our great God it may well be said, that this man is a huge lumpe of flesh, which the diuell hath enchaunted to torment me withall, or else some other shaddow and resemblance: For hee refuseth what all men desire, yea, and often dispayre, because they cannot attaine it. But fearing least her ende would imitate her Cozines, or that the dumbe knight should dye in her presence, shee durst presume no further: but threw herselfe downe vpon a Pallet, not able to speake, her stomache was so enraged. Which Palmerin soone perceiuing, arose out of his feigned Traunce, and giuing a great sighe, departed the Chamber, and went to his owne. The Princesse seeing him gone, began to weepe and lament very grieuously, and in midst of

her melancholly, fell into these speethes. You Gods, how can you suffer one so contrary to nature, as is this dumbe knight, to liue among men: Can you behold that he whom I deliuered from death, brought into the grace of my Father, and to whom I haue done more honour then had he bene mine owne brother: will not regard me: but against reason, disdaineth, refuseth, maketh no reckoning of my dolours, and setteth at nought my earnest intreaties: Ah vndiscreete and careleſſe Girle, thy folly at this time too much ouer-ruled thee, that knowing thine owne estate and high linage, wouldst submit thy selfe to loue one vnknowne to thee, and of whom thou canst haue no answer, more then of a senceleſſe stocke or stone. If I can now learne to hate thee, it will be some comfort to me: but the more he iniureth me, the more am I deuoted to his loue. Then again she contraryed her self in this sort. Yet seeing it is so, ingrateful wretch as thou art, I will cause thee (ere it be long) to repent thy villany. In this anger she continued all the day, not comming forth of her chamber, intending thencefoorward vtterly to despise him: but the first time she saw him againe, she reputed him so louely, faire, and gracious, that (to die) she could not with him any harme, but loued him much better then before. Yet to couer her owne inconstancie, she sent him no more presents, nor did him such honour as she was accustomed, which Palmerin well perceiued, but he could dissemble it in such sort, as the princeſſe hardly might decipher him. For he liued in hope of the Soldans promise, which he had made to his deceased Father, to send his Brethren to Constantinople, in whose company he might trauaile thither, and so escape the Turks and Worth Infidels.

CHAP.

CHAP. X.

How Amarano Prince of Nigrea, came to the Soldans Court, to accuse Alchidiana, as causer of the death of the fayre Princesse Ardemia her Cozin.

DUring the time that the Princesse Alchidiana dissembled not to loue Palmerin, the Prince Amarano of Nigrea came within a daies iourney of the Isle of Calpha, where hee remained to rest himselfe a little. In meane time he sent an Embassage to Maulicus, craving assurance for his comming to his Court, to accuse one that was neere about him. The Ambassadors arriued, and their message vnderstood, the Soldane answered, that hee should haue what securitie hee would demaunde: for to the Prince Amarano, quoth he, nor ỹ meanest of his people, shall any thing be misdone, nor to him or the that shall defende the cause of the accused. And greatly amazed was the Soldane at these tydings, considering the distaunce betweene Calpha and Phrygia: wherefore he supposed, that some body had iniured the Prince since his arriuall. Notwithstanding (quoth he to the Ambassadours) that your Lord may stand in no doubt of treason, you shall haue our louing Letters to him: and let presently be proclaimed through the Citty, by sound of Trumpet, the safe conduct of the Prince and his trayne. The Ambassadours returned with their Letters to the Prince, who ioyfull of these newes came to the Cittie: but before he would approch the Court, hee went to the Tombe of the

the Princesse Ardemia, and if hee made such lamentations, when he but heard of her death, what iudgment may be sette downe of his mones, being now at the Sepulcher of his best beloued. Ah inconstant Fortune, quoth he, why wouldest thou not permit mee to see her liuing? Ah Ardemia, accomplished with admirable beautie, great was her sinne, who enuying thy perfections, procured thy cruell death: yet this is my cõfort, that I shall find time enough to reuenge thy vndeserued mishap, and he that dare gainesaie me, with her the author of thy tragedie, shall receiue such condigne punishment, as shall remaine for euer in memory.

These complaints deliuered with exceeding sorrowe, his Brethren perswaded him, that such behauiour beseemed not so great a Prince: therefore he shoulde referr those offices to effeminate persons, who make a God of their silent passions, as for him, he would thinke on nothing, but his mortall manner of reuenge. Amarano ashamed of his owne folly, mounted on Horseback, and came to the Pallace, where he and his Brethren entred armed, and the Prince being a man of goodly personage, had so stearne and fierce a countenaunce, as hee was generally reputed a hardie Knight and his Bretheren very little inferiour to him. He being come into the presence of Maulicus, saluted him with great reuerence, and not kissing his hande as others were accustomed, because he was not his Subiecte, neyther came for peace, but matter of fight and death: after long pause, in that the remembraunce of his griefe somewhat impeached him, he began to the Soldane in this maner.

Mightie Lord, and redoubted Monarch of Asia, being assured of the equall iustice, which you affoord to al persons without exception: I doubt not but you will punish the partie abyding in your Court, bee his or her calling neuer so great who by disloyall treason hath too much dishonored me. For which cause, reposing my hope in your noble ver-

tue,

tue, I haue left my Countrey, and aduentured into your presence, to accuse your Daughter Alchidiana, whom (so please you) to call before this assembly, I will charge: that she by false and spightfull hatred, as a most cruell and disloyall Ladie, trayterously murdered her Cozin the Princesse Ardemia. And because this villainie hath hetherto bene concealed very secret, in respect it could not easily bee verified: I am heere readie to proue in open fielde, against any of your Knights that dare maintaine her cause, howe the treason before rehearsed, was committed by her, in reuenge whereof, she ought to be rewarded with sharpe and shamefull death.

The Soldane mervayling at this accusation, sayd. By the reuerence of all our Gods, Prince Amarano, I cannot be perswaded, that it coulde at any time enter my daughters thought, to perpetrate an offence so abhominable: but because reason commaundeth that I do iustice, I will send for her, promising you, that if she be found culpable in your accusation, she shall haue such punishment, as your selfe shall rest contented therewith. Then he commaunded two Kings to goe fetch the Princesse, who being come, satte down by her Father, her accuser not deigning to salute her or once to moue from the place where he satte. This day had Maulicus, for the better defence of his person, caused fiue hundred armed Knights to attend on him, the greater part whereof (seeing the pride of the Prince of Nigrea) would furiously haue runne vpon him, saying, that hee should repent his folly: but the Soldane offended thereat, caused a Heralde presently to proclaime, that on payne of death, no one should harme or offende the Prince, nor any in his company, and whosoeuer did otherwise, should presently die for breaking his commaundement, thus framing his speeches to the Prince, said. Amarano, nowe maist thou behold my Daughter before thee: disburden thy greefe of thy minde to her, and iustice shall be done thee to thine owne desire. Imagine, quoth the Prince, that such as

know

know you. Madame Alchidiana, will not a little mer-naile, seeing you accomplished with such gracious beautie, that you should so farre forget your selfe, as to commit trea-son. But because a matter so vnlikely, demaundeth as hard a proofe, I will auerre with mine owne personne in Combat, against any one that dare support your quarrell: that you are guiltie in the accusation already alleadged, and principall cause of the death, of the Armenian Prin-cesse your Cozin. To reuenge which famous wrong, I haue forsaken my Countrey, trauailing night and day, and haue presented my accusation before your Father, with this cō-dition: that if your Knight shall be vanquished, you are to be punished as a cause so such weighty requireth. If it bee my fortune to be foyled, and your Champion victor, I shall yeelde my selfe as conquered, and demaunde no better re-compence, for it cannot greeue me to remaine with her bo-dy, whose very remembraunce keepeth me aliue: this said, he went and satte downe againe. The Soldane, who was a man of great wisedome, and well considering the mat-ter, seeing the accuser persist so confidently in his wordes, knew not what to aunswere. Yet as a vertuous Prince, he spake to his Daughter in this manner. Alchidiana, you haue heard the speeches of the Prince, aduise your selfe well of your answer: for which of you both shall be found attain-ted in the crime, be it Lese Maiestatis or other kind of trea-son, shall be punished accordyng as the cause requireth.

CHAP. XI.

How Palmerin seeing that none of the Soldans Knights would aduenture for Alchidiana against Amarano, enterprised himselfe in her cause in Combat. And how the Queene of Tharsus sent him a sumptuous Helmet.

ALchidiana hauing heard ỹ accusation of Amarano, and that hee had spoken so slaunderously of her in ỹ presence of the Soldan: incensed with marueilous anger ę disdain, returned him this answer. Amarano, the most rash ę vndiscreet Knight that euer I saw, I wonder how thy folly could make thée so audacious, to come and accuse me of treason (against all trueth) before my Father and his nobilitie. But thy speeches well noted and considered, shew nothing but carelesse youth, arrogancie, and too vaine glorious conceit: chiefely in this, that thou Armed cap a pe, and accompanied with so many well appointed knightes, commest in this sorte to molest a poore Mayde, who neuer to thee or thine committed any offence, but all seruiceable honour, especially to her, on whose behalfe thou offerest the Combat. As for the valour thou reputest in thy selfe, that moitie which this slaunder doth encourage thee withall, couloring thy hardinesse and resolution of hart: thou oughtest rather oppose against a knight able to answere thee, then a feelie Virgin, who hath no weapon but her Honour wherewith to defend her selfe. I confesse I am a Ladie, but not treyterous or false, as

as thou mouchest, yet of so noble courage, as were I of thy sexe, thou never shouldest depart this Hall, before I had that conspiring head from thy shoulders, to witnesse thy falshood and malevolent spirit. Notwithstanding, as I am, so please my Lord and Father, with a Kitchin cudgell I shall let thee know, that thou dotest in thy speeches, and against thine own conscience chargest me, with the murder of my Cozin. Examine thy thoughts, what likely reason might induce mee to such an offence: If thee was fayre, thanks to our Gods, mine own talent is so good, as I need not envy her beauty. If she made account of her rich dowrie, I being sole heyre to the Signiories of the Soldane, might iudge my selfe farre beyond her, being desired in marriage by many Kings and Princes, whereof I am wel assured shee never had the like. I know not then what cause should any way induce mee to request her death: but what need I make such protestations to thee? seeing that by some one of my Fathers knights thy pride will be abated, and I reuenged of the iniury thou hast done me, Amarano not answering her a word, spake to the Soldane in this sort.

It is not decent my Lord, that a Prince or Knight of quality, should stay on the words of a Mouian so little considerate, who more by anger then vertue, thinks to reproue and annihilate a true accusation. Wherefore, according to the agreement before determined, call for ỹ knight that dare vndertake the quarrell of your daugheer, to whom I will manifest in plain Combat, that what I haue said is truth: and if he be vanquished, your daughter Alchidiana and hee shall bee burned together, as the greatnes of the offence well deserueth: contrariwise, if Fortune deny mee successe, I will request no other iustice, then what shal please you to appoint for me. Maulicus seeing that well he could not denie the Prince, though to his griefe, pronounced the sentence, that his Daughter that day should present a Knight, to sustaine her cause, according to his condi-

tions

tions alleadged. This hard prescription, made neuer a knight willing to aduenture the Combate, so much they feared Amarano, for the great report they heard of his prowesse, but stood all silent, as though themselues were condemned to death. Alchidiana seeing the courage faile of so many knights, whom shee esteemed for men of great account, knew not to whom shee should haue recourse, & therefore ouercome with exceeding sorrow, but that her Ladies assisted her, had twice or thrice swouned before her father. Palmerin beholding her, and knowing that his refusall, was greater cause of Ardemias death, then the iniurious words of Alchidiana: pitying her estate, & hauing before his eyes the loue shee bare him, the great honours was done him for her sake, and the pusillanimity of the Soldans knights, was so mooued, as forgetting all daunger, and his dissembled dumbnes, which hitherto hee had so cunningly obserued, as though hee had bene borne in that Country, he thus began in the *Arabian* tongue. Ah cowardly caitifes, vnworthy henceforth the name of knights, how can your hearts endure, that a proud and presumptuous Prince shall come into your presence, falsely to accuse your Lady and Mistresse, and not one of you daring to defend her right? By the celestiall powers, well may you bee accounted heartlesse men, and (in suffering this wrong) to be depriued of all noble titles, and to bee sold in the market as slaues and villaines: think ye the Prince Amarano is come hither for any other intent, then to make tryall of his great hardines? Can you bee destitute of reason, & so easily abused, as to thinke that the Princesse Alchidiana whom nature hath so worthily enriched with beauty, ann with whom no other may make comparison, could bee prouoked to murder Ardemia, for this only occasion, because she was faire? And you Lord Amarano, for a matter so slender, haue you enterprised to blame a Lady so vertuous, as is the Princesse Alchidiana? I accept the Combat on her behalfe, auouching, that shamefullie and

with

without reason you haue accused her, behold me ready likewise, to maintaine in open fielde, that falsely and maliciously thou lyest in thy throate: in witnes whereof, there is my Gage, and I beseech your highnesse affoorde vs presently Iudges, that may discerne the issue of our Combat. I take thy offer, quoth the Prince, and before the Sun set will giue thee the payment that belongs to such a frollick companion.

Who can now imagine the ioy of Maulicus and his Daughter, seeing him whom they reputed dumbe by nature, thus to recouer his speech: assuredly they were all so amazed, that they thought Mahomet, had come from the clowdes to performe this miracle. The Soldane thus surprised with vnspeakeable comfort, forgetting the maiestie of his person, caught Palmerin in his armes, saying: Ah good Knight, how may this be? dreame I? or doth but my fancie delude me with your speech? O Mahomet, for euer be thou praysed for this great grace. By the highest God, I am more ioyful of this good fortune, then had I gained the fairest Island in the Mediterranean Sea. Now will I dismay no longer of my Daughters fortune, seeing that you take her quarrell in hand, and for her sake will combat with Amarano: with all my heart I graunt you the Fielde, and thinke that my Daughter will not denie it. But tell me noble Friende, how haue you so happily recouered your speech? Palmerin abashed that he had so forgotten himselfe, knew not what excuse to make, neuertheleſſe, seeing now there was no remedy, and that the stone throwne could not be recalled: imagined some likely similitude of his suddaine speech, saying. I promise you my Lord, that the certitude of your Daughters innocency, and the great griefe I conceiued, seeing your Knightes so cowardly and faint in courage, moued me into such choller, as the Catarre, which of long time hath hindered my speech, dissolued it selfe, and hath giuen my tongue liberty to reueale, what I was enforced to bewraye before by signes,

ſignes. And this is not a thing altogether ſtraunge: For I haue heretofore read in Hyſtories, that a Knight called Ægle Samien, dumb from his byrth: when one of his companions would vſurpe the honour of a victory, which iuſtly appertained to him: was ſo encaged and incenſed with diſpleaſure, as that very paſſion, with the helpe of the Gods, reſtored his ſpeeche. And thus hath it happened to mee, for which I honor theyr names with immortall thankes, not ſo much for my Speaking, as that I may now declare my earneſt affection to do you ſeruice, and fayre Alchydiana your Daughter, to whom I am ſo greatly indebted, for the manifold honours ſhe hath done mee without deſarte, as I ſhal neuer be able to make recompence. Ah my noble friend quoth the Soldane, this liberall offer, for the defence of my Daughters honor, contents me in ſuch ſort, as both ſhe and I remayne to requite your paynes. Amarano amazed at the braue diſpoſition of Palmerin, but eſpecially, at the great honour Maulicus did him, kneu not well what to thinke: and did not the feare of reproach ouer-rule him, I thinke he would haue deferred the Combate till another yeare. Notwithſtanding to couer his new opinion, hee bethought him of a prettie ſubtiltie, and ſaide: I beſeech your Maieſtie to tell mee, of whence this Dumbe Knight is, to whome our Gods (by myracle) hath reſtored ſuch braue language: It is neceſſarie that I knowe what hee is, and whence hee is deſcended, becauſe the fight being enterprized for two ſuch Princeſſes, as ſometimes was the faire Ardemia, and your Daughter preſent: if hee be not the Sonne of a King as I am, he may not be permitted the Fielde with mee. Amarano (anſwered the Soldan, I know not what hee is, for till this time hee hath continued dumbe in our Courte, to him therefore you ſhall reaſon your demaund: For this opinion I holde of him, that he will anſwer you nothing but truth. But if you goe about ſo craftily to excuſe your ſelfe, eache one may iudge that in you, which but ill beſeemes the minde of a Noble man, that is, to be double in your ſpeeche. And

(which is more) hee being a Knight as good as your selfe, you may not refuse him, because you demaunded the Combat against any Knight in my Court, and in your challenge made no exception. Perswade your selfe then (quoth the Prince) that if hee be not the Sonne of a King, he shall not enter the Field against me: therefore if hee be none such, he hath not to meddle with Armes in this cause, and so the Fight on his behalfe is finished. If thou make such doubt, saide the Soldane of him, aske him the question thy selfe: I hope he is able to resolue thee, in the subtill cauils and sophisticall questions.

During this contention, there entred the Hall a fayre young Damosell, bearing betweene her hand a goodly Helmet, the richest and most beautifull that euer was seene, and falling on her knees before the Soldane, with such gracious salutation as stode with her duetie: she demaunded which was Amarano of Nigrea, who of enuie had accused his Daughter, and which likewise was the dumbe Knight, who enterprised her Defence. Maulicus without any other inquisition, shewed them both to her: whereupon the Damosel arose, and comming to the Prince, thus beganne.

Amarano of Nigrea, the Queene of Tharsus, my Ladie and Mistresse beeing certaine that this day thou be in this place, sent me hither to aduise thee, that the dumbe Knight is of higher linage then thou art: and such a one hee is, as the greatest Lord or Prince may not compare with him in Bountie. And if thou wilt know the certaintie of his discent, more then any other as yet doth: she aduiseth thee (for thy profite) to desist from the Combatte whereto thou hast challenged him, in defence of thy false accusation against Alchidiana. And further she also doth admonish thee, that if thou dost not as she commandeth, the Knight late dumb, surpassing all other in Knightly Chinalrye, shall ouercome thee, and thou shalt not be able to stand against him. Damosell (quoth the Prince,) you may answer your Mistresse, that ouerlate she sent mee her counsell, and I am not accustomed

stomed to giue credite to such Sorcerers: Besides, I will not lose mine honour, at the simple wordes of a Woman I know not. And it doth not a little content me, that that this Knight is such a one as hee should be: wherefore being so sure of his Bountie, I am the more desirous to Combat with him, to make experience of his renowne: yet this I still maintaine, that what I haue spoken is true, and therefore we will presently enter the Fielde, so please the Soldan to giue consent. Maulicus seeing that the day was too farre spent, adiourned it till the day following: Wherefore the Prince withdrew himselfe to his Lodging, reposing great confidence in his owne strength, and after his departure, the Soldane taking Palmerin by the hand, sayd. I knowe not my Lorde how I may acknowleage the honour you doe my Daughter, whome I esteeme as mine owne selfe: But if the Gods affordeme lyfe, I will deuise some such recompence, as I hope shall returne your owne content. Then the Damosell sent from the Queene of Tharsus, approaching to Palmerin, presented him the Helmet, saying. Noble and vertuous Knight, the Queen saluteth you with this token of her good Will, in remembrance of your speciall Loyaltie, whereby you deliuered the Prince Maurice: for which she so much remaineth yours, as you shall command her any seruice hence forward, albeit she could haue wished him longer torment, that proued so vnfaithfull to her. She likewise desireth you, to weare this Helmet in Fight with Amarano, for it will greatly auayle you, and more then any other: For such is her Hope, that after you know this present Seruice, you will not denie her one requeste, which one day shee intendeth to craue of you. Palmerin taking the Helmet, answered:

Fayre Virgin, most humbly thanke the Queene on my behalfe, and tell her that whereesoeuer I am, shee shall finde mee ready to fulfill any thing she will commaunde. The Damosell departed, and made such speede, as in short time she came to the Queen her Mistresse, whom she acquainted

with her whole Message: whereof shee was very ioyfull, especially of Palmerins great courtesie, whome shee began to affect very greatly.

CHAP. XII.

¶ Howe Palmerin entred the Combatte with the Prince Amarano of Nigrea, whome hee slew, and of the great Honours which the Soldan and his Daughter did him.



The Princesse Alchydiana hearing of those reportes, which the Queene of Tharsus Damosell made relation of before the Soldan her Father, being likewise meruellous glad, that Palmerin was descended of such Noble Parentage, and so much renowned in the Region farre thence distant: beganne to Loue him more extreamely then euer shee did before, and resolued with her selfe, that seeing for her sake he vndertooke the Combat, hee bare her more secrete affection then her durst bewray: and in this opinion shee practised how to conferre with him againe, which this day shee could not compasse, because hee was continually with the Soldan. But when Palmerin tooke his leaue for that Night, the Princesse had a little leysure to thank him for his honorable kindnesse, and how glad shee was that the Gods had restored his speech againe. Some after shee sent him a most sumptuous golden Armour, desiring him (for her sake) to weare it in the Combatte, which Palmerin thankfully accepting, assured the Messenger, that hee would sufficiently reuenge his Ladyes iniurie. In meane time, the Soldan commanded his Knight Marshall, to see the Fielde prepared

in

in readineſſe, and the Scaffolds for the Ladyes prouided, and to haue two thouſand Armed men in place, for defence of his owne perſon. All which the next morning was duly executed, the Soldan appointing two Kings, and Amarano his two Brethren Iudges of the Field, who going to their Tent, and all the Nobilitie to their appointed places, expected now the iſſue of the Fight. The Ladyes came to their ſtanding: among whom Alchidiana ſhewed like faire Veſper, among the other ſtars, and ſoone after came the two Combattants, ſo brauely and richly appointed, as nothing wanted that could be imagined: eſpecially Palmerin, before whome a King bare his Helmet, and the high Admiral of Aſſiria his Sword, and ſo brauely did hee manage his Horſe, with ſuch ſightly behauiour, and gallant countenance, that euery one iudged hee had learned his knowledge before he came thither into Turkie, and cauſed Maolicus to perſwade himſelfe, that the victorie was deſtenyed to him. In the ende, that they might the ſoner begin the Combat, the Iudges toke their ſeates, commanding ſilence through the Fielde, which was peſtered with wonderfull throngs of people: and then the Heralds fulfilling their charge, gaue libertie to the Champions to do their deuoyre. Palmerin claſping his Helmet, gaue the Spurres to his Horſe, and encountered Amarano with ſuch furie, as they were both diſmounted headlong to the ground: But Palmerin aſhamed to bee ſo foyled before the Soldan, recouered himſelfe quickly, and aduancing his Shielde, gaue Amarano ſuch a ſound ſtroke on his head with his Sworde, as made him ſtagger in great amazednesſe. Notwithſtanding, his courage and agility was ſuch, as well declared, he had followed thoſe affaires: So that the fight was ſo fierce and cruell betweene them, as in many yeeres before the Aſſirians ſawe not the like: for Amarano was the moſt hardy Knight in all thoſe partes, yet Palmerin aſſaulted him with ſo many ſharpe charges, as hee made him forget his cunning points of Defence, and with head and ſhoulders to awarde his

strokes. Which when the Princes two Brethren beheld, they were maruellously abashed, for they imagined that through the East partes, no Knight might bee found to equall him: wherefore one of them sayde, I thought my brother would haue dispatched this companion at the first encounter, but seeing he hath held out so long, no doubt hee is more expert in Armes, then we at first made account of him.

The two Kings were somewhat moued with these words, willing him to be silent, vntill such time as the end was determined. Amarano hearing what his Brother had spoken, offended with himselfe because hee could not ouercome Palmerin, beganne to encourage himselfe, and albeit he was sore wounded in many places on his body, yet he followed his intent so nobly, as taking his sword in both his hands, hee stroke Palmerin so violently on the helmet, as made him set one of his knees to the ground to saue himselfe. But he perceyuing that if he had many such blowes, it would returne his disaduantage, intended to play double or quitte, and remembring the honour of his Mistresse Polinarda, hee came with such valour on Amarano, as cleauing his Shield in two peeces, cut away a great part of his arme. The Prince feeling himselfe so maymed, beganne to faynte, hardly enduring to defende his enemies strokes, which Palmerin perceiued, chased him about which way him liked, first here, then there, where best ỹ Prince had hope of safety: but all these delayes little auayled him, for Palmerin left not vntil he got him down, whē Amarano thinking to helpe himselfe, drew a little pocket Dagger, and therewith thrust Palmerin vnder the short ribbes, which wound so moued him, as renting his Helmet from his head, immediately smote it from his shoulders. Palmerin being then so glad and well disposed, as though hee had but newly entred the field, tooke the head of his enemie by the hayre, and presented it to the Princesse Alchidiana, saying, Madame, I now thinke my selfe acquited of the

promise, which I made to my gracious Lord your Father, for heere is that Spring-head that first accused you: bethinke your selfe therefore, if there bee any other thing else to be done for you, because I remaine here ready to accomplish it.

The Princesse exceeding joyfull for this worthy victory, answered. Truely my Lorde, you have done so much for me, that although my Father, my selfe, and all my Friends should bequeath our lives to your service: yet could we not recompence the very least of your Noble courtesies, chiefly, euen this one, surpassing all the other, and beyond our abilityes to remunerate. Yet let me intreate you to carrie the Traytours head to the Iudges, that they may Censure my Innocencie in this slaunder, and whether the Accuser hath not receyued condigne punishment. Which hee did, and they receiue the head before the Princes Pyetheren, whose griefe exceeded measure for their Brothers ill Fortune, and taking vp the Head, with the Body likewise, they caused it to be sorrowfully conueyed forth of the field. Immediatly was Palmerins Horse brought him, whereon he mounted, was conducted with great Pompe, by the two Kings that were the Iudges, and other mighty Princes, as well Cauliffes, Agaz, as Taborlans, to the gate of the Pallace, where the Soldane (to doo him the greater Honour) attended in personne his comming, the like hee neuer did before to any King or Prince, how mightie soeuer he was, and therefore his Subiects marueiled not a little hereat. Palmerin would haue done him reuerence on his knee, but he would not suffer him, for taking him in his armes, he thus said: For euer (Gentle Knight) by the honor of thy victorie against our enemie, and the false accuser of our Daughter, for which, I account my selfe so bound to thee, that all the Dignities and riches I am able to giue thee, may not recompence all the vnspeakable deserts: therefore I will remaine so much at thy disposition, as I and mine shall be at thy commaund. So taking him by the hand, he conducted him to his Chamber,

where himselfe holpe to vnarme him, commaunding his Chyrurgians to be so carefull of him, as of his own person: Thus leauing him to haue his wounds dressed, he returned to the great Hall, where hee found his Nobilitie attending his comming, to whome hee saide: What thinke you my Lords of our late, if our Champion had bene foyled: I had bene the most forlorn and abiect Lord in all Assyria, to haue bene enforced to do iniustice on mine owne Daughter. But thankes to our Gods, they deliuered me from that danger: therefore maruell not, if (beyond my custome) I welcommed him with reuerence and honour: For one that renowneth himselfe by Vertue and Prowesse through the whole worlde, ought to be entertained, rather then such as liue in vaine Pompe and glorie, whispering deceytfull Tales into Ladyes eares. Neyther can you (in my Iudgement) honour him sufficiently, because my Daughter and mee hee hath shelued from death, expulsed our ignominious slaunder, and slaine our false accusing enemie, to make vs liue in perpetuall fame and memorie. The most parte of them well noting his wordes, and confounded with the remembraunce of their shame, when they durst not enterprise the Combat for their Ladie: knew not what to answer, but fearing to growe in further offence, sought how to chaunge his minde to some other talke.

Alchidiana being all this while in her Chamber, prepared herselfe to goe visite Palmerin, not knowing how to shape her course, for fresh bewraying of her secrete afflictions: but the Goddesse Iuno, when shee stode before Syr Paris, for sentence of her Beautie, was not more sumptuously adorned then the Princesse. Now beginnes shee to dispute in her thoughts, the honorable graces of Palmerin, his Nobility so farre renowned, his knightly prowesse and Magnanimitie, whereof herselfe had so good experience, as shee resolued neuer to haue any other Husband. Then demaunds she of her Ladies, how she might recompence her Knight: if her Head-tyre stood orderly: if her locks of hayre were

were dressed as they ought, and if her garments were braue enough. For conclusion, the louely Mayden knew not how to dispose of herselfe, to gaine his loue she so earnestly longed for.

In this equipage she goes to see her Friende, and in his Chamber she findes her Mother, who hindered her languishing Daughter, from discouering her sickenes to him, that onely had the power to helpe her: wherefore liuing in hope of some better opportunitie, for this time she smothered her griefes so well as she coulde, finding other talke with her Ladies, least her Mother should suspect her.

CHAP. XIII.

How the Brethren of Amarano, would haue buried his body in the Tombe with Ardemia, which Alchidiana would not suffer: but constrayned them to carry him home againe into his Countrey.

AMarano thus slayne, his Brethren (according to his charge giuen them, before he entred ỹ Combate) toke his bodie, and with great mourning they brought it to the Princesse Ardemias Tombe, thinking to burie him there with her: but Alchidiana auertised hereof, came presently and intreated her father, that he would sende a Heralde to the Brethren of the vanquished Prince, to charge them not to leaue the body of Amarano in his Dominions, for if they did, he would cause it to be burned as a Traytor deserued. Moreouer, that they themselues should depart within foure and twenty houres,

on

on paine of the daunger should ensue by their default. For good Father (quoth she) if you should permit their boldnes, it will be great blame and dishonour to you: in that it is commonly knowne, with what great pride and arrogancie he came to your Court, thinking to injury your good report, and either to shut mee from your presence for euer, or else with open scandale to ende my life. The Soldane well regarding her wordes, willingly graunted her request, whereupon the Princes Brethren were certified of the Soldans pleasure, by a Trompet: whereat they mernailed not a little, but seeing they could no way remedy it, they said. Herald, it is reason that your Lord should be obeied within his owne territories, neuertheless, you may say vnto him: that the cruelties he shewes to a dead body, is very great, and against all equitie, which he hereafter happily may repent. So opening the Tombe againe, they tooke forth their Brothers body, and the Princesse Ardemiaes likewise, conueying them into a Litter of Cipres, to keepe them from corrupting, and thus returned with them to Phrygia, where the Princes death was greatly lamented: but chiefely by the aged King his Father, who seeing his Sonne dead before him, after many dolorous passions, thus complained. Ah Fortune, how cruell dost thou shew thy selfe to the mightie, as well as the meaneſt? Ah my Sonne Amarano, too deere hast thou bought thy loue to Ardemia. Wretched and despised olde man, howe vnfortunate art thou among all other? for when thou perswadedst thy selfe, to haue ioy and comfort by thy Sonnes, thou findest the chiefe cause of sorrowe and discontent. O death, thou sufferest me to vnfortunate. Yet if the Soldane had graunted thee buriall, where thou diddest desire it before thy death, the lesse had bene my griefe. But some shall I cause him repent his hard dealing, and reuenge thy death with sufficient requitall. The second Brother to Amarano, named Gramiel, seeing his father in such extreame heauines, assayed by all meanes hee coulde to comfort him:

promising

promising in the presence of all his Knights, with all possible speed to reuenge his Brothers death, and so did all the five Brethren solemnelie vow togither. Which speeches did somewhat comfort the aged King, who commanded the bodies of the two louers to be taken from his presence and for a perpetuall memory of his Sonnes death: he caused a sumptuous monument to bee made of marble & porphire, whereon was engraven the cause of their vnhappie death. All this while, Gramiel, who vndertooke his Brothers reuenge, gaue charge to the people round about him, as also to the Kings and Princes of Suria, who were then enemies to the Soldan, to prepare themselues in readines, so that within a monethes space, he had assembled a power of fiue thousand hardy souldiers, himselfe being appointed leader and Generall ouer them. In this sort they betooke themselues to the field, hoping to ruinate the Soldanes Country with fire and Sword: but they were better entertayned then they expected, as hereafter shalbe largely discoursed.

CHAP. XIII.

How Alchidiana ouercome by vehemency of her loue, offered her selfe to Palmerin as his wife: and of the answere he made her.

REmembring what hath past in the Chapters before, wee may not forget how by the message the Queene of Tharsus sent to the Soldans Court, Alchidiana, who began as it were to despise Palmerin, was constrayned to renue her Loue, thus conferring with her selfe, that if so great

great a person as the Queene of Tharsus commended, esteemed and honoured him, hauing neuer seene him, the better meane had she, being daily in his company, to practise the furtherance of her earnest desires. She therefore continually awayted opportunitie, to discouer the fire newly raked from the embers, and which day and night consumed her with languishing: but so wel it came to passe, that not many daies after the Combat with Amarano, he came to visite her in her Chamber, right ioyfull of the talke hee had with the Soldane, as concerning ỹ provision of his strength, to goe ruinate ỹ Cittie of Constantinople, which gaue him hope of his returne to Allemaigne. Alchidiana, hauing courteously saluted him, and shewing better countenaunce then before she did, caused him to sitte downe by her, and soone after began in this sort.

I desire you Sir knight, by the reuerence you beare our Gods, and the faith you owe to her, for whose loue you tooke the enchaunted Crowne from the Prince, Maurice: to tel me your name, what your Parents be, and of whence you are. For I sweare to you by the honour of a Princesse, that the guerdon you shall receiue in so doing, is my hart, hauing once conquered those desires that long haue tormẽted me: intending to make you Lord of my selfe, and all the possessions of the Soldane my Father, without any sinister meaning you may beleeue me. Consider therefore good knight, that without feare or dissimulation, I haue tolde you what nearest concerneth mee, if then you desire not my present death, make aunswere as honorable duetie requireth, ballancing in your owne thoughts, how vehemently the impressions of loue haue touched me in respect that now I haue bewrayed for your sake, exceeded the limits of mine owne regard, whō bashfulnes should protect from such soldnes. And if patiently I endured your sharpe repulse, when last I bewrayed the estate of my loue: thinke it was caused through mine owne good conceit, that being denyed the libertie of speech, you did not perceiue the extreamitie

of

of my passions. But seing our Gods haue bene so fauourable, as to restore the thing was earst taken from you, and likewise hath brought you into her company, who loues you dearer then her owne life: shew not your selfe so hard of nature, to flye the houre that Loue and Fortune presents you withall. Therefore my onely beloued Lord, in recompence of your sharpe Combat with proud Amarano: receiue me as your Wife, whom you haue worthily deserued.

Palmerin seing himselfe assayled by so faire an enemy, who coulde soner bring in subiection an other Hercules, then euer did Iole, and as easily giue life to a statue of Marble, as Venus sometime did, at therequest of Pigmalion the Caruar: was in marualous affliction, hauing before him, on the one side, feare to offende God, on the other, the loyaltie he ought his Mistresse, and then the immediate death of Alchidiana, if he denyed her. In the ende, remembring what the Soldane had spoken, concerning his voyage to Constantinople: he deuised by this meane to make her such answere, as she should rest contented, and neither God nor his Mistresse be offended, he thus began. Vertuous and most excellent Princesse, thus I am assuredly perswaded, that there is not any Monarch or Prince so noble in all Asia, but might reckon himselfe among the happiest, in respect of your perfections and vnualuable riches: to espouse you as his Wife. By farre greater reason, I that am poore, a knight errant, vnknowne, and whose life you haue saued: may saie, and name my selfe aboue all other in fortune. But knowing my selfe so simple, and of so slender deseruing towardes you: I esteeme it impossible for the Gods and nature likewise, to lift me to so wonderfull degree of happines. Wherefore, seing the cause such, and greater then I can desire or imagine, likewise that it is conformable to your commaundement: doubtlesse I were vnworthy any fauour of Fortune, and to be esteemed among the most ingratefull knights in the world, if in any thing I

should

should disobey your reason. My reason is, that you (being reckoned as chiefe among the most perfect and accomplished Ladyes) daigne so much to abase your selfe as to make me Lorde of your Loue, which hath bene desired by so many worthy personages.

For those causes, most gracious Mistresse, I am bound to Loue you aboue all other Ladyes liuing, which hereforth I hope to do, & loyallie to serue you with my vttermost endeuours. And as I ought (sweete Madam) to Loue none but you: so to my dutie to hold your regard in chiefest commendation: therefore will I with such secrecie, as so honorable a Conquest will permit, conceale this extraordinarie grace. And had I not this morning made promise to your Father, to accompany his power to Constantinople, there to reuenge the death of your deceassed Vnckle Gamezio: some should our loue sort to wished, and I gather that sweete flower, which aboue all other would Beauty my Garland. Notwithstanding, my hope is such, that in this voyage I shall do such seruice to the Soldane your Father, as at my returne hee will recompence me to your content, and good liking of his Princes and Subiects: which may no way nowe be moued, least his minde otherwaies busied, should conceiue displeasure against me, and so all our Fortune forever squandered. In this respect (sweete Madame) if euer hereafter I shall do you seruice, let mee intreate you to patience till my returne: resoluing your selfe in meane while, that I am more yours then mine owne, and dedicate my life to your most gracious seruice. As concerning the rest of your demand, my Name is Palmerin d'Oliua, and what my Parents are, the Mirrour of Tharsus within these three dayes will tell me more, then hitherto I could vnderstand by any, when you shall haue more knowledge of my estate and Countrey also: but so far as I yet can gather by mine owne vnderstanding, my discent is from Persia.

This excuse hee made, because Alchydiana should not suspect him to bee a Christian, and with this answere she was

was so ioyfull and contented, as nothing was able to inspyre more cheerefull life into her languishing soule, which Palmerin perceiuing, and the better to continue her in this opinion, very often he kissed her hand, in signe of his affectionate obeysance: And so in this manner he departed to his owne Chamber, leauing the Princesse triumphing of her conquest.

Hee was no sooner come into his Chamber, but solicited with the remembrance of his Lady Polynarda, hee imagined how she blamed him with mournfull complaints for his late promises: which thought so directly afflicted him, as he spent all the rest of the day in teares, and as she had bene in presence, most humbly requesting her to pardon what had past him, in respect hee did it not willingly, neyther gaue any consent with his heart thereto, but dissembled the matter, least the Princesse by his death should fall into dispayre: and rather then he would violate his solemne Vowe to his gracious Goddesse, hee would aduenture on infinite dangers. Yet did this feigned answer to Alchydiana greatly auaile him, and caused him to be more honored then euer he was before, as also to be continually accompanyed with her presence, whose onely delight was in daylie beholding him.

CHAP.

CHAP. XV.

How the Soldane hauing determined to send his Army to Constantinople, would elect Palmerin his Lieutenant Generall: which he refused, intreating him to giue the charge to the olde King of Baliſarca.

NOw was the Soldane continually mindfull of the promiſe he made to his deceaſſed Father Miſos, to reuenge the death of his Brother Gamezio: wherefore ſeeing all his dominions in peace, and that he had with him the valiant Palmerin, he concluded to leuy a mightie Armie, to finiſh y which duty daily called for. And hauing prouided a huge number of Galions, Foyſts, Gallyes, and other veſſels, he ſent abroade to aduertiſe all the Kinges, Princes, Baliffes and Teboylanes his ſubiects, of his will and pleaſure, who likewiſe gathering their forces together, were numbred to be aboue an hundred and fiftie thouſand fighting men. All this while the Soldane ſo fauoured Palmerin, as he had beſtowed on him diuers Dukedomes, which he made but ſlender account of, becauſe he continually expected time to ſee his Polynarda. Alchidiana likewiſe, building on his paſſed promiſes, daily preſented him with many rich gyfts, and practiſed all the deuiſes ſhee coulde to pleaſe his fancie: for ſo deuoutly did the Princeſſe loue him, as ſhee rather deſired her owne death, then to giue him the leaſt occaſion of diſliking. And Palmerin by fayre and affecting ſpeeches, perſwaded ſuch ſetled opinions in her: as ſhee helde his promiſes with greater

greater pertinacie, then euer did any Logitian maintaine his Aristotle. By this time were the men of Armes come from all places, wherefore the Soldane calling for Palmerin, beganne with him in this manner. Sir Palmerin, considering how much I am indebted to you, my affections are so resolutely perswaded, that I esteem of you as you were my Sonne, and much more then I am able to vtter: not so much for seruices you haue done me from time to time, as for the incomparable deedes of Armes and Chiualrie, which makes you honoured through the whole world. Hauing now determined to send mee forces to Constantinople, my onely hope I repose in you, and well it liketh me that you beare the office of my Lieutenaunt Generall, and principal gouernour of the Kinges and Princes in this expedition. Therefore my noble and approued good Friend, vsing your wonted magnanimitie and discretion, my people shal think well of my appointment, referring the honor of their victorie, to the generall hauocke and confusion of their enemies.

Nowe I perceiue (my gracious Lord) answered Palmerin, that by your manifold fauours and courtesies, you woulde depriue me of acknowledging mine owne duetie: notwithstanding, in respect it is your pleasure, I would aduenture the vttermost of my life for you, which I cannot with greater honour loose, then in your noble seruice. Yet, may it bee spoken within compasse of your highnesse controll, me thinkes you shoulde rather giue this charge to the King of Balsarca, a man wise, experienced, and farre more skilfull in Armes then I am. Beside, your people hauing a man of their owne nation for their heade, will obey him more willingly, and serue with much more chéerefull courage: then vnder him whom they know not, but onely by your princely and liberall bountie, which hath béene such, that from the meanest state, where Fortune held mee as altogether despised, your Maiestie hath lifted mee to the highest earthly honour. This spake I, dread Lord, as

not gainsaying your commandement, but for this consideration, that taking this honourable charge, the Souldiers may mutinie against me, and so your seruice be altogether disappointed.

And thinke you (quoth the Soldane) that my people will be more obedient to the King of Balisarca, then to you? Yea doubtlesse my Lord, said Palmerin, that is my opinion. Know then, quoth the Soldane, that for the councell you haue giuen me, my loue is nothing diminished towards you: for I see by this noble regard, how deseruedly you gaine the fauours of Kings and great personages, it shal be therefore as you haue appointed. This councell gaue Palmerin, not for any good he wished to Maulicus, or the King of Balisarca, but (desiring nothing more, then the ruine and generall destruction of these heathen hounds, sworne enemies to Christ and his Seruants) to rid himselfe of that charge, which would bring him so great and shamefull report, to fight against his Lord and Maker. Therefore premeditating on al these inconueniences, he but expected the meane to get footing in Christendome againe. Maulicus thus contented with his answere, the King of Balisarca was appointed Generall of the Army, yet he gaue commandement, that Palmerin should be reuerenced among them, as the second person to himselfe, and one paine of death, none to offend him. As all this strength was ready to take shipping, newes came to the Court of Gramiel, and his Brethren, what slaughter and spoile they made through all Assiria: whereat the Soldan being greatly offended, seeing his prouision against Christendome thus changed, came to Palmerin, and said. My Sonne, what thinke you of our enemies? What shall I doe to these followers of their Brother in pride? I pray you counsell mee in this necessitie. Palmerin perceiuing his desire preuented, was ouercome with maruellous passions: yet to hide this discontent frō the Soldane, he thus answered. Seeing it hath so fallen out my Lord, that without any summons our enemies

mies haue presumed vppon vs: I thinke it most expedient, that your Armie prouided in so good readines, beginne first with these arrogant inuaders, for I doubt not, their attempt being so treacherous, and the courage of our men so resolute, but they shall derely buie their presumptuous aduenture. A matter sone begunne, will bee as sone ended, and our shipping readie, we may afterward sette forward to Constantinople: for this will be a good whetting of our stomacks, to deale with our enemies of greater multitude. This counsell was accepted, wherefore it was immediatly proclaimed through the fielde, that euery man should be readie to depart within three daies.

CHAP. XVI.

How the Prince Olorico, Sonne to the King of Arabia, came and offered his seruice to the Soldane, bringing with him fiue hundred Armed Knights, and of his entertainment.

SOmewhat before the Soldans Armie was readie to depart, the Prince Olorico, eldest Sonne to the King of Arabia came to the Court, and with him fiue hundred Knights, so hardy, braue and comelie personages, as both for the Courte and the warre, better might not bee imagined. This yong Prince, reputed among the most valiant of his time, hearing reporte of the rare beautie of Alchidiana, vnder cullor of offering the Soldane his assistaunce: determined to behaue himselfe so brauely in his Court, that by his liberalitie and honourable actions, he would obtayne y Princesse

ceſſe to his Wife, wherefore being come to the Court, and hauing done his obeiſaunce to the Soldane, he began in this maner.

Right mightie Lord of all Aſſiria and Paleſtine, hauing of long time heard your great forwardneſſe to the encreaſing of our faith, chefely of the laſt honorable counceil you helde, to reuenge the death of your famous deceaſed Brother Gamezio, whom our Gods now entertaine at their celeſtiall banquets: I toke my ſelfe to trauaile, with aduiſed reſolution to do you ſuch ſeruice, as might ſtande with my abilitie, and your pleaſure to commaund. And for I now behold, that my arriuall is in a time ſo fortunate, I celebrate their names with immortall thankes, aſſuring your Maieſtie ſo farre to ſtretch my endeuours, as the Son that is bounde by duetie to his Father. The Soldane who had heard great report of his bountie and valour, his Father likewiſe being one of his Friendes and confederates, after he had made him very gracious welcome, thanked him for ỹ ſuccour he brought him, and henceforth he would not eſteeme of him as a ſtraunger, but as his Sonne and moſt eſpeciall Friende. All this while Palmerin noted the behauiour of the yong Prince, and iudging by his compleſion, that he was of better nature then the other Aſſirians began to affect him: ſo that after the Soldane had giuen them all the good night, Palmerin accompanied the Prince to his Chamber, where they coulde deuiſe no other conferrence, but of this new and warlike enterprize, which made Olorico demaunde of Palmerin, if he ſhoulde goe in thoſe affaires. That will I verily (quoth he) if ſickneſs or priſon do not withholde me. Let me intreate you then, ſayde the Prince, to do me ſomuch honour, as to accept me for your companion. Whereto Palmerin right ſone condiſcended, and then began ſuch a league of amity betweene them, that it endured to the death, as you ſhall reade hereafter. But becauſe it was now late, they toke their leaue of each other till the next morning, when Maulicus woulde haue

Olorioco

Olorico dine at his Table with Palmerin, where wanted no prouision that beseemed so great a person, being now set forth in most rich and honourable pompe. The Tables being withdrawn, the Prince began the daunce, thinking to see fayre Alchidiana, but he was deceyued, for she kept her Chamber in her amorous opinions, and would not be seene till the appointed day, when the Armie should make shew in open fielde.

This daie the Soldane went to order the battell, and to appoint the winges and squadrons, which made Alchidiana likewise take delight to walke abroad with Palmerin, who was now in marualious sumptuous Armor, bearing a Sheild of Sinople, with a bar of Gold figured therein, signifying his inward ioy, that in so short time he should get from these barbarous and vnchristian hellhoundes. Before them went two yong Lords bearheaded, and behind, a great number of Ladies and Knights, so rich in apparrel as could be deuised. Being thus brought to their Palfraies, Palmerin beganne to carrier and braue with his Horse before the Princesse, who toke no little delight in her supposed louer, and tyding along with him, fell into many discourses, nothing tending to Religion as I gesse, but such deuoute seruices as loue teacheth his Schollers. In the midst of their communication, came the Prince Olorico, so altered with his affection to the Princesse, that they which haue felt like assaults, might easily iudge the cause of his passions. Hauing made two or three humble reuerences to her, he offered to kisse her hand: which she would not permit him, excusing the matter so modestly, and wishing his welfare as her owne, that he imagined himselfe greatly fauoured.

Palmerin regarding the afflictions of this newe come louer, and that he might giue him the better meane, to deuise with her so priuatly as he desired, turned his Horse to the other side of the Princesse, thus speaking to her. What thinke you (Madame) of the gentle succour, which my

Lord Olorico hath brought your Father: beléeue mee, the courtesie is so surpassing great, as your selfe ought especially to thanke him, if it were but for his forwardnes, in qualifying ỳ haughty courage of Amaranos Prethren. Doubtlesse (quoth the) his companie is to be estéemed, and among tenne thousand Knights, hardly may bee founde so braue men as is in his troupe: in recompence whereof, I will not deny the Prince any thing, that hée with honour will request of me. Olorico perceiuing this suddaine inuention of Palmerin, returned him many thankes, and after the accustomed dissimulations vsed in such causes, albeit Loue had for a while depriued him of speech: earnestly beholding the rare beautie of the Princesse, he thus began. Madame, although I should owe to my Lord your Father, all the seruices that a Knight is able to yéeld his gracious patrone, yet the very least of these fauours, which it hath pleased your excellencie to bestowe on mee, may bee reckoned for much more then deserued recompence. Wherefore béeing perswaded that my seruice is placed in your good conceite, I shall not hencefoorth feare to put my life in hazard, so much I desire to sée these present promises accomplished: whereof you Sir Palmerin, being estéemed among the most famous persons liuing, shall beare mee witnes, when time graunteth conuenient opportunitie. I haue promised nothing, said the Princesse, but what I will right gladly accomplish: requiring nothing but your good opinion, which so many choyse Ladies haue héeretofore desired. And I demaund no better paie (quoth the Prince) then her gracious fauour whom I desire to please. Thus beguiled they the time, till the Armie marched forward in araye, which they faire and softly followed, till tenne Pages belonging to the Princesse, leading tenne goodly Coursers most richly caparasoned, came before them. An other Page brought a stéemely Launce, the bandrole whereof was the Princesse collours, and a Golden Shéeld, wherein was portraied the heade of Amarano, helde vppe by the haire by a Knights hands,

hands, signifying the victory of Palmerin against him: the Shelde being bordered round about with Pearles, Rubyes, Emeralds: Crisolites, and other precious stones of inestimable value, then beganne the Princesse thus to Palmerin.

My noble Friende, in this warre I desire you to bee my Knight, and for my sake to beare this Launce & Shéld, that the proude Brethren may see the shame of Amarano. And such is my hope, that as you serues the eldest, so will you deale with the other, while one of thē remaines aliue. These Horses likewise for the warres I bestow vpon you, they being accounted the very best in Turkie, and these will serue you well when you are in fields: our Gods bearing me witnes (faire friende) that did not my estate hinder me, and the regard of mine honour withhold me, with right good will would I beare you company, to see your noble and knightly déedes of Armes. And this I dare boldly saie, that Hipsicratea neuer followed her Husband Methridates with greater affection, were he on Sea, or on lande, on horsebacke or on foote: then I could do the noble Palmerin d'Oliua. Notwithstanding, though my body may not be there, yet shall my spirite be continually present, to comfort my languishing life, which will be but a shadow of death to me till your returne. Bue because I sée many eyes are fixed on vs, all the Kinges likewise taking their leaue of my Father: I will leaue you to the protectiō of our Gods, who send you happily and right soone againe. These words were coupled with such sighes and teares, as she had fallen from her Horse, but that one of her Ladies of Honor stayed her.

Palmerin after he had with great kindnes thanked her, kissed her hande, saying. Perswade your selfe sweete Madame, your Shéld shall be showne in such place, where his Brethren that detracted your honor, shall easily sée it, although but little to their aduauntage. Thus tooke they

leaue of each other, and Olorico likewise had the Princesse farewell: then doing their duety to the Soldane, followed the Armie, leauing him and Alchidiana sorrowfull for their departure.

CHAP. XVII.

How the Prince Olorico being with Palmerin in his Tent, demaunded of him if hee loued the Princesse Alchidiana, and of the answere he made him.

THese two young Princes, Palmerin and Olorico conferred still as they rode, with what great griefe & sorrow Alchidiana parted from them & falling from one imagination to another, they concluded to lodge together in one Tent. And because Palmerin was the better and more richly prouided of all things necessary for the Field, Olorico was the more glad of his company: so the day being spent, and the Tents pitched in a goodly plaine, Palmerin inuited the Prince of Arabia to sup with him, for the Soldane had appointed him such honourable prouision, as better he could not for his owne son. The tables withdrawne, and spending the time a while at Chesse play, they went to bedde, where Olorico not able to sleepe, began in this manner, to his friendly companion.

Most fortunate Palmerin, how much more could I wish to resemble you, then the greatest King or Lorde in the world, to bee likewise beloued of her, who in beautie, good grace, and sweet speech, hath not her like. And because my

my good friende and brother, I haue noted the speciall loue of the Princesse Alchidiana towards you, let mee intreate you to tell mee, who shee is you aboue all other loue, and intend to make your espoused Wife: vowing to you, on the word of a Prince, whosoeuer shee bee, to conceale it with secresie, and to dissuade my selfe from my loue newly begunne, for your sake, albeit I dyed therefore. For your noble minde and braue gentility, hath gained such soueraignety ouer me, as all other pleasures whatsoeuer I despise, onely to haue your company and fauour. Thus qualifying the passions, which day and night doe secretly torment mee, I will set downe such order as my Father shall not neede to send his Ambassadors, nor imploy any of my Friendes to demaund her for mee: albeit for this onelie cause, I left my Country in such sort as you haue seene. Palmerin hearing the words of the young Prince, perceyuing him wounded with her loue, whom he desired to be furthest from, smiling, sayd: My Lord Olorico, I sweare to you by the honor of my knighthood, I neuer thought of the loue which you demaund, nor haue I any desire to follow that humour. But true it is, that I would do so much for her, as a knight may for his Lady, for so shee well deserues, her fauour and gentle behauiour worthie farre better ability: wherefore my deare Friend, if you will beleeue mee, giue not ouer your intent, but practise to gayne her to your Wife: and I promise you that I will so moue the matter to the Soldane and her, as happilie may effecte the end of your desires. Yet let me entreate you to continue so iust a Friend to her, as her high calling well deserueth: otherwise I had rather die the death, then once to speake word on your behalfe. These newes so cheared the Prince as embracing him many times, and returning him manifold thanks, he said: Assuredly, my noble friend, I am greatly beholding to my father, who gaue me my present being: but much more I owe to you, because my estate had now ended, but that your gracious speeches called me againe to

life,

life. My second selfe, hauing thus lost my liberty, I despaire of attaining what you haue promised, and endure a death more then mortall: but that you breath hope of successe into mee, assuring mee of immediate felicitie & ioyfull dayes hereafter, which no Father, but so good a freend was able to do. After other such like speeches, the Prince slept, but Palmerin touched in another sorte, was sollicited with the remembrance of his lost Friends: and perceyuing his companion slept soundly, he began thus to deliuer his sorrowes. Ah vnfortunate and wretched Palmerin, how can thy mind so long beare this yoke of seruitude, onely standing in feare of death? Hast thou so forgot those two perfect louers, Trineus and Agriola, with thy true friend Prolome, not knowing whether they be aliue or dead? What? Wilt thou not searche for them? The Emperour of Allemaigne, hath not he good cause to complaine of thee: yea, and to blame thee, if his Sonne be not returned? Darest thou present thy selfe before him? Ah touch of loyaltie, faire Agriola, how iustly mayst thou call me thine enemy, inuenter and first motion of thy misfortunes? Oh wretched and miserable that I am for leauing thee so discourteously, I well deserue a million of torments, farre worse then those exercised by the cruell Dyonise on the Scicilians. Nor could they be sufficient to expiate my hainous guilt, in the forgetting thee faire Princesse, I liue in daily delights among these Moores and Tartars. But were I such as I ought to be, mindfull of a fault so foully committed: I should not liue one houre in rest or quiet, til I had found my dearest Friends again. Ah disloyal Traytour, how canst thou thus waste thy time heere slothfully, knowing the great and continuall trauells, thy Ladie and Mistresse endureth for thee? But I vow to God, this warre finished, I will not abide in the Soldans Court ten dayes, but intende to sette forwards to see the Iewell of my welfare. And were it not to my perpetuall discredite, as also that I should be iudged a fayntyng coward, I would beginne my Iourney presently.

Thus

Thus all the Night continued Palmerin such like com-plaints, considering his Friends misfortune and his owne, with such deepe impressions, as thence forward he liued in maruellous melancholy, and would not delight himselfe, as before he was accustomed.

CHAP. XVIII.

¶ Of the Combatte betweene Palmerin, and two of Amaranoes Brethren, whom he valiantly ouercame and killed.

Following the true discourse of our Historie of the King of Balisarca, who beeing Lieutenant Generall of all the whole Army, caused the next morning to bee proclaimed by sounde of Trumpet, that euery man should attende on his Ensigne: and not to goe robbing and Foraging the Villages along the Countrey, on paine of death to be inflicted vpon the offender. So marching on in good Araye, in short time after they Encamped themselues before a Cittie, where the enemies kept themselues in Garrison: and planting themselues there for their aduantage; the next Morning they determined to giue the Assault. All the Night long they were ordering the manner of their Batterie, the Pyoners digging and making Trenches, and such Defences as are requisite in warlike occasions.

Euery thing in due and perfect order, at Sunne-rising they beganne to assayle the Cittie rounde about: following their intent with such courage and Alacritie, as with Scaling-ladders, & other Engins, in lesse then two houres they

they gotte vpon the Walles, and (in despight of their enemyes) entred the Citty, murdering and expulsing the Phrygians, and sharing the people among themselues. All other Cityes, Townes, and Villages, that were taken by the Enemy, within fiue dayes after were recouered, they not daring to with stand the Soldans power, Gramiel, Amaranoes eldest Brother amazed heereat, hauing vndertaken to be reuenged of his Brothers death, with his Forces, betoke himselfe to open Field, determining to giue the Assyrians Battell, and that way to make tryall of their fortune: in which resolution they came within halfe a dayes Journey of their Enemyes.

The King of Balisarca aduertised hereof, dislodged immediately, taking aduantage of a little Mountaine, which was in the open sight of the Enemy. And Palmerin, who desired nothing more then Fight, that he might accomplish his promise to the Princesse Alchidiana: when he receiued of her his rich Shielde and Launce, perswaded the Generall, that he should the next morning summon the Brethren of Amarano, that within foure and twentie howres, they should depart the Soldans confines, or else endure the daunger of the Swoorde. The King of Balisarca aduising hereon in counsell, founde it very necessary and expedient: wherfore calling his Sonne, Syr Palmerin, and the Prince Olorico, he committed the charge thereof to their present dispatch. They being come to the Army of Gramiel, were immediatly conducted to the Princes Tent, who was then deliberating with his Brethren, and other Captains of the Armie. So soone as he vnderstood the arriuall of these Embassadours, hee caused them to come before him, and their message being deliuered: the Phrygian Princes, who were of marueilous haughtie disposition, answered, that they would not obey any such commandement. Moreouer, they intended to chase thence the Soldans Lieutenant, euen to the very Gates of his owne Citie: For that (contrary to all Equitie) hee withstoode the Buryall of their Brothers

bodie

bodie in his kingdome. Guerestin, brother to the king of Balisarca, could not suffer such iniury to his Lord in his presence: Wherefore he said, that the Soldan had done them no wrong, but receiued their Brother and his Traine with greater honour then they deserued, and that none of them should haue the like againe. So went the sixth of the Battalion, Gramiell and two of his Brethren following him, whereof the one had bene in Assiria, with his Brother Amarano: who seing Palmerin, that all this while kept himselfe without the Tent, and marking well his Shielde, where in mockage was paynted his Brothers head: hee knew him immediately, and in great rage pulling himselfe by the hayre, saide:

Villayne that I am, howe can I suffer in my presence the Traytour that murthered my Brother? Bold and presumptuous Caytife, howe durst thou aduenture before me, thus to deride me with thy villanie? Durst me (saide Palmerin) I dare come before thee, with better assurance of my selfe, then thy false Brother when he entred Combat with mee. Wherefore, if thou wilt prooue such a Gallant, as thou wouldest haue mee iudge thee to bee, by these Braueadoes, and likewise hast any stomacke to reuenge thy Brothers shame: Arme thy selfe, and another of thy Brethren with thee, and come to me in place conuenient, where I my selfe will iustifie to you both, that Amarano was vnrythily slain, and as such a false accusing Traytour well deserued. I desire nothing more (saide Orinello) for to was he called that gaue these hote speeches, but my Brother shall not deale with thee, till I haue tryed my fortune alone: and if I faile of my purpose, then shall he afterwards Combat with thee, this prouided, that thou assure me from anye in thy company, but thine owne person. What will I vpon any knighthow (saide Palmerin) thou presumest as much on thy behalfe: yet I thinke before thou part be done, that thou wilt with thy fellow with thee. Thus Palmerin, Olorico, and Guerestin, withdrew themselues, Orinello and his brother pre-

presently going to arme them, and accompanied with many Knights, came into the field, Palmerin likewise as readie as the formost, came in with a good traine of Souldiers hee had brought with him, least any treason should bee wrought against him. Olorico shewed himselfe greatlie discontented, because he might not accompanie his Friend in the Combat: but Palmerin perswaded him, that more needefull occasions were reserved for him, which should returne him greater honor, and whom he should court in better sort, then euer he did the Ladies of Arabia, Gramiel being very richly armed, would needes come see his Brethrens Combat, which had good hope would sort to their honour: but Palmerin seeing Orinello readie to the carrire, encountred his enemy with such puissance, as his Launce passing through his body, caused him fal dead from his horse, without removing either hand or foote.

Having performed his course, hee returned to take his launce out of his enemies body, striking him with the great Truncheon ende on the stomacke, to see if any life was left in him: but seeing his soule was departed to Lucifers Pallace, hee couched his staffe to receive the other Brother, who met him with such strength, as he was well neere dismounted, yet in the ende he was sent after his Brother, though many hardie strokes first passed betweene them. Hereupon was such a sudden crie on all sides, some with ioy, and other with sorrow, as made the ayre resound their voices. And I thinke that the Greekes when they received their libertie by Quintus Flaminius, made not the like clamour: when (as Valerius rehearseth) the Byrds fell from the ayre with the furie of their cries. In the meane while, the King of Balisarca, having heard hereof, came into the Field, accompanied with many Lords, and conducted Palmerin with great honour and triumph backe to his Tent: especially the Prince Olorico, who exceeding ioyfull for the good fortune of his companion, embracing him, said. Ah gentle Palmerin, how brauely haue you accomplished your

promise

promise to the Princesse? the like successe Heauen graunt you in labouring my cause. Beleeue me good Prince (quoth Palmerin) so well will I employe my selfe in this action, as I hope you shall haue cause to thanke me. Now to returne to Gramiel, hee caused his Brothers bodyes to be conueyed thence, and embalmed them in two Chests of Leade, referring their Funerall till his returne: and with the teares in his eyes, he thus began to excite his people:

Not knowing how (my louing Friends and Countreymen,) to animate your mindes sufficiently, with remembrance of the tyrannie exercised by the Soldan, on the body of my late Brother and your Prince: vnhappy occasion presents you with a fresh memorie of reuenge, seeing these two young Princes, the beloued Sonnes of your King, so shamefully slayne in your presence. For this cause, deare Friendes, that each of you may take a new courageous spirite, to morrowe to encounter these effeminate Assyrians; let vs all be resolute together, and cause them to vnderstand, that you, who haue led your liues in the Deserts of Affrica, much better know how to manage Armes, then such Louterers in their Mistresses Chambers, who can do nothing but before their Ladyes.

Hereuppon two hundreth Knightes aduaunced themselues before him, swearing, and vndertaking to bring Palmerins bodie to him the Daye following: and therefore all that Night they prepared themselues, strengthening their Shieldes and Armours, and all other things necessary for the Fight, thinking the next morning by Sunne rising to bid them battell, these Knights inuenting to Ambush themselues as you shall heare. Palmerin beeing brought thus honorably to his Tent, called for the Chyrurgions to visite his wounds, which they founde so easie to be cured, as they assured him of speedie recouerie. Hee then summoning the whole Conncell together, aduised them, that in his opinion he thought it expedient to dislodge that place about midnight, with bag and baggage, and so to coast the Mountain,

feig-

feigning a fearfull departure. For (quoth he) the enemy aduertised of our retyre, will imagine that wee dispaire of our successe, by reason of the death of the two slaine Princes.

Thus our dissembled flight, will cause them disorderly to pursue vs, which we will suffer, till espying our aduantage: when returning valiantly vppon them, I dare gage my life wee shall eyther kill them downe right before vs, or at least driue them to a most shamefull foyle. This deuise was generally allowed for good, and at the houre appointed was executed. By great chaunce this morning was Gramiell came among his men very early: and vnderstanding how the Soldans Power was departed with such silence, presently cryed Alarum, charging all his men to follow them, for hee doubted they would enter a Cittie neere at hande, which was so strongly fortified, as they should neuer entice them forth to skirmish, therfore he desired to preuent them of that helpe.

Hereupon the Horsemen galloped after them amaine, crying: vpon them (my friends) vpon them, the day is ours. Palmerin, the Prince Olorico, the King of Balisarca, Guerestn his Sonne, with a thousand men at Armes, seeing how they were disordered: returned vpon them and made such a slaughter among the Phrygians, as that the fielde was couered all euer with theyr bodyes. When Gramiell, seeing that of the first Sallie not one came backe againe, set forward with his Battell, wherein he had a thousand horsmen, and furiously running on the Soldans power: by mis-fortune hee mette with the Prince Olorico, to whome hee gaue such a cruell stroke on the head, as had almost set him beside his saddle. Olorico highly discontented hereat, turned valiantly towards his enemy, and betweene them continued a very daungerous fight: but in the ende, Gramiells Helmet being cut off from his head, he began to despayre, when Olorico following his intent, nobly at one blowe smote his head from his shoulders. This mishappe was seene by one of his younger Brethren, who running

fiercely

fiercely with his Launce against Olorico, was suddenly preuented by Palmerin, in that hee stroke him beside his Horse, where he was troden to death with the trampling of the horses.

Then came forth the two hundred sworne Knights from their ambush, who had vndertaken Palmerins death, and him they hemd in so subtilly, as he was brought into very great daunger. Which the Prince of Arabia beholding, made way through the thickest to assist his Friend, after whom followed Guresin with an hundred Knights: without which supply, both Palmerin and Olorico had bin slaine, for their Horses were killed vnder them, and they enforced to fight on foote. But when they beheld this fortunate succour, their courage nobly increased, and then beganne the sharpest encounter, for the wings on either side approched, the Archers and Crossebowes likewise, sending their arrowes as thicke as haile among them, so that the battaile endured till darke night. Then the Brethren sounded the retraite, for which the King of Balisarca was not sorry, hauing so ouertrauelled himselfe that day, as he could no longer sit on horsebacke: notwithstanding, before he would enter his Tent, he saw the Field assured, the watch placed, and all the Souldiours planted in good order.

CHAP. XVI.

How the Brethren of Gramiell, with all their traine, took themselues to flight, and how Palmerin suddainly pursued them with his power, and tooke them prysoners.

IMmediatly after that these two Phrigian Princes had thus sounded the retraite, and considered how they had lost fiue of their brethren, three in single fight with Palmerin, and the other in the battell, the greatest part of their power likewise, almost vtterly vnmaid to know the certaintie of their strength, they commanded a decision to be made of the whole and wounded, and seeing how small their number was, they concluded not to stay in any place, till they came to the Realme of Palmeria, whereof Maurice was king, and their kinsman, from whom Palmerin take the enchanted Crowne, where they thought to supply their want, with men actiue and able to Armes.

The next day, the King of Balisarca raunged a thousand men in order, to giue a freth assault on the enemy: but he was suddenly aduertised by his espials, how the Phrygians were fledde. He not a little glad of these newes, sent word to Palmerin thereof, who though he was sore wounded, armed himselfe, commanding his Captaines to prouide fire thousand men presently, to goe see the certaintie of these tydings. With this strength hee ioyned the Kings power, and so went to the enemies Campe, where they found

found no resistance, nor any but such as lay grieuously wounded, of whom he required which way the cowards were fled: which the poore Souldyours reporting to him, he vowed to follow till he ouertoke them. This resolution agreed vppon, betweene the King of Balisarca and him, with tenne thousand Light-Horsemen, hee determined to pursue them: and the King to stay there with all the rest of the Armye, to recouer the Cittyes and Townes againe to the Soldane, which before had bene taken by the Enemie, and to be in readinesse with assistance, if he should happen to stand in any neede.

While Palmerin made election of his company, a Horsman was dispatched with these newes to the Soldan, how the enemies had bene foyled, and of their flight. The Messenger being come before Maulicus, & the Letter opened, and read, how valiantly Palmerin dealt with his enemies: before all his Nobilitie, the Soldan sayde: By all the Oracles of Delphos, I may well perswade my self, that where soeuer Palmerin is for vs, wee are assured of the Victorie.

The Princesse hauing heard these Newes, sent for the Messenger, and after shee vnderstoode by him, how Palmerin bare her Shielde in the face of her Enemyes, and hadde slaine in Combat two of Amaranoes Brethren: she was maruellous ioyfull, and so well rewarded the Messenger for his paynes, as for euer hee might extoll the bountie of the Princesse.

The Messenger dispatched againe with the Soldanes Letters, brought spedie answere to the King of Balisarca and Palmerin, of their Packet: wherein the Soldan heartilie thanked them, desiring them to follow their Fortune.

Palmerin vnderstanding the will of the Soldane and Alchidiana, and howe they desired him to pursue the Bretheren of Gramiell: determined to set forwards the nexte morning, aduertising the Prince Olorico thereof, that hee might put himselfe in a readinesse. But notwithstanding their diligence, their Enemies gotte before them into Pal-

meria, where they rested themselues, in hope to be assisted by their Cozen Maurice. And whē he was giuen to vnderstand how the dumbe Knight named Palmerin followed them, wherfore he commanded them to depart his realme, for he would not aid them against his dearest friend. This repulse driue them into great despayre, yet seeing they could not helpe it, they were constrayned to make a vertue of necessity, and so secretly as they could deuise, by little and little stole toward their owne country. Maurice hearing how Palmerin was come into his Realme, rode thrée or foure dayes iourney to méet him, & entertayning him with exceeding honor, offered himselfe, his people, and substance to his seruice. Palmerin very thankefull for the Princes kindnesse, would haue nothing but certaine horses of him, because diuers of his own had miscaried. By this time were the Brethren entered the Confines, which belonged to the Admirall of Tharsus, where they had done very much harme, by exactions and great misusing of the people. This Admirall was a very gentle Knight, and named Alfarano, which séeing what iniury they did him, and vnderstanding that they had béene conquered, and now fled without any place of assurance: leuied an hoast of hardy Souldiours, wherewith hée intended to keepe a straight, through which they must of necessitie passe, being so narrow as they could passe two together, and no way else coulde they escape him, except they would climbe the tops of the Mountains.

In this place lay the Admirall ambushed, with so many men as hee thought conuenient, and within thrée dayes after Palmerin with his power came to assist them. The Phrygians hauing heard hereof, were greatly amazed at this vnexpected aduenture, and had no other helpe but to clime the mountaine, where in holes & Caues they were glad to hide themselues, and there they continued fiue or sixe daies in safety, albeit they were ready to dye for want of sustenance. Palmerin foreseeing the incommoditie of the

place,

place, and that they could not escape him, nor neede hée any further to follow them: caused the mountaine to be enuironed on all sides, thinking the ende hereof would bee such, as indeede it afterward prooued to bee. For these poore distressed men, hauing neyther foode or other prouision, came forth of their Caues, and assembled together on the side of the Mountaine, where entering into conference of their estate, some gaue counsell to go fight it out, but other (better aduised) would not consent thereto: for better is it (quoth they) to yéelde our selues to the mercy of our enemies, then to aduenture our fortune, where no hope of succesle is to be expected.

Hereuppon they concluded, and the two Brethren of Gramiell, were the first that vnarmed themselues, & comming in this manner to Palmerins Tent, thus they began. Noble Knight Palmerin, more fortunate then any man in the world, we, Brethren to the renowned Prince Amarano, whom thou with thine owne hand hast slaine, and three other of our Brethren likewise, whereof the noble Orinello, deserueth speech, all Sonnes to a King, and themselues heretofore worthie accompilshed Princes, though nowe toyled and comforted with the dead: we (noble Lord) more certaine of thy clemencie and courtesie, then any successiue ende of a Battell so vnreasonable and desperate, come to yéeld our bodyes and goods to thy disposing: desiring thée to pittie our estate, and regarde the workes of Fortune, vnto whom thou art subiect as well as wee. Besides, that the more shall greater persons be praysed for honorable fauour then by vsing rigour and and vnnaturall cruelty, which maketh them euery where hated and despised. When Palmerin sawe them so humble, considering his owne estate, and how time might frowne on him, returned them this answer.

Now (my Lords) haue you done wisely, to lay by Armes, and submit your selues, for otherwise your destruction was at hand. Notwithstanding, in respect you haue thus yéelded your selues to mee: I entertaine you into my safe defence,

assuring you Peace with the Soldane, so that you sweare your faithfull Loue, and do him homage. So gaue he them in keeping to one of his knights, whom he specially trusted, and returning to Alfarano, in recompence of his wrongs, and losses, sustained by the Phrygians, gaue him all their spoyle, and the Raunsome of all the Knights taken Prisoners. The Admyrall humbly kissing his hand, desired him to repose himselfe in one of his Citties, which was within fiue or sixe miles of the place: which gentle offer Palmerin would not refuse, because he was sore ouer-wearyed with trauell: Wherefore by the Admyralls appointment, the Pallace was well prouided, both for Palmerin, and his good Friend the Prince Olorico.

CHAP. XX.

¶ Howe the Queene of Tharsus came to see Palmerin, in the Cittie belonging to Alfarano her Admyrall, where by the meanes of an Enchanted Drinke, shee accomplished her pleasure with him.

HEre our History willeth vs to remember, how that in our former Discourse was mentioned, that the Quéene of Tharsus sent a moste rich Helmet to Palmerin, and at the Damoselles returne, was made acquainted with his singular composed feature, rare courtesie, and Knightly Chiualry: the report whereof inforced her amorously to affect him, and that in such vehement manner, as she determined her owne death, vnlesse she might enioy his louely companie.

Which the better to compasse, shee discoursed her de-

sires

stres to a cunning Magitian, he by whose meanes shee sent the Helmet to Palmerin: who gaue her such an Enchaunted powdre, as Palmerin, drinking it in wine or otherwise, should sone after become so forgetfull of himselfe, as the Quéene might accomplish whatsoeuer she desired. He likewise did reueale to her, the seuerall Loues of Palmerin and Olorico, which Tale made her more earnest in following her intent. And vnderstanding his arriuall in the Realme of Palmeria, concluded in person to goe se him: furnishing herselfe with all things necessary, both rich Tapestrie, and great store of Golde and Siluer plate, habillements, precious stones, rings, and vnualuable Iewelles. With these she adorned her Knights, Ladies, and Gentlewomen to the vttermost, and when she had finished her traine to her own liking: shee sette forward with such expedition, as within three dayes she arriued at the Cittie where he was, but first she aduertized her Admyrall of her comming, that he should imagine nothing by her sodden presence. The Admyrall so ioyfull hereof as could be deuised, in that by this meanes he should the more honorably entertaine his Guests, acquainted Palmerin and Olorico therewith, who likewise were exceeding glad of the Newes, especially Palmerin, desirous to know by her his Off-spring.

Therefore in most magnificent order with their Men at Armes, and the Admyrall Alfarano, they rode to méete the Quéene for her greater honour: who by the speciall intelligence was giuen her, knew Palmerin among them all, in that he marched foremost with the Prince Olorico, and the Admyral of Tharsus. Shee regarding in him farre more singularities, then sparing report had acquainted her withall: After that Palmerin had saluted her with very great Reuerence, as he was not to learne Courtly courtesie, the Quéene requited him with a sweet kisse, and thus beganne. Syr Knight, the fayrest beyond all other that euer I saiwe, well worthy are you to bee esteemed among the most happie, being able to witnes the Loue of Ladies that neuer saw

you. Adiuile your ſelfe well of this great fauour, and what a precious Iewell you receyue of them, in requitall of your ſeruice, or acceptance of any Amorous contentment. Then wonder not (Gentle Knight) if to ſee you, I haue left my Countrey: for beſide your great valor, bounty, and loyaltie, which neuer can be ſufficiently cõmended: your beautie, affabilitie, and moſt rare perfections, deſerue not onely the Loue of the greateſt Ladie and Princeſſe, but their conſtruall ſeruice likewiſe, if they but conſider their owne duties. If then your vertues and gifts of nature are of ſuch value and merite, what may ſhe imagine of her ſelfe, who is your only Ladie and Miſtreſſe, and aboue all other is honored with your faithfull ſeruice, as well records the memory of the burning Crowne? Palmerin hearing himſelfe ſo commended by ſuch an excellent Queen, blushed with bashfulnes, and humbly shaped this anſwer. Madame, ſo farre vnable am I, to deſerue the Loue and good will you beare me, as neuer will Fortune fauour me ſufficiently, to recompence the leaſt parts of this Princely kindneſſe. Yet hereof (Faire Queene) you may aſſure your ſelfe, that you haue a Knight ſo forward in your ſeruice, as nothing ſhall withholde him from executing your commaundement, though the penaltie of my life were enioyned thereon.

Truſt me (quoth the Queene) your behauiour promiſeth no leſſe then you ſpeake of, and if I haue taken any paine for you, I thinke my ſelfe ene throughly ſatisfied: let it ſuffiſe you then, that I account my Fortune not the leaſt, hauing gained ſuch place in your good opinion. Theſe and ſuch like ſpeeches paſſed betweene them, till they came to Alfaranos Pallace, where they ſpent the reſt of the Day in diuerſity of pleaſures: the Queene intreating Palmerin and Olorico the next day to dine with her in her lodging, where ſhe intended honourably to feaſt them. The nexte day at ten of the clocke, theſe two young Princes came to ſee her, finding her in a goodly Hall, which was richly hanged with Cloth of Gold, and therein ſtood a faire Cupboord, garnished with

with the most costly plate that euer was seen: for the basest piece was cleane Golde, embelished with precious stones, beside diuers other inestimable strange Cups and Glasses of Agatha. What they serues at Dinner was, I leaue to the iudgement of Ladyes desirous of fauour. Yet this I dare well say, that the vyandes were so rare and exquisite, and abounding in such plentie, as though she had them daylie at commaund. The Tables withdrawne, the Quene toke eache of the Princes by the hand, and sitting downe betweene them, with a sweete smyling countenance she beganne thus:

I pray you (gentle knights) to tell mee, which of you is most affected to the seruice of Loue, and followes it with greatest endeuour: gladly would I be resolued by you, albeit I knowe the certaintie as well as your selues:

Madame (quoth Palmerin) if you haue such knowledge of our affections, well may our answere be excused. Very true (saide the Quene) especially you, of whose Loyalty the Prince Maurice is so notable a witnesse. Notwithstanding, which of you doth most mistrust the attainment of her grace, to whom he is most deuoted in Loue, let him not giue ouer the pursuit of his desire: but rather let me intreat you continue your Loue with much more seruencie, as to those renowmed Ladies, who by they vertues and graces, doe worthily challenge you from all other: for I dare assure you such a successiue ende of your Loue, as with speciall content you shall finish your affectionate desires. If they were toyfull of this assurance, it is no question to be demanded, chiefly Olorico, who till then dispaired: but now so happily resolued, gaue place to Palmerin, who was desirous to conferre more priuately with the Quene: therefore in meane time hee deuised with another Ladie, and Palmerin seeing the occasion to fitte, began his tale in this manner. I cannot forget (faire Quene) when you sent your Lady to mee at the Soldans Court: that after her message deliuered, she said to mee, that you were acquainted with further secrets,

con-

concerning my estate. For this cause I intreate your highnesse, if you doe not imagine me too importunate: that it might please you to aquaint me with my Father and Mother, for that aboue all other things I most desire. The Queene amazed at this demand, thus answered. Know (gentle knight) that what the Ladie in this matter said to you, as also what my selfe euen now promised you: commeth not from me, for one of my knights acquainted mee therewith, he being the most skilfull in the Magicall sciences, that is in all Turkie. As now hee is returned into his owne Countrie, and no other answer could I get of him: but that you are the Sonne of the most loyall, redoubted and valiant Prince in the world, whom before you haue any further knowledge of, you shall deliuer from death, and that very shortly. Beside, you loue a Lady, who in all perfections of nature, fortune or spirit, hath not her equall.

In sooth (quoth Palmerin) I shal account my selfe right happie, to deliuer my Father from such danger, and heauen I beseech that it may so be. On these tearmes came Alfarano, and the dauncing began, which constrained them to breake of talke, and step into the daunce, in which delight they spent the time till Supper was summoned, till which aduertisement, they were so well, as was Ogyer the Dane in Faria. For neuer was Dydo such an affectionate auditrice of Aeneas, recounting the ruine of the Troyans, then was the Queene of Tharsus to Palmerin: towards whom her heart was so enthralled, and with secret fire so wasted and consumed, as doth the Ware before the fire. Being set at the Banquet, Palmerin and Olorico on the one side, and the Queene and Alfarano on the other, the Waiters attending on them were two Ladies, who had in charge to giue the one, the sleeping and dangerous drinke, and to the other, the amorous and delicate, yet in effect to prouoke forgetfulnes: so wel did the Ladies discharge their office, and the Princes toke this mixed drink so substantially, as they could hardly forbeare sleeping at the Table;

where-

wherefore euery one arising, the Quéene gaue the good-night to Alfarano, who presently went to his lodging. The were these two sleepie Princes conducted to their Chamber, where being in bed, they slept soundly, and the Quéene comming to them, accompanied with those trustie Ladies that waited at Supper: tooke the Prince Olorico, conuaying him to another bedde, for he was so charmed as hee could not awake.

Afterward the Ladies departed, and the Quéene went to bedde to Palmerin, whom she abused at her owne pleasure. A matter not to bee esteemed fabulous, in that other haue been brought into the like case, as well may witnesse Brangiena, who endured these sweet skirmishes, because she would not manifest the history of Yseul her Mistresse, and Tristram. The quéene hauing satisfied her vnchast desire, caused Olorico to be brought into his place againe, & then returned to her owne Chamber. But now this enchantment loosing his operation, a fantsie appeared to Palmerin, resembling his Ladie Polynard, who said. Ah Palmerin, disloyall Strayteur and Adulterer, how much are they deceiued, that repute thee a loyall and faithfull Louer: Ah wretch, vnworthy of so good a name, hauing so inuriously forgotten mee. Dost thou not consider thy great offence, committed against the God of Heauen: medling with a Woman more brute then brutishnes it selfe, and thy disloiall treason against my selfe: Be assured, that if thou presently forsake not her company: I will neuer forget thy fault, but chastise thee continuallie as a dissembling reprobate. So she departed, Palmerin intreating her to pardon this iniurie, which she would not heare, but flouing away in great anger: and he awaking, brake forth into these speeches.

Ah vnhappie wretch that I am, thus to loose the gracious fauour of my Mistresse. These words awaked the Prince Olorico, who embracing him in his armes, demanded the cause of his sorrow: but Palmerin was so surprised

with

with griefe, as hee would make no answere, but fell from the Bedde in a swoune. Olorico feating he was dead, cried out for helpe, whereat the Quéene arose, and casting her Night-Mantle about her, came to knowe the occasion of this clamour: and finding Palmerin breathlesse, she called for so many present remedies, as extinguished the passionat fitte. Palmerin seeing the Quéene so neere him, clothed himselfe immediately, and departed the Chamber, commaunding all his people to prouide themselues, for he would departe thence within an houres space. Neyther coulde the earnest intreatyes of the Quéene, nor courteous perswasions of Alfarano, cause him to stay till Dinner time: but his Carryages being sent before, and his Men attending him, he came to take his leaue of the Quéene, who very sorrowfull for this straunge accident, said to him at his departure:

Noble Syr Palmerin, my heart attainted with such extream griefe, as the sight of you doth somewhat remedy, expected further hope of ease by your presence: but seeing your departure may not bee withstoode, I pray you vouchsafe to weare this Ring for my sake, and keep it safely, till my messenger bring you an other like vnto it. Madame (quoth Palmerin) beeing vnable to remunerate the great honours you haue done mee, I will not denye your small request: that I may the better fulfill the bond of Allegeance, wherein I stand bound to you while I liue. Goe then in the safe protection of the Gods (quoth she) for thou hast left me such a recompence, as all my life time will be ioyfull to mee.

Palmerin not vnderstanding her darke speeches, departed, putting the Ring on his finger, being the most rich and curious piece of worke that euer was seene: For in it was a goodly great Rubie cut in faces, so liuely as could be deuised, which shone so brightly, as in the Night time it sparkled great light. The Quéene likewise, after shee had giuen great Riches to the Admyrall, returned into her Countrey, leading thencefoorwards a very Chaste and Continent life, onely for his sake, by whome in (short time) shee found her-

selfe

words this day vsed in my presence to Alchidiana, I remaine vowed to your seruice: for in truth you know not the good you did me, supporting my imperfection of speech when I was before my Mistres. Yet know I not whence such imbecilitie should proceed, if not by being rauished with regard of her celestiall countenance, my ouer laboured spirit forsooke me, and being too much tormented in this languishing bodie: abandoned all the parts sensatiue, placing it selfe onely in mine eyes, which neuer could imagine themselues satisfied, contemplating beautie of so rare and especiall estimation. And were it not my hope onlie consisteth in you, comparing my small desert, and the excellencie of my Ladie: long ere this had my soule forsoke her infortunate habitation, which so vndiscreetly fell into these oppressing passions. And this I earnestly intreate you to let her vnderstand: in that I feare least she impute happy alteration, to want of wisedome and ciuilitie. Trust me, quoth Palmerin, I promise you my vttermost abilitie, and so much will I doe, as one Friend may for another, to discharge my selfe of the promise which heretofore I made yee.

And let me intreate you on mine owne behalfe, to remoue that opinion of speciall loue, which you repute the Princesse beare me, being not such as you doe imagine: for (noble Prince, and my deare friend) you need not despaire of the benefit whereof I haue so sollemnely assured you. After many other speeches, they slept till the next morning, when clothing themselues in their richest garments, then went and gaue the good morrow to the Soldane, who very honourably thanked them: and Palmerin espying conuenient occasion, thus began.

My Lord, you haue sufficient experience, that by the bountie and great fauour of the Gods, you haue obtained victory against your enemies, to the no little cõtent of your Subiects: all which being so happilie finished, base were the thought, to feare the perfection of higher enterprises.

There-

such and so many haue beene his rare Exployts, as no one that I knowe may be equalled with him. And all this hee admitteth to your fauour, wherein hee earnestly desireth to continue, so please you to accept him for your Knight: deliuering this assurance before hand, that hereafter hee will aduenture his Life in your cause, whereseuer it shall like you to commaund him. For this cause (Madame) you may not refuse him, beeing the man that among all the Assirians, doth best deserue to be your Seruant. Alchydiana, who well vnderstood to what ende his speeches tended, and the occasion why Palmerin thus spake, aduised herself well, and returned this answere.

So helpe me our Gods, I knowe well that the Prince Olorico is so puissant and renowned as any man of whom I yet heard: notwithstanding, I hope the Soldan my Father will not be ingratefull in the knowledge thereof, and that sufficiently, I dare awarrant yee. But I desire you, faire Syr, to tell me how the Queene of Tharsus intreated you, and what is your opinion of her? In good sooth Madame (answered Palmerin) shee is one of the most honest and vertuous Ladyes that euer I came in companie withall, & to whom I greatly desire to do any seruice. You haue good reason (qd. the Princesse) in that she came so farre to see you, & discouer her loue: which others could as well accomplish, as good, or rather in Honour beyond her, if they might hope of any ease in their passionate desires. Palmerin feigning not to vnderstand her meaning, entred into other kind of talke, vntill Supper time, which finished, eache one returned to their Chamber, when the Prince seeing himselfe alone with his Friende, thus sayde. Ah my deare Friende Palmerin, howe worthily may you be sayde to bee without compare, in all perfections that a Knight ought to haue, Loue onely excepted: yet herein (if I be not deceiued) you do so me against all reason, for a thousand times are you more beloued, then your selfe can loue any. Notwithstanding; for this default, if so it may bee named, and for the words

their speedy comming. The Soldane was not a little ioyfull of these tydings, as also of the fortunate victory against his Enemies, wherefore he left the Cittie of Calpha, and determined to meete them at a Castell of Pleasure, which he had lately Edefied, chiefly because hee would see the good order of his Armie, which was now conducted in better equipage, then before was wont to be seene in Assyria.

The King of Balisarca caused the Captiues to be ledde before, who (by his commaundment) when they came in the Soldans presence: threw their Armour to the ground, and three times fell on their knees kissing the Earth, prostrating themselues, before him with great reuerence. All these ceremonies finished, Palmerin, the Prince Olorico, with the other Gouernours of the Field, came and kissing his Highnesse hand, hee entertained them very graciously: and after hee had embraced Palmerin, he would needes ride betweene him and the King of Balisarca. In this order rode they on to the Pallace Gate, where his Ladie Lethea and Alchidiana her Daughter, trickt vp in vestures of surpassing value, attended their comming: and after the accustomed reuerences on all sides, entred the great Hal, where the Princesse taking Palmerin by the hand, before her Father and all his Barons, thus spake.

Syr, Palmerin, so well is your prowesse and haughtie deedes of Armes knowne to euery one, as my praise cannot ert oll them to aduantage: Notwithstanding, I dare say before my Father, and all his Lordes here present, that he is so much indebted to you, as he can neuer returne sufficient recompence. These words vttered with such affection were ere noted by euery one, especially the Prince Olorico, when Palmerin made this answere to the Princesse: Madame, here may you behold the Prince of Arabia, one of the best knights that euer I knew, and who hath done done seruice to your Father and you in this Warre, then any other beside: For with his owne hand he slew Gramiell, who was chiefe leader of the Parygians Armie. Beside,

such

selfe conceiued with child. And at the time appointed by nature, she was deliuered of a goodlie Sonne, resembling his Father in braue constitution: whom the Mother caused to be named Palmerendos, as well in memorie of his father Palmerin, as also of his Graundsire Florendos, from them deriuing his name, as being the onely flower of chiualrie. And as Palmerin was vertuous, so did his Sonne follow him in all bountie, prudence, magnanimitie, loyaltie, liberalitie, courtesie and humanitie: in briefe, he had all the noble vertues that a child might receiue from his father, as you may at large perceiue in his Historie. But because his deeds as yet serue not to our purpose: we will leaue him growing vnder his mothers charge, and returne to them whom lately we left.

CHAP. XXI.

How Palmerin, to colour his intended and desirous voyage into Christendome, perswaded the Soldane to send his Armie to Constantinople, and what followed thereon.

GReatly desirous was Palmerin to returne towards the Soldane, and therefore would not make his way by Pasmeria, but iourned thitherward, where the King of Balisarca stated his comming: who came to meete him with all the Lords and captaines of his army. Thus hauing brought the countrey in quiet obeysance to the Soldane, with their prisoners they returned towards his Maiestie, sending word before of their

Therefore my Lorde, I thinke it expedient, so it may stand with your good liking, considering your prouision for the Sea is in such readinesse, your people likewise acquainted with your intent, before we medled with the Brethren of Amarano, came daily in troupes to offer their seruice: that now you send your Army to Constantinople, for your answere once heard, right soone will wee Embarke our selues, and set forwards on our Voyage. For the rest, I pray you deliuer these Prisoners, to be vsed as your slaues: but as for the Princes, I thinke (hauing seene the Fortune of their Brethren, and their owne badde successe in Armes) that they will serue you with continuall Loyaltie. My Sonne, (quoth the Soldan) let all be done as you haue appointed, for such is my confidence in you, that this your intent cannot but sorte to a good ende: wherefore my Galleyes and all things ready furnished, depart when you please, hauing first sent your Souldiours aboord.

The Prince Olorico beeing present, offered againe to go in this Voyage, with like number of men, as he brought against the Brethren of Amarano: For which the Soldane greatly thanked him, promising him such satisfaction at his returne, as would agree with his owne content. Alchidiana taking in ill parte, the words of Palmerin on the Prince Oloricos behalfe: sent for him to come speake with her, which he did, and finding her very sad and mellancholie, hee demaunded if any one had done her displeasure, and what the cause might be of her pensiuenesse? Ah my deare Friend (qd. shee) how can I but be agrieued, seeing no one Lady in the world, hath so many contrary Fortunes as my selfe? Alas, my heart hath chosen you for my onely Lorde and Friende, thinking to finde place worthy my conceite, and that your Loue would answer me with the like; but in ought I can perceiue, I am too much beguiled, for you, eyther as ingratefull, or carelesse, vse affecting speeches to me, importing no other ende, but that in leauing you, I should take the Prince Olorico for my Husband. Do you imagin

me so mutable and inconstant, that I will or can Loue any other but you? or that my affection entirely setled so high, can drowne such a downefall, as to like the man so much inferiour to you? And (which most of all offendeth mee) not contented to mocke mee, in disdaining my knowne Loue: discourteously would perswade mee to chuse an other? Let all our Gods be iudge, if I haue not iust cause to complaine of you, albeit I haue greater reason to hate and despise my owne selfe: For in that I haue more then deserued your loue, yet (as much vnwise) I cannot consider, that in the heart of an ingratefull person, Loue hath no place of certaine abyding. But seeing our Gods haue in such sorte subiected mee, as against my will) I am constrained to loue mine enemy, in vaine were it for me to resist against them, that they beholding the vnspotted Loue of the one, may in the ende punish the ingratitude of the other. Thus thinking to continue longer speach, so many violent sighes intercepted her, as there was not able to proffer one word more, whereby Palmerin enforced, thus answered. I beseeche you Madame, crosse me not with these needlesse words, for although the Prince is so worthy to be beloued, as any man that euer I sawe: yet were I very much vnprouided of witte, and a meere stranger to good consideration, if I would refuse that speciall Felicitie, then which I can desire no greater.

I knowe (Sweete Ladie) that you Loue mee intirely, perswade your selfe then, that my Loyaltie is no lesse, nor can Death cause mee gainesay the promises I haue made you: and were it not to the great disaduantage of mine Honour, to forsake this honourable Warre your Father hath intended, which might procure eache one to misconceyue of mee: assure your selfe, that I would forsake both Dignities Armes, and all, to doe the seruice you worthily deserue, all which at my returne, feare not, shall bee effected. So well could Palmerin dissemble the matter, as the Princesse was somwhat better pacified, & taking his leaue of her, re-

turnde

turned to the Soldane: Before whome hee caused to bee brought, the Princes and Lords that were prysoners, and at his request Maulicus gaue them theyr libertie, with this charge notwithstanding, that they should serue him in this warre. Which that they might the better accomplish, hee commanded them Horse, Armour, and all other things necessarie, making all possible speede could be deuised, that his Armie might sette forward to Sea.

CHAP. XXII.

¶ How Palmerin sayling with the Soldans armie, was brought by Tempest into the Sea of Allemaigne, where he tooke landing with the prince Olorico.

QVickly Palmerin consented for to Embarke the Armie, desiring the Prince Olorico to accompany him to the Hauen, to the end they might make choise of the best Vessells for themselues: and surueying them all, they found a goodly Carricke, newe and very well appoynted, wherein many Prisoners lay chayned, who formerly had bin taken by the Soldans Galleys, and other Rouers of the Moores, of whome Palmerin demaunded what people they were: they answered that they were Christians, and had of a long time liued there in that thraldome, Palmerin not a little glad of these newes, asked of what Countrey they were, whereupon one of them that could well speake the Arabian tongue, thus answered:

We are all borne in Allemaigne, to whome Fortune hath exceeded in cruelties. These wordes were maruellous welcome to Palmerin, and for which inwardly he thanked

his God: but the better to dissemble his ioy, he thus spake: This Countrey should seeme to bee very farre from hence, because I neuer heard of thereof before. So finding this Vessell fitte for his purpose, hee appointed it for himselfe, and the Prince Olorico, discharging all others that were therein, two Knights onely excepted, to whose charge hee committed the Christians: causing his Horses, Tents, and all other necessaries, to be carried aboord, as well the Princes Oloricoes, as his owne, accomplishing euery thing in such order, as within three dayes after the Souldiours were readie to depart. And now the day is come to launche away, when the Soldan and other Taborlanes, accompanied the King of Balisarca to the Hauen: But the faire Ailchydiana would not be seene, by reason of her great griefe and sorrow for her Friends departure: For when she came to take her leaue of Palmerin in his Chamber, shee fell (in a manner dead) at his feete, some after she deliuered these lamenting speeches:

This is no common farewell my beloued Lorde, which you now take of me, but say it is my very last Adiew: for my heart perswades mee, that I shall neuer see you more, because the extreamities of my sorowes are such, as well I know I cannot long endure. Adiew then sweet Friend, who in steede of ioy and comforte, leauest mee in dispayre, which neuer can haue ende, but by immediate death.

God Madame say not so (qd. Palmerin) for I hope right soone to see you againe. So leauing her, Olorico and hee went towards the Hauen, the Prince being so passionate to leaue her sight, by whose sweete lokes his life was maintained: as had not his friendly companion comforted him, vnable was he to depart the pallace. But being now come to the Port, and seeing the winde and Sea serviceable, loth to trifle the time with any longer staye, they came to take theyr leaue of the Soldane, who tooke great care for theyr contentment, and many times embracing Palmerin, commending to him the disposition of all his affaires, said: My

noble

noble Sonne and Friend, I bow to you in presence of our Gods, that if you returne hither againe with victory, with such honours I will endow you, as shall be sufficient for the whole worlde to talke on. Palmerin humblie kissing his hande, went aboorde, the Mariners hoysting saile, launched forth into the Sea: with such a braue noyse of Drummes, Trumpets, Clarions, Cornets, Fifes, & other instruments, as though Heauen and earth would haue encountered together. Palmerin thus floting on the gouernment of Neptune, imagined how with safetie he might forsake his companie, wherefore he commaunded to vnbind all the Christians. For (quoth he to Olorico) seeing they are Mariners, and well skilde in the arte of Nauigation they may stande vs in good steede, if time so require, or any suddaine tempest shoulde assaile vs: but the better to beguile his owne people, he caused them to sweare their faithfull seruice to him.

The night beeing come, and hee seeing that euery one slept soundly: called two of the Christians, and in the Allemaigne tongue thus began, My Friends, giue thankes to God for your fortune, in that you Christians haue founde one of your faith and religion, who hath good hope shortly to deliuer you from these heathen hellhoundes: therefore set feare a part, and regard well your Quadrant, if you can compasse any meane to gette the coast of Allemaigne. The Christians more glad then can be expressed, answered, that they would accomplish his commaundement, and therefore he should repose his trust in them. About midnight, as God would, began a great tempest and blustering of winde, so that in despight of the Pylots and Mariners, the Fleete was severed in many parts: but the Christians perceiuing that this wind serued well for their auaile, knew so well how to order their course, that in short time they got farenough from their company, and thus continued the wind fortenne or twelue daies, for which Palmerin deuoutly thanked God.

So happily strayed Palmerin with his Allemaignes, that one of them at length tolde him, they were neere the straightes of Gibraltare: for which Palmerin not a little ioyfull said, how that they might passe Spayne, without any there, and so the sooner reache Allemaigne. But when they began to coast the straight, the Turkish Mariners were amazed, saying that the Christians knewe not their course, being more then eyght hundred thousand leagues forth of their compasse.

Palmerin fearing to be discouered before hee came to his intent, answered in choller, that the Christians knew their course much better then they did, and they to prate no more on paine of their liues: which threatning, presently drove them all to silence. Afterwardes they sayled with so good winde, as they toke Landing at a Porte in Allemaigne, which at this day is called Tolledo: when the Christians said to Palmerin, how that was the place where they were borne, where (if so hee pleased) they desired their libertie. Palmerin assuring them of their request, answered that he himselfe would land there, and therfore went first on shore, seigning to seeke Fresh water, and all things accomplished to his owne desire: he caused his Horse to be brought forth, and Olorices likewise, who was inportunate to beare him companie. No sooner was Palmerin on shore, but he kneeled downe, giuing thankes to God for his safe deliuerance. The Merchaunts and Mariners of the Cittie, seeing them whome they thought lost in the Sea, more then tenne yeeres before, were greatly abashed, welcomming them home, with exceeding ioye: but they answered, that they ought rather to thanke the Knight in greene Armour, for he deliuered vs from the Moores and Infidels, without request of any raunsome.

Olorico amazed at these signes of ioy, as also when hee sawe Palmerin pray, knew not well what to thinke: which Palmerin presently perceyuing, and to resolue him of all doubts whatsoeuer, sayd. No longer neede I now my god

Lorde

Lord and Friende, to hide the affaires and secrets of my hart from you: know therefore, that I am a Christian, and a Gentlemã of the Emperours Court of Allemaigne. But that which most of all greeueth me, is that I am constrayned to forsake your company, and returne againe to my Lord, for so much should I offende my God, to goe with you in the Soldans seruice. Wherefore my louing Friend, let me intreate you to holde me excused, (swearing to you by the faith of a knight, that whether else it shall like you to goe, I will accomplish your minds in any thing. I intreate you likewise, to entertaine al my Squires and Gentlemen into your seruice, and among them to share all my treasure in the Shippes, because I will haue nothing with me but my Horse and Armour. And notwithstanding all this, feare not to present your selfe before the Soldans and Alchidiana: for to them will I write such matter of you as they shall accept you in my place, and with as great honor as euer they did me. If heauen so fauour mee, as I may come to the knowledge of my Father, I will certifie you with the truth of all. As for my counterfeiting to be dumbe, was onely but to awaite opportunitie, when with safety I might escape from thence.

If Olorico at the first was amazed, what may be iudged of him now? notwithstanding, he loued Palmerin so perfectly, as he returned him this answer. Although Syr Palmerin, we are of contrary faith and opinion, yet hath your noblenes and humanitie gained such priuiledge ouer mee, that as you haue long time liued a Christian among the Turks, so for your sake will I liue a Turke among the Christians, dissembling in like sort as you did, and neuer shall any occasion force mee to forsake you, till you haue found your Father, and know if he be discended of the Soldans blood. No honor will it be for me now, to returne againe to the Asserian Princes, and as for my people, I force not though they goe backe againe with my treasure: for on my knighthode, I will be no richer then you, nor will

reserue any thing with me, then what belongs to a knight errant, which is Horse and Armour. For the rest, let Fortune do the worst she can, I hope for all this one day to be King of Arabia. Then noble Friende, be not offended, for I will beare you company: if death or strong imprisonment do not withholde me. Palmerin embracing him, sayd.

Ah worthy Prince, so noble is your mind, and repleate with fidelitie, as perswade your selfe to find me your loyall Brother, and fellow in Armes, neuer to forsake you while I can lift my Sword, to please you to abide with mee. So calling the chiefest of them in the Ship, they saide as much to them as you haue heard, commaunding them not to stirre from Arabia, before they heard some other tidings. As for their strange conceit at these newes, I bequeath to your iudgments, yet durst they not gainsaie their Maisters: but launching into the deepe, sayled back againe into their owne Countrey.

Palmerin and Olorico for this night lodged in the Cittie, to refresh themselues, and the next morning, after they had taken leaue of the Merchaunts, they deliuered, they set forward on their iourney. Continuing their trauaile three daies together, at length they mette a knight, who seeing them Armed after the Turkish manner, sayd. Gentlemen, God saue ye, if I should not seeme troublesome to you, because I iudge you to be Strangers: I would gladly know if you could tell me any tydinges of two knights, which long since left this Countrey. How were they named (qd. Palmerin?) Sir saide the knight, one of them is Trineus, Sonne to our dread Lord the Emperour, and the other, the most valiant Palmerind'Oliua. Two yeares & more since, they left the Court, without any newes what became of them: sauing that we heard they were a while with the King of England, and thence they conueyed his Daughter, the Emperour continuing so sorrowful for their losse, as euery houre his death is expected. May it be (qd. Palmerin) that

that all this while Trinens is not returned? What daunger will Noble Allemaigne sustaine, by losing their young Prince? ouercome with exceeding griefe and sorrowe, by report of these vnhappy tidings, to himselfe hee beganne in this manner.

What shall I do? Dare I bee so presumptuous, as to present my selfe before my Mistresse? What sufficient excuse can I make for the losse of her Brother? Doubtlesse, if it were such a hell to mee, to finde the meane for my departure, from that long Captiuitie in the Soldans Courte, much more will it be to mee now in search of the Prince, for without him I dare not approach the Emperours presence.

While he thus secretly discoursed with himselfe, hee became so exceeding passionate, as Olorico thought he had lost his sences: which was the cause, that without any further enquyrie the Allemaigne Knightes departed from them, when Olorico, amazed at this suddaine alteration, saide: How now Syr Palmerin? what hath moued you to this heauinesse? I beseeche you conceale not the cause from mee for if it bee by any offence, that the Knight offered which spake to you, same shall I deliuer him his penance. Therefore tell mee I pray you, for vndoubtedly I will not suffer you to rest, vntill you haue acquainted mee with the trueth. Palmerin knowing how dearely the Prince loued him, and that onely for his sake he had left Countrey, Parents, and Friendes: reposing on his loyaltie, imparted his Loue to him, as also the losse of Trineus and the Princesse Agriola. Olorico then laboured to perswade him, aduising him to compasse some secrete speech with his Ladie, of whome hee might learne how to recouer her lost Brother, and the faire Agriola of England againe. Palmerin following his counsell, pacified himselfe, and hee kept himselfe so closely as he could, from being knowne to anie.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXIIII.

¶ How Palmerin, by the means of Vrbanllo his Dwarff, spake with his Lady Polynarda, with whom he stayed fiue dayes, to recompence some parte of his long absence, and to the great contentment of them both.



Uch expedition in they⁊ Iourney made these Noble Companyons, and most wo⁊thy Knightes, that at length they arryued nére a strong Castell, which was about foure myles distante from Gaunt, where the Emperour as then was disposed to Hunting, fo⁊ the delight of the Ladyes: but chiefely to expell his owne melancholie and sadnesse, fo⁊ the losse of his beloued Sonne, as also to recreate the Princesse Polynarda: who vnder pretence of shadowing the cause, by her Brothers absence, lamented continually fo⁊ her Noble Friende Palmerin, of whom shee could vnderstand no certaine tydings, albeit she trauelled her very vttermost endeuo⁊s, which fo⁊ced her to so many extreame imaginations, as that the very least was wo⁊se then death it selfe.

The Emperours Trayne lodging eache way about the Castell, hindered our two Knights from any good Hostage, so that they were constrained to Lodge in a homely simple house: where they demaunded of a Courtyer which laye there, what time the Emperour would depart thence? who aunswered that his Highnesse was minded that day to returne to Gaunt, to conferre with the Princes Electours of speciall affay⁊es concerning the Empire. Palmerin toyfull hereof, caused his Ho⁊se to be bridled: & accompanied with

Olo-

Olorico, went and Ambushed themselues in a little Thicket neere the High-way, where the Emperour must needes passe, to the ende hee might beholde his Ladie Polynarda. Palmerin attending her comming who was the only supporte of his life: his heart leapt with conceyte of his Ioye to come, yet trembled likewise, because he durst not present himselfe before the Imperiall Maiestie, without the Noble Trineus.

Soone after, by the Guarde of Archers that came formoll, he well perceyued the Emperour was at hand: when remembring the honors and fauours he had receiued in his Court, the teares trickled downe his Cheekes, chiefely for want of his Highnes Sonne, which was so especially committed to his truste. Then followed the Empresse, and with her the fayre Princesse Polynarda, cloathed all in blacke, witnessing by her outward habit, the secret sorrowes of her heart. Yet thoughts still hammering on her priuate griefs, yet assailed with a sudden motion, she gaue such a sighe as Palmerin easily hearde it: which troubled him in such sorte, as without the assistaunce of Olorico, he had fallen downe from off his Horse. Polinarda beholding his sudden alteration, without any regarde of her Mother, called Vrbanillo the Dwarffe to her: who since his comming from England neuer boudged from her, and to him thee saide. Hast thou heretofore (Vrbanillo) seene those two knights, who shaddow themselues in the Wood side, while we passe by? No trust me Madame (quoth the Dwarffe) I neuer saw them to my remembraunce. I pray thee (saide shee) ryde to them so fast as thou canst, and demaund of them from me, of whence they are: and if they can tell any tydings of thy Maister, and my Brother Trineus. The Dwarffe, who was more then a Doctor in such affayres, dissembling that his Horse would stale, suffered the Traine to passe by, and then rode towards the knightes, who were deuising on the Princesse beauty. Palmerin wel knowing Vrbanillo, and seeing him come in such hast, was not a little glad, thinking

now

now he shoulde heare some newes of his Mistresse, wherefore he said to Olorico. I pray you let vs goe meete with this Horseman, for I thinke his returne is onely to vs.

Now was the Dwarfe come to them, and hauing humbly saluted them, saide. I beseeche you faire Knights to tell me whether you belong to the Emperour, or are strangers: for the Ladie whom I serue, is very desirous to know: and that for matters nerely concerning her, whereof if you can any way truely resolue her, your rewarde shall aunswere your owne contentment. What Vrbanillo? (qd. Palmerin) lifting vp his Beuer: Didst thou not know thy Maister? Oh Heauen (quoth the Dwarfe) praised be thy Maker for euer, for this Aduenture. And moued with extream ioy, he fell at his Maisters feete, saying: Ah my Lord, what comforte will this bee to the Princesse Polynarda, when shee shall vnderstand of your Presence? and not without iuste cause: for by this meane is she deliuered from the greatest torments in the world. And that nothing may want to furnish this long expected ioy, tell me if the knight in your companie, be the Prince Trineus, or no? It is not hee (qd. Palmerin, for it is more then a yeere since, that of him, and the faire English Agriola (after that I vnfortunately lost them) hearde any certaine report. For this cause Vrbanillo, it behoues thee to be faithfull and secrete, not discouering my being heere to any but my Ladie: of whome thou must learne, by what meanes I may best come to see her? The Dwarfe taking his leaue of his Maister, turned his horse to be gone: but comming backe suddenly againe, saide. Is this Syr Ptolome that is with you? Madame Brionella will not be a little glad to heare of him likewise. Nor is it he (qd. Palmerin) I lost him in cõpany with the rest. God will restore them one day again (said the Dwarfe) so giuing the spurs to his horse, he galloped till he came to the Princesse, who seeing him returned in such haste, knew not well what to thinke: yet fearing to be discouered by a knight y accompanied her, determined not to request his tidings, vntill she

came

came home into her chamber. But neuer was poore leuer in greater agony, when she expected her friend in some priuat place, then was the faire Princes at this present: wherfore, so soone as she came to her chamber, she called for the Dwarffe, who being come, she said, I pray thee Vrbanillo, by the reuerend duty thou owest mee, whence are the two knights, & what answer did they make thee? They are such sweet Madam, quoth the Dwarffe, as when all the men in the world could tel no tidings of, my selfe by happy fortune haue found: for by them I bring you the key of Paradise, if your self wil but find the meane to enter. Tush, I pray thee, quoth the Princes, iest not with me in this sort, for now is no time of sport or merriment: tel me who they are I desire thee. Know then faire Madam, quoth he, that one of them is my M. Palmerin, who thus concealeth him, because he hath not brought the Prince your brother with him, and he (humbly kissing your hand) commends him to your gracious fauor, desiring you to send him answer, how he may secretly speak with you, because he would not be knowne to the Emperor, or any other of the court. How welcom these long expected newes were to the Princes, I leaue to the opinion of long absent friends. O heauens, quoth she, doth Palmerin liue, and is so neere at hand: now hath my heart his only desired comfort: and such is my hope, that seeing hee is come, my brother (by his meanes) shall not long hence, to such good fortune are al his actions destenied. Presently she ran to tel Brionella these newes, who likewise was exceeding ioyful, because she imagined Palmerins companion to be her Ptolome. Whereupon they concluded together, that Palmerin should the night following come to the Garden, where first his sweet Amours were sollicited, and by a ladder of cords he should ascend their chamber. This resolution set downe, the Dwarffe departed to execute his charge, when Poliinarda thus began to Brionella. Ah my deere Friend, how impossible is it for me to hide the ioy my hart conceiueth, that was so late in such surpassing heauinesse?

What

What will my Ladyes now thinke, when they beholde they? Mistresse so pleasaunt? Let them speake what pleaseth them (quoth Brionelle) should you render them account of your behauiour? yet this I thinke, that your discretion is so good, when you haue seene the onely comforte for your cares: that you can so well dissemble your thoughts, as the most warie Eye shall hardly discerne you. Well haue you saide (quoth the Princelle) if Loue could bee gouerned by wisedome: but the pleasure which the wisest haue receyued by his rules, hath in the end discouered their vanity and follie. Such were the speaches betweene these two Ladyes, attending all the Night in good deuotion, when eache one thought to see her Lord and best beloued, that their long sorrowes might somewhat be qualified.

The Dwarfe being gone on his Message, as you haue heard, the Knights reposed themselues on the greene grasse till Sunne-setting, that they might more couertly enter the Cittie: and the time being come that they would sette forwards, Palmerin saide to Olorico. My Lorde, we will take this by-way, which leadeth to the Cittie, for I intend before I departe, to heare some newes from my deere Mistresse. Goe which waie you please (quoth the Prince) yet must I needes maruell at you, that you would bee so long absent from such an excellent Princelle: Trust me Alchidiana is faire, yet may not she be equalled with your Lady. The griefes I haue endured (said Palmerin) by my long absence, are not to bee spoken of: yet could no way compasse my returne sooner. By this time they were come to the Citty, and to a lodging appointed them by Vrbanillo, who being now come to his Maister, deliuered the Message hee was commaunded. Palmerin vnderstanding his Mistresse pleasure, presently vnarmed himselfe, and wrapped a Scarlet Mantle about him, taking his trusty Sworde vnder his Arme, he intreated Olorico to stay there till he returned, or heard further tydings from him, leauing Vrbanillo in his companie, with charge to vse him as his owne person.

He

He being come to the Walles of louely Paradise, found the Ladder ready prepared for him, whereby he made a speedie passage: and finding Brionella, there staying his comming, embracing her sweetely, saide, Trust me Ladie, the want of Syr Ptolome your friend, doth not a little grieue me: but by the grace of God, ere it be long I hope to bring him with me. Ah my Lord (quoth she) right happie is your good comming hither: For your presence hath bene heere most of all desired. But albeit shee set a good countenance on this aunswere, yet were her secrete sorrowes innumerable, being deceiued of the comfort shee expected. Palmerin who thought he stayed too long from his Ladyes Chamber: who angrily had throwne herselfe on a Pallet, because hee stayed to speake with Brionella, then falling on his knee before her, he offered to kisse her hand, which with dissembling disdaine, shee would not suffer him, saying: Truely you shall receiue no fauour of mee, before I know certainly who you are: for I stand in doubt to be deceyued: and that you are some other then my Palmerin, seeing you haue bene so long time from mee, and (which is more,) would neuer vouchsafe to send to me.

Then taking a Light in her hand, and earnestly beholding him, hardly could shee sette it from her againe, when welcomming him with an infinit number of sweete kisses, she thus saide: Now is knowe I well that this is my Palmerin: what Countrey might be so delectable, or Fortune so contrarie, that could with-holde you all this while from me? O that it might haue stood with mine honour, for my selfe to haue sought you out: with good will could I haue endured the Trauell, yea, much more then you haue done for me. How often (considering the daungers of the Sea) hath very death surprised me? and into how many sundry opinions haue I fallen? Sometimes to disguise my selfe into a Swans attire, to enter the estate of a Knight Errant, and begin a search which neuer should haue ended, till I found you:

For

For this hath been receiued as a generall rule, that by too long sufferance and expectation one may endure a thousand deaths: and think not but the very least of my afflictions, haue been of force to depriue my life. Consider that griefe, desire, remembrance, languor, sorrow, hope, suspition, teares, complaints, and other such like passions common in loue, continually beate vpon the hart with burning affection: to such inconuenience their issue growes, as the vitall spirit is chased from the body. For Gods sake Madame, quoth Palmerin, leaue these wounding speeches, and suffer me to take a little life, in beholding that which is no lesse diuine then humane, for my offence deserues not these accusations. Then discouered he all his fortunes passed, which droue the Princesse to no little admiration, when she said;

Beleeue me my Lord, seeing that by your meanes my Brother Trineus is lost: for my loue, and to satisfie your promise to my Lord and Father, you must needes goe find him againe. What shall I Madame, quoth Palmerin, but before I begin this iourney, let me intreate that fauourable regard: which is the comfort in loue, and vniteth life and soule together, which heretofore you haue granted, and I hope will not now denie me. What may I iudge (quoth she) of your constancie since your absence? for not long since I was sollicited with a vision, which told mee, that you committed breach of loyaltie with a Queene, to my no little griefe: although full often I reproued you therefore, to cause you forsake that sinne, when mee seemed the Queene thus answered. Bee thou assured Polynarda, that although Palmerin esteeme thee aboue all other, yet shall he leaue some part of his loue with me. Hearing these words, I brake forth into teares, wherewith you seemed to be mooued, and so forsaking her, followed me: and herewith I awaked, finding (indeede) my face besprent with teares, and my heart ouercome with insupportable griefe. Palmerin abashed hereat, remembred what entertainement

the

the Quéene of Tharſus made him at the Banquette, of her kindly delights and great fauours for his arriuall, her pierting, amorouse alluring ſpéeches, wherwith incéeſſantly she did ſollicite him: and ſuch was his conceit, as he verily perſwaded himſelfe, that by enchaunted practiſes ſhee had abuſed him: whereupon he ſayd, I ſweare to you Madame, by the religious vowes of our loue, that neuer did I commit ſuch wrong againſt you: if the Quéene of Tharſus of whom you haue ſpoken, did not one night deceiue me by an enchaunted drinke, which vnwittingly I receiued as I ſatte at Supper, cauſing me to loſe both ſenſe and vnderſtanding: and ſo acquainted her with his Déeame that night likewiſe.

Doubtleſſe my Lord, quoth ſhe, conſidering the extreamitie of her affection, ſhe practiſed ſome meanes to compaſſe her deſire: but ſeeing it fell out in that ſort, and beleeuing you would not willingly offend me, I am cóntented to pardon that fault. In theſe and ſuch like ſpeeches, they ſpent that night, and foure more afterward, all which time Palmerin was kept vnſéene in her Chamber: till his departing time béeing come, when the Prince attyring herſelfe in her wonted mourning garments, and chaping her countenaunce to her former ſorrow, ſhrowded her pleaſures paſt, and thus we will leaue them, returning to our Affrians ſayling on the Sea.

I CHAP.

CHAP. XXIIII.

How after the tempest was past, the Soldans Armie assembled together, and came against Constantinople, where by the Emperours power they were discõfited: and the King of Balisarca, his Sonne Guerefin, and diuers other great Lords of Turkie slaine.

THe tempest which had throwne Palmerin on Hercules Pillars, after many long and contagious stormes, began now to cease, the Sea being faire and calme, and the winds very quiet, whereupon the King of Balisarca Generall of the Armie, in short time assembled together the most part of his Fleete, and came vpon the Coast of Natolia, where hee attended the rest of his Foystes and Galleyes. And hauing there stayed about fiftene daies, among all the Shippes that came, he could heare no tydings of Palmerins Carrick: the long stay whereof caused him to doubt, least he had vnhappily perished in the Sea, and ouercome with exceeding griefe, he thus began.

Ah gentle Palmerin, the flower of all Chiualrie, in luckiesse houre didst thou betake thy selfe to the Sea: what answer shall I make the Soldans for the losse of thee, and the Prince Olorico, being so especially committed to my trust: Now cannot Fortune be so fauourable to vs as she would: for by thy losse I vtterly despayre of expected victorie. To rid of these bootlesse complaints, he was councelled by the Lords, Knights and auncient Captaines, to set forward

forwarth to Cõstantinople, to discharge themselues of their promise to the Soldane, least in returning without dealing with the enemie, they should be reputed for fearefull and faintharted Cowards. Setting their sailes to the wind at length they came to the Bosphor. Now was the Emperour verie Aged and sickly, having altogether committed the superintendaunce of the Empire, to his Sonne Caniano, who had a Sonne aged seauenténe yéeres, named Cariteos. And being aduertised of the comming of so many Affrians, Turks and Moores, he sent to all the Christian Princes for succour: the greater part whereof, was there as nowe arriued, with resolute determination to welcome these Infidels.

When the Emperours scoutes had espied the enemie to enter the straight, yong Cariteos beholding the Knights on all sides, some on the Walles, and other in the Fielde: came and kneeled before his Graundfather, earnestly desiring him to graunt him his Knighthode. For my Lord, quod he, a better time and occasion cannot be then now. The aged Emperour graunted his request, and with the teares in his eyes said. In the name of God, my Son, maist thou receiue thy order, and to the glorious maintenaunce of the Christian faith: albeit thy youth forbids thée to venture so soone.

Presently arose the yong Knight Cariteos, and clasping on his Helmet, was the first that went forth of the Cittie, accompanied with tenne thousand Horsemen, and twentie thousand Footemen, to hinder the landing of the enemies: which a great while he did with such valour, as the Hauen was chaunged with the blood of the slaughtered. The King of Balisarca hearing thereof, commaunded his Archers to their tasks, whose shafts flew so thicke in such multitude, as it were the Hayle that falleth from the Clouds: and on the other side hee gotte thirtie thousand men on Land, who assailed the Christians so furiously, as yong Cariteos was slaine, and a great number of noble

personages, which was the cause that the Christians retired to the very Gates of the Cittie. The Prince Caniano aduertised of his Sonnes death, & the great danger wherein the Armie was: issued forth of the Cittie with eight thousand Horsemen, and foure thousande harnie Archers, who like hungrie Tygers ranne vpon the Turks, beating them to the earth in such heapes, as twelue thousande of them were slaine at this encounter, and the rest repulsed backe to their Ships, where many entred for sauegarde of their liues, and a great number were miserably drowned in the Sea.

At this mishap ỳ King of Balisarca was greatly enraged, who with his power presently went on those: the fight enduring so cruell and bloodie three houres space, as neyther side could be reputed likeliest of victorie. In this encounter ended their liues, the King of Balisarca, his Sonne Guerescin, and a great number of Califfes and Taborlanes of Turkie: and of the Christians, the Prince Caniano, with diuers other great Princes and Lords, whose deathes are to this day lamented in Greece, yet were the Pagans and Christians so animated one against another, as darke night was the cause of their separation. When the Emperour vnderstood the death of his Sonne and Nephew, hee was readie to die with conceit of griefe: but seeing the necessitie of the time required other matter, then sorrowing teares and vnprofitable lamentations, hee presently dispatches Postes and Messengers, to hasten the succor was comming from Christendoume. In short time arriued a mightie Christian power, and in despight of the Turks entred the Cittie, when the Emperour presently sent twelue thousand into the Fielde, and prouided a signall for ỳ other, to sette fire among the Turkish Fleete, at what time they receiued the signe from the Cittie. The Infidells seeing the Christians to sallie abroade, left their Ships and came to meete them: whereupon, the Christians deuided themselues into squadrons, and running furiously on the Moores,

Arabes

Arabes and Assirians, made such hauocke and slaughter of them, as happie was he coulde best defend himselfe. Then suddainly was the signall of fire made, on the highest steple in Cõstantinople, to the Emperors power waiting on the Sea: which immediatly launching among the Turkish Fleete, suncke the greater part of them, and burned the rest with their wilde fire. When the Turks beheld this stratageme, and that they were now destitute of any helpe, they began to faint: so that at the comming of the Emperour, who came himselfe vpon them, with a freshe saile of fiue thousand men, they were all slaine, except a few that escaped into Galleyes, that brake from the rest vpon sight of the pollicie. Great was the spoyle gotten by this conquest, which the Christians taking with them, entred Cõstantinople, where they gaue God thanks for their happie victorie.

But although the Emperour saw his enemies vanquished, after the Princes were departed that came to his succour, right grieuous was the losse of his sonnes to him, wherefore his Lords aduised him, to send for his Daughter the Queene Griana, and King Tarisius her Husbande, and to commit the gouernment of the Empire to him. For the accomplishment of this generall determination, the Duke of Pera was appointed Lord Ambassadour, being one of the most auncient Princes of Greece: who accompanied with many noble Gentlemen, made such expedition in his iourney, as hee arriued in Hungaria before the King and his Queene Griana, whose sorrowes may not be expressed for the death of her Brother. When they vnderstode the Emperours pleasure, they resolued on their obedience, which caused the King to send for two of his Nephewes, who were Sonnes to the Duchesse of Ormedo his Sister, the one named Prompraleon, & the other Oudin, to be his Lieutenants in Hungaria during his absence. Vpon their presence, before the Ambassadour of Constãtinople, the King Tarisius tooke their oathes, for their loyall and

faithfull gouernment. But because we must now reuiue matter long expected, as concerning the noble Prince Florendos of Macedon: I am loth to spend any further time in vaine, and will now report what happened at Buda, during the time of this determination.

CHAP. XXV.

How the Prince Florendos of Macedon, accompanied with none but his Cozin Frenato, departed from his Countrey in a Pylgrims habit, iourning to Hungaria, where hee killed the King Tarisius: and how hee and the Queene Griana were taken prisoners.

LOrdinges, let vs nowe remember how after that Palmerin was departed from Macedon, hauing recouered the health of the olde King Primaleon, Father to the noble Prince Florendos, who during the time of Palmerins presence: was somewhat more pleasaunt then of long time he had bene, appeasing his complaints for the Princesse Griana, by the happy tidings of the auncient knight, that sent the Sheeld to Palmerin at his knighting. But now Florendos hearing no newes of him, returned to his former heauines, and languished much more then euer he did: so that when the Macedonian Princes & Lords, prested him with continuall request of marriage, that hee might haue issue to succeede in the Kingdome, he was constrained by their importunitie, to make them promise of their request, craning a yeres respite before, in which time he intended to make a deuout voyage, whereto they consented till resp ect of his promise. Now did hee not demaunde

this time of his Subiects, for any desire he had to be a Pylgrim, or any superstitious zeale to the Spanish Leather Cape, Shoes, Frock and such like: but for he longed to see his louete Hilarelle Griana, whom he serued in hart with such loyall affection, as till death he would not marry without her consent and licence.

The day being come that he would depart, he toke his leaue of all the Princes, Lords and Gentlemen, and accompanied with Frenato Father to Ptolome, both shaped after the manner of Pylgrims: mounted on two Palfreyes of small value, and without any weapons, except each of them a little short Dagger, departed the Cittie, making such hast in their iourney, as they arriued at Buda, where as then the King kept his Court prouiding to set forward to Constantinople. There were they lodged in one of the best Osteries in the Cittie, and the next morning went to the great Church, where the Queene was euer wont to heare diuine seruice: and so well it fortuned, that at the time these two Pylgrims entred the Church, the Queene herselfe was in the Chappell. Florendos who was meruellously disguised, stood not in doubt to be knowne: but seeing the Chaplaine had begunne seruice, hypocritically he approched to the Altar with holy deuotion, to the end he might the better behold the Queene. Regarding her sweet countenance, he remembred ỳ courtesies hee sometime receiued of her, and what exceeding affection as then she bare him: but now being in the custodie of another, and hee out of hope to haue any more gracious pittie, his spirits were so wonderfully troubled, and so many passionate sighes hee breathed from his hart, as he fell downe in a swonne, that euery one reputed him for dead. The Queene, who many times had noted his pittious lookes, commaunded Telomeltra one of her Ladies, the that had the charge of her in the Tower at Constantinople, that shee should goe vnderstand the Pylgrims disease, and do her best to recouer him againe, which Frenato had done before she came.

Tolomestra demanded of Frenato, the cause of his sickness: who answered. Madame, we are newly come from the holy voyage of Ierusalem, and he (who was wont to endure many vehement alterations, which the contrary ayres by the way do breede) feeling the freshe coolenes of this Church, hath therewith bene ouercome as it should appeare.

My Friendes, quoth Tolomestra, withdraw we your selues to the Court, and enquire for the Gallery, in which place the Queene doth daily giue her Almes: there shall be prouided some remedy for you, and I will giue you certaine precious Drugges, which shall hereafter comfort you, when any such humour offendeth you. A thousande thanks (good Ladie) sayd Frenato, we will do as you haue commaunded vs. Seruice beeing ended, they went to the Gallery, whither sone after came the Queene, and opening the Casement of her Windowe as she was wont, stood to behold the Almes giuen to the poore Pylgrims. Frenato and his companion had gotten so neere the window, that the Queene might easily heare any thing they said. After most humble reuerence made, Florendos thus beganne. Most excellent Queene, renowned beyond al other Ladies among so many of your daily charities, may it please you to pittie the most poore & myserable Knight in the world: The Queene at these words knew him, and was in such feare least the King should know his beeing there: as she could hardly sustaine herselfe, but satte downe on a Pallet by Tolomestra, who seeing her suddaine alteration, sayde. What ayle you Madame, that your colour chaungeth in such sort.

Ah my trusty Friende (quoth the Queene) the Pylgrime that I wounded in the Church, is the Prince Florendos of Macedon. I pray thee goe to him, entreate him presently to depart hence: for if the King come to the knowledge of him, all the world cannot shielde him from death. For the rest, will him follow no further what he lost by his

owne

owne default: and that the Fauour heretofore graunted, my duty and honour now forbiddeth me. Tolomestra entring the Gallerie, saide the message to the Prince Florendos: who vnderstanding this sharpe answere, shedde many teares with griefe of minde, saying: Ah my deere Friend Tolomestra, desire my gracious Mistresse Griana, that in requitall of so many tormenting Passions, which now for twenty yeeres long I haue patiently endured: shee will afforde me once to speake with her, and kisse her hand, before I depart. Tolomestra brought this answer to the Quéene, perswading her to heare him speake: which shee might doe with safetie, vnder colour of requesting to knowe the meruelles of Palestina, with the precious and worthie Monuments of the holie Citie.

I am content to graunt so much (quoth the Quéene) but I greatly feare the issue of his speeches: goe then and cause him secretly to enter. Ah gentle habit, where vnder many one often beginne their delight, which in the ende proues worse then Tragicall. The two Pilgrimes being entred, Florendos fell on his knée before his Ladie, and kissing her hand, sayd:

Oh my God, thy Name be praised through all worlds, permitting me now to kisse these hands so long time desired. See here sweete Mistresse your Florendos, that with such loyalty hath loued you, and hitherto hath kept the faith which he vowed to you at Constantinople, in your Fathers Pallace: and which no death can cause mee faile or change, vnlesse you please to suffer me take another Wife, wherein I shall satisfie the importunate requests, which daylie the Lords of Macedon make to me for Mariage, that I might leaue them an Heyre of my Linage. Which is a matter so grieuous to me, in that I failed of you, to whom I first gaue my Faith: as I resolued neuer to take any other, which I know not how I shall performe without losse of my life.

As he thought to haue proceeded further in speeches, and the Quéene hauing not answered one word: vnhappily the

King

King entred, which the Quéene beholding, swowned with feare. But she was immediatly recouered by her Ladyes, when the King séeing her in such estate, and in what secrecie the two Pylgrims were talking with her, hee gathered some suspition, and ouercome likewise with the force of iealousie, saide:

Madame, what make you heere at this time? and in so slender companie of Ladies? how dare you stand talking with these Straungers? I would gladly know the matter, and what hath made them so bold to enter your Chamber?

Florendos séeing his affayres to growe from badde to worse, and that his Ladie was so threatned: entring into choller, hee drewe his Dagger from vnder his Frocke, and taking the King by the Bosome, saide: Parisius, I will not hyde from thée who I am: it is more then twenty yéeres since I promised thy death, and nowe I am come in person to performe it. With these wordes hee stabbe the Dagger to his heart, and downe fell Parisius dead at his féete: which when the Quéene saw, she on the other side fell in a swoun againe. Frenato greatly amazed hereat, saide to Florendos: For Gods sake my Lord, let vs shifte for our selues, before this misfortune be blazed abroad. Content thy selfe, said Florendos, neuer shall it be reported that I left my Ladie to suffer for mine offence: or that for the feare of death, which is the ende of all mishaps, I will endure such intollerable anguishes and torments.

Now by ill fortune, one of the Pages of Honour attending on the King, and hauing séene this Homicide, hastilie ranne downe the staires, crying alowd: Arme ye Knights, Arme yee, and reuenge the Kings death, who by a trayterous Pilgrim is slaine in the Quéenes Chamber. Cardyno one of the Quéenes Squyres, her Brother that carried young Palmerin to the Mountaine, had no leysure to take any other armes then a Sword and Shield, wherefore hee was the first that came to the Queenes Chamber, where he found Florendos guarding the Entrance, who presently

knew

knew him, saying: Depart my good Friende Cardyno, vnlesse for the Quenes Loue I shall take thy life from thée. And what art thou (sayde Cardyno) that knowest mee so well? I am thy Friend (said the Prince) the most infortunate Florendos.

Strange is it my Lord (quoth Cardyno) that you durst venture into this Courte: But take here my Sworde and Shield, and defende your selfe: for I thinke you will stand in great néede thereof. In the meane while, I will goe aduertise the Duke of Pera of this mishappe, hee is your good Friend, and by his meanes you may haue some succour: for oftentimes haue I heard him say at Constantinople, that he wished you as wel as my Lord the Emperour. Dispatch then (said Florendos) that thou be not found here with me, assuring thée, if I may escape this present danger, I will acknowledge this seruice to thine owne content. Florendos armed himselfe with the Sworde and Shielde, whereof he was so gladde, as if hee had bene backed with many trustie friendes: bewing before hee dyed to make such a spoyle amongst his enemie, as should remain for an after memorie.

Cardyno went with all diligence to the Duke, and secretly acquainted him with all this misfortune: Whereat the Duke greatly amazed, answered. I will do my vttermost for his safety, because full well he hath deserued it. And so accompanyed with many Grecian Knights, hee went to the Quenes Chamber: and thrusting through the throng in despight of them that guarded the staires, hee gotte to the Chamber. At the entraunce whereof hee found Florendos, defending himselfe with such manly courage, as nine or ten lay slaine at his feete.

The Duke and his men caused the Hungarians to withdraw themselues: saying, that himselfe would not suffer the matter so to escape, for the offence ought to be punished by Justice, after the truth were knowne and throughly vnderstood. Herevpon, the Kings two Nephewes came in great rage, saying to the Duke of Pera, that the Quéne and the

Pil-

Pilgrime ought presently to dye. What? (quoth the Duke) depart you likewise: your wills shall not here stand for Lawe: nor yet the Quéene to bee intreated with such rigour.

So drawing out his Sworde, and his knights likewise, resisted the Hungarians, so that many of them were slaine: until certaine Gentlemen came, who louing and esteeming the Quéene, appeased this tumult. Then was it agreed vpon, that the Duke should take him into his charge, who had murdered the king: on whom such punishment should be inflicted, as the cause required: and hereupon the Duke toke his Oath before all the whole companie. In this sort the Kings Nephewes were quieted, who presently departed the Chamber, causing the dead and wounded to be conueyed thence, that the people might receyue no further occasion of offence, and then the Duke comming to the Prince Florendos saide:

Yéelde your selfe to me my Lorde, and I promise you on the faith of a Prince, that I will maintaine both your right and the Quéenes, whatsoeuer danger I should hazard thereby. If you will not, assure your selfe, that your bodyes cannot suffice the villainous furie of these people, for they haue confidently sworne your deaths. I know my Lord (quoth Florendos) that you speake the truth, and I repose my trust on your Nobilitie, which is such, as you will not suffer anie iniurie to the Man being in your Guarde: I yéelde my selfe to you: and earnestly intreate you not to imprison the Quéene, for (on mine Honor) she is guiltlesse. And if any offence hath bene committed, it was by me: yet not without iust cause, and in defence of mine owne life. My comming hither was, because I am newly returned from Ierusalem, and remembring the manifold honours, which sometime I receiued of my Ladie in the Emperour her Fathers Court: in my passing by, I was desirous to do my duety to her. At the instant time I was saluting her, the king came into the Chamber, who moued with an auncient hatred, which

you

you very well knowe, would haue taine me shut vp, vnderstanding his intent with the ende of my weapon, deliuered vnto him which he wished to me. I beleeue well what you haue saide, quoth the Duke, yet must you neuers abide the tryall in this case.

Frenato perceiuing his Cosin in such danger, sought about the Chamber for some Weapon to defend him: and finding the Kings Sword by the Queenes bed side, deliuered it to the Duke, that he might giue the better credit to the Princes wordes. Yet notwithstanding all their excuses, these two Pilgrims were taken into safe custody, and shut vp both together in a strong Tower: which was very long before they could accomplish, because in leauing them thether, many sought meanes to kill them, and they had done it, but that the Duke very strongly defended them.

CHAP. XXVI.

¶ The sorrowfull complaints made by the Queene Griana, seeing her Husband dead, and her Friend taken prisoner. And how the Duke of Pera conueyed her to Constantinople, causing Florendos and Frenato to bee brought thither, by fiue hundred armed Knights.

VEry sadde sorrowfull was the Queene Griana, seeing so many seuerall miseraines succeede one another, as euery houre her death was expected: and saine shee would haue committed violence on her selfe, but onely that Carsyna with diuers worthy knightes attended on her, that none of the Kings Kindred should offend

offend her, whiles the Duke of Peralyde Florendos and Perosso to the Tower. At whose returne, as hee thought to comfort her, she fell on her knees before him, saying. Ah Noble Duke of Pera, if ever pittie had place within your heart, for Gods sake make an ende of my infortunate life: and execute on me (without any fauour) the sharpest rigour of equall Iustice, not suffering longer life, to a Woman so despised and miserable.

O God, dost thou permit a happy life, to enioy so bad an ende? Thou that onely knowest the inward secrets of the heart, seing I stand suspected in this Treason, let my speedy death deliuer my innocency. Ah inconstant Fortune, that in my younger yeres was so aduerse to mee: how we might I credit thy continuall malice, by this straunge and vnexpected accident. Ah gentle Prince Florendos, it was not for loue that thou camest to see me, but for a secrete hatred, more then deadly: seing that by thee (and that with great shame) I shall remain for euer defamed. Where was that great loyaltie, and the great feare to offend mee, which sometimes thou seemedst to haue? Knowest thou not that in a royall and noble minde, one onely iote of infamie is an extreame torment? Doubtlesse, if thou wouldst well consider the wrong thou hast done me, thou shalt finde it to exceede all other worldly iniuries. But I may perswade my selfe, that my Destinie was such: For being long since by thee dishonoured, it must fall out for a finall conclusion, that by thee also I shall receiue death.

In this manner the Queene complained, with such effuse of teares and bitter sighes, as the Duke pitying her case, saide: I beseech you Madame, to endure this mishap patiently, seing now it cannot be recalled, and consider that these teares and lamentions can yeelde vs no amendes: but rather threaten daunger, and will in the ende not onely weaken your bodie, but hazard desperation. The King is dead, he must be buryed: Florendos hath offended, he shall be punished: your people are wounded, they must be cured.

Offend

Offend not then your selfe with these bootlesse regrets; but commaunde that the power of your innocencie be followed. Hereuppon the Duke caused preparation for the Funerall pompe, and brought the King to the bed of honor, not without many teares and lamentations of his subiects.

When the Obsequies were finished, Peomtaleon and Oudin came exclaimed on the Duke, because he brought not the Queene and Florendos to open punishment. My Friends (quoth the Duke) haue I not heretofore told you, that we must not inconsiderately put such persons to death: let the Counsell bee called together, and as they determine I will proceede.

Then were all the Princes and Lordes assembled, among whome the Duke was intreated to speake his opinion, which he did in this manner. I thinke it conuenient, vnder correction of you my Noble Lordes, that the Prince Florendos and the Queene, ought to be sent to my Lord the Emperour, and there to haue Iustice extended on them: as well for the surety of your owne persons, as for the conseruation of the Realme. For except iustly and by probable causes you condemne the Prince Florendos, hardly may you perswade the Macedonian Princes: beside, the Lords may say, that without hearing hee was cutte off, and likewise by his open enemies. Againe, thinke you that the Emperour will let passe in silence so great a wrong, to punish his Daughter, and not acquaint him with her offence?

Considering this indifferently, you shall find your selues on either side endangered: your goods will be spoyled, your liues endamaged, for hardly can you resist against such power. So well could the Duke set forth his Discourse, with confirmation of Hystories both ancient and moderne, that in despight of the Kings Nephewes it was concluded, how the Prisoners should be sent to Constantinople. If they were hereat offended, it is not to bee doubted, but hearing the Counselles resolution, prepared themselues to goe to the Emperour, determining a sharpe and seuere acculation:

trust

trusting so much in their owne strength and powerfe, that if the Emperour (for proofe of the cause) should commit it to the Combat, they easily thought to compasse their intent.

So were the two Pilgrimes committed to the Dukes Nephewes, with an hundred knightes of Greece, for their guarde, and some hundred Hungarians, who would needes follow, for the love they bare the Queene: she being marvellously fauoured in her Countrey, for her many vertues, and chiefly charitie.

The Queene her selfe, with the young Princesse Armida her Daughter, and all her Ladyes and Gentlewomen, were committed to the Duke of Pera his charge, and the rest of the Traine that came with him in commission of the same Embassage. When the Queene understood she should be carried to the Emperour, she was further out of patience then shee was before: rather desiring a thousand deathes, then to come with this reproche before her Father: yet notwithstanding all her intreaties, shee was conueyed into a a Litter, and not so much as a pinne left about her, for feare of inconuonience.

To comforte her, her Daughter Armida was placed in the Litter: without whose companie, such was her griefe to come before her Parents, as shee was diuers times in daunger of death by the way. But the young Princesse being twelue or thirteene yeares of Age, could so well comfort her sorrowfull Mother, as her talke expelled many bitter Imaginations. If the Queene was in heauinesse, we must thinke Florendoes griefes nothing inferiour, seeing his Ladie ledde in such sorte, and accused of a crime wherein none but himselfe was culpable: and yet made he no account, being reuenged of his ancient enemy, so the Queene were deliuered, though himselfe endured the death. But now are they come to Constantinople, yet not so farre: but the Nephewes of the Deceased King were before them, where they had blazed a moste false and shamefull reporte. And but for the good aduise of certaine Noble Princes, that

fauou-

fauoured Florendos & the Queene Griana, vpon the trothlesse speeches of these twaine: the Emperour had concluded to burne his Daughter and the Prince so soone as they came, such horrible slaunders had these Traytours spred of them. Namely, that the King was murdered, finding Griana committing adulterie with Florendos. At which words the Emperour was so enraged, that like a man depriued of reason, hee violently puld himselfe by the beard saying.

Ah wretched and infortunate olde man, haue the heauens suffered thee thus long life, that after the death of thy Sonnes Caniano and yong Cariteos, thou must see thy daughter conuicted of treason, adulterie & murder: If I haue had some comfort by my Sonnes, lying now in the Hearse of honor, for maintenaunce of the Christian faith: doubtlesse this iniurie is so great and enorme, as no ioy or comfort can now abide in me. Ah my louely Daughter Griana, whom I had good hope would bee the onely support of mine age, and for that cause sent to haue thy company: commest thou now with such shame & monstrous report: Florendos, if heeretofore against the Turke Gamezio thou didst me seruice, with great wrong hast thou now reuenged thy selfe, taking from me that good, which thou canst neuer restore againe. But let it suffise, that knowing the trueth of thy disordered dealing: such shall bee thy punishment, as shall remaine for perpetuall memorie. The Empresse likewise forsaking her Chamber, came and kneeled before the Emperour, desiring him to put Florendos to the first counsell, and he to be dispatched with dilligence. At which words the choller of olde Remicius augmented, hee answered.

Madame, for Gods sake gette you gone, for you are the onely cause of my dishonor: and then you beganne it, when you would not suffer the Prince Florendos of Macedon to matth with our daughter, but gaue her to your Nephew perforce, and contrarie to her owne liking. The Princes

seeing him so offended, intreated her to depart, perswading her, that the accusers of Griana were her cheefest enemies: and that might easily be gathered, by their proude and maleuolent detractions, which happily would proue false, rather then trueth. For if they might heerein speede of their purpose, and their accusation passe for currant, the Princesse Armida should be disinherited, and themselues be the onely heyres to the Kingdome. This was their principall drift, not any deuotion to reuenge their Unckles death, as they in outward shew declared: and hereupon all opinions were sette aside vntill the next day, when the prysoners arriued.

CHAP. XXVII.

How Florendos and Griana were brought to Constantinople, and there were appointed by the Emperours Counsell, to purge themselues of their accusation, by the Combate of two Knights, against theyr accusers Promptaleon and Oudin.

THe Duke being arriued at Constantinople, immediatly caused ỳ Quéne Griana and Armida her Daughter, to be conducted to the Pallace, by many noble Lords and Gentlemen. When Griana saw she must needes goe before her Father, she began againe her wonted pittifull cõplaints: notwithstanding, she was so comforted by the Lordes of Greece, by their solemne promise to defend her right, as she encourages her selfe, and comming before her Father, fell on her knees,

knees, and thus began. My gracious Lord and Father, inconstant Fortune euermore hath beene, and still will continue, a most cruell enemie to them of highest calling: and no further neede I seeke for proofe of my wordes, then the History of your last warres against the Turkes, and the present slaunder of mine enemies against mee. I cannot likewise forget, that twentie yeeres and more are now expired, since (to my great griefe) I was separated from you: but with much more exceeding heauines am I now returned, if by my misaduenture you receiue any impeach, or I deserue to lose the name of your Daughter. Therefore my Lord, forgetting the name and office of a Father, let natur all regard be exempted from you, and exercise on me tyrannous torments, with the greatest rigour that may be deuised. Yet all too little in respect of my deserts, not for any offence in this matter, as God is my witnesse: but for the suspition of the common and vulgare people, more credulous of the faults of Princes and noble Ladies, then of their discreet and sober vertues. Neuertheless, receiuing death for a matter neuer committed, and with patience: despight of mine enemies, it will redound to my immortal honor.

Vpon these speeches, the Princesse Armida making great reuerence to the Emperor, and with the teares tricling downe her cheekes, sayd. Dread Lord, my chiefest desires euermore haue beene to see your Maiestie: but so it falleth now out, that in steede of ioy and pleasure, it is with griefe, teares and tribulations. Yet gracious Lord, for the first request that euer I made to your highnesse, I beseech you to credit me, that my Mother hath committed no treason, or any dishonor to the deceassed King my Father, neither euer permitted any man entreaunce into her Chamber, but he whom now the question concerneth, and at that time, I with these other Ladies were present, and are credible witnesses of the whole action. Such efficacy wrought her wordes in the Emperours minde, as he began to bee

the accusation, perswading himselfe that it was nothing but falshoode: and lovingly taking the yong Princesse vp by the hand, addressed his speeches in this manner to the Queene.

Well hast thou sayde, that Fortune hath beene too contrary towards thee, for when my whole hope remained in thee, and that the Crowne of mine Empire should haue bene placed on thy head: thou hast fallen into such wounding reproch, as both thou and I shall be for euer dishonored. My Lord, quoth Griana, vnder correction, and saluing the reuerence to your imperiall Maiestie, neuer imagine the case any thing to your defame: if you credite not myne enemies, or common report, from whence is engendred all vntrueth. This spake I not to excuse my death, which I know to be the refuge for the desolate, and end of all afflictions: but to declare mine owne innocencie, and that mine honor shall at length be found vnspotted. But now consider good Father, with what violence you enforced me to match with the King Tarisius: my hart beeing still against it, and the nearenesse of linage betweene vs forbidding it. Nor were you ignorant of my loue to the Prince Florendos, the most gentle Knight of Greece, & whose onely trauaile hether was to make mee his Wife: all this will I not deny, nor cane my hart permit to passe in silence. Yet withstanding, by your commaundement I was constrayned to forsake my best beloued, and take the man I was not borne to fancie. After I saw it must nedsbe so, acknowledging him my Lord and Husband, and my selfe his Wife and Subiect: neither in word or deede, nor so much as very thought, did I dispose my selfe to any disobedience, but liued in most loyall and honorable duty. Very true it is, that hee found Florendos talking with me: but I protest before Heauen, that it was with such chaste and modest regard, as the Sister might conferre with her Brother. And so little time our talke endured, as I had not ỹ meane to answer the Prince, for the King comming in, and prouoked

vnoked

moued with frenzie or wicked iealousie, would haue slayne him, whereby such fortune fell out, as the king receiued what he would haue giuen. Nor can Florendos be worthily blamed for comming to see me, in respect of the long time since our last company: beside, hauing not forsaken his Pylgrims weede, wherein hee trauailed to the holy Lande, hecame to acquaint me with the mercuailes in his iourney.

Se heere in breefe the whole trueth of this Historie, and if the Kings Nephewes auouch otherwise, I say (my Lord) they lie falsely. In which respect, as well to protect mine owne honour as the Princes, I humbly desire your Maiestie, that our innocencie may be discided by Combat: for such is my hope in a rightfull cause, as I shall find some knight to fight for me. The Lords of the Empire were altogether of the same opinion, and instantly desired the Emperour, to graunt his Daughter her lawfull requeſt: whereto he answered, that he would take counsell thereon, and iustice should be done her as it ought. Heereupon the Emperour went into his Chamber, and the Queene was brought to the Empresse her Mother: where the poore Ladie was assaulted afresh, for she was no sooner entred the Chamber, but her Mother thus beganne. I know not Daughter how badly thou hast bene counselled, that since the die of thine espousall to the Prince Tarsius, who loued thee so deerely: thou hast continued such hatred against him, that at length thou art become the onely cause of his death.

Madame, quoth the Queene, you speake your pleasure: but (in regard of my reuerence to you) I answer, that I neuer thought it. Wherefore I intreate you to forbeare such peeches, and if you consider all things well: your selfe will be found in greater fault then I. For contrary to my sollemne promise, which I had made to the Prince of Macedon, you compelled me to marrie with him: and if Florendos had the opportunitie, and in defence of his owne

person hath slaine him, ought you then to impute the crime to me? With these words the Empresse held her peace, and sat conferring with the yong Princesse Armida: in meane while came the Duke of Pera, who had the Queene in charge, and conduced her to her Chamber, and afterwarde (by the Emperours commaundement) he shut Florendos into a strong prison.

The nexte day, Promptaleon and Oudin came to the Pallace, where with great and audacious impudence they came before the Emperour, saying. Why haue you not my Lord prouided the fire, to burne your Daughter and her adulterer Florendos? Soft and faire, answered the good Remicius, be not so hastie, I finde them not so faultie as your accusation deliuereth: for no other harme was committed then talking together, and because Florendos was disguised, is that a consequence, my daughter must die? No, will I eucurre such infamous report, in putting such a Prince to death, without hearing how he can answer for himselfe: you therefore my Lord of Pera, goe fetch Florendos that he may answer to their propositions. The Duke obeyed his commaundement, and brought the Prince so spent with extreame griefe, because he had brought the Queene into such daunger: as hardly he could sustaine him selfe, but after he had with great humilitie prostrated himselfe before the Emperour, he began in this manner. Most mightie Lord and Emperour of Greece, meruaile not that with such heauines I come before your Maiestie: when in stede of doing you seruice, according as my duty commaundeth me, I bring you cause of offence and displeasure. Nouertheless, I repose my selfe on your benignitie and princely iustice, wherein I must intreate you, to haue regard on the Queene your Daughters innocentie: for the fault that is committed, if it deserue to be called a faulte, was done without the Queenes knowledge, or so much as a thought of the matter on her part, before it happened. Moreouer, there is none of so harsh iudgment or reason but will con-

sider,

consider, what familiarity & friendship, doth passe betweene Princes and Ladies in occasions of honour. Which may serue to answer the cause of my comming to see the Queen, being thereto bound by duty and honest loue, wherewith in my yonger yeeres I faithfully serued her. And this I did, without any iniurie to her honor, much lesse occasion of offence to the King: which hee would needes interpret in that sort, when with so great indiscretion he came and assailed me.

These are fables, quoth Promptaleon, for the conspiracie and treason betweene thee and the Queene is so manifest, as euerie one knowes it. And if the Emperour doo not this day consumate your liues, both together in one fire: he offereth the greatest iniustice that euer Prince did, and before the whole worlde wee will hereafter accuse him. Darest thou maintaine by Combat in fielde, sayde Florendos, what thou with such brauerie affirmest in this Hall: That will I by mine honor, quoth Promptaleon, and let the Knight come that dare aduenture: on this condition, that if I be the conqueror, the Queene and thou may be burned as ye haue deserued, and the Princesse Armida declared not legitimate, and so disinherited of the kingdome. Now hast thou reuealed thy villainie, said Florendos, and for the last condition dost thou follow the cause so earnestly rather then by any matter of trueth and equitie: but thou art deceiued in thyne intent, and thy death (villaine) shall deliuer assurance of her succession. So please my Lord the Emperour of his grace, to prolong the day of Combat till I haue recouered some health: my selfe alone, against thee and thy Brother, will proue ye false Traytors, and that maliciously yee haue accused the Queene. The Emperour seeing the Prince so weake and sickly, and yet with so good courage willing to defende his Daughters wrong: resolued himselfe that shee was innocent. Remembring then his noble seruices in defence of his Empire, and how iniuriously he denied him his daughter: he was moued in

such sort as he could not refraine from teares, thinking for vengeaunce of that offence, that heauen had iustly permitted the death of Tarisius, wherefore beholding Florendos with pittifull lokes, pronounced the sentence in this manner. You Promptaleon and Oudin, Nephewes to our deceassed deare and beloued sonne the King of Hungaria, shall maintaine your wordes in open Fielde, against two such Knights, as my Daughter and the Prince Florendos can deliuer on their behalfe, and that within twelue daies after this instant. One of which the Prince himselfe shal be, if he be not furnished with another to his liking: alwayes prouided, that the vanquished shall be declared Traytours, and attainted of the crime of Lese Maiestatis, and so punished according to the exigence of the case. The two Brethren accepted these conditions, beeing so farre ouercome with their owne pride, as they reputed themselues ỹ most valiant Knights of the world. Florendos feeling himselfe so weake of body, would gladly haue demaunded a longer day: but the sentence beeing giuen, the Emperour likewise promising to appoint another Knight in his stedde, he was contented, and committing all to the Emperors pleasure, was carried backe againe to prison in such pensiuenes, as he was iudged not able to liue till the Combat day. The Quene likewise was kept in sure guarde, despayring how she should finde a Knight, that would aduenture on her behalfe in fight: because the strength and prowesse of the Challengers was so renowned. Leauing thus these two louers in doubts and feares: let vs returne where we left before, to noble Palmerin, that he may bring them some better comfort.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXVIII.

¶ Howe Palmerin hauing ſtayed with his Lady fiue dayes, in ſo great pleaſure as heart could deſire, fearing to bee diſcouerd to the Emperour: tooke his leaue of her, promiſing to beginne the ſearche of Trineus and Ptolome.

POlynarda hauing her Friende in her cuſtodie, would not willingly preſume ſo farre vpon her owne ſelfe, or the truſty faithfulneſſe of her Ladyes, as that ſhee would permit or ſuffer him to ſtay there in the Day time: and doubting likewiſe leaſt his coming in the Night ſhould be eſpyed, committed the whole matter in eſpeciall charge to Bryonella, as they perfourmed their loues without any impeachment. During theſe delights and Amorous contentments, which theſe timorous Louers paſſed together, the Princeſſe among other familiar talke rehearſed to her Friend, how the King of Fraunce ſent his Embaſſadours to the Emperour, to treate on the Marryage betweene her and his Eldeſt Sonne, as alſo her Brother Trineus, with his Daughter Lucemania. And how importunate the Empreſſe had bene with her, of rouering what Honour and Felicitie it ſhould be vnto her, to be Queene of ſo great a Kingdome as Fraunce is. And truſt me my Lord (qd. ſhee) I know my Parents are ſo affected to this Alliaunce, as if my Brother Trineus were come, I know no meane whereby to excuſe my ſelfe. Alas Madam, (quoth Palmerin) herein you may conſider, if the Emperour by violent force conſtraine you hereto: what continuall griefe it will be to your Seruant Palmerin: what tor-

ments

ments? what tyrannous paines of straunge conceite, may equall themselues with the very least of my Passions? nor can I any way bee able to endure them. The doubtfull feares of this mis-fortune stroke to his heart, with such an Impression, as hee fell in a swoune betweene his Ladyes armes, shee embracing him with such ardent affection, as the soules of the poore tormented Louer, feeling with what equall desire his Lady requited him, receyued freshe strength into his languishing bodie, and being come to his former estate, the Princesse said. Alas my Lord, at the time I supposed to be in assurance with you, and to thinke on no imaginations, but new pleasures and delights: forgetting the regarde you haue long continued, in expectation of the wyshed fortunate houre, will yee be now the cause of my death? Thinke you, that if Loue be so violent on your behalfe, it exceedeth not a thousand times more in mee? Beleeue me: You men make your bauntes of the great Passions, feares, and doubts you haue to offend your Ladyes, whom to serue loyallie you haue especially chosen: but in no wise may these oppressions be compared to ours. Where is hee among ye, who hath experimented, how great the paine of dishonour is, and can couer his extream Loue with dissimulation? What a death is it to constraine violence against it selfe? to containe the piercing Eye, and subdue an heart so affectionate, as bringeth death to the rest of the bodie, if shee shewe not some parte of her desire, by lookes (the faithfull and secrete Messengers) to him shee hath chosen, loueth, and wisheth? The torment of the willlikewise, when one dare not coune in presence, nor beholde her fauoured, to languish, and yet may seeke no meanes of helpe: All these insupportable miseryes wee poore Ladyes must endure, being giuen by nature, or forced for a custome. Wherefore my Lorde, present not me with your Passions, considering each thing as it ought, they may not be compared to the least of mine: for Loue who hath ouer-maistred me, reigneth with such resolute Authoritie, as I must sooner dye, then offer you any wrong,

wrong, seeing that as my Lord and Husband I haue elected you, and bestowed those fauours on you which are most desired, to wit, willing obedience, and that (then which) nothing is more precious. Hauing then made you soueraigne of my selfe, the Prince of Fraunce cannot enioy an other mans right. And if my Father vsing his authoritie, shall enforce me, although it be grieuous to mee, I will tell him what hath happened, and no menaces whatsoeuer shall alter my opinion.

Palmerin seeing his Ladie so firme and loyall, was not a little ioyfull, thus answering. Doubtlesse my deere and most gracious Mistresse, hetherto I durst presume on my selfe, that by my manifolde loyall seruices, I should one day deliuer recompence, for some part of the honours you haue done me: but now may I well perceyue, that abounding in your graces you depriue mee of all meanes to acknowledge your bountie, which commonly men desire to shewe by their obedience: nor shall I be able to deserue the inestimable value, contayned in the simplest worde of your last most honorable Promise.

Now the Princesse discerning by the Windowe, that Aurora Phœbus his fayre Porter, began to lette forth the Morning light, and prouide way for his Maisters iourney: withdrewe herselfe to her Chamber, and quickly layde her downe by Bryonella, who the better to hide her Ladyes affaires, dissembled that she had a feuer Quotidian, by which meane she compassed to kéepe her Chamber, and entertained Palmerin as her selfe desired. All this while Vbanillo brought newes from the Prince Olorico, who was so desirous to see the Princesse againe: as hee vowed not to depart the Cittie, before he accomplished what he intended.

Palmerin who loued him as his Brother, was in great doubt, how he should safely bring it to passe: vntill Bryonella, whose deuises were euer readyest, sayde. My Lord, the man béeing no way able to hurte yee, and of the lesse importance néede you make the matter: will you see how we

we toill a little iuggle with the Emperour: Let it be saide, that the Prince is Cozin to Vrbanillo, and the cause of his comming into this Countrey, was to seeke you: then because hee vnderstands howe my Ladie loues the Dwarffe, his Maistie (without anie doubt) will suffer the two Cozins to take theyr leaue of her: Will not this deuise then shadow his seeing the Princesse? Without question (quoth Palmerin,) I should neuer haue inuented such a subtiltie, be it then as you haue determined: But with great policie, that the Emperour misdoubt nothing, for if he discouer vs, we are shamed for euer. Referre it to me (said Brionella,) if I describe not theyr kindred cunningly. Neuer believe that a Woman can inuent a Lye without studie. Brionella conferring with the Dwarffe, laype downe the platforme in such order, as the next day the Prince came before the Emperour: when Vrbanillo on his knée desired leaue, that he might depart with his Cozin there present, to seeke his Maister, in whose search he would trauell, till he heard certainly of his life or death.

Ah Vrbanillo (quoth the Emperour) in such a good lucky houre mayest thou go, as to finde both him and my Sonne Trineus, God leaue hast thou to goe when thou wilt. But when I beholde you both aduisedly, very hardlye doe you séeme to be Cozins: for if there be any Allyaunce betweene you, it neuer came by the Fathers side: and if it bée by the Mother, the one was then married in Barbarie, and the other in Scotland. Why my Lord (quoth the Dwarffe) rather had I dye then tell an vntruth before your Highnesse: and with such protestations did the Dwarffe sweth his tale, as they of greatest doubt gaue credite to him. Heerevpon, the Emperour commanded them to goe take theyr leaue of his Daughter, willing her to write to her Brother. Hauing obtayned what they desired, they stayed not long in returning thanks: but went presently to the Princesse Chamber, where she (aduertised of their comming) stayd for them. Honourable salutations on eache side deliuered, a Chayre

was

was brought for the Prince, and he sitting downe by Polynarda, she thus beganne. Albeit my Lord I am very loath to forgoe my Seruant: yet hauing founde him so honest, and for the good will I wish to all his kinred, especially you, who haue Enterprised to seeke his Maister and my Brother, I am the better contented to part with him.

If the Prince commended her Beautie, when being in Embuscado he saw her passe by: What may we imagine of his opinion nowe? For beholding her, the comforte of her long absent Friende, had called all her Beauties together, enriched with so manie sweete and amiable graces: as hee could not repute her of humane lunage, but rather some Angell discended from Heauen, to make the glorie of Palmerin more ample, whervpon, to deceiue the Ladies being present, returned this answer. Undoubtedly Madame, if I and all mine had spent our soules in your seruice, wee should holde our selues sufficiently recompenced, with the princely fauor you affoorde our Cozin, which he is no way able to deserue. And perswade your selfe faire Princesse, that if hee be your obedient Seruaunt, my selfe am no lesse, in all things that your Excelleucie shall please to commaund me: So that if there were not vrgent occasions to excuse my departure, it would be my onely content to remaine at your disposition. Yet such is my hope, that this griefe shall be chaunged into ioye by a speedy returne, when wee shall bring the Prince Tryneus and our noble Maister Palmerin. The sooner, the better welcome will they be (quoth the Princesse) for therein consisteth my chiefest comfort. And after many other speeches betweene them, she gaue him many rich gifts, wherewith he helde himselfe so honoured, as if he had gayned the whole Monarchie of Asia: So kissing her hand, the Prince with his new Cozin, returned to his Lodging. Now was it concluded betweene Palmerin and the Princesse, because the Empresse on the morrow would come to see her daughter, that hee should depart the same way he came: Wherefore the houre beeing come that hee should passe the Wall,

Poly-

Polyinarda thus spake. Now is the time (my Lorde) that you must leaue me, and I be forced to consent, because there is no remedie: but perswade your selfe, that with this parting beginnes my sorrowes. Yet if I knewe where you trauelled, my griefes would be the lesse, and my life prolonged with better hope: but beeing uncertaine of your way, and knowing what misfortunes and daungerous perilles, may encounter you in vnknowne Countreys, I know not how I shall dissemble my torments. Notwithstanding, sweete Friend, if your stay be long, send Vrbanillo againe, to comfort poore Bryonella and my selfe: For losing the onely maintenance of our languishing liues, impossible is it but our Spirites will soone forsake theyr miserable habitations.

For Gods sake Madame (quoth Palmerin) neuer talke of such a separation, for the remembraunce thereof, is death to mee: and it so much offendeth me to see you in this perturbation, as I lose both courage and hope of well doing. Continue then the humour you haue done since my comming, that I beholding you pleasaunt, may be comforted thereby, during the searche of your Brother, which I hope wilbe both short and sudden. Otherwise, before the Earth be ready for me, I shall be enforced to take vppe my endlesse Hostage. So after many sweete kisses, and gracious louing Courtesies passed between them, they take their leaue of eache other, with such effusion of Teares, as the very inward soule bemoned theyr departing. So with his Ladders of Cords, he got ouer the Wall againe, and came to the Lodging where he left Olorico: then Arming themselues, they rode away in great hast, because they feared to be knowne by any.

CHAP. XXIX.

¶ How after Palmerin was departed from his Lady, there appeared to him one of the Fayries of the Mountaine Artiseria, who declared to him part of his Fortunes following. And of a Combat which hee and Olorico had against tenne Knights.



Great haſt in they⁊ Iourney made theſe two Knightes, ſo that in ſhorte time they came to the Kingdome of Hungaria, where paſſing through a great Foreſt, they aſcended a high Mountaine, at what time the Ayre being calme and cleare, was vpō a ſudden obſcured with many darkſome Clowdes, and ſuch outragious Windes, as they were glad to ſhrowde themſelues vnder certaine Pine Trées nére at hand.

Hauing there ſheltred themſelues a while, they beheld a very thicke Myſte about a Fayre Trée, and heard withall a very terrible Thunder: and the Fogge ſomewhat clearing, they beheld a comely Lady vnder the Trée, whereat they were ſtroke into no little admiration, yet Palmerin being deſirous to vnderſtand the effecte of this Aduenture, made towards the Trée, when the Lady beganne in this manner to him.

Palmerin d'Oliua, marueil not at this Accident which hath happened onely for thy ſake and profite. Heeretofore I came to thee on another Mountaine, where I and my Siſters healed the Wounds thou didſt receiue by the Serpent. At this time I am come to thee, to wyſh thee follow

the

thy iourney begunne: Assuring thée that they whom thou seekest, are yet liuing, and in the custodie of Turkes and Infidels: but before thou canst finde them, thou shalt be deliuered from death by him thou hatest most. And after that thou hast found this fauour by him, hee shall ayde thée in reskuing from Prison and death, thy best and dearest friends: and so I leaue thee to thy happy successe. Then suddenly vanished the Woman away, and could not afterwards be séene againe, leauing Palmerin very pensiue for what hee had heard, which hee estéemed to be true, because hetherto he had found no lesse, all that the Systers said to him on the Mountaine Artilæria.

Returning to his companie, Olorico demaunded what Goddesse had talked with him, and what had made him on a sudden so chærfull: Trust me my Noble Friende (quoth he) the matter is such, as for all the Golde in the worlde, I would not but haue knowne, which Vrbanillo can better declare vnto you, more then I am able: But because wee would méete no more straunge Aduentures in this Mountaine, let vs spædily set forwards on our Iourney.

All that day they rode without any occasion to stay them, and the next day likewise, till towards the Euening, when they espyed ten Knights before them, the foremost of them leading a Ladie, who made very grieuous and pitifull Lamentations: whereupon Palmerin clasped his Helmet, desiring Olorico to do the like, Because (quoth hee) for any thing I see, we shall haue passtime with some danger. The Prince did as his Friend requested him, and when the Ladie was come somewhat more neere them, shee framed her speéches to them in this mäner. Gentle Knights, for Gods sake helpe me, for these Traytors haue forcibly brought me hether: and to compasse their villainous intent, they haue murthered my Husband, and two of my Brethren. Palmerin without answering one worde, approached to him that led her, and gaue him such a rap on the pate, with a Mace that he carryed at his Saddle bow, as with the stroke he fell

dead

dead to the earth: making him sure not to escape, during the time that he dealt with the other. Olorico had taken his careire against an other of them, whom he encountred so puissantly, as the knight breaking his Launce, Olorico thrust his quite through his body: whereof Palmerin being glad, said.

To the rest noble Prince, for we are sure two of them can do vs no harme. With such courage did these Gallants bestirre themselues, as in lesse space then halfe an houre, sire more of them were slaine: for Palmerin neuer gaue stroke, but either he brake an arme, head or neck. The two which were left, seeing the hard fortune of their fellowes, would abide no further daunger, but take themselues to flight with all the spede they coulde. When the Ladie saw her selfe deliuered of her enemies, she came and humbled her selfe at Palmerins feete, earnestly desiring him not to leaue her, but that it would please him to conuey her to her Castell neere at hande: whereupon Vrbanillo alighting, holpe her to mount on one of the vanquished knights horses.

By the waie she rehearsed, how he that led her, had of long time loued her, but because he was proude and of euill conditions, her Father could not like of the match: but gaue her to a yong Gentleman his neighbour, who was a very vertuous and worthy minded knight. This seemed displeasing to him that was refused, so that he brought nine of his kinsmen and friendes with him, and hid themselues in ambush neere my Fathers Castle, whereto I haue intreated you to conduct me. They staying there thus vnknowne to any all the night, and the most part of this day, tell my Husband, two of my Brethren and my selfe, take horse, intending to goe hunt at the Miners side, they seeing vs far enough from any refuge, violently set on vs, kilde my Husband and Brethren, and brought me away with them, the Traitour himselfe saying, that after he had rauished me of mine honor, he would commit me to the like vsage

by the Groomes of his Stable, who when they had satisfied their villainous willes, should put mee to cruell and shamefull death.

Beléeue me Madame, quoth Olorico, you are happily deliuered from such violence, and I thinke if all such like Ruffians were so serued as they are, Ladies might passe through the Countrey safely and without danger. By this time they were come to the Castell, where (because it was night) the Bridge was drawne: but when ỳ guard heard that the Ladie was come, it was presently let downe, and one of them ranne to the Ladies Mother, who fearing she had lost her Daughter, was now greatly comforted, especially when she vnderstood, that they which had slaine her Sonnes, were likewise kilde themselues: and certainly both the Mother and the Daughter reputed themselues so beholding to the Knights, as they knew not in what sort to entertaine them, whereby they might expresse their comfort.

Béeing very honorably vsed by these Ladies, after supper they were conducted to their Chamber, where they reposed themselues that night: and the next morning came to take their leaue of the Ladies, to the no little griefe both of the one and the other. All that day they trauailed without any aduenture, till at length they came to a goodly fountaine, where they allighted, to let their horses pasture awhile: and hauing refreshed themselues with certaine victualles, that Vrbanillo had prouided for them, Palmerin laid him downe and slept, and Vrbanillo by him, finding themselues somewhat wearie with riding all the day. Olorico being a young Prince, and desirous to sée any strange occasion: walked about into diuers places, regarding here and there the scituation of the Countrey, the Mountaines and goodly Castelles builded vppon them. He was no sooner departed, but there arriued fiue Armed Knights, two of them being they that escaped, when Palmerin so nobly deliuered the Ladie, they hauing that night past lodged at his

Fathers

Fathers house who ledde the Ladie, and which Palmerin first kilde with his Mace. And thinking now to reuenge themselues, had brought three of his Cozins in their company, and watched at the Ladies Castell the cõming forth of the Princes: but their stomacks would not serue them to meddle with them there, wherefore they followed them all that day, till they beheld them seperated as you haue heard.

When they saw that Palmerin slept, one of them (fearing least the noise of the Horses should awake him) alighted, and drawing his Sword, came therewith to haue slaine him: but by good fortune there arriued a Knight, who had bene hunting there about all that day, and he cryed to him with his Sword drawne. Ah villaine, kill not the man that sleepes. The Traytour seeing this new come Knight so braue a person, beganne to be afraid, and therefore slept backe againe a little, at that time Palmerin, by ỹ Knights crie, awaked: and seeing him so nere that thought to giue the mortall stroke, was greatly amazed, suddainly drawing his Sword to defende himselfe, not hauing the leysure to put on his Helmet, by which occasion he receiued a small wound vpon his heade. The Knight seeing the cowardly villainie of them that assailed Palmerin altogether, bestirred himselfe so worthily among them, as he that gaue the wound, died soone after vnder his Sword. Whereupon the foure Knights deuided themselues, two against Palmerin, and two against him, who defended themselues so worthely, and had brought their enemies into such danger, as they two that before escaped, seeing to what danger the fight would extend, gaue the spurres to their horses, and galloped away so fast as the horse could pace. By this time ỹ Prince Olorico heard the Dwarfes clamour, beeing greatly afraide of his Maisters death: came running thether with all speede, when the Knight that had saued Palmerins life, said.

Noble Knight, well may you giue thankes to Heauen,

in that your enemies, who thought to kill you sleeping, are foyled: for if God had not permitted my comming this waie, without all doubt you had lost your life. But since it hath bene my good happe to preuent your ominous fortune, I must aduise ye hereafter to beware of like hazarde: and may it please you to accompany me to a Castel within two miles distaunce, your entertainment shall be good, and your woundes cured by a Ladie verie expert in Chirurgerie. I accept your offer gentle Sir, quoth Palmerin, with right good will, as well to haue your friendly company, as to shelde you from any other such like villaines, who happily may seeke your harme for this noble fauour. So they rode on altogether, Palmerin remembring the wordes of the Fairie Ladie, and could not imagine who the knight should be, that had so honorably preserued his life: this made him more to meruaile, that he should be his enemie, whom (to his remembraunce) he had neuer seene in any place before.

To put him from these cogitations, Olorico ashamed of his absence in such a needfull time, came to Palmerin with these words. Certes my noble Friende, I am hencefoorth vnworthy to beare Armes, seeing that in such danger I left your company: vnhappy that I am, might not former experience teach mee, what suddaine aduentures do often happen to knights errant: what punishmit may be sufficient for my heinous offence: Leaue such speeches to Women, quoth Palmerin, for if we knew before what would happen afterward, neuer should we fall into any inconuenience: but it is sufficient that we haue so well escaped, and let God haue the glorie for so happie deliuerance. By this time they were come to the Castell, and entring the base Court, the Seruaunts came to take their Horses to the stable: meane while the knight himselfe went to aduertise ỹ Lady, of the other knights arriual, saying. Faire Leonarda, I pray you vouchsafe the best honor and entertainment you can deuise, to two Gentlemen I haue here

brought

brought with me: for I imagine by their rich Armes and Courtly behauiour, that either they are Princes or discended of very honourable Parentage. Trust me my Lorde, (quoth shee) for your sake I endeuour my selfe to welcome them as they ought.

And comming into the Hall to salute them, after many courtesies deliuered on either side, the Lady seing Palmerins Armour besmeared with blod, by reason of the wound he receyued on his head, saide. I feare my Lord you are very sore hurt: therefore the soner it be sene too, the better ease you shall finde, Hereuppon her selfe helpe to vnarme him, and afterward she brought him into a goodly Chamber, where when she had stanched his bleeding, and bound vppe the Wound, hee was laide in a maruellous Rich Bedde prouided for him, she promising within ten dayes and lesse to restore him so well, as he should at pleasure trauell without any danger.

For this kindnesse Palmerin returned her manifolde thanks, and because he might the better rest without disturbaunce, shee caused euery one to departe the Chamber, her selfe likewise courteously bidding him good Night. Palmerin being alone, loked round about the Chamber, to see if by any Armes or deuise, he might know the Knight that so happily deliuered him: At length, hard by his Bed side, hee espied the Shield of Frysoll, with the Sunne painted therein, which hee well remembred to be his Deuise, in home for Polynardaes Loue he hated, according as you haue heard in the former part of this History, which when he beheld, the teares trickling down his cheeks, he thus began to himselfe. I perceiue that the Lady which saluted me on the mountain is of excellent Knowledge: For though the Knight bee my chiefest enemy, yet for the honorable kindnesse he hath this day shewed me: I will forget all former iniuries, and loue him hencefoorth as hee were my Brother, and what I could neuer compasse by rigour and force of Armes, I will nowe seeke to conquer by loue and courtesie. Whyle he continued

these priuat speches, Frysoll opened the Chamber dore, and entred to bid Syr Palmerin good night: who not a little glad of his comming, sayde

I pray you Sir Knight, by the honorable loue you beare to Chiualrie: to tell me your name, and if heeretofore you were neuer in the Realme of Englād. My name, quoth the Knight, which hetherto I neuer hid from any man, is Frysoll, and two yeres I remained in the Realme you speake of, with the Duke of Gaule in his Court. You remember then a Knight, sayde Palmerin, with whom in lesse space then twelue daies together, you had two seuerall Combats. Very true, quoth Frysoll, and some good reason I haue to remember it, for the fight on my behalfe was so daungerous, as but by the fauour of a Lady and a Squire, I neuer had escaped with life. Now hast thou in thy custodie, sayde Palmerin, the man that did thee such wronge, no more an enemie, but for euer thy vowed, true and trustie Friend: and by the order I haue receiued, there is no man this day liuing, that shall withdraw me from thy friendship, because thou better deseruest it then any Knight in the world.

And hath by my meanes, quoth Frysoll, the onely flower of Chiualrie bene deliuered from death: and the resolute hatred betweene vs, united now with loue more then brotherlike, in an happy houre went I on hunting this day, and Fortune could neuer honor me with more desired successe. For confirmation of this new alliaunce, he ranne and called Leonarda, Olorico and the rest, and before them all kissed Palmerin in the Bedde, to seale the perpetuall league of amitie betweene them. Then was recounted their aduentures and hatred past, whereat euery one greatly mercuailed, seeing this suddaine change to such surpassing loue.

Frysoll also rehearsed, how after the rape of Agriola, the Duke Grenus his Lord went to the Court, where hee aduised the king to pursue his Daughter, or to sende him

in

in search of her: whereto hee could not any way perswade the King. Moreouer, how his Maiestie would haue kept him still in his seruice, whereto he might not graunt, for the promise he made the Ladie that came thither, whom after he had brought to her Castell: hee trauailed by the Emperour of Allemaignes Court, where he certainly vnderstood, that Tryneus and Agriola were not as yet there arriued, nor could any newes bee heard what became of them.

Yet during all these speeches, he concealed all his own noble deedes of Chiualry in England, Allemaigne & other places, so vertuous and debonaire was this gentle Knight, coueting in nothing to extol himself. He forgot not likwise to report, how that Lady cured him of a long and greeuous disease: for which hee had so giuen himselfe to her seruice, as for euer he vowed himselfe her Knight. Palmerin not a little contented with this discourse, sayd, I thinke the king of England would not send his Shippes after his Daughter, remembring her happines to come, bee now the espoused Wife to Lord Tryneus, and the honor thereof had bene already seene, but that the tempest of the sea was too much their enemie. Then declared hee their troublesome time on the Sea, in what manner he lost them, and how he now trauailed to finde them againe. Since Fortune hath so appointed (quoth Frysoll) that this loue and friendship should be begunne betweene vs, to continue the same I will beare ye company, and will not forsake you till yee haue found them, may it like you to accept me for your cõpanion.

If it like me, quoth Palmerin, you needs not doubt thereof, and rather you then any man that I know: for which noble kindnes, I thinke my selfe most fortunate. In this manner beganne the concorde betweene Palmerin and Frysoll, which continued with vertuous and perfect constancie, as in the Chapters following you shal perceiue. Thus soiourned these Knights there louingly together, till

Palmerin being recouered, and able to beare Armes: they departed thence, leauing the poore Lady Leonarda in great heauinesse, because her Friend Frysoll left her so soone.

CHAP. XXX.

¶ How Palmerin, the Prince Olorico, and Frisoll, went to Buda, thinking to finde the Court there, where being arriued, they hearde Newes howe the Prince Florendos was taken: whome they went to succour with all diligence at Constantinople.

FRysoll, because hee woulde not haue his Ladie Leonarda too much discontented, made promise of his speedy returne to her: Which woordes somewhat pleasing her, hee departed with his two new Friends, and such quicke haste they made in their Journey, as within fiue dayes after, they arriued at Buda. There were they aduerised of the Kings death, whereof the Prince of Macedon was accused, and the Queene likewise: For which cause they were as Prysoners conueyed to her Fathers Court, to the Cittie of Constantinople.

At these tydings Palmerin was very displeasant, wherefore he said to his Companions. Beleeue me good Friends, My heart will neuer be at quiet, till I haue bene before the Emperour, who ought to be an indifferent Judge to Florendos, and hee is the onely man of the woorlde, to whome most gladly I would doo any seruice: therefore let vs make haste to Constantinople, to the end we may succour him, if he stand in any need of our aide. I am ready (quoth Frysol) and

and let vs set forward when you please. Herewith he remembred his father, to whom the Crowne by right appertained, if Parisius deceased without any heire: whereto (by this meane) he might attaine right soone. Perswading himselfe with assurance hereof, hee was now more earnest to be gone, and hastened his companions in such sort, as they came to Constantinople, two daies before the appointed time for the Combat. As they entred the City, they met a Knight riding on hunting, whom after they had saluted, Palmerin questioned withall, if hee knew any thing of the Prince Florendos his misfortune, & what the Emperor intended to do with him. Sir, quoth the knight, the Emperour hath resolutely set downe, that the Prince and his daughter shall receiue their triall by Combat against the two Nephewes to the deceased King: and furnished they must bee of their Champions, before the limited time of ten daies be expired, and nothing else as yet is done to my knowledge. I thanke you good Sir, quoth Palmerin, it is happy the matter is no further forward. So leauing the Knight, they prounced merily into the Citie, and because it was too soone to take vp their lodging, they rode to the Pallace, to know at full the certainty of the matter: thus being all Armed, except their Helmets, which their Squires carried after them, they made a seemely shew as they rode, in that they were all three of one stature, and very beautiful young Princes, they were especially noted, and followed by many Knights and Gentlemen, who imagined such persons went to the pallace for other matters then Courtly dancing.

These three companions being entred the great Hall, which was hanged round about with blacke velues, in signe of mourning, they marueiled what might bee the occasion thereof: wherefore Palmerin falling on his knee before the Emperour, and hauing humbly kissed his hand, thus spake. Most renowned Monarch of the world, my Friendes here and myselfe, within these few daies, as

since

wee trauelled through the Realme of Hungaria, were aduertized that you keepe in Prison the Prince of Macedon, whom (so please your Maiestie to vouchsafe) I would gladly see, in respect that hee is my Lord, as for the desire I haue to deale in the Combatte appoynted, if it like him to make choyse of me.

The Emperour perceyuing Palmerin so faire, modest, and courageous, beganne with himselfe to conceyue well of him: and imagined that his Sonne Caniano was againe reuiued, so neere did hee resemble him in countenance, stature, and all proportions of his bodie, wherefore hee returned him this answer. It shall not in ought displease mee, my Friende, to let you see him, to the ende you may conceiue no suspition of iniustice. So calling a Gentleman Vsher, commanded him to conduct the Knight to the Tower where the Prince Florendos was: afterwards enquiring of the Prince Olorico and Frysoll, what the Knight was that so hardily did enterprise the Combatte. Dread Lord, (quoth Frysoll) he is called Palmerin d'Oliua, a Knight (in my Iudgment) of the very highest qualitie in the Worlde. Then hee and the Prince Olorico, rehearsed the prowesse and deedes of Chiualrie by him accomplished in Fraunce, England, Allemaigne, Bohemia, and Turkie: which being heard by a Bohemian Knight present, he came to Frysoll, saying.

I pray you Syr, is this that Palmerin who killd the Serpent on the Mountain Artifæria, and brought the water from the Fountaine, which healed the good King Prymaleon, Father to Florendos? It is he Sir (qd. Frysoll) and no other. Then dare I say, gracious Lorde (quoth the Knight) that you haue seene the most valiant and vertuous Gentleman, that euer came in Thrace. Hereupon he discouered the noble victory hee obtained in Bohemia, against the two Gyants Dormaco and Mordano, whom he slewe before his worthy Combate on the behalfe of Dyardo, Cozin germaine to the King and fayre Cardonya: against the Coun-

County of Ormecque, and his Cozins, in the Company of Prince Adrian and Ptolome. Hereat were all the Princes and Knights present amazed, so that the Emperor himselfe, saide:

Well may Florendos nowe Aduenture the tryall of his cause, hauing the onely Champion of the Worlde on his side: and in this manner they deuised of him, till his returne from the Prison againe. Palmerin entring the Tower, Florendos was astonyed, because no person was wont to come him: but chiefely when he sawe him on his knees to him, doing these speeches. Alas my Lord Florendos, how grieuous to me is your imprisonment? in vnhappy time did you know him, that hath caused you to bee so ill intreated. I pray you my Lord comfort your selfe, and take courage: For heere you may beholde your Seruaunt Palmerin, who will be hewed in a thousand pieces, but he will deliuer you from this miserie. Florendos, whose eyes and face were greatly swolne with incessant weeping, onely with the sorrowe he conceyued for his Ladie, knowing him to be the same man indeede: was so exceeding ioyfull, as infinite embracings and kissings, would not serue to bewray his comfort, for such gracious welcomes, reuerence, and courtesie hee vsed, as Palmerin (bashfull to be entertained with such honour) saide.

Vnseemely is it my Lorde, that you should thus much abase your selfe to mee: For (vnder correction) it ill agrees that the Maister should honour the Seruaunt. The poore Prince could not but still holde him in his armes, and with teares and maruellous affection, thus answered. Ah Palmerin, mine onely hope and comfort in trouble, where hast thou beene? What fortune hath kept thee so long from mee? My deere Friende, howe manie vnkesome thoughtes haue I endured, expecting comming? so that when I sawe thou didst not returne, and I could no way heare what was become of thee: the careleste conceit of thy absence had neere slaine me. Then careesse, what became of my selfe, beeing

deep!

depriued of my loue and honor of my life, I am fallen into these miseries farre exceeding death: which Fortune I see hath permitted, because I am perswaded, that thou must deliuer me from all mishappes, and by thee shall I attaine my chiefest desires. Oh happie and fortunate hower, well worthy for euer to be celebrated with tryumphes, finding thee the onely cause of my good, whom long since I feared was consorted with the dead: but seeing thou art now so happily come, acquaint mee with the fortunes that staied thee thus long, for very desirous am I to knew them. Palmerin was so grieued to see him in such weake and sicklie estate, as he could hardly make any answere, yet stirring with himselfe, said.

My noble Lord, the time requireth now other occasions, hereafter shall I tell you the whole discourse. Graunt me, I beseech you, without further intreating, that I may enter the Combat in your name, against one of those Traitours, who haue accused you: for such is my hope in God, that I shall speede luckily, and bring him to the end such a villaine deserue. With all my heart, quoth the Prince, I am contented, assuring my succesle so well in your vertues, as if fiue hundred of my Knights did enter the field for mee. And to the ende, that without feare or doubt you may take my cause in hand, I sweare to you by the liuing God, that since Tarisius espoused Griana, I neuer saw her, till when the King came and found me with her: which was so short a time, as she had not the leysure to make me any answere. True it is that I kild the King: but how? I did it in respect he was mine enemy, and abused my Lady and lawful wife. What though they were espoused together: the mariage was not to be allowed, in that it was done against her will: shee being (as I haue said) my Wife, by sollemne speeches before God maried to me. It suffiseth, said Palmerin, I haue enough. You shall likewise vnderstand my Lord, that I haue brought with me another Knight, who will gladly aduenture the Combat on the Queenes behalfe,

halfe, and such a one hee is, as that the other accuser to it scant dare to stand against him: Wherefore let me intreate you to comfort your selfe, expecting our happie and fortunate successe.

Florendos falling on his knee, gaue thanks to Heauen for this luckie event, and hauing an audience with his conference together, after Palmerin had aduertised Frenedos of his Sonne Ptolomes health, and that in short time hee had good hope to finde him, heereturned to the Emperour, to whom making great reuerence, he said. Now my gracious Lord, I come to vnderstand your answer. I pray you Sir Knight (qd. the Emperour) holde mee excused, if I haue not welcommed you, as your Nobilitie, Worthie, and high Chiualry deserueth: but after the Combat is ended, which for my part I graunt yee, what hath wanted now shall bee supplyed, so that your selfe shall rest contented. I thanke your Maiestie for this extraordinary fauour, said Palmerin, and seeing the Prince hath committed his cause to my fortune: I beseech you send for the kings Nephewes, that the appointed day may not be preuented by any further delayes. And if the Queene your Daughter be not prouided of a Champion, this Knight (pointing to Fryoll) my beloued friende and Companyon, shall vndertake her cause, in that he came hither for no other busines: and such good experience haue I made of his Valour and hardynesse, as if by a mightie Chiualrie he might bee defended: assure your selfe my Lord, this is the man. I thanke (saide the Emperour) she is not as yet determined of any one, albeit full many haue made offer of themselues: and for me I will expect no further, this Knight shall be preferred before all that come. I humbly thanke your Maiestie for this fauour, (answered Fryoll) yet would I beseache you pardon me for a while, before I vnderstand the Queenes pleasure. The Emperour caused him to be conducted to the Queenes Chamber, and his two Companions with him, who desired to see the Ladies: where being entred, Fryoll humbly vpon his knee, began

in

in this manner. Right noble and excellent Quéene, so farre throughout Christendome, is spred the reporte of your rare vertues and integritie of life, especially your Innocencie in the crime wherewith you are accused: as from farre Countreyes I am come to be your knight, if you will vouchsafe me such honour as so to accept me. Assuring you, that under your commandement, and in the company of my Noble Friend, who undertakes the Combat for my Lord Florendos, right willing am I to aduenture life and credite.

Alas gentle knight, quoth the Quéene, this offer procedeth from your courtesie and bountie, not by any vertue on my parte deserued: For so contrarie hath Fortune euermore set herselfe against me. But very ingratefull might I bee accounted, and neuer be reckoned among Ladyes of regard, if hauing taken such paines for mee, I should not accept you for my knight, especially in such vrgent occasion. Therefore I entertaine you into this Seruice, and I desire of God, that you may be as easily deliuered from the charge you take in hand for me, as my conscience is clére from the faulte wherewith I am accused.

I hope Madame (quoth Frysoll) that my Lord your Father shall ere long perceyue, your loyall, perfect, and pure Nobilitie, which neuer can kéepe company with seruile and detestable treason. All this while Palmerin beholding the Quéene, séeing her sweet face so stained and blabbered with teares: moued with naturall remorse, was constrained to turne his head aside, to hide the teares that trickled downe his chéekes.

The Quéene likewise regarded him so earnestly, as when shee beheld him weepe, shee imagined that one gaue a violent pull at her heart: which she dissembled so well as shee could, determining not to demaund the cause thereof, vntill such time as the Combat were finished. So taking theyr leaue of the Quéene and the Princesse Armida, they returned to theyr Lodging till the next Morning, when the Emperour sending for them to the Pallace, where Promptalcon

talcon and Ouelin stayed their comming: the Emperour himselfe thus began. Now Protopralbon, here mayest thou beholde the two young Knights, who speake the contrary of that thou hast reported: Wilt thou yet maintaine that my Daughter hath committed treason, and bin disloyall to her Husband, thy deceased Nuckle? I will my Lord, (quoth hee) and sweare by my Baptisme, for that cause she shall dye the death: and if any dare undertake the contrarie, I am ready to proue it by force of Armes. I thinke it conuenient (said Palmerin, my good Lord) that no Combate should be graunted, without the presente of the accused.

Immediately Florendos and Griana, were sent for, and beeing come before the Emperour, Palmerin sayde to the Prince: How say you? my Lord, do you permit in maintenaunce of your right, that I giue these false accusers such discipline, as their wicked and trecherous dealings deserue? I do (quoth the Prince) and Heauen prosper thee in thine enterprise. What say you Madame (quoth Frysol!) to the Queene, do you affoorde the like to me? Shee answered as Florendos before had done: Whereupon Palmerin thus spake to the Accusers.

Wee two Knightes will maintaine, that you both are Traytours, and that by couetous and greedie desire of rule, and to enioy the Kingdome, you would (against all Right) disinherit the young Princesse Armida: for which cause you haue shamefully accused the Queene her Mother, to haue committed murther, and more then that, charge her with disloyall lubricity. For if the Prince Florendos talked with her, when the King found him in her Chamber: it was in no other sort then honour allowed, and according to the dutie of honest Loue, wherein all Princes are bound to their Ladyes. Besides, if your King was slaine by the Prince, it was in defence of his owne life, and in repelling the iniurious speeches he gaue him. To approue what I say, wee present our gages to the Emperour, so please him but to receyue them. The like did the two Brethren, desiring his

High-

Highnesse to appoint the Combatte presently, in the wide inner Base place before the Pallace. For (quoth they) we will teache these vaine glorious Strangers, the price of such infamous speeches, spoken to those that know how to correct them.

I thinke (quoth Palmerin) thou shalt neede to teach thy selfe: but if thou haue any newe deuise to practise it well thou arte best, for I can tell thee the time will require it. Whe gan Emperour Remicius commaunded silence, and taking the Gages of these foure knightes: bad them goe Arme themselues, saying he would see the ende thereof before he tooke any sustenaunce. The Duke of Mensa, and the Countie of Rodoha, auncient Princes of Greece, were appointed to be Iudges of the Fielde: who commaunded two hundred knights to Arme themselues, for assuraunce of their owne persons.

CHAP. XXXI.

¶ Of the noble Combat in the Citie of Constantinople, by Palmerin, & Frysoll, against the two Nephews of the deceassed King of Hungaria, whom they vanquished, by which meanes the Prince Florendos and Queene Griana were deliuered.

DEsired Rompraleon and Oudin being departed the sumptous Hall, Palmerin and Frysoll taking the valeure of Florendas with the Queene, whom the Emperour caused to be shutte vppe in their Prison againe, went to their Lodginge to Arme themselues, for performaunce of the Affaire undertaken. The Duke of Meccena,

an

an honorable Prince, discended of the most auncient race in all Greece, with many other great Lordes went after them: & when they were Armed, the Duke would needes beare Palmerins Launce, and the graund Squire attending on the Emperour, carried Frysols. In this manner came they to the place appointed for the Combat, where the two Brethren were already staying for them, the eldest of them thus beginning in mockage. Welcome mee Knights, for meth y the wen thou selues so hardie in a Hall, me thinks you haue been very long Arming your selues. I thinke you came on your footcloth Mules to the Fieldes entraunce, for feare of falling to hunt your selues: but soone shall ye be taught better Gentlemanship I warrant ye. If there were in thee so much wisedome & exercise of Armes, aunswered Frysoll, as are high words and brauing behauiour, it would be a little better discerned then it is: notwithstanding, ere we haue done, I thinke they that came first into the fielde will tarrie last here, vnlesse some bodye for pittie carrie them out before. Herewith the Trompets sounded, and the Heraldes commaunded the Champions to doe their deuorie, which was the cause, that these hote words were chaunged into deedes: and running fiercely against each other, they encountred with such pusillaunce, as Palmerin cast Oudin forth of his saddle, with a very great wound on his left side, and Prompraleon was received by Frysoll so roughly, as he fell backward on the crupper of his Horse, because he was loth his Brother should fall without company. The two Brethren, enraged to be thus foiled at y first, came with their words to blowes to kill their aduersaries Horses: so that they were constrained quickly to alight, when they assailed each other with meruailous furie, for either side expected victorie, the one in hope of a kingdome, the other to saue their Friends liues.

Strange was it to beholde this violent fight, yet the two Brethren seemed vnable long to holde out, for they

Armor was so cut and mangled, and themselues so driuen foorth of breath, as hardly they could sustaine themselues; so that Promptaleon desird Fryfoll to rest a while, who moued with anger, thus answered. Nay Traytor, now shall I teach thee how to defend thy selfe, and not one minute will I graunt thee to trauerse with me: but will send thy soule to the father of thy villany, vnlesse, with speede thou denie thy slaunder. With these words he laid so many sound strokes on him, as at length hee fell downe dead at his feete, which when Ouelin perceiued, hee threw his sword at Palmerin, and caught him fast about the middle, thinking that way to get him downe, but Palmerin striking away his feete, caused him fall on his backe, and without attending for his reuolt, nobly strooke his head from his shoulders.

So comming to Fryfoll, he asked if he were wounded: No my Lord (quoth he) I thanke God, the greatest wound I haue cannot withhold me to doe you further seruice, if so be you haue any neede. Then putting vp their Swords, they demaunded of the Iudges, if any thing else remained to be done, for deliuerance of the prisoners. Nothing, worthy Lords, answered the Iudges, and them will the Emperour now deliuer, with all possible speede. The good Remicius hartily thanking God for this victorie, sent a knight to the Champions, with request to come and lodge in his pallace, as also that they should presently come speake with his Maiestie: yet could not the Messenger make such haste, but they were come forth of the field, the Mecæna and the Prince Olorico bearing them companie.

When the knight had ouertaken them, hee said. Returne worthy knights to my Lord the Emperour, for hee would conferre with you, and haue your wounds attended by his own Chirurgions. So turning again to the pallace, they entred the Hall, where the Emperour meeting them, said. Right welcome are ye my noble Friends, who haue

so happily defended my Daughters honor: for whose sake I shall make ye such recompence, as shall be henceforth an encouragement to all knights, to adventure the Combat on the behalfe of any distressed Lady. Immediatly in their presence, by sound of Trumpet her cause to be declared, that the Prince Florendos and the Queene Griana, were innocent of the trayterous accusation, and therefore in open field had they should bee delivered: commanding likewise his most expert Chirurgions to giue diligent attendance on the wounded knights, causing them to be lodged in the most stately Chambers of his Pallace. Afterward, he suffered the bodies of the vanquished to bee buried, giuing expresse charge on paine of death, that none of the knights of Hungaria should depart from Constantinople without his leaue: because he wold while they staied there, prouide for the gouernment of the kingdome, as appertaining to his young Daughter the Princesse Armida. The Empresse was so ioyfull for the deliuerance of Griana, as shee had some forgot her Nephewes misfortune: the Queenes Ladies likewise were not a little glad, but above all, the young Princesse Armida, her comfort could not be expressed, that her Mother was so graciously defended: and now the Duke of Pera, who had the Prince Florendos in custodie, fetching him forth of prison, said: My Lord, thank God and the knights that fought the Combat for you: for by their meanes, the Emperor declareth you absolued and set at libertie.

The Prince lifting his eyes to heauen, thus beganne: Ah my God, how happie is the man that trusteth in thy mercy: doubtlesse he that beleeueth in thy promises, shall neuer perish. Noble Duke, in all mine afflictions, I haue euermore found your speciall fauour: but if God prolong my life, I wil not be vnmindful of your gentlenes. In sooth my Lord, quoth the Duke, for so good a Prince, any honest mind would gladly endeuour himselfe: and if I haue pleasured you in any thing, I did no more than my duty,

which christian amitie requireth of each other. So taking him by the hand, hee brought him before the Emperour, when falling on his knees, the Prince thus spake. If heretofore dread Lord, both I and my people gaue our selues to trauell, and aduentured desperate hazard in your defence: at this time I count my selfe sufficiently recompenced, seeing your displeasure quallified, and the hard opinion you conceiued against me, changed into princely and honorable iustice.

Sir Florendos, answered the Emperour, when I remember the wrong you did my Daughter, leauing such a scandalous report of her, at the first time you came to this Citie: I thinke you worthie of the sharpest death. But placing mercie before rigorous iustice, I am desirous to let you know, that it liketh me better to be loued then feared: forgetting quite the offence against our person, the murder of our Son, without any regard to the murmur of the people, whose ignorance cannot conceiue of Princes mercie. Nor will I staine mine agedyeeres with mine owne proper blood, or the death of a Prince so noble, whereby I should leaue to my following posteritie, as a Trophe of my life, an endlesse memorie of tyrannous cruelties: but rather shall my chiefest aduersaries stop their mouthes, with remembrance of my clemency and princely bountie, as your owne conscience shall wel witnes with me. You therefore my Lord, the Duke of Pera, see that the Prince Florendos bee lodged in the best place in our Citie, and keepe him company, vntill his traine shal come to Macedon. With great humilitie the Prince kissed the Emperours hand, acknowledging his manifold and princely courtesies: desiring the Duke likewise before his departure, that hee might speake with the two Knights Fryoll and Palmerin.

Being brought to their Chambers, the embracings and gracious courtesies he vsed to them, I am not able to vtter, and verily loth was hee to part from them, but that

he would no way prejudice their health: wherefore giuing them the good night, he was conducted to his lodging, leauing Palmerin very sad and pensiue, remembring what the Queene of Tharsus had said to him, how he should deliuer his Father from death, before hee could know him, which was likewise confirmed by the apparition of the Ladie to him, vnder the name of his best and dearest Friends.

O that the Heauens did so fauour me, quoth he, that I were the son of the Prince Florendos and Queene Griana, then would I imagine my selfe the happiest man in the world. Yet can I not forget, that the Fayries told mee on the Mounteaine Artiferia, that one day I should be Lord of all Greece, but God is my witnes, that I couet not such honor and preferment, sauing not for the loue of my Lady, to the end her Father might not dislike of our contract. And hence forth I not depart, before I vnderstand the truth hereof, and to what end this aduenture will happen. Frisoll on the other side, he deuised how to make himselfe knowne to the Emperour and Empzelle: because hee had good hope when himselfe might be knowne, that his Father Netrides should enioy the kingdome of Hungaria. The Prince Florendos likewise could take no rest, for his great desire to recouer the Queene Griana. Such were the passions of these three Princes, each one liuing in hope of good successe, which happinesse according to their expectations, as you shall reade hereafter.

CHAP. XXXII.

How the Queene Griana with the young Princesse Armida, went to visit Palmerin and Frysoll, and how the Queene knew Palmerin to be her Sonne, to the no little ioy of the Emperour, and the Prince Florendos.



TWo daies after the deliuerance of the Prince Florendos, the young Princes Armida dauncing with the queene her Mother, said. We thinkes gracious Madame, we are to be reproued of ingratitude, in that we haue not as yet visited the poore wounded knights, considering how greatly we are beholding to them: I beseech you let vs this morning goe see how they fare.

Alas daughter, answered the Quéne, hast thou the heart to bring me among such persons, when I am said to be the cause of thy Fathers death: Then the Princesse breaking forth into teares, replied. Beleeue me Madame, if you remember your selfe well, you are in as little fault as I am, and so hath an honourable victorie declared: but had you been any way culpable therein, yet now you ought to comfort your selfe, hauing had such a famous proofe of innocency. In signe whereof, and to declare your thankfulnes to those gentle knights: it will be counted a special point of courtesie, to visite them that ventured for you. Goe to then, said the Quéne, seeing you thinke it so necessarie, and are so desirous. So accompanied with many Ladies, clothed

lothed all in mourning blacke. They went first to Frysoll, greatly thanking him for the paines he had taken, putting his life in danger, for the conservation of their honors. Not to me Lady, answered Frysoll, ought you to give these thanks, but to him that onely giveth strength to man: and if from my birth I had continually travelled in your service, yet your graces are such, as I should never deserue to bee reckoned among your meanest fauorites. The yong Princesse thinking her selfe greatly bound to him, would not give him good morrow with so little talke: but sitting downe on the bedde by him, taking him by the hand, began againe thus.

I know not Sir knight, how the Quéene my Mother will proceede in requitall of your noble service, for mine owne part, not forgetting how the Traytors threatned me, whom (to their endelesse shame) you have banquished and slaine: I finde my selfe so indebted to you, as it far exceedeth my power, to guerdon you with answerable recompence. Frysoll perceiuing the young Princes affection, who Loue had caught somewhat within his reach: knew immediatly by her sober bashful lookes, the cause why so many sighes were coupled with her words, himselfe likewise suddenly sicke of the same disease, returned this answere. Madame, if Fortune, the friend to your happines, would fauour me so much, as the enterprise done by your cōmanding, might sorte to an ende fitting my desire: I should then account my selfe more then sufficiently gratified in this, that the act is agreeable to your liking, and the fauourable countenance of such a Ladie, is more then so meane a knight as my selfe can merit. Beside, from the day that the high renowme of your prudence and gracious beautie, assured me of those exquisite gifts, wherwith Nature hath plentifully enriched you: I take such a religious vow of bondage on me, as (considering your high calling, and my selfe so far inferiour) I shall neuer obtaine the fauour of libertie, if your benignitie, exceeding all things else, graunt

me not that speciall grace. The Queene loth to trouble this forme of confession, withdrew her selfe into Palmerins Chamber, where (as it fell out) she found nobody but himselfe: by which occasion, remembring the leue shee bare to Florendos, after he had humblie saluted him, shee thus began.

Beléeue me, gentle Sir, your knightlie Chiualrie hath shewed it selfe of such desert, as the Prince Florendos, for defence of whose honour, you haue not feared to aduenture your life, your dangerous wounds well witnessing the same: shall neuer deuise sufficient satisfaction. For in my iudgement it may well be said, that goods, honour and life hath been restored him by your noble magnanimitie. Madam, quoth Palmerin, these wound that for these two daies haue made mee keepe my Chamber, thanks be to God are not so dangerous, as if occasion were offered, either for you or my Lord Florendos, but still will I be séene therin, to purchase entertainment into your gracious conceit. The Queene then sitting downe in a Chaire by him, and viewing him very earnestly, his locks of haire kept downe by a gorgious wrought Cap, embroidered with Saphires and small Emeralds: she beheld the mole on his face like a Crosse, which made her remember, that her Son had the like, and in the selfe same place, when Cardyna tooke him from her and caried him to the Mountaine. Hereupon she tooke greater occasion to regard his countenance, and imagining him very much to resemble the Prince Florendos, immediatly she perswaded her selfe that he was her Son. Which conceit moued her to such alterations, as of long she continued silent, though Palmerin (in meane while) demaunded many questions of her. These changes ouerruled by reason and discretion, shée commaunded her Ladies to depart the Chamber, and to goe accompanie the young Princesse Armida: they being no sooner gone, but shée began in this manner.

Let me request, Sir Palmerin, to know your Parents

and

and the name of the Countrey where you were borne. Palmerin somewhat amazed at this demaund, was now in the midst of his onely desire, verily perswading himselfe that the Queene was his Mother, wherefore he thus answered.

Madame, I sweare to you by my faith, that I know no Ladie this day living, to whom I would willingly reueale more then to your selfe: but so contrarie was Fortune to me in mine infancie, that as yet I could not get any knowledge either of my Father or Mother, nor of the Country where I was borne. Yet thus I haue bene certefied, that I was nourished on a Mountaine not farre from this Cittie, which is called the Mount of Olines, where (as I haue bene many times tolde) my softer Father founde me in rich swadling clothes, and more then this, so please you to credit mee, cannot I bewraie of whence or what I am.

O heauens, quoth the Queene, how greatly am I bound to praise your infinite bountie and pittie, for so safe protecting mine infant, whom I forsoke so cruelly: Ah gentle Knight, see here thy Mother, euen shee that commaunded thou shouldest be caried to the Mountaine: and the Prince Florendos, whom so lately thou didest deliuer from death, hee (noble Palmerin) is thy Father. Notwithstanding my Sonne, I desire thee by the reuerend loue thou beareſt me, to conceale secretly what I haue saide, vntill I gaine the meane to discouer my shame to the Emperour: yet such a shame, as neuer came greater good to thy Mother, nor can I now account the deede sinfull, in that my fortune hath brought me such an honorable Sonne. So rauished with ioy was both the Mother and the Sonne, as neither could expresse their inward contentation, for such was their alteration, as they reputed for an illusion or dreame, what was most certaine indeed: such wonderfull comfort brought this vnexpected chaunce, wherewith the greatest endowments of honor or riches may not bee compared. Beeing in this extasie,

ertaile, the Mother of her Sonne, and the Sonne for his Mother: Palmerin hauing now againe recouered his forces, saide.

My God, I render thy name immortall thanks, in that I drew my breath from so noble and vertuous personnes, as also for graunting mee knowledge of them in a time so fortunate: forbeare then (good Mother) to misdeeme of any thing, for I will discourse the matter in such sort to the Emperour, as forgetting all thinges past, hee shall receiue both the Mother and Sonne with greater ioy then you can imagine. But to the ende Madame, yee may be more certaine of your Sonne, see heere a Crucifixe of Golde, which was tied about my necke when I was founde, and hath of long time beene kept by the most perfect Ladie in the world. The Queene knowing it right well, after she had kissed it many times, answered. Assuredly my Sonne, it is the verie same that my selfe tied about thy necke, when I was in the greatest griefe that euer distressed Mother might bee: to see her infant violently rapte from her, so soone as Nature had brought him into the worlde. But if my mishap as then surpassed all other womens: yet now is it recompenced with such a fortunate houre, as no Ladie may compare her felicitie with mine. Ah my Sonne, by thee are my sorowes chaunged into ioy, my despaire into content, & from death it selfe am I brought againe to life: for if my Husbands hard hap made me despise life, now may you be assured how much I desire it.

Then declared she, how to saue the Prince Florendos life, whose faithfull loue brought him to such extreamity by sicknes, she aduentured her honor for his safety, & entring the paradise of loue, bestowed that Jewell on him which she most of all esteemed. And so maist thou (quoth she) report to the Emperour, yet in this manner, that not by carnall impudicitie I so consented, for God is my witnesse, that notwithstanding the perill wherein I saw him, no perswasion could cause me yeeld him that especiall remedy,

before

before he had first sollemnly vowed mariage to me, which against al right was broken by the Emperours commandement.

Madame, quoth Palmerin, Florendos is of such valour, and his honorable actions so wel receiued among men, that albeit he had made you no such promise, yet reason may excuse you in this matter. But if by promised faith, and to saue the life of so gentle a Prince (who happily by your refusall might haue miscarried) you honored the Temple of Loue with so sweete an offering: among people of good minde it ought rather to bee tearmed a vertue, then any bad affection or vnlawfull lust. And therfore Madam comfort your selfe, for shortly I dare to assure your peace with the Emperour: and seeing I haue you for my Mother, and the Prince Florendos for my Father, I feele my selfe free from any griefe or veration, assuring you, that I wil driue it to no further delay, but this morning will I confer with his Maiestie.

The Quéene being fearefull, that her long stay should cause any bad opinion, hauing kissed her Sonne: gaue him the good morrow, and so went to her Chamber, where she found Cardyna her Gentlewoman, to whom shee shewed the Crucifixe her Sonne had giuen her, saying. Tell me I pray thee Cardyna, doost thou remember, that heretofore thou hast séene this Crucifixe, and in what place? Beleeue me Madame, quoth shee, I thinke I haue seene it before now: but in what place I am not certaine. Why? forgetful creature, knowest thou not, that this is the Crucifix which was tied about my Sonnes neck, when thy selfe did carrie him to the Mountaine? In good faith, the Knight is hee, who fought the Combat for my Lord Florendos. Now see the great mercie and bountie of our God, who preserued his life then, and from infinite dangers hath defended him hitherto. Notwithstanding, be thou secret, and on perill of thy life reueale it to none, vntill the Emperour my Father be acquainted therewith. Cardyna was so ioyfull

full hereof, as she must nedes goe presently to see Palmerin, and finding the Chirurgions with him visiting his wounds: she fetched a gorgious Mantle of purple Velvet broydered round about with Pearles, Diamonds and Rubies, as wel might beseeme the greatest Monarch to weare. As Cardyna holpe him to put on this Mantle she noted the marke on his face, which she remembred since the time of his birth: and in this manner goes Palmerin cheerefully to the Emperour, whom he founde conferring with his Lords and Barons, but his presence caused thē to breake of talke, imagining him the comliest personne that euer they saw. The good olde Emperour Remicius, reioycing to see him in so good and able plight: demaunded of him how hee fared: Right well quoth he. I thanke God and your highnes, readie to aduenture on any occasiō shall like you to commaund me: and now am I come to aduertise your Maiestie of such matters, as will not a little glad ye in the hearing, so please your grace to vouchsafe me priuate audience. Hereupon the Emperour commaunded euery one to depart the Hall, and they being now alone, Palmerin thus beganne. Dread Lord and mightie Emperor, till this time haue I frequented the Courts of many Kinges and Potentates, without desire of requesting any thing, vntill this present: when faine would I request one bone of your Maiestie, ỹ graunt whereof shall returne you both profit and honor. My noble Friend Palmerin, aunswered the Emperour, what euer thou pleasest, demaunde, and on my word it shal be graunted.

Palmerin, with humble obeysaunce kissing the Emperours, hand, said. In soth my Lord, all that I haue to request, is onely to desire your highnes: that all offences committed by the Prince Florendos and Madame Griana your Daughter, may not onely be forgotten, but also forgyuen For thy sake Palmerin, quoth the Emperour, I forgiue all their offences whatsoeuer. May it then please your Maiestie, quoth he, to remember, how when Florendos came

to

to do you service, during your Warres against Gamezio, because you denyed to giue him your Daughter, hee was so sicke, as euery houre his Death was expected. If then so fortunate my Lord, the Princesse your Daughter, acquainted with the cause of his sicknes, to giue him some comfort, as also to deliuer so great a Prince from death: by gracious speeches then gaue him some hope of Loue, and such (for truth) as before they parted, a solemne promise of mariage was concluded betweene them. I know not the conditions of their agreements, but it seemed the Articles consisted on no difficult accords: for each perceiued of other the sweete desires of Loue, in so much as that Night was I begotten. And for a truth my Lord, I am the Sonne to the Prince Florendos, and Madame Griana your Daughter: who (as I vnderstand) by the Empresse perswasion, against all right you compelled to marry with the Prince Tarinus. Florendos, notwithstanding my Mothers wrong, was very great, hath continued so loyall, as hee would neuer accept any other for his Wife, nor as yet will, but onely her. Now my Lord, that this matter may not seeme a Fantasticall inuention, I can resolue you of the place of my byrth, which was in the Tower, where my Mother remained Prisoner by your Commandement, vnder the charge of a Lieutenant Polomestus, who to deceiue your daughters hate, caused me to be caried to a place not far hence, which is called the Mount of Olives, from whence my surname is Oliuerius, for that place was I found by a Countrey Peasant vnder a Palme tree, in the signe thereof, named me Palmerin of Oliua. My sorrowfull Mother, hoping one day to see me again, diligently noted diuers marks I had, and hung about my neck a golden Crucifixe, which this day I gaue her againe: and by this marke on my face like a Crosse, she well remembers me to be her Sonne. Now my redoubted Lord, that your Daughters offence was accompanied by true faithfull Loue, and hauing likewise promised to forgiue all causes of displeasure: graunt my father

now

now at length to enioy his lawfull Wife, that I being their Sonne, may not bee esteemed as Illegitimate, the doing whereof, will renowme your name for euer, and bind me to requite so many attributes, thalbe bestowed worthy his long and desired reward.

The Emperour amazed at this strange discourse, could not imagine what answer to make: Wherefore hauing sitten a while silent, lifting his eyes to Heauen, he thus began. O mightie King of Kings, onely good and full of mercie, I render thy Name euerlasting thankes, for thy gracious regards to the distressed Empyre of Greece: for though in our last Warres thou tookest away my Sonne Caniano, thou hast at this instant sent mee another, who well hath learned to defende this State, from the priuate inuading Gouernour of Turkie. Ah my Sonne Palmerin, right well do I beleeue what thou hast said, and albeit thou hadst not shewen such probable Arguments, yet dost thou so perfectly resemble my Sonne Caniano, as easily may be considered whence thou art discended. Whatsoeuer thou demandest my Sonne is alreadie granted: And with these words, the teares trickled downe his siluer white Beard, such was his inward earnest conceit of ioy: and embracing Palmerin in his armes, he called his Lords, who marueiled not a little at this Euent, and thus spake the Emperour. See here my Friendes, your Liege Lorde and Soueraigne, the Sonne of my Daughter Celian and the Prince Florendos: How may you applaude the bountie of Heauen, pounding for you such a Noble Prince? The Lordes all wondering at these speeches, came and entertained him, with many signes of Honour: So that it is not registred in any auncient memorie, that euer King or Prince had such sodein and gracious welcome.

By this time the newes were spreade throughout the whole Pallace, and the Empresse hearing thereof, sent one of her Squyres for Palmerin: when the Emperour taking him by the hand, brought him to her Chamber, saying: See

here

here Madame your Son, who by your meanes hath long time beene banished our Court; hereafter take he be better vsed.

The Empresse surprised with incredible ioy, louingly embracing him, said: Welcome my Sonne, forget my heynous offense, when I would not suffer thy Mother to enioy the Prince Florendos, which fault Heauen hath reuenged, with the death of my three Nephewes, whereof I now make no reckoning, seeing God hath sent me such a gracious comfort. The Emperor on the other side welcomed the Queene his Daughter, which as yet hee had not done since her comming from Hungaria. Lay by (quoth he) faire Daughter, these blacke garments, the witnes of your vnkind mourning, and deck your selfe presently in reioycing habits: for now before all my Lords of Greece, will I haue you espoused to the Prince Florendos. So departed the Emperour and the Princes, leaning the Queene with her Ladies, who disrobed her of her mourning garments: his Maiesty commanding Palmerin, to goe seeke Prince of Macedon his Father, accompanied with all the noblemen of the Court.

In the meane while he caused all the ornaments of black to be taken downe, and the Pallace to be hanged with sumptuous cloth of gold: and gaue in charge to the Empresse, that the Queene, the Princesse Armida, and all the Ladies should adorne themselues, as to receiue the best greatest Prince in the world. Likewise he said to all his Knights, Reioyce my good friends with mee: for God tooke away my Children, and hath double restored them, for those that bee dead, hee hath raised vs mine. Palmerin hauing with him all the Emperours Knights, went to the lodging of the Prince Florendos, & by the way the Citizens of Constantinople, Nobles, Merchants, Artezans, welcommed him very honorable: making bonfires and Garlands of tryumph, in euery streete, crying: Welcome to this noble Citie our new Lord and Master: and such

cheerfull

therefull delights did they following the time withall, as though it had bene the Feast of Christmas. Palmerin his Traine, being come to the Princes Lodging, found two Squires at the gate, sent thither by the Emperour, the one holding a Horse very richly Capparisoned, and the other costly Garments of cloth of Golde, which hee ordered to bee brought up after him into the Chamber, where falling on his knee before the Prince, he saide.

Now is come I my Lord to kisse your hands, not as I have done heretofore, but as becommeth a Sonne to his Father: For I am your Sonne, begotten on the Queene Griana, whom the Emperour hath now betrothed on you in mariage. Florendos was so ravished with these speeches, as hee was ready to leape betweene Palmerins armes: but at length fetching a great sigh, saide. O celestiall Soueraign, what am I, whom thou shouldst so reioyce, and lift to such surpassing happinesse? thy sonne Florendos, not long since the most wretched among men: what man may now compare with thy fortune, hauing such a Knight to thy son, and faire Queene Griana to thy Wife? Go to my Sonne (quoth he, embracing Palmerin) For it is no reason to stay, when such happie newes hath sent for vs. And streight mee, the very first time I did beholde thee, my heart was solicites with greater ioye, then I am able now to expresse: which euer since made me coniecture, that there was more betweene vs then friendly allyance. When was hee cloathed in the rich Garments sent by the Emperour, and his Cousin Prenato in like manner. So running to horseback, the Duke of Pera rode on his right hand, and his Sonne Palmerin on the left, with many Princes, Lords, Knights, and Gentlemen, riding both before and behinde them. In this manner came they to the Palace, where the Emperour humbly stay'd their coming at the Gate: and after they were alighted, the Prince making humble reuerence to his Maiestie, thus spake: Mighty and redoubted Lorde, I know not how to render sufficient thanks in that your

Mich-

highnes is pleased to honor me with your daughter, which is the thing I alwaies desired, notwithstanding, I hope to shew such deserts hereafter, as neither she shall be mis-contented, nor your Maiestie repent your gentle gift. Noble Lord quoth the Emperor, well hath you deserved her, and mine Empire with her, in respect of your worthy Sonne Palmerin, whom all Europe, Asia and Affrica honours Wherefore in the presence of all my Lords, I will give her to you: deferring the day of solemnitie, until the states of Macedon come, therefore Sonne Palmerin goe for your Mother.

Presently her departed, the Dukes of Perea and Mecæna with him: and soone they returned, bringing with them the Empresse, the Queene, and his Sister the young Princesse Armida: whom he had thanked with such gracious speeches, as she had neuer forgotten her displeasure towards the Prince Florendos, for the death of the King her Father. There openlie in the Hall, by the Archbishop of Constantinople, the Prince Florendos, & Griana were affianced together, hereunto little contentment: as also to the good liking of all the Princes and Lords of Greece, who spent the rest of the day in ioyfull disports, and ioy-ous mirthes.

CHAP. XXXIII.

How Fryſoll declared to the Empreſſe, that he was ſonne to her Nephew Nettrides.

ALL this pleaſure of the Princes and Lords of Greece, for ſo many ioyfull and vnexpected accidents, might not be compared with the pleaſures of the Prince Olorico and Friſoll, who would neuo no longer keepe his bed, in reſpect of his ioy for the good fortune of his Friend, wherefore putting on his garments, and accompanied with Olorico, he came downe into the great Hall, as the Prince of Macedon was betrothed to his Lady, when Palmerin ſtepping from all the reſt, welcommed them with very gracious courteſie. After they had been generally ſaluted, Fryſoll came before the Empreſſe, and on his knee began in this manner.

Moſt excellent and gracious Madame, may it pleaſe you pardon mine offence in ſhedding the blood of your kinſman. Notwithſtanding, as the law of iudgement and reaſon exhorteth me, of two euils I chuſe to take the leaſt: ſo did I rather thinke it good, to bathe my hands in the blood of mine owne Cozin, then permit him (by the Prince Florendos offence) to ſuffer open violence. This ſpeake I Madame, as being the Sonne to your Nephew Nettrides, whom long ſince his elder Brother diſinherited, and baniſhed him his Countrey to a little Caſtell, where at this time he remaineth in good diſpoſition. Now iudge which of theſe euents is moſt admirable: that of your noble Son

Palmerin

Palmerin, or this which I haue now rehearsed. But may it be (quoth the Empresse) that my Nephew Netrides is yet liuing? and can it be possible that thou art his Sonne? Trust me Madame, said Frysoll, I haue told you truth, and by Gods leane, you shall haue more ample proofe thereof within these few daies.

Hereupon the Emperour, the Empresse, Florendos and Palmerin, with inexplicable reioycing, embraced Frysoll, not a little extolling their fortune, that such hardie knights were discended of their linage. Then Frysoll rehearsed before them all, the three Combats he had with Palmerin, and what great honor he wonne at the Tourney in France, which report greatly contented the Prince Florendos, hearing the honourable Thinalite of his Sonne, nor would he forget to ioyne therewith, his conquest on the Mountaine Artiferia, with his Combats both in Bohemia and Dorzee.

At these reports the Emperour somewhat amazed, said before all his Lords, I beleeue my Friends, that the marvellous and rare fortunes, of these two Cozins, Palmerin and Frysoll, with the strange aduentures they haue finished in their youth: promise greater matters in their following yeeres. Then an ancient Knight of Hungaria, who was named Apolonio, said to the Emperour, how in time past he had been Page to the Father of Tarisius, by which meane he knew Netrides right well if he might see him. And if he be yet liuing, quoth he, in regard of his manifold princely vertues: the Realme of Hungaria needs no better Gouernour, nor will the people themselues mislike of so good a change. Wherefore, may it so stand with your highnes pleasure, to graunt me company beseeming the cause, I will doe my dutie in the search of him, & bring him hither with me to the Court. Willingly the Emperor consented thereto, and like order toke the Prince Florendos, that Cardyna with her Brother and other Gentlemen, should goe to the Mountaine of Mines, and enquire

for Gerard, Palmerins foster Father, Marcella his Wife, and Dyoseda their Daughter. Palmerin seeing all things fall to his good end, falling on his knee before the Emperour and his Father, said. Seeing it hath pleased God, to make me knowne for your Sonne, I will not conceale a matter from you, which concerneth me very nearelie: and although it be of great importance, yet will I not further proceede without your aduise. So discouered he all his seuerall apparitions, while he continued with his supposed Father, whereby he was prouoked to goe seeke the Lady, who by fatall destenie was promised him: nor did he hide his troubles in her search, but therewith bewrayed that her name was Polynarda, Daughter to the Emperour of Almaigne, and his Wife by solemne vowes passed betweene them. He declared moreouer, how he trauelled to find the Prince Tryneus, whom he lost on the Sea with the Princesse of England, and them he would recouer againe, in respect of his faithful promise to his Lady. Notwithstanding, quoth he, if you thinke it conuenient, I would gladly send to aduertise the Emperour and my Lady his Daughter, of my present good fortune, that his Maiesty may confirme our priuate agreement: because I doubt the Prince of France, whose Ambassadours haue been there to conferre on the matter, may otherwise preuent me of mine onely choise. In like manner, if Netrides shall be found, to bee made King of Hungaria, and the Princesse Armida to bee bestowed in mariage on Sir Frysoll, who is such a knight in my iudgement, as well deserues one of the chiefest Ladies in the world.

So God helpe me my Sonne, quoth the Emperour, no reason were it to disappoint what thou hast so well contriued: for seeing things haue been foreppointed by fortune, meere folly it is for men to contrarie them. And because I haue heretofore heard, that the Emperours Daughter is the flower and choise Ladie among all other, whose vertues challenge the man beyond compare in Chiualrie: I

will

willeth mine Ambassadours to the Emperour, as well for the perfection of the marriage, as to comfort her in her despaires, with certaine assurance of our health and welfare, and so shall your intended trauell not be hindered. Notwithstanding, before you begin your iourney, you shal receiue the homage of all Princes and Lords of Greece, as their liege Lord and supreme Gouernour: which being doone, I will like wise take order for my Nephew Fryoll, so soone as his Father shall come to our Court. Then calling for the Master of his horse, commandement was giuen for speedy dispatch of messengers to al parts. So leauing the Emperour busied in these affaires: Florendos and Palmerin went to the Queene, who causing them to sit downe by her, after she had very graciously welcommed them, said,

I pray ye tell me, which of vs three is most beholding to Fortune: the Father, the Mother or the Son: Doubtlesse, who so considereth the condition of our aduenture, will find it such, as seldome hath the like been seene heretofore. And in sooth my Lord Florendos, the grieuous torments I haue endured since the losse of my Sonne, and my great disloialtie towards you by breach of my promise: I iudge may bee equalled with the burthen of mine offence. Nevertheless, if you esteeme not your selfe satisfied, let your noble regard excuse what Nature hath perfected, which is, to endure much more then as yet we haue done. Madame, answered Florendos, in time of ioy, remember not our passed misfortunes, but thinke what now is done, our happy starres haue graciously furthered and limited to this end, that my loyaltie, with the bounty and prowesse of our Son, would be laid open to euery iudgement. Here had the Prince occasion to rehearse his afflictions in loue, endured twentie yeeres space and more for her sake, which Palmerin hearing, either fearing to offend them, or induced by modest bashfulnes, he went to his Sister the Princesse Armida, whose thoughts he founded by such subtilties and

dissimulations, as he found the effect of her desires, which was to enioy Sir Frysoll to her Husband. Hee not a little contented herewith, confirmed her choise to bee commendable, sealing the assurance thereof, with an honourable report of his knightly deedes of Armes. Then the Emperour called for the Duke of Mecæna and the County of Reifort, as also his principall Secretarie, whom hee commaunded to write to the Emperour of Almaigne, touching the mariage of the Princesse Polinarda and his sonne Palmerin, shadowing the secret agreement betweene themselues, and committed the rest to the discretion of the Ambassadours.

The Letters sealed with his great Signet, was deliuered to them that had the charge of this message: who could not so speedilie depart from Constantinople, because the wind and weather was not navigable. Now had Palmerin promised Frysoll that he would speake to the Princesse his Sister, and sollemnlie resolue vpon their mariage: wherefore (meeting with this earnest Louer) he thus laboured to please him. Trust me Cozin, I haue so surely imprinted your especiall generositie in my Sisters minde, as the carracters can neuer be defaced: but remaine more perfect by your speedie marriage. Frysoll reuiued with these newes, as all pretenders of loue may well imagine: offered to kisse his hand, which Palmerin would not suffer, whereupon hee thus proceeded. Ah my Lord, how am I more and more indebted to you: right wise was he which said, that affabilitie and liberalitie, are continuall companions with noblenes and magnanimity. And though by all my seruices, I cannot deserue the honour you doe me in accepting me for your Brother: yet am I so faithfully bowed yours, as the honors of my Father, nor loue of the Princesse your Sister, can separate me from your company, vntill you haue found your long desired Friend Trineus. And for this cause my Lord, I earnestly intreate you, to hasten Apolonio towards my Father, for I will send him to

the

the place, where he shall be assured to find him. Palmerin accorded thereto immediatlie, and so laboured with the Emperour, as the Letters were deliuered: and the oathes taken of all the Hungarians, they were sent home into their Country, with a Lieutenant appointed to gouerne them vntill the comming of Netrydes, to whom Frysoll wrote the truth of all his fortune, with earnest request of his speedie presence.

And to induce him to the greater hast, he feigned that many Princes laboured for the Crowne of Hungaria, and were in likelihood to obtaine it: all which was but to enioy the faire Princesse Armida. The same day Florendos sent to the King his Father at Macedon, that hee should send the chiefest states of his Realme against the day that Palmerin should be sworne the Prince of Greece.

CHAP. XXXIV.

How Cardyna the Gentlewoman attending on the Queene, accompanied with her Brother and diuers other Squires, brought Gerrard, his wife and daughter to the Court, and what entertainement Palmerin made them.

CArdyna, with those that were commanded to keepe her company, in short time came to Gerrards house, whom she found sitting at dinner with his familie. The good man was at first amazed, seeing such courtly personages enter his house, a matter esteemed rare among the persons dwelling on the Mountains:

taine: but seeing they came in decent and modest sort, not proffering any discourtesie, he entertained the very friendly, when Cardyna taking him by the hand, said. Good Father, are you the man that is called Gerrard? I am the same quoth he, gentle Mistresse. You are then the man, answered Cardyna, that I seeke, and therefore I pray thee tell me what thou didst with a Child, that twentie yeares and more since, thou foundest in swadling clothes under a Palme Tree on this Mountaine: for certaine I am that thou didst take him home with thee to thy house: Ah Mistresse, quoth the good old Man, you have kild my hart in remembring me of him, whom I loued dearer then any of mine owne. The infant whereof you speake, I found not farre hence vnder a Palme Tree, for which cause at his Baptisme I named him Palmerin. From that time forward, I nourished him as he had beene mine owne Sonne, till he came to tall stature, and as he grew in yeeres, so did he in vertuous and noble qualities, which made him not a little beloued in these parts: for when he attended my cattell, hee toke pleasure to course the Wolfe, Hart, Beare, Boze and Lyon, and oftentimes would kill them when him listed, which none of mine owne Children durst at any time aduenture.

Ah sweete Mistresse, when I remember his many services, the dutifull reuerence and loue he bare mee: I am readie to die with conceit of griefe, that it was my ill hap so soone to lose him. Yet came not this misfortune alone, for mine eldest Sonne, who loued him as he had beene his owne Brother: immediatly went after him, and yet could I neuer heare any tidings of them. Notwithstanding, Mistresse, if you know of whence he was, I can shew you all the clothes wherein I found him. I shall be contented to see them, quoth Cardyna: but what will ye giue the partie that can tell ye where he is? Gerrard, at these words fell on his knee before her, and with the teares trickling downe his gray beard, said. By my troth Mistresse, if it shall like

you

you to do vnto so great a pleasure, of all my inheritance, I will giue ye the one halfe: as all my hiere of Bendes, which ye said keeping on the Mountaine as ye came, besides my continuall seruice while I liue. Gramercies Father, said Cardina, but still to your Wife and Daughter, and then shall I tell you newes that will content you. As for him, whose friendly Parents you were so long time, hee is now at Constantinople, & is the Sonne of Padanie Griana daughter to the Emperour: who commandeth you thereto come to the Court, that he may content ye for nourishing so well the noble young Prince. The old man greeting ioyfull, without ouering his affaires, or appointing his Seruants their seuerall labour: sayde to his Wife and Dyolena his Daughter.

Make ye redie presently in your best garments, and let vs goe to that noble Gentleman: for all the gold in the world cannot make me glad, now I haue heard so happie tidings. The good woman and her daughter, trickt vp themselues in their country fines, and taking their rich sloanding clothes, set forward to Constantinople merily, as sometime did the foster Father of Paris, Alexander, his Wife, and their Daughter Pegasis, when they brought the Cradle and accoustrements of the infant royall, to the Cittie of Troy, after he was known by his Father King Priam, and Queene Hecuba his Mother.

Palmerin being aduertised by one of the Ladies of honor attending on the Empresse, that Cardyna had brought Gerrard: to prouoke greater contentation, he would needes goe méete him, and so went downe into the Court, accompanied with many yong Knights lately come to the Emperours seruice. Gerrard seeing this goodly troupe, among them all knew Palmerin perfectly, wherefore alighting from his Horse: and without giuing him in charge to any Page or Lackie, ran and fell downe at his feete, but Palmerin staying him in his armes, said. Father Gerrard and my déere friende, the God of Heauen bee euermore prayled, in

that

that by bringing me to the knowledge of my Parents: I haue the meane to satisfie your paine and trauaile for me, sauing my life in my youngest yeeres, and nourishing me to the state of discretion.

Ah my Lord, quoth Gerrard, I thinke in all the world is no man so happie as my selfe, hauing defended from perill so noble a person, therefore needeles is it to make offer of mony for your nurture: in that I prize your golde and siluer lesse then drosse, such is my content to see you so well. Palmerin likewise, whose match might not be found in courtesie and nobility of hart: louingly welcommed Marcella and her Daughter Dyosena, walking along with them vp into the Pallace, where in this sort he presented them to the Emperour. See here my good Lord, they that from mine infancie, with exceeding kindnes and loue nourished me: let me therefore intreate your maiestie so to conceiue of them, as their paines and charges may be sufficiently repaied. The Emperour taking great pleasure to behold them, said they shoulde continue in the Court with him, commaunding them to bee brought to his Daughters Chamber, who entertained them very graciously: but when they came to vnfold Palmerins little pack of clothes, hardly can you imagine the inwarde ioyes of the Mother. For Tolomestra well knew the Scarlet mantle, which her selfe had all embroydered with curious knots of Gold, and all the other prettie trinkets, saying. Doubtlesse Madame, it cannot be but that Palmerin is your Sonne: for well I knew hee was wrapped in these clothes, when Cardyan caried him hence to the Mountaine. Then did Gerrard discourse before all the Ladies, in what manner hee founde yong Palmerin among the Trées: not forgetting to report euery thing, from that day till his departure without his knowledge.

Many sweete smiles did the Quéne intermeale with her forced teares, hearing the sundrie daungers her Sonne had endured: and for the great loue shee bare to Marcella,

shee

she made her one of the Ladies of her Chamber, and gaue Dyofena a worthy dowrie to her marriage. As for Gerrard himselfe, the Emperor made him one of his chiefest Barons, and dubbed his Sonnes Knights, who prooued afterward of hardy courage, as hereafter in the History you may perceiue. This done, the Emperour brought Florendos and Palmerin into his Treasurie, saying. My friends, take, beare away, all is yours, dispose thereof as you please, furnish your selues with all needfull thinges against the day of my Daughters marriage. Giue bountifully to the prize Knights, that they may likewise prepare themselues in readines, all which will redound to your perpetuall honour.

In soth my Lord, answered Florendos, it is against all equitie and reason, that during your life I should presume so farre: well worthy were I of the sharpest reprehension, to usurpe that, which by right appertaines to him who gaue me life and honour. When the Emperour saw he could not perswade them, he sent a Iumpter Horse loden with Gold, to the Prince Olorico and Frysoll: beside diuers other Iewels of inestimable value, that they might the better furnish their estate against the solemnitie of the Macedonian Prince. On which day, these two Knights determined a Tryumph at Armes for the loue of their Friend and companion Palmerin, who the same day should be sworne Prince, and sole heyre to the Empire. Upon this occasion, and by his highnes commandement, the Heralds were sent abroad to publish the Tourney, which should endure tenne daies together: with the excellencie of the prize to them, that should beare the honor of the Ioust each day. These disports so prouoked the Lords of Greece, as neither King, Duke, Countie, Baron or Knight, that was able to mannage Horse and Armes, but repaired to Constantinople, in such troupes, as though a new world had been to be conquered.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXXV.

How the Knight that Florendos sent to Macedon, reherced to the King Primaleon the effect of his charge: and how Palmerin entertained his Fathers Princes and Knights.

FLorēdos hauing sent one of his knights to Macedon, in very short time the Messenger arriued at a Castell of pleasure, where as then the King remayned for his delight, with the Princesse Arismena his Daughter, to expell such pontagious thoughts as daily troubled thē, for the absence of ỹ Prince, of whom they could vnderstande no tydings. The knight beeing come into the Kings Chamber, where his Maiestie satte deuising with his Daughter: and setting his knee to the grounde, in this manner began his message. Right high and mightie king, I bring you the very strangest tidings, yet repleate with ioy and speciall comfort, whereof your Maiestie neuer heard the like. My Lord the Prince Florendos your Sonne, with humble dutie saluteth your excellencie, and the faire Princelle Arismena his Sister, certifying you, that the aduenturous knight Sir Palmerin, euen he by whose meanes your health was recouered: in his owne Son, begotten on the Princelle Griana, Daughter to my Lord the Emperour, to whom hee is now betrothed, by the consent of all the Peares of the Empire, and Sir Palmerin your Sonne shall be Emperour, after the decease of his noble Grandfather. The good king Primaleon

leon old and decrepite, was so surprised with these newes, as he imagined he heard some fantastical illuding voice, rather then matter of trueth and certaintie: with which inward oppression conceite, his weake estate vnable to support it selfe, being ouercome with ioy, doubt and suspition, as hardly could Arismena his Daughter keepe life in him, so often hee swouned with hearing this reporte, yet at length taking the Knight by the hand, he sayde. My good Friende, God I trust will blesse thee with honor and prosperitie, for bringing me the tydinges I haue long desired. Now may I well saie, that neuer any Princes age was more beautified with happines, then mine is, hauing my Sonne allied in such an house, and another Sonne excelling all the Knights in the world. But if the Heauens vouchsafe mee so much grace and fauour, that I may once see him before I ende this life: it will be such sufficient content to mee, as then I force not though I liue no longer. Then calling for one of his Secretaries, to reade the Letters his Son had sent him, and hauing heard the contents thereof: commaunded present dispatch of Messengers, to aduertise the Lords and nobilitie of his Realme, who likewise were so glad of these newes, as each one prepared himselfe against the day appointed. The King hauing written Letters to his Sonne, as also to Palmerin, whom he intreated to come and see him: gaue them to the Messenger, and withall such an honorable gift for his paynes, as well might content a greater personage. He returning to Constantinople, effectually discharged his aunswer: and Palmerin reading his Grandfathers Leters, vowed to fulfil his requeste, and afterward to follow the search of Tryneus.

Now the day being come, when the Lords of Macedon should set forward to Constantinople: they came to take theyr leaue of the King, who beganne to them in this manner. Ah my good Friendes, God is my witnes, with what good will I would beare you company, if my aged

yeares

yéeres dis not forbid me: neuertheleſſe, let me deſire yée to behaue your ſelues in ſuch ſort, as if I were in perſon with ye, and honor Prince Palmerin no leſſe then my ſelfe. So creating the Duke of Pontus his Lieutenant in this Embaſſage, becauſe he was a braue and comely young Prince, bequeathed them to happy fortune in their iourney, commanding a Knight to poſte before them, that Palmerin might be firſt aduertiſed of their comming. On the ſame day as they ſhould arriue at the Citie, Palmerin accompanied with the young King of Sparta, the moſt ſubtill and ingenious Prince of his time, (as well inſtructed in the manners and conditions of the auncient Kings his predeceſſors, eſpecially imitating cautelous Vliſſes) and diuers other young Princes and Knights, rode to meet the Lords of Macedon at the Gates of the Citie. There alighted all the Lords to kiſſe his hand, which he would not permit them to doe: but calling himſelfe likewiſe from his horſe, embraced them all one after another. And mounting on horſebacke againe, entred the Citie, which was ſo plentifully ſtored with Knights and Gentlemen againſt the triumph, as the Prince Olorico and Fryſoll were appointed by the Emperour, to ſee the Lords lodged according to their eſtats, and to erect Tents and Pauillions without the Citie, where the reſt of their traine might bee decently entertained.

This choiſe made the Emperour of theſe twaine in this matter, becauſe in all his Court were not two more courteous Princes: beſide, they were the only men in the world for affable and gracious entertaining ſtrangers. All this buſines ended, and Palmerin deuiſing with the Queene his Mother, Fryſoll being in his companie, ſaw her enter the chamber, to whom he had vowed his ſeruiceable deuotions: wherefore ſeining ſome occaſiõ at the window where the Princes ſtood, he went and ſtood by her a pretty while, and at length entred into theſe ſpeeches. Madame, as yet in al my life I neuer requeſted any thing of a

Ladie,

Lady, and now would I gladly moue one ſute to you, (as to her that is the only Miſtres of my heart) if I ſhould not ſeeme ouerbold in this petition: aſſuring you, that hauing obtained this fauour of you, you ſhall not command any thing, how difficult ſo euer it be, but I will gladlie enterpriſe it for your ſake. Beleeue me, Sir Fryſoll, anſwered the Princeſſe, you ſpeake but reaſon, demaund then what you pleaſe, and you ſhall obtaine it: becauſe I hold this opinion of you, that you will not requeſt any thing, that ſhal in ought be preiudiciall to mine honor. A thouſand thanks good Madame, ſaid Fryſoll, this houre I hope hath boaded me good fortune, and this is my requeſt: that you would ſo much honor me, as to permit me enter the Tourney vnder the name of your Knight, becauſe I would enterpriſe nothing but by your commaundement. And this (in my iudgement) is ſuch an eſpecial fauour, as I durſt not preſume to ſollicite you withall, without the grant my of Lord your Brother Palmerin made mée: with this addition, that according to my deſerts in the Tourney (if you can ſo fancy) to accept me as your Lord & Huſband. With theſe words the Princeſſe was touched to the quicke, in that her deſires were that way addicted; and her colour changing with her priuate conceit, ſhee ſhadowed ſo artificiallie as ſhee could, and with words fearefull and trembling, thus anſwered.

In ſooth my Lord, neuer was I moued with any ſuch ſute heretofore: but my Brother may ſo farre commaund mée, as what liketh him I would be loth to gainſay. As for your demaund, to enter the field vnder the name of my Knight, with right good will I graunt it: aſſuring you thereof with this Iewell, which henceforth ſo pleaſe you to weare, ſhall remaine as token of my loue to you. So taking a goodlie Emeralde from her finger, kiſſing it, with great courteſie gaue it him. Now am I ſure Madame, quoth Fryſoll, to haue part of the prize, ſeeing I ſhall aduenture in your ſeruice: nor is this Ring of ſo little value, but when in the

Combat

Combat I shall beholde it, my forces will be redoubled, and new life enter my fainting spirit. Moreouer I dare saie, that neuer did the King of Giges bring him more honour, then this will to me: for this could not profit or aduantage him, but onely by being inuisible. On the contrary, I haue no pleasure but in your presence: nor shall I think my selfe at better ease, then when among Launces and Swords I may labour for your loue. Then entred the Empresse, with other Ladies newly come to the Court to see the Iouists: which brake of their talke, wherefore taking leaue of each other, they departed the Chamber.

CHAP XXXVI.

How the Duke of Mecæna and the Countie of Reifort, arriued in Allemaigne at the Emperors Court, and after theyr Ambassage dispatched: the Emperour sent backe with them to Constantinople, the Duke of Lorrayne, and the Marquesse of Licena, as his Ambassadours.

NOw is the day come, when the Fleet appointed for the Embassage to Allemaigne, should depart, wherfore being furnished with all thinges necessary for their voyage, the wind and Sea likewise very seruiceable: they came to aduertise Palmerin therof, to know if hee would commaund thē any further seruice.

Palmerin walked with them to the Hauen, & by the way gaue a Letter to the Duke of Mecena, saying. Worthie Duke,

Duke, present my humble dutie to my Ladie Polynarda, and giue her this Letter, whereof I pray you bring mee an answere. And pleased God that I might goe with ye, neuer could any voyage better please me: therefore let mee intreate your returne so soone as possible may be. The Duke promised to accomplish his desire, and taking leaue of each other, they went aboord, where hoysing their sailes, with a merrie wind away they went, and arriued in Allmaigne sooner then suspected. When they were come on shore, they sent a knight before to the Emperour, that he might bee acquainted with their comming: yet could not his Maiestie but maruaile at this Ambassage, because in all his time he neuer had the like, and therefore thought this strange occasion would sort to as strange an end. At length, to doe them the greater honour, he sent all his knights and Gentlemen to receiue them, who conducted the Duke of Mecena and the Countie of Reiforce to the Pallace, and afterward to the presence of the Emperour. When the Duke entred the Chamber, hee saluted his Maiestie with great reuerence, yet not kissing his hand, because hee came from as great a state as he was: afterward hee began in this manner.

Mightie and redoubted Monarch of Allmaigne, the most high and excellent Emperour of Constantinople my Master, vnderstanding the losse of your Sonne Tryneus, greeteth you with health and continuall happines. Giuing you to vnderstand, that within these few daies such good fortune hath befallen him, as in all his life time hee neuer had the like. And albeit in his last warre with the Turkes and Moores, he lost both Sonnes, Nephewes, and many great Lords of his Kingdom, and since that time hath beene troubled, with the hard hap of his daughter Oriana Queene of Hungaria, and the vnkinde death of her husband the King: yet hath his Maiestie changed all these griefes into ioy, by knowledge of the two knight Sir Palmerin, whose renowne lines as well in Ioathe as in Christendom,

being now found Sonne to my Lord the Emperour, and therefore created sole heyre to the Empire. And the noble Prince Palmerin on his behalfe, humbly saluteth your Imperiall Maiestie, being the Lord to whom he is most affected in seruice, so that to find out your Sonne Tryneus and the faire Agriola Daughter to the King of England, who two yeeres since and more he lost in the East seas: he abandoneth al honorable preferments, vntill his trauel shall be finished, and he hath brought him hither before your highnes. And hauing already searched in many Kingdomes, at length he vnderstood that they were liuing and in health, also that himself should in the end recouer them: he thought it necessarie to acquaint you herewith, because hee doubted of your extreame sorrow and heauines. The Emperour astonied to heare the good fortune of Palmerin, as also the losse of his Son Tryneus, could not subdue his passions, which mooued the teares to trickle downe his cheekes, with conceit of ioy and griefe together: yet shadowing his alteration so well as he could, thus replied. In truth my Lord Ambassadeur, I alwaies imagined by Palmerins worthy actions, that he was discended of noble or royal linage, and greatly it contenteth mee, that he so happily hath found the house of his discent: expelling altogether (considering his promise and prowesse) what hath been long imprinted in my heart, concerning the losse of my Son Tryneus. For so fauourable are the heauens to Palmerin in all his enterprises and admirable aduentures: as one may imagin, that deedes of honor & account are reserued only for him, chiefely the recouery of my Sonne, which I hope he will effectuallie bring to passe. And trust me, not without great and sufficient reason, doth the Emperour your Master repute himselfe happie: this onely good fortune being of force enough, to discharge his minde of al sorowes and cares, that former occasions mooued him withal. Nor know I how to recompence his princelie kindnes, honouring me with so good and happie tidings: but that it may please him to accept

cept of me hereafter, as his louing Brother and faithfull Friend. No other thing my Lord (quoth the Duke) doth his Maiestie desire, and to begin this amitie and alliaunce betweene you, he requesteth, that if his Sonne Palmerin hath heretofore found such fauour in your eies, you would now confirme it, by giuing him to wife the Princesse Polynarda your Daughter, whom he will not marry, vntil he hath brought home your Sonne Tryneus. As for the other conuentions of the mariage, these letters shal certifie you: so kissing them, he deliuered them with very great reuerence.

And her shall hee haue with right good will, said the Emperour, for a fitter Husband can she not haue: I think likewise herselfe will consent thereto, for the good opinion she had of him while he remained in our Court. But because I will not displease the King of France, who in like manner requested her for his Sonne and heyre: I will conferre with the estates of the Empire, and then deliuer you certaine answere. So the Ambassadours withdrew themselues to their lodgings, and the Emperor caused the Letters to be reade before all his Princes and Lordes, who could no way mislike of this marriage: and therefore great ioy was made through the Empire, in hope the Prince Tryneus should soone be recouered. These ioyfull newes soone spreading throug the Court, at length were brought to the Princesse Polynarda in her Chamber: who not able to conceale her sudden ioy, ranne to Brionella, saying, Sweete Friend, now mayst thou reioyce with me, in that our loues are now assured vs, whereof before wee vtterlie despaired. Ah my Bryonella, Heauen hath now confirmed our fortunate successe, in that my Palmerin is found to bee the Emperors Sonne of Constantinople: whereof he hath certified my Lord and Father by his Embassage, and how Palmerin hath heard tydings of my Brother Tryneus, whom shortlie he will bring home againe, yet not without thy Ptolomie I hope. Therefore (my onely copartner in

loue and feare) let vs abandon all griefe and sorrow, which greatly may preiudice our health and welfare: and now dispose our selues to a contented resolution of life, attending our long desired fortune. God graunt it may bee so, quoth Bryonella, yet my minde perswades me, that wee shall not see them so soone as you weene. The Emperour hauing conferred with the Lords of Allemaigne, who very well allowed the marriage of his daughter with Palmerin: determined to send to the Emperour of Constantinople Ambassadours, for perfect confirmation of the marriage. And by generall consent, the Duke of Lorrayne and the Marquesse of Licena, were chosen for this present Embassage. Which being done, the Emperour went to the Empresse Chamber, and sent for his daughter Polynarda, who was so ioyfull of these happy newes, as she could scant imagine how to dissemble her content, when shee should come in her Fathers presence, yet shadowing it from any open suspect, after shee had saluted her Father with great reuerence, the Emperour thus spake.

Daughter, you haue hetherto refused so many noble offers, as hardly can I permit to moove you with any other: yet once more wil I trie you againe, in hope you will stand vpon no more refusals, but ioine with me in opinion, as beyond all other best beseeming you. The man of whom I speake, is noble Palmerin, of whose honorable behauiour you haue some knowledge: and for no other cause hath the Emperour sent his Ambassadours, aduise your selfe then what you answer, for all our nobility allow the match, and thereto haue generally subscribed their consent. The Princesse couering her inward ioy with modest bashfulnes, thus answered.

If heretofore my good Lord, I refused my obeysaunce to your commaundement, especially for taking a husband, it was onely for the promise I made to my Brother Tryneus: but now, seeing it is your pleasure, and the good liking of all the estates, as also that the mariage shall not be solem-

ſollemnized till my Brothers preſence: I will not diſobey your commaund, aſſuring your Maieſtie, that more content am I to match with him, then any other you named heretofore. And this one ſpeciall cauſe, that hee laboureth to bring home my noble Brother, which Heauen graunt hee may: otherwiſe can I not marry, without very great impeach to mine honour.

The Emperour well perceiued by the grace of her anſwer, and her countenance now nothing ſad or mellancholly: that ſhe was nothing offended with this motion, wherefore he ſaid. Happy may I count my ſelf faire daughter, that among all the Chriſtian Princes you haue choſen ſuch a Huſband: therefore apparell your ſelfe to morrow in the beſt ſort you may, for then ſhal my Lords the Ambaſſadours ſee you. So departed the Princeſſe to her Chamber, and no more ſpeaches were vſed till the next day, when the Emperour ſent for the Ambaſſadours of Conſtantinople: and in the preſence of the principall eſtate of the Empire, ratified the mariage betweene Palmerin & his daughter. And for further confirmation thereof, promiſed to ſend his owne Ambaſſadours with them, to ſatiſfie (on his behalfe) the Emperour, Florendos and Palmerin. For which exceeding gentlenes, the Duke of Mecena (in the Emperours name) thanked his Maieſtie, earneſtlie intreating him to diſpatch them thence ſo ſone as might bee, becauſe their charge was to returne with all poſſible ſpeede. This reſolution abſolutely ſet downe, the Emperour (for the greater honor) cauſed them to dine with him at his owne Table, & grace being ſaid by the Lord Almener, the Duke of Mecena deſired his Maieſtie, that hee might ſee the Princeſſe Polynarda: whereof hee made promiſe ſo ſone as Dinner was done, when taking the Duke of Mecena by the one hand, and the Countie of Reifort by the other, brought thē to the Empreſſe Chamber, where they found the Princes in ſuch ſumptuous ornaments, and accompanied with ſuch rare grace and exquiſite beautie, as they

iudged her rather an Angell then any earthly creature. And greatly was the Duke abashed at such a singular spectacle, not knowing how to frame his opinions: but having humbly saluted the Empresse, came to the Princesse, and on his knee reuerently kist her hand, with these speeches. Let it not displease you faire Madam, that I doe this honorable dutie to you: for I doe it in this respect, as to the gracious Ladie and Empresse (hereafter) of Constantinople.

By this meane hee secretly conueied Palmerins Letter into her hand, for which the Princesse gaue him many deuout thankes, which were coupled with such maiesticall gestures, as neither Nero or Galba were done the like, no not by Constantine himselfe to the Pope. And the Dukes words had raised a sweete blush in her cheekes, yet could she with such choyse answeres excuse the same, as gaue greater countenance to all her behauiour. Then turned the Duke to the Emperour, and smiling, said; Trust me my Lord, now doe I verilie beleeue what hath heeretofore been told me of the Prince Palmerin, that hee is an especiall Iudge of the beauty of Ladies, for in mine opinion he hath chosen one without a second: and of her may truly be affirmed, what the Poets described of Helena, teaming her the Goddesse of beauty. With this rare Princesse to be matched an Husband so famous, well may be said: the couple to be without compare, for the faire formed Paris may not be equalled with Palmerin. So the Ambassadors departing, the Princesse withdrew her selfe to her Chamber, where reading her Friends Letter, her ioyes and pleasures redoubled, because she might now boldlie credite her fortune.

And before she would forget the inuention her spirit offered, shee presently wrote an answer: earnestlie intreating him to hasten his return, to abreuiate her languishing desires, which now made her life but a shadow of death. Hauing close sealed her Letter, shee sent it to the Duke by

one

one of her most trustie Ladies, with diuers other rich gifts and presents. The Duke of Lorrayne and his company readie, departed thence with the Ambassadours, and winde and weather serving so well, they arriued at Constantinople the day before Florendos his nuptials. Newes being brought hereof to the Court, Palmerin accompanied with many Princes and Knights, went to the Hauen, and at the landing of the Ambassadours, Palmerin embraced the Duke of Lorrayne, and the Marquesse of Licena: and so ryding to the Pallace, beguiled the time with diuers discourses, where among, the Duke of Lorrayne thus spake. Sir Palmerin, I alwaies did imagine, that those strange aduentures atchiued by you during the obscurity of your yonger yeeres, would in the end reueale your honorable parentage, and make your name for euer immortall: & were the Prince Tryneus with you now, for the very best condition in the world would I not leaue your company. Gentle Duke, answered Palmerin, if I did not perswade my selfe, how greatly I should comfort your mind, by recouering your Prince Tryneus, I should account my life so vnhappie, as presently I would desire my death. God graunt, quoth the Duke, that you may finde him againe, for that will bee the greatest ioy that euer came to our Empire: considering the vertues, magnanimitie and speciall chiualrie, which is as currant in our yong Princes as in any other. And thus they spent the time till they came to the Pallace, where the Duke of Lorrayne after hee had saluted the Emperour and the Princes, deliuered the message committed to his charge. Wherewith Palmerin was not a little pleased, considering what he had read in his Ladies Letter, which discouered the sorrowes shee endured for his absence: but being assured of her firme loyalty, as also that she was now promised him in mariage, his cares were the lesse, commaunding the Duke to be lodged neere his owne Chamber, that he might the better confer with him of his Mistresse, whom he loued as deere as his owne life.

CHAP XXXVII.

How after the Prince Florendos and Queene Griana were espoused together, Palmerin was sworne Prince and heire of Greece and Macedon, by the consent of the Lords of the Empire and the Reelme.



THe Ambassadours of Alimaigne being now come, the Emperour was aduertised thereof, and considering that the Princes of Thrace and Macedon had expected their presence for the space of fiue daies: it was appointed, that on the morrow the Prince Florendos and Griana should be married. And the day being come of this long desired wedding, she was clothed in such rich and costly vestures, as though she had beene still a Virgin. But heere to set downe the sumptuous vestures of her, her Husband, the Emperor, the Empresse, with diuers other Lords, Ladies and Gentlewomen, also the sollemnitie and ceremonies, both at the Church and at the Pallace: would waste a great deale of time in vaine, and without any pleasure or profit to the Readers, and therefore I will let it passe vnder your conceit, and speake of such things as are most needefull.

After that the Prince Florendos and Griana were espoused by the Patriarch of Constantinople, the whole traine returned to the Pallace, where before the Gate was erected a goodly Theater, hanged round about with cloth of Golde, and thereon were set many Chayres and Canapies of estate. There was the Prince Palmerin placed in

the

the cheefest seate, the Emperour and Florendos on the one side, and the Empresse and Griana on the other: then was Palmerin (sonne to the Prince of Greece, with all the obseruations in such causes accustomed, by all the Lords of the Empire, from the Emperour himselfe to the very meanest Gentleman. In like sort did the estates of Macedon, his Father Florendos first beginning, the Duke of Pontus next, and in the selfe same order as the Imperialities had done. This done, the Tables were couered, and all the Princes placed according to their dignities: the Emperour and Empresse at the cheefest, the new married couple at the second, and the Prince Palmerin at the third: so consequently the Kings, Princes, Dukes, Marquesses, Counties, and all the rest in order. As for the magnificence of y feaste, the royall order obserued, the Triumphes, Mommeries, Masques, and daunting, would but fill paper with needelesse reports, in that your iudgments can conceiue the excellencie. But the Ladies being without alone, the noble Gallantes went and Armed themselues, and entred the field which was appointed without the Cittie, and furnished with Scaffolds and standings for the Lords and Ladies, where the afternoone was spent braunely at Tilt and Tourney, with diuerse chiualrie performed by Prysoll, Olorico, the King of Sparta, the Duke of Pontus, & many other knights. When night was come, and Supper ended, the Bride and Bridegroome were honorably brought to their Chamber, and Florendos being alone with his Ladie, thus began. Ah sweete Madame, how many sorrowes haue I endured, in expectation of this long desired houre: but hauing at length compassed my wish, I hold my selfe sufficiently satisfied: quoting the saieste to the auncient prouerbe, That true loue neuer wanteth his reward, and that which I thought would haue bene my death, hath now returned me greatest honor and profit. In sooth my Lord, and sweete Queene, I was euer more perswaded of your loyaltie: but where necessitie ruleth, reason hath no place. And if by the exteriour action

I haue bene disloyall to you: yet my hart, which first of all I gaue to you, neuer diminished in will to loue you firmely. For which Tarsius very often reproued mee, notwithstanding in the ende, and by the sufferance of God I thinke, he receiued the reward, that the vsurper of another mans right deserueth. But why should we (my Lord) call now to memorie things past, or remember matters which brede nothing but heauinesse: it is for you to excuse me, and for my selfe to loue and honour you. All the points of their former Diuorce debated betweene them, to such effecte they pleasures, sorted in the ende, as that night shee conceyued with a daughter, which proued to be beyond all other in beauty.

On the morrow the Prince Palmerin entred the Lystes Royall, because this day hee desired to Iouste. Before him went the chiefest Princes of Greece on foot, and six Trumpets to make him way: hee managing his Horse with such lofty Voltages, as euery one delighted to behold him.

After he had done his reuerence to the Emperour, he gaue the spurres to his Horse to encounter Fryoll: But when they came to meete, Fryoll threw him by his Launce, and would not touch him. The like did the Prince Olorico, and diuers other Knights; whereat Palmerin somewhat angry, stroke his Launce into the ground, and brake it, and causing himselfe to be vnarmed, went vp to the Emperour in his standing, to see the Pastime of the other Knights: and he was no sooner come, but the Emperour thus spake vnto him.

Be not offended my Sonne, because you haue vnarmed your selfe without tryall of the Iouste: for the Knights haue don as best beseemed them, not to aduenture on their Lord and Maister. But if you would so fayne haue some sport with them, you must hereafter disguise your selfe from being known: otherwise I see you shall but lose your labour. When Palmerin heard these words, to the end hee might somewhat delight the Emperour and the Ladyes, especially, such as neuer saw his behauiour in Chiualrie: hee was determined the last day of the Tryumphe, to come suddenly

ly among them, and to be Armed in such sorte as none should knowe him. In briefe, nowe is the last day come, and the Emperour vnderstanding that Palmerin would enter the Lystes disguised, went to his Chamber, and Palmerin secretly entring his Chamber, found there a white Armour, such as the yong knights was accustomed to weare, which his Dwarfes had there prouided for him: Armed himselfe presently therewith, and mounted on a Horse of the same colour, entred the field on the Assailants side, because hee had heard, that this day the King of Sparta would encounter the Duke of Pontus, Fryfoll, Olorico, and others of the moste gentle knights in the Campane. The Emperour knewe Palmerin among all the rest, and sayde to Flaridos: What chiualyon (Sonne) of the white knight? Do you knowe him? (sayde my Lord, (quoth the Prince) I knowe not what he is: but me thought he entred with a lolly countenaunce: It nowe remaines to knowe what he can do.

At the encounter, Palmerin vnhorsed the Prince Olorico, afterward the Duke of Pontus, and fiue other knights companie: then hauing broken his Launce, the Emperour sent him another by a Squyre, willing him (for his sake) to employ it as hee had done the other, but hee would make no answer because he seemed to be knowne. Fryfoll much offended at the Prince Olorico and fortune, to reuenge his friends cause: but the King of Sparta, esteemed a hardy & approued knight, kept backe him, and being cast off from his Horse, was so hurt with the fall, as he was carryed forth of the field to his Chamber.

When Fryfoll gaue the spurres to his Horse, and encountred Palmerin with such puissance, as he made him lose his Styroppes, and had he not caught fast holde about his Horse necke, he had fallen to the ground: but Fryfoll, his fortune was so bad, as his Horse stumbling fell downe, and his maister vnderhim, whereupon the Emperour sayde to Glorosdos, that the knight in white Armour was his Sonne Palmerin. In soothe my Lord (quoth the Prince) his fortune is

good if it be hee, and well may he be esteemed the worthyest in the company. The Duke of Lorrayne hearing their talke, said.

Perswade not my Lord that Prince Palmerin hath so good successe, for in Allemaigne haue I seene him doo much more then this, and so much, as my Lord the Emperour hath beene constrained to commaunde them giue ouer. Palmerin seeing himselfe Maister of the fielde, departed as secretly as he came thither, and so did the Emperour, Elorendos, Griana, and all the other Ladies, among whome the yong Princesse Armida was most pensiue for her Friendes misfortune, so that by her countenaunce her inwarde affections might easily bee discerned. But on the morrowe, when Palmerin sent for all the Knights of name with whom he had Iousted, and every one knew that hee wonne the prize of the last daies Tryumph: the sorrow of the Princesse Armida was conuerted into pleasure, reputing it an honor to her Knight to be honored by her Brother.

When the Emperour vnderstood that Palmerin was iesting with the Knights, he came into the Hall, and taking him by the hande, merrily sayde. See heere my Friendes the white Knight, whome you all were so desirous to know, but if you finde your selues agreeued with him, you must laie the blame on mee: for I was the onely cause of this enterprise, to the ende that hauing made open proofe of himselfe, you all might witnesse his valour and bountie, who after my decease must bee your Lord and Gouernour.

Now were all the Knights well contented againe, especially the Prince Olorico of Frysoll: who thought hee was sore what bused with his Horse falling on him, came and embraced Palmerin, saying. In sooth my Lord, the strength of your arme and Launce yesterday, hath giuen vs good experience of your vertue: yet our desire to reuenge our companions foyle was such, as had you bene

our

our Father we shoulde not haue knowne yee. It may be (said Palmerin) that yee made no reckoning of the Knight, who handled ye in this rough manner: or that you thought him not worthy to beare a Launce, because you refused to Iouste with him the other day. A kinde Knight (quoth Frysoll, perceiuing how Palmerin iested) and queintly deliuered, is this your recompence to the Knights that friendly spared you? If I had knowne so much before, I shoulde haue cryed quittance with you before we parted. These wordes Frysoll spake in such sort, as Palmerin imagined he was in choller: wherefore he thus answered. God bother I pray you excuse mee, if in doing my deuoire I haue offended ye: when you please I will do pennaunce for it, if it be but to please hee, who cannot hate her good will towards you.

Hereupon all the three Friendes embraced together, taking leaue of each other till the next morning, when a new Tourney was begunne againe, and continued for fiue daies together: the honor whereof (to make short) happened to Frysoll, vntill the last day, when a strange Knight came into the fielde, and brought one with him resembling a Gyaunt in stature, who with a Turkish Bowe and enuenomed arrowes, slew and wounded very many. So that Palmerin seeing the spoyle of his Friendes, was constrained to goe Arme himselfe, and defying the Gyaunt, ouercame both him and the Knight that brought him. Some haue reported this Giaunt to be a Centaure, in forme of the Centoures that ouerpassed Hercules at the nuptiales of Hippodamia: but such ridiculous follies are not heere to be inserted, and though the Spaniard in his History affirme it, yet carryes it no likelihood, wherefore leauing such impertinent discourses, let vs proceede as occasion doth leade vs.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXXVIII.

How the aged Knight Apolonio, found Netrydes Father to Fryſoll, and brought him to Conſtantinople, where he was made Gouernour generall of Hungaria: and how Fryſoll eſpouſed the Princeſſe Armida.

APolonio hauing receiued Fryſolls Letters, and a breefe direction for his iourney, to ỳ place where he ſhould find his Father Netrydes: followed his intent with ſuch diligence, as he came to the Caſtell where he remained, and found him ſitting at the Gate, being newly returned from hunting in the Foreſt. No ſooner had Apolonio beheld him, but hee preſently knew him, wherefore feigning that hee and his company were knights errant: ſaluted him, and demaunded if he would giue them entertainmẽt for that night, becauſe they knew no place of lodging neere at hand. Netrydes, who was euer of a moſt noble minde, welcommed them very courteouſly, commaunding their Horſes to the ſtable, and themſelues to be honorablie feaſted at Supper. All ſuppertime, Netrydes very earneſtly eyed Apolonio, perſwading himſelfe that he had ſeene him before: and Apolonio likewiſe well regarded Netrydes, neither daring to queſtion with other for feare of miſconceit.

In the end, Apolonio thorowly reſolued that this was the man he ſought, and ſeeing two yong Gentlemen ſitting at the Table by him, he thus beganne. I pray you Sir tell me, are theſe two Gentlemen your Sons? They are Sir, anſwered

answered Netrydes. Haue you not one more (q. Apolonio) elder then these? Then Netrydes remembred his Sonne Frysoll, whom he iudged to be dead because of his long absence: wherefore breathing forth a very great sighe, saide. In trueth Sir, I know not whether I haue or no, for it is long since I lost mine eldest Son by great misfortune, and hetherto hearde no tydings of him, nor know I whether he is liuing or dead. By what mishappe I pray you Sir, quoth Apolonio, did you loose him? Whereupon Netrydes discoursed the whole circumstaunce, in selfe same manner as Frysoll had reported: whereby he was now assured that Frysoll was his Sonne, and so without dissembling any longer, said. I can resolue ye my Lord that he is yet liuing, and in very good disposition. O my God (answered Netrydes) if these newes may be true, then am I the most happie knight in the world. And so are you, saide Apolonio, for hee is liuing, recouered of the disease hee had when he departed from you, and is now one of the most estemed knights in all Greece: so that hauing deliuered the Queene Griana from prysion, which victory he obtained in the company of noble Palmerin, against ỳ two Nephewes of king Perisius, he is founde to bee neere kinsman to the Empresse. For which cause he hath sent, and I am expresly hither come, to bring you with me to Constantinople, to the end you may receiue your owne by right, I meane the principall regiment in the Realme of Hungaria. Ah heauens, answered Netrydes, for euer be your prayses, in reuealing the wrong my Brother did, when causelesse he banished me my native Countrey: but that I may bee resolued in one doubt, I pray ye tell me, were ye not sometime of my Brothers Court? Yes trulie answered Apolonio, and to your Father I serued as a Page in his Chamber: now in respect of the manifolde courtesies I receiued at your hands, for euer I vowed my selfe to doe you any seruice, desiring you with all possible speede to hasten your departure: for I greatlie doubt we shall not else finde your

Sonne

Sonne at the Court, because hee determineth to iourney with Palmerin, in the search of Primeus the Emperours Sonne of Allemaigne.

Hereupon Netrydes leauing the charge of his house to one of his Trayns, departed with his Wife and his two Sonnes: making such speedy dispatch in their iourney, as not many daies after the Weymuth, they arriued at Constantinople. Which when Prysol vnderstood, hee went to meete them: being accompanied (for the greater honor to his Parents) with Palmerin, the King of Sparta, and many other yong Princes. There were many salutations and welcomes, giuen with great ioy by the Sonne to his Father, Mother, and Brethren, and by the Parents likewise to their Sonne, with such exceeding signes of loue, as you can better conceiue then I expresse. After all these courteous greetings, they went to the Court, where began a freth occasion of ioy, between the Empresse and her Nephew Netrydes: shee then embracing him in her armes, thus spake.

Ah my noble Nephew, how haue the Heauens blessed me with speciall fauour, in suffering me before my death to see my chiefest Friendes, whom I was out of all hope to behold againe: especially you, whose long absence from your Country, hath rather deliuered imaginations of your death then life. Nevertheless, it is the prouidence of the highest, that after all ỹ troubles you suffered in your youth, you might receiue the recompence in your age, by the knightly honor and bountie of your linage. In soth (Madame) sayd Netrydes, not so pleasant to me is high preferment, as that I liue to see my Sonne againe, for hauing contented my selfe in my little Cattell, with a life free from offence and solicitude, I did account it to exceede all other: but now seeing in my declining yeeres, the God of Heauen hath thought good that I might profit his people, the thought were base and abiect in me to make refusall. So long were they deuising on these and other matters, as the

good

good night being giuen on all sides, the Emperour caused these new come Friendes to be conducted to their lodgings.

But on the morrow, when Palmerin came to bid the Emperour good morrow, he thus beganne. You know my Lord, that a Common wealth without a head and Gouernour, (as for example) is the Realme of Hungaria, cannot long endure without seditious tumults or rebellion: wherefore, vnder your Maiesties reuerende regarde, I thinke it expedient that my Sister Armida should be giuen in mariage to Sir Frysoll, because in nobilitie of minde and perfection of iudgment, hardly may so good a knight be found, nor she enioy a fitter husband, and so may the Realme by meanes diuend, from Netrides now aged, to his noble Sonne.

The Emperour liked well of this aduise, wherefore the same day were Frysoll and the Princesse Armida espoused together: to the good liking of all, but especially of the louers themselues, whose secret desires were now effectually requited. After this feast was ended, Netrides installed Gouernour of Hungaria, departed louingly his Citie, Sonne to his Kingdome: where he was receiued very honorably by his Subiects, who had not forgot their former loue to him: and the vnnaturall dealing of their King his deceased Brother.

CHAP. XXXIX.

How Palmerin tooke his leaue of the Emperour, his father and mother, to follow the search of the Prince Trineus.

CErtaine daies after the solemnitie of this honorable mariage was ended betweene Frysoll and the yong Princesse of Hungaria, Nitrides likewise gone to his seate of gouernment: all the Lordes and Princes of the Empire, except such as continually abode in the Emperours Court, returned to their owne homes, the like did all the strange Knights that came to the Tryumphes, except the King of Sparta and the Lords of Macedon. Wherfore Palmerin now remembring his promise to his Ladie, and how long he had staied slothfull at Constantinople, determined to depart, and vnderstanding that his father was with the Emperour, came to them with these speeches.

My gracious Lords, it is now three moneths and more that I haue remained heere by your commaundement, contrary to the promise that I made my Ladie: wherefore (by your leaue) I am nowe determined to departe hence, before the Duke of Lorayne returne backe againe, that he may assure my Lord the Emperor that I am gone to seeke my Friends. My Sonne, quoth the Emperor, vnwilling am I thou shouldest leaue vs so soone, but if the matter may not be contraried, in respect you are bound to her by faithfull promise, who aboue all other deserueth loyall

all service: I neither may or will gaine-say you, but intreate your returne so soone as may be. You shall therefore take with you a good company of knights, who may prevent any sinister occasions, which you travell in strange Countries happily may offer: that my heart enioying life by your presence, may once more see you before my date be expired.

Whether you my Lord, answered Palmerin, grieve not yourselfe by my absence, which shall not be long I hope, neither will the multitude of knights availe in my enterprise, for more by fortune then by force of Armes must the aduenture be finished. But that as you thinke good answered the Emperour, in meane time I will make provision for your traine. Palmerin having now licence to depart, perswaded Frysoll so earnestly as hee could, to abide at Constantinople, as well for the love he bare his Sister Armida, as because he was loth to part the new united couples: but all the circumstances he could vse, might not perswade him, for his religious vow to his Friende, stirred his affection to the Princesse, so that for a flat resolution, he answered, that nothing but death should separate their company. Palmerin seeing Frysoll continue in his former mind, and that the desire which conquers all men, could not prevaile in his noble minde: reioyced greatly thereat, determining to recompence his princely kindnes, if Fortune did not contrary him in this enterprised iourney. And fearing least any new occasion should arise to delay this intent, dispatched presently his Letters to the Emperor of Allemaine, and his Ladie Polynarda, honoring his highnesse Ambassadours with many sumptuous gifts: Having now ordered all his affaires, and euerie one being ready to mount on horsebacke, hee came to bid the Queene his Mother farewell: for well he knew, that if shee could any way hinder his departure, his iourney should be soone prevented. The Queene with motherlie love embracing her Sonne, said; Ah my Sonne, hast thou been so short a time

with me, and wilt thou now leaue me? trust mee it is a point of great vngentlenes, to deale so hardly with thy mother: but seeing the Emperour and my Lord haue giuen their consent, my gainsay will be to little purpose. And nothing would it auaile me to set before thine eyes, the inconstancie of Fortune, her sleights and trecherie, commonlie against great persons: when they are in the top of prosperitie, hauing vnderfoote. Therefore my Sonne, I commit thee to the protection of Heauen, desiring thee to regard mine honor, which by thee ought to be defended, and now may runne in danger of common reproch, in that the vulgar sort iudge after their owne humours, not according to the qualitie and estimation of vertue. For this cause let thy returne be the sooner, as thou tenderest my life and thine owne good.

All which Palmerin promised to doe, and so comming downe into the Court, found there the Emperour and his Father mounted on horsebacke, who hauing conuaied him two miles from the Citie: where after many courtesies betweene them, the Emperour and Florendos returned to the Court againe, where the Duke of Lorraine staied their comming, when taking his leaue likewise, went aboord, and sailed with so good a winde, as in short time he arriued in Allmaigne, where he was graciously welcommed by the Emperour, and especially by the Princesse his Daughter, to whom he reported the honourable behauiour of Palmerin, and how he was sworne Prince of Greece and Macedon. Great was she so ioyfull, as neuer could she be satisfied with the discourse, making many demaunds to the Duke, as well of the Tryumpes, Tourney and disports, as also of the mariage celebrated at Constantinople: whereto the Duke returned such fit answers, as nothing wanted to extoll her Friends honor, yet with any occasion of iealouzie to the Princesse, whereto amorous Ladies are commonly subiect.

But now returning where wee left before, you must

note

note, that Palmerin being departed the Confines of the Empire, entred his Fathers Realme, where in euery Citie he was entertained with great triumphing: especially in the Citty of Hermida, where the Merchant dwelt that was Palmerins Maister, for whom he sent, but he was aduertized by his Wife, that her Husbande was gone to the Sea, and his two Sonnes with him, wherefore he gaue her many Rich gifts, and Letters for his Maisters free enfranchise and libertie. At his departure from thence, he came to the place where Vrbanillo his Dwarffe was borne, whose Father was there liuing a poore auncient Knight, and his Sister of as tall stature as Vrbanillo, whome Palmerin (at her Brothers request) sent to Constantinople, to his Mother. And for the honor of the Order his Dwarffs Father had receyued, hee gaue him the Village wherein he dwelt, and in the presence of the Macedonians put him in possession thereof, who not a little commended the discrete and liberall minde of the Prince.

From thence he tourneyed to the chiefe Citie of Macedon, where remained the Aged King his Grandfather: but how the Cittizens entertained him, and what honourable Tryumphs were made at the Court, I list not here set downe, because it would bee more tedious then beneficiall. As for his Aunte the Princesse Arismena, shee at his comming met him in the Base court, with all her Ladyes: and as Palmerin fell on his knee before her, to kisse her hande, shee stayed him in her armes, saying: God forbid Syr Palmerin, that the Knight of greatest Fame in the World, should reuerence so simple a Damosell as my selfe: but rather am bound by duty to honor you, as the man by whose especiall vertues, our Linage is this day crowned with perpetuall memorie.

Fayre Aunte (answered Palmerin) if before I knew you to bee my Fathers Sister, I deuoted my selfe to your Seruice, with much more Affection shall I desire to followe it now: Wherefore suffer me (sweete Madame) to kisse your

hand, as being the Ladie to whom I rest continually bounden. I beseech you my Lord (quoth the Princesse) to pardon me, for neuer shall a Macedonian Maiden be so reproued, but that she well knowes her duety to her betters. At these speeches came the King of Sparta, the Dukes of Pontus, and Meccena, and the Prince Eustace, whome the Princesse welcommed with exceeding honour. After all courtesies ended, Palmerin saide,

I understand Madame, that the King your Father is crazed and sickly: if it be so I am very sorrie, I pray you therefore let vs goe see how his Maiestie fareth. When you please my Lorde (quoth the Princesse) for I thinke if heretofore hee receyued health by you, Fortune may at this time affoorde the like: and yet (as I haue read) there is no remedie for troublesome Age, but onely death it selfe, which is the Gate to immortality, and endeth all Diseases whatsoeuer. So entred they the Kings Chamber, and the Princesse going to the Bed side to her Father, saide: My Lorde, see heere the good Knight Palmerin your Nephewe, may it please you to speake to him, and bid him welcome? Well knowe I that hee is right welcome to your Maiestie, were there no other cause then the happie recouerie of your former health, which his Aduenturous Trauell heeretofore brought ye.

The good Olde King, whome the Palsie caused to shake and tremble: raysed himselfe vppe a little, and beholding Palmerin, with weake and feeble voyce, thus spake. Come neere my Noble Sonne, that these armes halfe deade may embrace thee, and my lips now drie and withered, may once kisse thee before I die. So holding him betweene his armes, and lifting his eyes to Heauen, said. O my God, for euer be thy name honored and praised, in vouchsafing me to see my Sonne before my death. Ah sweet death, the ende of all miseries, and beginning of felicity, now art thou welcome, for beare not thy stroke, in that I haue now seene the honourable defence of my Subiects hereafter, yea such a worthie

Friend,

Friend for them, as neuer had they the like. Ah my Son, how dearely ought I to loue thee: how gracious hath thy remembrance beene of me: yet feele I my selfe so weake and feeble, as nature cannot prolong my life three daies. Alas, I know not which of vs twaine hath greatest cause to reioyce; either the Father seeing his Sonne, euen when he is readie to leaue him, or the Sonne finding his Father attending his comming before he giue vp the ghost. I hope my good Lord, said Palmerin, that you shall not leaue vs so soone, therefore take a good hart, and that no doubt will prolong your life. Alas my Sonne, quoth the King, vnwieldie age hath so weakened my bodie, and euen dried vp my vital blood, as longer I may not liue: and had not hope to see thee lengthened my languishing daies, thou hadst found my bodie breathlesse, which yet sustaineth feeble life, onely by thy presence.

Now that I may leaue this world with content, and trauaile with better quiet to mine ende; tell mee (good Sonne) the whole matter concerning thy Father Florendos, with the perfect discourse of thine owne fortunes. Thē Palmerin rehearsed euery circumstance, both of his Fathers delinery, how hee had married the Quéene Griana, and in what estate he left them both at his departure.

CHAP. XL.

How the aged King Primaleon of Macedon, Graund-Father to Palmerin, died, and how the King of Sparta espoused the faire Princes Arismena, Sister to the Prince Florendos.

NOt two daies had Palmerin staied in the Court of his Graund-Father, but the aged King resigned his life to the celestiall powers: for which cause, all the Tryumphes ceased, and generall sorow entertained for the losse of their good King. Arismena who so reuerently loued her Father, as in his life time shee would not matth in mariage with any one, because it was his will it should be so: neuer the lesse her selfe discontented therewith, but her Father being now dead, she committed the whole affaires of the Realme to the Countie Roldin, one appointed for that office by generall good liking. With such honorable pompe was the funerall obsequies executed, and the Princesse gracious behauiour therein so especially commended: as the young King of Sparta became amorous of her, and discouered his minde to Palmerin, intreating him so to fauour the cause, as he might make Arismena his Quéene.

Palmerin very ioyfull of the Kings motion, in that hée was one of the chiefest estates of Greece, acquainted his Aunt with the Kings request, and what an honor it was to her to be so matched. Nor was the Princesse hart so cold by her Fathers death, but séeing the yong beautifull King

loued

honoured with such rewards as he could devise, to that end inventing her subtile estate, being aleiu in yeres past foure and twentie, he made him executer by her fathers late decease, but Palmerin perceiued by her modest yelding sooner, than she ought condiscended, although the enuie was displeasant vnto her. The next day they were espoused together, by which meanes the King was more affected to follow Palmerin, as he determined before he came from Constantinople: as well for the great kindnes he found in him, as for his fauour in furthering him with the ende of his desires.

Now was the King more importunate on Palmerin, to accept him for his companion in his trauell: who at length condiscended, although he imagined, that his Aunte had rather haue her new husband tarie with her. The day being appointed for their departure, Palmerin concluded with the King of Sparta, that he should send Arismena to Constantinople, there to stay his returne with her Brother Florendos. For her safe conduct thither, all the chiefest Knights that came thether with him were chosen, except the Prince Ballade, Brunetto Duke of Meeno. And Palmerin fearing his voyage would be longer then heere expected, commanded Vbaldo his Dwarfe to returne to the Queene Arismena: and if I stay (quoth he) longer then a yeere from Constantinople, goe then to Allemaine with this Letter to comfort my Ladie, and take with thee thy Sister, whom I sent to the Queene my Mother.

The Dwarfe (although he had rather haue gone with his Master, then attend on Ladies) not daring to gainsay him, returned with Arismena, who in short time after arriued at Constantinople, where the Prince Florendos very ioyfully receiued her, being not a little contented that she was ioyned in marriage with the King of Sparta, yet his Fathers death he tooke very heauily. How welcome she was to the Emperour, the Empresse, and Queene Griana, I doubt not but you can sufficiently imagine, who continu-

ally

ofte rouliestra her till her husbande returne: Before Palmerin departed from Macedon, he established all things in due and decent order, creating the Countie Rouldin Lieutenant Generall for the Realme: commaunding as dutifull obeysaunce to him, as to their Soueraigne Lorde the King his Father. After wardes hee toke order that his Shipping might be ready, because he would delay no longer the search of Trineus.

CHAP. LXI.

¶ How Palmerin and his companions saying on the Mediterranean Sea, were taken by Olimaell, Admyrall to the great Turke: & of their fortunes in Greece, where Palmerin sased Laurana the Princesse of Durace.

ROldin beeing established in the Gouernement of Macedon, and the Shippe ready which Palmerin hadde appointed: he went aborde with his bolwed Friends that wold not leaue him, viz. Prisoll, the Prince Olorico, the Duke of Pontus, the King of Sparta, and Eustace Sonne to the Duke of Mecæna. These fiue having swoorne their endeuors in the search of Tryneus, committed themselues to the mercie of the Winde and Seas, not knowing where they should first take Landing. Hauing thus sayled fiue or seauen dayes together, & the Seas nothing rough or tempestuous: they climbed vp to the maine toppe, to see if they could descrie any shore. ¶ And as they were deuising merrily together, they suddenly espyed a great Fleete of Shippes, which with winde at will made apace towards them: but because

you

you shal vnderstand of whence and what they were, attend the sequell and you shall vnderstand. This Armie Olimdell, as you haue read in the former part of this Historie, after he had giuen the Pointelle Agenda to the great Turck, entred into so great credit, as in recompence of this gift, hee was made high Admirall of Turkie: so that being renowmed for a knight of peerelesse valure, the Turke gaue him the charge of his great Armie, wherewithall he should continuallie disturb the Christians. This Olimdell was Generall of this huge Fleete descried by Palmerin, whereat somwhat amazed, he called one of the Pilots, demaunding if he knewe the Enseigne of whence they were. The Pilot had no sooner beheld them, but hee presently said they were Turks, and no waies there was for themselues to escape, because he sawe fiue light Galleyes were made out to him, and the rest came maintie vpon them. But Palmerin as a Prince experimented in daungers, thus spake to his companions.

Noble Freendes, where knightlie force or bountie cannot auaile, it were meere folly to vse it, wee are but fiue, and all in one Vessell, and farre wee cannot flie before we shall be taken: I thinke it best therefore that wee vse sound dissimulation, and so expect when Fortune will better teach vs the way to recouer our losse, and reuenge vs on our enemies to their confusion. Withdraw your selues, and leaue mee alone to talke to them, because I can well speake the Arabian language. Yet thinke not that cowardise or feare of death makes me vse these speeches: for in an action inuincible, hardines and knightly prowesse will be esteemed as folly and indiscretion. Haue then patience, my good Freendes, I hope that all shall turne to our good. No sooner had he ended his speeches, but he heard the Captaine commaund them to yeeld, or els they should die. Dies quoth Palmerin, that goes verie hard: assure vs our liues, and we yeeld, otherwise not. I promise thee, said the Captaine, neither thou nor thy companie shal haue any harme.

Sailing vpon the Riuer, they brought it to the Iland
call Olimach, and from thence hard all the Knights they found
there in so much as he hartily thanked them, saying:

Tell me Gentlemen and vnfained not, are ye Turkes
or Christians? Sir, quath Palmerin, being Fortune hath
beene so contrarie to vs, you shall know truely what
we are. We are Christians and by our Knights, seeking
aduentures to gaine honour and profit, we came by places ser-
uice, be he Heathen or Christian. And because we cannot
now shew you what we be bicause we be pleased you do suf-
fer vs enioy our liberties, and giue vs the hand fre of our
Armour, so will promise you to all our lyues faithfull seruice.
Olimach, who was by nature stern and austere, seeing
these fiue knights so young and braue accomplished persons,
imagined their assistance would greatly auaile him,
wherefore he thus answered: Gentlemen, if you will be true
to me by your faith, that you will not depart from me with-
out my licence, but will loyallie imploy your selues in
what I shall command: you shall haue your Armour a-
gaine, and I will not vse you as my slaues and prisoners,
but as my honest companions and Freends. Which oathe
they all tooke to him, wherefore they were immediatly Ar-
med againe, and remained in the Valley with Olimach:
who seeing their armour so rich and costly, esteemed them to
be of noble blood, and therefore caused them to be verie ho-
nourablie intreated.

So sayling on, at length they came neere to the great
Citie of Alexia, when Olimach commanded two of
these Foysts, to goe vnderneath in what estate the Cittie
was: who were aduertised by certaine Frenchmen, that
the people were vnprouided of inuiron fortifications, so that
winning the Porte, the whole Cittie might easilie be ouer-
quered. These tydings caused them forcibly to enter the
Hauen, whereat setting all the Whippes on fire, they went
on shore, and hauocking the Wardors at the Gates, broke
the Cittie at the first assault, when Palmerin and his noble

Friends

Friends (to their great sorrowe) declared howe well they could skill of such affayres. The Citty thus ouercome, and the chiefest Cittizens therein tak'n Prisoners, the Turkes following their Fortune, marched further, and came to the Citty of Durace, where the fayre Princesse Laurana abode, of whom Palmerin was sometimes Amorous: when hee imagined by her excellent Beautie, that it was shee who so often solicited him in his Dreames. Palmerin being there come on Land, presently knewe the Countrey: wherefore he said to his companions;

I nowe perceyue deere Friendes, that Fortune forceth vs from ill to worse: This speake I in respect of this Cittie, against which wee must be compelled to fight, and not many yeares since, with the price of my Blood I labored to defende it. But because the Dukes Daughter is so worthy a Ladie, as in my heart I reuerence and honour: I beseech you euery one employ your selues, to preserue both her and her Ladyes, and demaund them of the Admyrall for our part of the spoyle.

Whiles Palmerin thus conferred with his Friendes, Olimaell vnderstood by certaine Prisoners, that the Cittie was very slenderly defended, and therefore no great maistry to winne it quickly. Yet at their first Assault, they were so valiantly repulsed, as Olimaell and his men beganne to despayre of Victorie: wherefore he made open Proclamation, that hee who first Entred the Cittie, should obtaine of him any Boone he would request. Palmerin ioyfull of this promise, caused fiue strong Scaling Ladders to bee raised vp against the Wall, whereon he and his Friends ascended, and on the Wall cried, the Citty is ours: wherewith the people within were so dismayed, hauing endured a long and furious Skyrmish, as they all fledde out at the further Gates. The Turkes then burned the Gates on the Sea side, and entring the Citey, put olde and young to the Sword. But Palmerin and his companions feigning to pursue them that fledde, ranne straite to the Pallace, at the entrance whereof they

they found many Moores, who had taken the Duke, wherefore they went to finde the Princesse Laurana, who sat in her Chamber, well nere dead with griefe, because shee heard that her Father was slaine. Her hee committed to the custodie of the King of Sparta, Frysoll, Olorico, and Eustace, desiring them to comfort the Princes, in that neither she or her Ladies should fall into the Tyrants power: and so comming to Olimael, on his knee he began in this maner. You know my Lord the promise you made to day, by vertue wherof, because I first got ouer the wal into the Citie: for my share I request the Dukes Daughter, and for my Friends that followed mee, her Ladies and Gentlewomen, for other spoile of the riches and treasure wee desire not.

Olimael graunted his demaund, charging his people on paine of their liues, not any way to offend the Ladies. In this manner was the Princesse saued, whereupon the Duke of Pontus presently went to her, and taking her by the hand, acquainted her with these ioyfull newes, wherewith she thus replied. Canst bee possible that Palmerin, who heretofore ventured his life in my fathers defence, against the County Passaco of Mecena, should now become so familiar among Turks and Moores: Hath he so forgot his honor to God, that himselfe is not only a vassaile to the enemies of his faith, but doth likewise seeke their destruction that serue Christ Jesus: Be silent good Madame, answered the Duke, for if his name be known we all perish: what hath beene done, is for the safetie of your life, and our owne likewise, which hee hath obtained of the Generall of the Armie.

With these words she was somewhat pacified, and the old cinders of loue, which now began to spread abroade, caused her returne this answer. In soth my Lord, seeing I am become Palmerins prysoner, I thinke my honour in better assurance: and my Fathers death is the lesse grieuous to mee, in that this matter may sorte to better effect

then

then I can conceiue. By this time was Palmerin come to her, who entreated her to keepe all things secretly, for hee would endure a thousand deaths, before she should be anie way dishonoured. In time (quoth he) woe may be delivered from these Hell hounds, as for you and your Ladyes, the Admirall hath openlie commaunded that you be reuerently vsed.

A thousand thanks my Lord, quoth the Princesse, and seing matters ere so come to passe, yet doe I reioyce that I fell into your power. The citie of Durace left in the same state of Albania was, the Turkes went aboorde, taking no prisoners thence but Laurana and her Ladies, whom Olimaell intended to giue to the great Turke. So passing along the Coast of Thessalie, they spoyled manie Cities on the Sea side, tooke the King and manie noble men: so that now they were stored with a number of Christian prysoners. Now Olimaell feared, that the Christian Princes hearing what spoyle he made in their dominions, would rayse a mightie power against him, wherefore hee gaue charge to his Pilots, to order their course towards the Citie of Tubant, where as then the great Turke kept his Court.

The King of Thessalie three daies before his taking, sent his Queene (who was great with childe) to one of his Castels, a good dayes iourney from the Sea: but then he heard her Husbands mis-fortune, the greefe she conceiued, caused her presentlie to fall in trauaile, when she was deliuered of a goodlie Daughter, named Francelina. At this time the three Magical Sisters, who appeared to Palmerin on the Mountain Artisæria, and one of them afterward in his going to Buda: made their aboade in an Isle thereby named Carderia. When they (by their hidden Philosophy) heard how the King was taken, and should be kept in perpetuall prison, without the helpe of his Daughter which was newlie borne: they concluded to frame such an enchaenement, as mauger the Turke and his power, as hee

that

that would not deigne to kille his howe, should be deliuered from imprisonment. Hereupon the youngest of these three Sisters went to the Castell where the wofull Queene remaines, where she was very honourably entertained: because the Queene desired to know, if the King her Husband was dead or aline, and if any hope might be expected of his deliuerance.

The Damosell Enchauntresse aduertised the Queene, that in departing with her Daughter Francelina, the King her Husband should enioy his libertie, and in time to come, she should be maried to one of the best Knights in the world.

We néede not doubt that the Quéene was hereat amazed, yet the loue of the Mother to her Infant, cannot conquer the Loue of the Wife to her déere Husband: which among all Loues is the most honest and loyall: So that in hope to frée him againe, on whom depended her wealth and Welfare, shee gaue her Childe to the Damosell, intreating that she might bee bred as becomed the daughter of a king: and as the swéete beauty of the Infant deserued. Shee returning to Carderia, with the Childe, made her Sisters very ioyfull by her comming, who there nourished the Infant till she was thrée yeares old: when the beauty of the young Princesse began to shewe it selfe, as faire Cynthia doeth among the Starres.

Nowe did the Systers enclose her in a strong Tower, made of purpose for young Francelina, wherein was the mosse gwdly Garden in the World, there was she attained by her Nurses, and fiue wayting Gentlewomen: and such Enchauntments were imposed in the Tower, as no man should euer sée her, vnlesse hee were the best Knight of his time. The Entraunce into the Tower was very strayte and narrowe, barred vppe with a great Gate of Yron, and Guarded by two furious Lyons. Ouer the Gate stoode a huge Image of Copper, holding a mightie Mace of Steele, wrought by such cunning, as if any Knight but he that was destenied to end the aduenture, should assay to enter, hardly

might

might he escape to returne againe. Howeuer, the conqueront should not demaund the first demaund of the Princes, which was the deliuerance of her Father: and for this cause the Sisters enchaunted the faire Francelina, whose Historie we must yet forbeare, proceeding where wee left before.

Olimaell being thus on the Sea, laden with Christian spoyles and prisoners, at length entred the port of the great Citie of Tubant: where he made such a cheerefull noyse of Drommes, Trompets, Clarions & Comets, as though the greatest Monarchie in the world had come to take landing. The great Turke meruailing at this sodaine melodie, sent one of his Knights to vnderstand the cause, who being certified by Olimaell, what great victories hee had obtained against the Christians and the number of prysoners he brought with him returned to the Pallace, where he told his Lord that the Admirall Olimaell was come, and had brought with him great spoyles from the Christians, where among (quoth he) is a Christian King in persoune, many worthie Knights and Gentlemen, and a yong Princesse of incomparable beautie. Not a little ioyfull was the Turke at these newes, wherefore comming into his great Hall, where the imperiall seates of maiestie were erected, himselfe sate downe in the one, and faire Agriola of England in the other, expecting the comming of Olimaell: who in triumphant manner set forward with his prize, bruelie mounted on a lustie Courser sumptuouslie caparasoned, and aduaunc'ing his sword drawne in signe of victorie. Being come to Pallace, Olimaell saluted his Lord with great reuerence, standing by him to make report of his conquest, and make present of his prysoners after their estate and calling.

First he caused all the riches to be brought, and all the meanest captines one after another to kis the great Turks foote: then commaunding them to be carried thence, he began in this manner. It is not to be doubted, most high and

nightie Monarch, that this victorie gotten on the Christians, enemies to our Gods, hath bene obtained onely by your fauour: therefore it is great reason, that to the principall head of this enterprise, the great and chefest honour should be doone. The witnes heereof are the treasures present, and their prysoners abyding your mercie: who from the very meanest to the highest, shall humble themselues at your Maiesties foote. When very many had doone their reuerence, and the King of Thessalie should next follow, who though his armes were pinnioned behinde him, yet had a Crowne of Gold on his heade to shewe what hee was although he saw himselfe in the Tyrants power, and Olimaell had commaunded him to kisse his Maisters foote, boldly made this answere. Nor will I so much displease my God, uncircumcized Tirant as thou art, in such sort to abase my selfe, being a King, & administratour of iustice to faithfull Christians: to kisse the foote of the most nastie and uncleane creature in the world: prophaning the worship which I onely owe to my maker. It is in thy power to take my life from me: but not to constraine me do the thing wherein consists my damnation, and a thousand deaths I will endure, before I yeeld so much as in thought to thee. Thy laine (quoth the Admirall) darest thou speake so vnreuerently in the presence of my Lord: did not my regarde of him withhold me, soone should I separate thy cursed head from thy shoulders. With these words hee gaue the King such a blow on the face, as made him fall on his knees to the ground.

Ah Traytour, quoth the King, well hast thowen the nature of a villaine, that without commaund strykest a King captaine, and vnprouided of Armes: but might it so please thy Lord, in open Fielde will I prooue the a disloyall and vnchristened Curre, that thus abusest the blood royall. The great Turke seeing the King so moued and angry, the blood likewise trickling from his nose and mouth: commaunded him to be caried thence, to one of the strongest

Castells

Castels in Natolia, where he should be enclosed without anie companie, that this captiuitie might bee the more greeuous to him.

When the King of Thessalie was departed, Palmerin approached, leading the Princesse Laurana by the hand, hee and his fiue companions being Armed, except their Helmets, Gantlets and Swordes: whereat the great Turke meruailing, demaunded of Olimacll why he suffered them to be Armed: My Lord, quoth he, these fiue Knights were the first prize I tooke, who (after they had giuen me their oathes) haue doone such seruice to your Maiestie, especially this, poynting to Palmerin, on of the best knights that euer I saw: as full well do they deserue libertie, which in recompence of aduenturing their liues in your seruice, vnder your highne correction, I promised them. By Mahomet, answered the great Turk, for thy sake I likewise confirme it, and if hereafter they will abide with mee, I will make them greater theu euer they were. While the Turke was making these promises, Agriola hauing well noted Palmerin, knew him, and with the suddaine conceite thereof was readie to swoune: but staying her selfe on her Chayre, said. O sole bounty, who is this? are not mine eyes deluded and my thoughts beguiled? At these words Palmerin knewe her, which before he did not, by reason of her strange disguysed apparrell: yet thought hee best to conceale his inward ioy, least crooked Fortune should now againe preuent him.

The great Turk seeing Agriola looke so pale and wan started from his Chayre, and takeing her in his armes, said. Alas Madame, hath any suddaine ill befallen ye? hath any one in this company offended yee? by our Gods if I knew him, presently should he die the death. The Princesse trembling with feare, seeing Hippolyta was not present, spake thus in English. What will my Lord and Husband Tryneus say, if he be in this companie, seeing I haue so disloyall ye forsaken him, and thus (though God knowes

perforce (in steede of him) haue taken the enemy to him and our faith: Yet one comfort haue I that this infidell hath not carnally knowne me, for which protection I thank the heauenly maiestie. At these speaches Palmerin was so glad, as the feare of death could not withholde him: but in the same language he thus answered.

Feare not good Madame, Tryneus is not in our companie: but so please you to say I am your Brother, you may happily saue my life, and practise your deliuerance. The Turke misdoubting by Palmerins perswading, that he had caused this suddaine alteration: imagining him to be her Husband of whom he had heard her talke so often, in a great rage sayd, Knight, how durst thou presume my Ladies presence, knowing the sight of thee wold any way displease her? By the Prophet Mahomet thou shalt immediatly die, that all such audacious villaines may take an example by thee.

Agriola knowing the Turks censures were very peremptory and commonly no sooner said then executed, embracing him, thus replyed. Ah my Lord, do not the thing in haste, for which afterward you will be sorie, for I assure you on my honor, the Knight that spake to mee is my Brother, and hath left his Countrey onelie to find me: and him do I lone so effectually, as if you put him to death, impossible is it for me to liue afterward. When the Turk heard her speake with such affection, qualifying his anger, said, I promise ye Madame, for your sake, he shall haue no harme, but be entertained with lone and honour: conditionall ye, that you forget this melancholy, and henceforth shew your selfe more pleasant, for in seeing you sad I am more greeued, then if I had lost the moitie of dominions. In soth my Lord answered Agriola, now shall I be merry, seeing you intend to lone me Brother, for greater good cannot happen to mee then his gentle entreatance: and henceforth shall I treade vnder foote, the sad remembrance of my Countrey & parents, hauing him with mee, by whom

I

I hope to gaine my greatest comfort. So the Turke arysing from his Chayre, caused Palmerin and Laurana to accompanie Agriola, and the other fiue Knights hauing kissed his hand: hee went to his chamber, commaunding Olimael (for his greater honour) to bring her Agriola, who as she went, thus spake.

Beleiue me Admyrall, if I was offended when thou broughtest me Prisoner hether: thou hast now made mee sufficient amends, in that by this I enioye my Brother, whom I was out of all hope to see againe. Alas Madame, (quoth he) little did I thinke him to be such a one, for had I: his blage should haue bene much better, which fault I hope hereafter to recompence. I commend him to thy courtesie, saide Agriola, let him and his Friends haue all things they want, according as my Lord hath appointed. So taking her leaue of them, she entred her Chamber, where shee and Hyppolita conferred with Laurana, of all her fortunes passed, and the aduentures of her Brother. Now was Palmerin and his companions, by the Dukes commaundement, lodged neere the Pallace, and to each of them he sent a goodly Horse with costly Furniture, thinking by these meanes to conquer Agriola, and purchase that of her which hee long had desired, and talking with Palmerin, saide. Right well may you be brother to my Lady Agriola, in that your beautie and complexion deliners great likelyhood: Seeing then our Gods haue permitted, that for her comfort you should be brought hither: perswade her I pray yee, that she bee no longer repugnant to my will, for could I haue a Childe by her, I would think my selfe the happyest Lord on the earth. Beside, I would haue you forsake the folly of your Christianitie, and yelde your selfe to our Law, which is much better then yours: and you shall see how our Gods will fauour you, likewise what great good you shall receiue thereby. My Lorde (quoth Palmerin) I will labour with my Syster, so much as lies in me to doe, as for your Law as yet I am vnacquainted therewith: but when I shall finde it to be such

as you assure mee, easily may I be drawne thereto, and to serue you with such loialty, as so great an estate doth worthilie deserue. I confesse my selfe likewise greatly bounde to your Maiestie, in that you haue accepted my Sister as your Wife, and to me a poore slaue giuen both Life and Liberty, which I beseeche you also graunt the Marriners, in whose Vessell it was my chaunce to be taken, in so doing thee may be greatly moued by your magnificent liberalitie and mercie.

The great Turke presently gaue his consent, causing their safe Conduct to be openly proclaymed: So Palmerin and his Friends humbly departing to their Lodging, the Turke went to Agriolaes Chamber, where sitting downe by her, hee thus beganne. Now shall I perceiue Madame, how much your Brother may preuaile with you: For hee hath promised me so to order the matter, as you shal graunt my long desired suite. My Lorde (quoth she) my Brother shall commaund mee nothing, but I will do it with all my heart: as for your request, it is not in my power, but in the hand of God, who defendeth me as best him pleaseth. Nor can I chaunge the opinion I haue holde so long: though by hauing my Brother with mee, I enioy farre greater content then I did before.

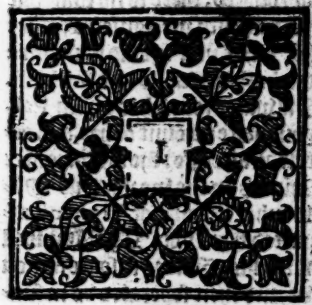
It sufficeth me (saide the Turke) to see you so well pleased, and as for your Brother, that you may perceyue howe well I loue him: before one Moneth bee expyred, I will make him the chiefest Lord in my Court, next mine owne person: so kissing the Princesse, he departed to his Chamber. The day following, Palmerin said to his companions. Yau see my Friendes, how friendly Fortune smileth on vs, but least she chaunge, as euermore she is wont: wee must practise some good meanes to escape from these Turkish Infidels. Beside, seeing we haue found the Princesse Agriolas I hope Trineus is not so secretly hidden, but we shall heare some tydings of him. Of her therefore will I enquire, if she know what became of him & Ptolome, when I left them:

ur

in meane while you may closelie conclude with our Mariners, that they be euer readie at an houres warning, for I hope we shall set hence before eight daies be past. Palmerin went to Agriolaes Chamber, and there by good hap hee found her alone: whom after he had humblie saluted, the Princesse thus spake to him. My noble Friende, you must be carefull how you speake to mee, especially before the aged Ladie you saw here yesterday, for she vnderstandeth all languages, and if we be discouered, there is no way but death: therefore when you se her with me, conferre rather with Laurana, and say to her what you would haue mee know, because she is a Ladie both vertuous and faithfull. No lesse (Madame) haue I alwaies found her, quoth Palmerin: therefore I beseech you make account of her, and acquaint her with your greatest affaires, for she is Daughter to one of the most gentle Princes in the world. But Madame, I would gladly know what became of Tryneus, after that so vnhappilie I departed from you. The Admirall Olimaell, quoth she, came with his Galleys so soone as you were departed, who toke vs, and then seperated vs in sunder: scant permitting me to speake to him or Ptolome, nor know I what is become of them. It sufficeth then Madame, answered Palmerin, that I haue found you, for on you dependeth the life of Trynens, who shall not long (I hope) be concealed from vs: therefore aduise your selfe on the day when you will depart, for I haue a Ship readie to carrie you from this seruitude. Thanks be to heauen, quoth she, for so good Fortune, I will be so ready as you shall not stay for me. Now entred Hyppolita, who brake off their talke to other occasions, where we will leaue, and returne to the Prince Tryneus.

CHAP XLII.

How Trineus being enchaunted into the shape of a Dog in the Isle of Malfada, there came a Princesse of the Moores, who requested him of the aged Enchantres, to whom he was giuen: and what happened to him afterward.



I Think as yet you remember, (without repetitions of the former discourse,) in what manner the Knight Cozin to the Admirall Olimaell, to whom ỹ prince Tryneus was giuen: arriued by tempest in the Isle of Malfada, and how hee with his people were transformed into diuers shapes of Beastes, among whom Trynens bare the likenes of a goodly Dogge. Being thus disguised, a young Princesse named Zephira, Daughter to the King of the same Countrie: came to demaunde counsell of the aged Enchauntresse Malfada, for the cure of a certaine disease, which by strange aduenture happened to her in this manner.

This young Princesse one day being pleasant in her Fathers Courte, among many of her wanting Ladies: entred a goodly Garden, which abounded with great diuersity of sweet flowers, and after she had walked a prittie while in an Arbour of Muske-roses, shee espied a Gille-flower, which seemed so faire and beautifull in her eye, as shee was prouoked to goe crop it from the stalke. Hauing this delicate flower in her hand, wherein (by misfortune) a venemous worme was crept, shee tooke such delight in smelling it:

it: as her breath drew vp the worme into one of her Nosethrilles, not being able to get it out againe. So the benome and Poyson of this little worme engendred a putrefaction, and other like Wormes, which gaue a smell so filthie and loathsome, as hardly could any abide to stand by her. Her Father not a little agrieued at this mischaunce, sent for the most skilfull Physitions, to know what remedie might be concluded vpon: but all their paine and trauell was in vaine, for the Disease continued still without any amendment. In the ende, the King fearing it would change to a Canker vncurable, and hauing heard what strange actions the Enchauntresse Malfada perfourmed: sent the Princesse Zephira to her, where shee being arriued without any daunger, because she would not hurte any inhabiting in the Ile, declared to the Sorceresse the whole manner of her misfortune.

The Enchauntresse answered that shee could giue her no remedie, and hardly should she finde any at all, except it were by an auncient Knight, who remained in the Courte of the King of Romara and Grisca, Realms Subiect to the Soldan of Persia, and the Knight was named Muzabelino. The Princesse was so displeased at this answer, seeing her intent frustrated, as shee would receyue no sustenance: wherefore walking in the fieldes, to expresse her anger, and so to the Sea side, where the Shippes lay confused, she beheld the Dogge which was the Prince Tyrrus, and so farre in liking was shee with him, as she desired the Enchauntresse to giue him her, and hauing obtained her requeste, returned to her Father, who lay sicke in one of his Cittyes called Nabor, whereof the whole Realme beare the name.

When the King saw his Daughter returned without cure, his melancholike conceit so stroke to his hart, as with in three dayes after he dyed. Hauing made his Testament before his decease, he gaue his Daughter as her portion a Cittie called Elain, one of the greatest e surest strengths in

the

the Realme, with all the Signories belonging thereto. To Maulerino his youngeſt Sonne, he gaue an other like portion, which was a dayes iourney diſtant from Elain. After the Kings Funerall rytes were ſollemnized, the Princeſſe with her Brother Maulerino, went to their owne poſſeſſions: doubting the furie of the Prince Tyreno, their Eldeſt Brother, who alwaies had ſhowne himſelfe proud and contentious.

She being thus in good quiet by herſelfe, took no other pleaſure then in playing with her Dogge, becauſe he ſeemed verie ſubtile and politique, ſo that ſhee prepared a Couche for him at her Beds feete. Tyreno beeing crowned King after his Fathers decealle, began greatly to deſpiſe that his Syſter ſhoulde enioy the fayreſt Cittie in the Kingdome: For which cauſe he cunningly practiſed all the meanes hee could to put her to death. And that he might the better compaſſe his miſchieuous purpoſe, he ſecretly ſent a Meſſenger to the Maiſter of the Princeſſes Dogges, that if hee would but conſiſtend to kill or poyſon his Brother and Syſter, he would giue him fiftie thouſand Seraphes, and make him Gouernour of Elain. The wicked Noble man, greedy and couetous, ſeeing the large promiſe of the Tyrant, conſented thereto: ſo that one night the Princeſſe being aſleepe, he entred her Chamber with his Sword drawne, there to haue murthered her, and afterward the Prince her Brother.

Tryneus, who had loſt nothing belonging to a man, but bodily ſhape and voice, ſeeing the Traytor enter his Ladies Chamber with his Weapon drawne, ſtarted vp preſently, and ſetting his two fore feete on the Villains breaſt, bit him ſo cruelly by the face and throat, as he being vnable to helpe himſelf, was conſtrained to crie out aloud. With this noiſe the Princeſſe awaked, and her Brother likewiſe, who lay in the next Chamber, comming in haſte to ſee the cauſe of this outcry: and knowing the Traytour, beat him ſo ſore with the pommell of his ſword about the ſtomacke, as in the end enforced him to confeſſe his Treaſon. Whereat Maulerino

not

not a little mercuailing, and wrathfull at his villainous intent, smote his head from his shoulders. In the morning he appointed such guard in the Citie, as no stranger might enter without great examination. The Princesse knowing how her Dog had saued her life, loued him afterward so tenderly, as she would feed him at her owne Table, and none but her selfe might giue him any food. Here will we likewise pursue a while, and declare the deliuerance of the Princesse Agriola.

CHAP. XLIII.

How the great Turk became enamoured with the Princesse Laurana, by meanes whereof he was slaine, and Agriola deliuered.

PAlmerin being vpon a day in his chamber with his companions, practising some meanes for the deliuerance of Agriola: the Princesse Laurana of Durace, came to them, framing her speeches in this maner. Gentlemen, if any of you bee desirous to deliuer vs from this cruell enemy, who holds vs in this thrall and bondage: I haue deuised the best meanes that may be, and thus it is. The Turke, the most luxurious and vnchaste man in the world, not contented with infinite number of Concubines, hath many times made loue to me, so that to compasse mine intent, I haue made him promise within three daies to graunt his request. In this time I haue intreated the Princesse Agriola to shew him the most disdainefull countenance that may be, which shee hath faithfully promised,

mised, and for this cause hath sent me to you, conuaye hence all the riches he hath giuen ye, and which heerher selfe will likewise sende ye: so that when the howre is come for me to fulfill his pleasure, one of you being priuilie armed, shall in my place murder him, in reuenge of the ill Christendome hath sustained, by the last vnhappie voyage of Olimaell, who determineth verie shortlie, as I vnderstand, to goe spoyle the Isle of Rhodes. Palmerin very glad of the Princesse notable inuention, thus answered: Because (Madame) I latelie promised the Turke, not to departe his Court, but to keepe him company, when he denyed his Admirall, that I and my companions shoulde goe with him to the Rhodes: I cannot be the man to end this worthy reuenge, therefore one of you (my Friendes) must resolue to performe it. In meane while, you Madame Laurana may returne to the Turke, pleasing him with faire and friendly speeches: for if neuer so little suspition bee gathered, not one of vs can escape with life. Feare not, said the Princesse, I will vse the matter so carefully as you can desire, right well know I how to enflame his hart with queint lookes, coy disdaines, feint yeeldings, and other such like ceremonies vsed in loue: as feare not you to prosecute the stratageme, in that a beginning so good, must needes forth to a successful ende. The young Duke of Pontus, who began to grow affectionate towardes the Princesse Laurana, said,

In sooth my Lord, so please you to commit the charge hereof to mee: so well hope I to execute the same for her sake that did so worthilie inuent it, as I dare warrant to deserue no reproch thereby. For my first earnest to gentle Loue, shall be so gracious, as in qualifying the vnlawfull heate of our enemie, I will bind my selfe neuer to loue any other: and her faith receiued, if I bring not his head to Madame Laurana, let me be accounted as one of the most slothfull knights that euer bare Armes. Aduertise me therefore of the place and howre, and doubt not of my faithfull

full performance. At this pleasant answer they all began to smile, whereupon Palmerin thus spake. Believe me noble Duke, considering your youth, and braue disposition, I know no one in this companie more meete for the Princesse Laurana, then you are: but I thinke when the appointed houre shall come, you will be a little more angrie with the Turke then her, if she haue you in that subiection as it seemes she hath. But let vs not now trifle the time in vaine, when such waighty occasions command your diligence.

So returned Laurana to the Princes Agriola, acquainting her with the knights determination, when not long after, the great Turke entred the Chamber, accompanied with Palmerin and the King of Sparta, and that he might the better speake to her he so earnestlie desired, he caused Palmerin to sit betweene him and Agriola, then turning to Laurana, he began to deuise familiarlie with her. Which when Palmerin and Agriola perceiued, the better to beguile him, he made a signe to the King of Sparta, that he should enter into some talke of handling tabret at the Turke presently arose, and taking Laurana by the hand, led her to the window, with these speeches. Mistresse of my hart, and the very faire'st creature that euer mine eyes beheld, will ye graunt the request I made to you yester day? See you not what great honor I haue done to Madame Agriola? Notwithstanding, if you will loue me, I will make you my Wife, that I may haue issue by you to succeed in my kingdome, and your honors shall be nothing inferiour to hers. And though she still denie me the fauour, wished with long and continuall pursuits I haue desired: yet doe you consider my griefe, and if in short time you vouchsafe me no pitie, the extreame afflictions I endure for your loue, are rated at the price of my life. God forbid, quoth Laurana, that so great a losse should come to the Orientall Empire by me, rather will I forget the accustomed regards of mine honor, to bee accepted into your grace and fauour. And the

cause

cause that made me deferre so long from this answer, was the feare I haue of Madame Agriola, and her Brother, to whom I was giuen by your Admirall after my Fathers decease.

But to the end my Lord, that none of them may suspect our loue, I thinke it conuenient that Hyppolita, who alway lieth in your Chamber: remoue her selfe to the Ladies attending on Agriola, and her shall you commaund to giue me the key of my Ladies Chamber, which hetherto she hath vsed to carrie. By this meane may I the more safely, and without suspition of any one, come in the night to fulfill your desire. The Turke imagining he had gained the Princesse loue indeede, was not a little ioyfull, wherefore he said.

So were it Lady, you shall haue the key as you request, nor shal she longer lodge in my Chamber, whom you feare so much. Moreouer, this night with I perswade Agriola, that I feele my selfe not halfe currant: and therefore to keepe her selfe in her owne Chamber, and so may you come boldly to me this night. If any one chaunce to meete yee, say, that I sent for you: and if they dare bee so bolde as to hinder your comming, in the morning shall my Janizaries put them to death, whatsoeuer they be. So taking a Ring from his finger, wherein was a Stone of inestimable value, he gaue it to the Princesse, saying. Holde Madame, take this as a pledge of my promise: for which Laurana humblie thanking him, thus replied. My Lord, I see Agriola hath foure or fiue times earnestly noted you. I thinke it good therefore, that we breake off talke: assuring you, that I will not faile at midnight, when euerie one is fast asleepe, to keepe my word, and in the Mantle which you sent mee yesterday, I will courtlie enter your Chamber, conditionally that you keepe your promise to me afterward.

Doubt not therof, said the Turke, and so taking his leaue of her, went presentlie to his Chamber, where finding Hyppolita, he commaunded her to take thence her bed, and

carry

carrie it to the Ladies Chamber, likewise taking the Keye from her, he sent it by one of his Pages to Laurana, who hauing it in hand, came laughing therewith to Palmerin, saying.

How say you my Lord, haue I not handled the matter as it should be: the Turke moued with pitie of our strait imprisonment, hath giuen me the charge of Madam Agriola: for by his Page hath he sent me the Key of her chamber, and Hyppolyta shall lodge now among other Ladies. And because this night the action must be fulfilled, doe you aduertise the Duke of Pontus, that at midnight he faile not to come, to vse Drunken Holofernes as he had deserued. Palmerin and the King of Sparta praising God, that their affaires went forward so luckilie: returned to their lodging, intreating Agriola to be ready at the houre, that their intent might not be hindered by her. Afterward they rehearsed to their companions, what was concluded by the Princesse Laurana: wherefore quoth he to the Duke, prepare to bring your Armour secretlie to Agriolaes Chamber, where you shall finde the King of Sparta and my selfe. Meane while, Frysoll, Olorico and Eustace, see that all our bagage be conueied into our Ship, which may safelie be done without suspect, considering what great multitude of Souldiers are embarquing, and therefore prouide all things readie against our comming. The howre being at hand, Palmerin, the King of Sparta, and the Duke of Pontus, went to the Princesse chamber, where the Duke was immediatlie Armed, except his Helmet, which he left on the table, couered with the Mantle whereof Laurana spake, putting on the attire the Princesse wore vpon her head, and so finely was he disguised in those habits, as in the dark he might be reputed rather a woman then a man, and beeing readie to depart about the practise, he said to Palmerin. I thinke it best my Lord, that you and the King of Sparta, conduct the Ladies before to the Porte: for if in mine attempt, I should happen to faile, yet should you lose but the

worst in your company. So importunate was hee with them to follow his aduise, as he caused them to depart presently to the Hauen, where they were ioyfully welcommed by Frysoll and the rest, without meeting any by the way to hinder them. When the Duke saw himselfe left alone, and now he was to dispose himselfe to his intent, falling on his knee, he thus spake.

O my God, that suffered the mightie Holofernes to bee beheaded by thy Seruant Iudith: afford me at this time the like grace, and giue me strength to worke his death, who is the greatest liuing enemy to Christians. This said, he went to the Turks Chamber, where he found the doore readie open, and approching the bed: the Turke (who verily thought it was Laurana) raised vp himselfe, and taking him by the arme, said. Welcome sweete Lady, for very long haue I expected thy comming. Ah Traytor, quoth the Duke, I am not the thou lookest for, regard of honour will not suffer her to come in such sort. With which words hee stabd him to the heart, and smiting off his head, wrapped it in the mantle that Laurana gaue him: so going to Agriolaes Chamber, and clasping on his Helmet, went presently to his Friends, whom hee found in prayer for his good successe, and throwing the heade into Lauranaes lap, said.

Madame, he that was so importunate for your dishonour, as a witnes of his loue to you, hath sent you his head heere by me: wherewith I present you so deuoutly, as hence forth I dedicate my life & seruice to your disposing. A thousand thanks my Lord, quoth the Princesse, this vertuous act hath made mee so constantly to bee yours: as in any thing that toucheth not the impeach of mine honor. I remaine with my vttermost endeuours to pleasure you. As the Duke would haue replied, the other Knights came to looke on the head, which when they had cast into the Sea, they presently hoised saile, and before day had gotten farre enough from thence.

In

In the morning, as the Mariners came from their Galleyes towards the Citie, they espied the heade floting on the water, and taking it vp, shewed it to their companions, to know if they could tell whose it was. When they beheld it so dreadfull, the mustachoes trouting out like stiffe bristles, and the locks of hayre hang thagging downe, they knew not what to think: and one of them hauing well marked it, said:

By all our Gods, if I bee not deceiued, this is the head of my Lord the great Turke: at which words all the other began to scorne and mock. Hyppolyta seeing faire Phœbus set forth the morning light, came to the Princesse Agriolaes Chamber, where not finding her nor Laurana, the chamber likewise dispoiled of many things: she doubted immediatly that they were fled, whereof to be resolued, she went to the great Turks chamber, and seeing the Pages standing at the doore, said: Why enter ye not? the houre is past, and my Lord is not yet risen. Lady, quoth they, as yet he hath not called vs, and you know that vpon night he forbad our entrance till we were called: it may bee he slept but badly this night, and therefore now is contented to take his rest. Feare, quoth she, some other matter then sleepe doth hinder his calling you, so thrusting open the doore, and entring the Chamber, saw the blood dispersed on the ground, and the headlesse trunche hanging beside the bed. with which sight they made a very pittifull outcrie, Wherat many noble men and Gentlemen came, who likewise beholding what had happened, ioyned with them in sorrowfull complaints. Soone was the report of this murder blazed through the Citie, so that Olimaell hearing thereof, ranne thither in all haste: where he was no sooner present, but Hyppolita thus began. Ah Olimael, thou broughtest the traitors hither that haue slain my Lord, and by thy meanes hath this treason been committed. By all our Gods, said one of the Turks Nephewes present, it is true: but because thou hast suffered Agriola, her Brother

and the other knights to escape, thou villaine shalt abie it deerely. So drawing forth his Semitarie, killed Olimsell therewith, saying. Such be their reward that trayterously betray their Soueraigne: mine Uncle of a poore Janizary made thee his chiefe Admirall, and thou for his kindnesse hast requited him with death, but now thy villainy is worthilie recompenced.

Olimsel thus slaine, his men ranne furiously on the Turks Nephew, and slew him, with fiftie knights beside that defended his quarrell: and had it not been for an ancient Balla, who with an hundred Souldiers came to part them, they were in daunger of a greater sedition, because they saw none pursue Palmerin and his companions.

The Balla that had thus pacified this tumult, by promises perswaded the Janizaries, and preuailed so well with them: as the same day he was declared yonger Brother to the Soldane deceased, and great Emperor of Turkie. Many iniuries did he to Christendome afterward, in reuenge of his Brothers death: which yet we will forbeare, to rehearse what happened to Palmerin and his companions being on the Sea.

CHAP.

CHAP. LXIIII.

¶ How Palmerin and his companions met two Turkish Ships, from whom they deliuered Estebon the Merchant and his Sonnes: and came to the Isle of Malfada, where Palmerin lost them all, and of the sorrow he made for this mishap.



Aurana was so ioyfully, that shee had so fortunately escaped the Turkes hands, and beside was so reuenged of her chiefest enemy, as nothing could yeelo her greater contentation: but how much more would she haue reioyced, if she had beheld the slaughter at the Pallace? As the sat discoursing hereon with Palmerin and the Duke of Pontus, Fryssoll being aloft on the decke, espied foure Shippes comming towards them with full saile: whereupon he called to his companions, that they should presently arme themselues. For (quoth he) I see two Rouing Ships, and they haue taken two other, or else my iudgement faileth: let vs therefore labour to withstand them, lest we sustaine a further danger.

No sooner had hee spoken these words, but they all put themselues in readinesse, so that when the enemie closed with them, and many entred the Ship, thinking it was yealden: they had a sharper entertainement then they expected, for not one escaped aliue that came aboord, but either were slaine or throwne into the Sea. In briefe, they ouercame both the Pirats, and left not one aliue to carrie tydings hereof into Turkie. Afterward, as Palmerin searched

the Cabins, to see what Prisoners the Moores had taken: he espyed his Maister Estebon, the Marchaunt of Hermida, and his two Sonnes by him, with two other Merchaunts chayned by the hands and necke, in like sort as are the poore Slaues in the Galleyes: Whereupon he saide:

Trust me Maister, hee that put this Coller about your Necke, was little acquainted with your honest humanitie. So looking vp and downe, for the bunch of Keyes, that opened the Locks of the chaynes, he espyed a Turkish Mariner, who fearfull of his life had hid himselfe: to whome hee said: By God, villain, if thou shewest me not quickly where the Keyes are, I will send thy soul after thy fellowes. Spare my life most noble Knight, cried the Turke, and I will giue ye not onely the Keyes, but also shew you such secrets herewithin, as no other now but my selfe can shew ye, wherein is infinite wealth and riches.

Dispatche then (saide Palmerin.) The Moore fetching the Keyes, opened the Locks, tooke off their Chaynes, and brake the Manacles bound about their Hands: when Palmerin, lifting his Eyes to Heauen, saide: Thankes to my God, that so happily sent mee to succour Estebon, by whose meanes I came to the knowledge of my Friends and Parents, and who first gaue me Horse and Armor for Knightly seruice. Estebon hearing Palmerins words, marueilling not a little, fell on his knee, saying, I beseech you my Lorde to tell me your Name, to the end I may be thankful to him, by whom I haue escaped those cruell infidells, and receiued such an vnspeakable benefit. Why Maister (qd. Palmerin) know you me not? I am your Seruant Palmerin, who you first prouoked to follow Armes by your liberalitie: and euer since haue I followed that profession, and now haue requited some parte of your kindnesse. Ah my Noble Friend Palmerin, said olde Estebon, suffer me to kisse thy hand, for if heretofore thou didst deliuer me from the Lyons throate: what may I say of this danger, from which I am now defended? In happie howre was that Knightly Furniture

giuen

giuen, and with successefull fortune haue you imployed them: but may it please yee to goe with me, I will prouide you of all things necessarie, and giue you my Sonnes here to be your Seruants.

The King of Sparta seeing Estebon vse such zealous speeches, said to him. Father, you are very much deceiued, imagine you the Sonne to the Emperour of Constantinople, a simple Souldiour: your age (Father) makes you forget your selfe. At these words the good old man somwhat astonied, excused himself to the King, and turning to Palmerin, said: Alas, my Lord, in not knowing you otherwise then one of my Seruants, I haue offered your excellencie very great wrong: and great hath beene my desert of punishment, vsing the great Lord of Greece so vnreuerently: But pardon my boldnesse, noble Lord, and let mine ignorance excuse the offence committed: for vnwittingly did I fall into this error. Content thy selfe, good Master, quoth Palmerin, in nothing hast thou offended mee: but if thou wilt returne to thy Countrey, these Vessels belonging to the Moores, and all the treasure in them, will I franckelie bestow on thee. Ah my Lord, answered Estebon, since Fortune hath so happily brought mee into your companie, so please you to licence me, loth am I to depart from you: for such store of Theeues and Robbers are on the Seaes, as hardly can I escape their hands alive. And sorrie would I be, said Palmerin, that you or these Merchants should any way miscarie, though perhaps your Wiues would gladly haue ye at home: but this I must tell yee, that I cannot returne to Constantinople. I shall be contented, said Estebon, to stay your good leysure: for a poore life is better to me in this company, then welthy possessions among mine enemies.

Hereupon, Palmerin commanding all the riches in the Moores Shippes, to be conuaied into the other, set fire on the Vessels, and hoysing saile, rode on merily. Within three daies after arose a mightie winde at North-East,

which caried them with such violence: as the Pilots tolde Palmerin they were now come on the borders of Persia, and very neere the Isle of Malfada, where they arriued before the Sunne setting. They seeing the Countrey so faire and delectable, would needes goe one shore to refresh themselues: for the Ladies were so distempered with the rough stormes, as they were very desirous to recreate themselues a little.

Palmerin not able to shun this fatall chaunce, went on shore with his Friends and the two Princesses, all the other likewise speedily following them, where they had not long staied, but they were all diuersly enchaunted. The two Ladies were transformed into the shape of Hindes, the other to Dogges, Wolues and Leopards, all of them running with such swiftnes, as though the Furies had stood to chase them: but Palmerin could not be enchaunted, by reason of the gift hee receiued of the three wise Sisters on the Mountaine Artisæria, whereat he greatly grieued, for such was his impatience thus to lose his Friends, as hee entred into these lamentations.

Ah peruerse and vnconstant Fortune, how diuers and daungerous are thy treacheries? Ah stepmother to cruel, why dost thou not exercise thy rage on simple and forsaken soules, but on such as exceede in honor and vertue? Doubtlesse my sinne hath caused this mishap, when I perswaded my Friends to goe against their Christian Brethren, only by feare of my wretched life. As he stood thus complaining, he beheld the Ladie of the Isle with her Seruants, comming to take the spoyle of their bootie: whereof being ioyfull, and thinking by her meanes to finde some succour, he ran apace towards her, and falling on his knee, thus spake. Alas noble Ladie, if euer pittie had power to moue ye: instant use how to recouer my companions, and two worthy Ladies transformed into brute Beastes. Malfada swelling with anger, to see that hee was not likewise enchaunted, answered. Wretched knight, accursed bee

their power that defended thee from my incantations, liue not thou in hope to finde anie remedie heere: for these enchauntments are of such strength, as they may not be vndone, but by the most skilfull magitian in the world, which thou art not I am well assured, and therefore dost thou but loose thy labour. But because by mine arte I cannot be reuenged on thee, some other meanes will I seeke for thy destruction. You therefore my seruants, lay hands on him, and carrie him to the darkest of my prisons: that his following daies may be spent in greater miserie. Uncourteous and despightfull, quoth Palmerin, are these speeches, especiallie comming from one that vaunteth of her knowledge, nor can the be measured by loue or charitie: and therefore shall I chastise such bad creatures, as refuse a matter no way hurtfull to them selues, but wherin their owne honour might be discerned. Herwith with which words he smote her heade from her shoulders, and valiantly buckling with the other, in the ende left not one to carrie reporte of this massacre: afterward he fell into his lamentations againe in this manner.

Infortunate Palmerin, seest thou not how mishap will neuer leaue thee: for where thou thoughtest with comfort to finde thy Brother Tryneus, now hath Fortune ouerwhelmed thee with a whole world of mischaunces. Ah noble Agriola and gentle Laurana, two of the most modest Princesses that euer the earth bare, how may you iustlie blame me: bringing you from where you liued in honor, in this accursed place to bee transformed to brute Beastes. Neuer did Circes deale so cruelly with Grillus, and other Souldiers to the wise Vlysses: as this villanous olde hag hath done with me. Had you yet been altered to Lyons or Tygers, you might haue defended your selues from the cruelties of other Beastes: but this damned Sorceresse hath transformed you, to the most fearefull and timerous among all other creatures, and therefore subiect to euerie inconuenience.

Ah loyall companions who loued me deerer then your Father or Brother: from the Turke that cherished you with such kindnes and loue, haue I brought you to the cruell and mercileſſe Malſada. My noble Friend and Brother Fryſoll, what now will auaile thy haughtie Chiualrie: And gentle Prince Olorico, who for my ſake forſoke Coūtrie, Parents, Friends and all: how maiſt thou iuſtly condemne me of infamous reproch? What anſwer ſhall I make to mine Aunt Ariſmena, for her noble Huſband the King of Sparta? And vertuous Duke of Pontus, a Knight of high and eſpeciall qualitie: greatly maiſt thou blame thy fortune to be acquainted with me. Not forgetting the magnanimious Prince Euſtace, how can I excuſe thy hard hap to the good old Duke of Mecena thy Father? Had it pleaſed the Soueraigne Creator of all things, that among you my ſelfe had taken the ſtrange ſhape, my quiet would haue bēn the better, to accompanie you with mishappe, as I haue done in good fortune. Ah ſweete Siſter Armida, little thinkeſt thou what offence thy Brother Palmerin hath committed: and gracious Miſtreſſe Polynarda, what torment will this bee to your heauenlie thoughts, when you ſhall underſtand the ſumme of my ill ſucceſſe: Wandering along in theſe mones, he came to the Enchantreſſe Caſtell, where at the Gate he ſaw two Damſels, who humbly ſaluting him, ſaid. Welcome, Sir Knight, heere may you repoſe your ſelfe if you pleaſe. Alas Ladies, quoth he, it is now no time for me to reſt, becauſe the Ladie of this place I think, being the moſt ingrate and deſpightfull woman that euer I ſaw, hath depriued mee of all my ioy and comfort: but I hope I haue ſo well paide her for her paines, as hereafter ſhe ſhall doe no further harme. Yet if any of you haue been ſo well inſtructed by her, as to finiſh the diuellish coniurations, and will accompliſh it, or tell me, if by force they may be reduced to their former ſhapes, who remaine enchaunted here in this Iſland: for euer will I bee her Knight, and will preferre her in honour be-

yond

yond all other of her race. The Damosells, (who thought they Ladyes cunning had brought him thither, that thee might abuse him, and afterwards transforme him as was her custome) being amazed at this answere, thus spake. Accursted Villaine, of an euill death muyst thou die, whom our Mistresse by her Artificial skill cannot transforme, now know we that thou hast murthered her: but assure thy selfe to finde vs thy two most mortall enemies, and though wee can chaunge thy Friendes to their former shapes, yet in despight of thy Villany, we will not, nor shalt thou know how it may be done.

Away Strumpets (quoth he) get yee going, or else I will sende your soules after your Mistresse: and were it not a disgrace to mine honour, to defile my hands with the blood of such wicked creatures: By Heauens I would cut ye as small as flesh to the pot. Then came a Knight forth of the Castell, who embracing Palmerin, said: My Lord Palmerin, what crosse Fortune hath brought you into this accursed Island? Palmerin seeing such strange euents succeede one an other, knew not what to imagine: but at length returned this answer. You must hold me excused Syr, for in truth I know ye not: Why my Lord (quoth the Knight) haue you forgotten Dyardo, whose life you defended in the King of Bohemiaes Court? By Heauen (said Palmerin) I could not call you to remembraunce; But tell mee good Knight, what aduẽture brought you hither? For my chance hath beene so vnfortunate, as the rehearsall would be most dolorous. Then Dyardo declared, how the King had sent him with some small assistance, to pursue the Foyles of the Moyth Pyrates, who had done many iniuries to his Subiects. And (quoth hee) after I had long time chased them, fiue other Galleyes came, and ioyning with them, tooke me, and slue all my men.

At length, by tempestuous weather, we were cast on this Isle, where we landing to seeke fresh-water, all the Mores were changed into Harts, Dogs, and Boyes: but the Lady spa-

ſparing mee in regard of amorous deſire, hath kept mee in this Caſtell a yeare and more, abuſing mee at her owne pleaſure, and neuer could I compaſſe any meanes to eſcape hence againe, for if I hadde but made offer neare the Gate, by forcible ſtrokes haue I bene beaten backe, yet not able to diſcerne who ſmote me.

Your hap (quoth Palmerin) hath bene very hard, but her curſſed head lying on the ſhore ſide, perſwades me heereafter ſhe ſhall doe no more harme. But tell mee good Dyardo, is there no one within ſo ſkilfull in her Magicall Science, as we may winne to doe vs ſome good? Not one (anſwered Dyardo) therefore I am loth you would ſtay long here, in doubt of further daunger. I will then (ſaid Palmerin) go ſeeke ſuch a one as ſhall ende theſe Enchauntments: and becauſe you ſhall not be iniuryed by anie in the Caſtell, we will make them faſt in Priſons till my returne. After they had ſo done, they went to the Stable, where Dyardo gaue Palmerin a luſty Courſer, and taking leaue of him, fet forwards on his iourney.

CHAP. XLV.

¶ Howe Palmerin departing from the Iſle of Malfada, came to the Court of the Princeſſe Zephyra, ſhe that kept Trynens transformed: where hee was entertayned to ayde her againſt her eldeſt Brother, who vexed her with daylie troubles.

SOone as Palmerin had thus left the Iſland of Malfada, and had that daye paſſed through a very daungerous Riuer: the ſame night he came to a little Village, where taking vp his Lodging, he fell in talking with his Hoſte in the Arabian tongue, if hee knewe any one that

that was expert in Nigromancie: I knowe none (quoth the Hoste, but an olde Lady in an Iland hard by, to whom our Princesse not long since went, for remedy of a straunge disease, wherewith she is tormented. Where abideth your Princesse (said Palmerin?) Not past thirtie miles hence, (quoth the Host) in a Cittie called Elain. Perhaps (queth Palmerin) by her meanes I may be better resolued. So biding his Hoste good Night, withdrewe himselfe into his Chamber, where many Imaginations passed him concerning the Princesse Zephira.

It may bee (quoth hee within himselfe) that the Enchhantresse vnable to helpe her, hath yet assigned her by direction, vnto some other man, more expert in that Diuellish science: who compassing her health, happily may giue me some counsell to amend my misfortune. In this opinion the nert morning he rode to the Cittie of Elain, heauy and sad, yet in hope of comfort: and as hee came nere the Cittie, hee was inclosed with two or three hundreth Light Horsemen, whom the Prince Maulerino, Brother to Zephira had there Embushed, to take all Auaunt-corrers and Knights passing by them. Yet obserued they these conditions, that who so would take the Princes Paye, and sweare faithfull seruice, should sustaine no harme: but such as refused so to do, were carryed into the Cittie, their Horsse and Armour taken from them, and they inclosed in strong Prison. These Wores were amazed to see Palmerin so richly Armed, and much more beholding him so brauely mounted, wherefore they said to him:

Yeeld your selfe Syr Knight, and sweare to maintaine our Princes quarrell: else be assured thy Death is present. The condition is very hard (said Palmerin) but for I haue heard the wrong offered by the King to your Princesse: I will sustaine her cause, not as a Prisoner enforced heereto, but of mine own good will, as all Knights Errant are bound by dutie, to defende the iust Quarrell of distressed Ladyes. Presently was Palmerin brought to the Princesse, and her

Bro-

Brother, who were conferring togeather about these earnest affayres: when the Knight that conducted Palmerin, kept to the Prince Maulerino, and thus spake. See here my Lorde a Knight lately taken, whom for that wee haue found honest and courteous, wee haue suffered him to remaine Armed, and commit him to your opinion. While the Knight continued these speeches, transformed Tryneus, who lay at the Princesses Foote, seing Palmerin with his Beuer open, ran and leaped on him, whining and fawning on him so lovingly, as euery one greatly maruelled thereat. In briefe, they might discerne by his eyes, colling about his legs, and pittifull mourning, that faine he would haue spoken, and shewed his loyall Friende his inward complainings. The Princesse marueling at this strange occasion, said. I thinke (Syr Knight) my Dogge knowes you, for since Malfada gaue him me, I neuer could see him so fawne on any body. In sooth Madame (answere Palmerin) to my remembraunce, I neuer saw your Dog before this present. Herevpon shee called him to her, and made many meanes that he shuld come to her, yet he would not leaue Palmerin, but shaking his head still whyned to his Friend, as craving aide and succour at his hand, wherewith the Princesse moued, thus spake.

I pray thee Knight conceale not any thing from mee, for I perswade my selfe, that thou hast beene heretofore some great Friend to the Enchauntresse Malfada, seing my Dogge is so loath to come from thee. Let mee vnderstand the trueth I pray thee, and if thou likewise wilt assist me against my cruell Brother, thou shalt be Honourably vsed, and thy ordinary Pay redoubled. Madam (answered Palmerin) heere you may beholde the most distressed Knight liuing, and a Christian, whose hard fortune hath bene such, as arriuing in the Enchauntresse Isle whereof you spake: I haue lost fiue Friends, my true and honorable companions, and with them two Ladyes, who in all Vertues may not be equalled. Yet haue I reuenged their losse on the old

Hagge

hagge and her seruaunts, whose breathlesse bodies remain for foode to the foules of the aire. And because I heard (faire Princesse) your selfe was not long since with her, for counsell in some vnhappie fortune befallen you, faine would I know, may it please you to graunt me so much fauour, if shee assigned you to any other more skilfull then her selfe, by whom you not alone shall find remedie, but my tormenting greefes may likewise bee comforted. Good Knight, answered the Princesse, the Gods themselues will trauaile to helpe thee, and it may be I haue learned of her, by whose death thou hast reuenged the wrong of manie noble persons: some hope of further good, to ease those passions which thy speeches bewraie. True it is, that I stayed with Malfado the space of eight days, yet not learning anie thing of her worthie the rehearsall, this one slie excepted: she told me that in the Kings Court of Crisca and Romata, remained an auncient Knight named Muzabelino, by whom (if my maladie were curable) I should finde help, and by no other man whatsoeuer; so did she extoll him beyond all other. And had not the King my Father died some after my returne, and my iniurious brother euer since molested mee: long ere this had I gone to that skilfull man, whom I meane to finde, so soone as I can bring my troubles to anie good ende. By all our Gods, quoth the Prince Maulerino, seeing Malfada is deade, Muzabelino may finish all the enchantments: but duping her life, neither he nor all the Magitians in the world were able to compasse it.

As for the Kingdome of Romata, it is very farre from this Countrey: the greater will your paine and daunger be in trauailing thither. Right pleasant will the paine be to me, said Palmerin, so may I recouer my dearest Freends againe: and for you sweete Madame will I aduenture my life, either to winne you peace with your Brother, or a happie victorie by his death, that wee may the sooner set forward to Romata.

A thousand thankes good knight, quoth the Princesse, and this day shall we know what our Brother intendeth: if peace, it is welcome, if warre, we must defend our selues so well as we may. Still did the dogge cling about Palmerins feete, so that hee demaunded of the Princesse, if shee brought him from the Isle of Malfada, for doubtlesse, quoth he, I thinke it be some knight transformed by that cruell woman, who heretofore belike hath knowne me. At which words the dog howled exceedinglie, when Palmerin, tooke an oath that hee would search all the world ouer, to finde some meanes to bring him to his former shape, that he might know from whence this loue proceeded. The next day the King Tyreno assaulted the Cittie, who was slaine in the battaile by Palmerin, so afterward was Maulerino crowned King of Nabar, and all the Countrey enioyed their former quiet: whereupon the Princesse Zephira gaue Palmerin her dogge, who requited her with manie gracious thanks, because he greatlie suspected, that it was his freend Tryneus transformed into that shape: but now let vs returne to the Soldane of Babilon, vnderstanding how his Armie was discomfited at Constantinople.

CHAP

CHAP. XLVI.

How one of the Nephewes to the King of Baliſarca, brought newes to the Soldan of his Vncles death, the foyle of his Armie, the loſſe of Palmerin and Olorico. And how the Princeſſe Alchidiana brought Ptolome, whom ſhe greatly honored for Palmerins ſake.

THe King of Baliſarca, (as you haue heard before) being ſlaine, his Armie diſcomfited, and all his Galleys burnt before Conſtantinople, one of his nephewes that kept the ſtraite of the Boſphor with two Foyſtes, leaſt any ſuccour ſhould come that way to the Chriſtians, by one Gally that eſcaped, heard all this misfortune: wherefore making haſte backe againe, fearing to be taken, at length arriued in the Soldans Kingdome, where not ſtaying long, he poſted to the Court, and to the Soldane reuealed all that had happened. When the Soldane heard how his Army was thus ouerthrowne, Palmerin whom hee loued ſo well, and the Prince Olorico loſt in the ſtorme on the Sea: vexed with griefe and rage, he called his Lord Ambaſſadour Maucetto to him, ſaying: Haſte thee good Maucetto to my Brother the Soldane of Perſia, and deſire him to leuey me a ſtrong Armie againſt the Moneth of March next enſuing, to encounter with the Emperour of Greece: promiſing him the ſpoile whatſoeuer it be, reſerning for my ſelfe nothing but the fame of reuenge.

Mau-

Maucetto departed presentlie on his iourney, and by the waie met fiue Moores, leading two Christians to the Soldans Court to sell, which were Ptolome and Colmelio of whom he demaunded wherefore they were so bounde in chaines:

My Lord, quoth one of the Moores, they be Christian slaues, who not long since were taken at the Sea by Olimaell Admirall to the great Turke. And how came you by them? said Maucetto. The Admirall, quoth the Moore, gaue them to one of his Cosines, now is dead, and his wife beeing loath to keepe them anie longer, sends them to the Court to be sold for monie. Maucetto bought Colmelio of them, refusing Ptolome because hee was somewhat sicklie, and so passed on his Embassage. The Moores comming to the Court with poore Ptolome, and placing him among other slaues that stood to be solde, there came a deformed Moore, far worse mishapen the was Thersites the Greeke, and he would needes buy Ptolome of the Merchant: but Ptolome disdaining to be subiect to so vile a creature, gaue him such a stroke on the stomacke with his fiste, as made him tumble ouer backward, saying, Thou monstrous Villaine, let me rather die, then come into thy subiection. At this instant passed by the Princesse Alcidiana, smileing to see the Moore lie along: but when she beheld the good personage of Ptolome, shee remembred her louer Palmerin, and was therewith mooued thus to speake, How durst thou take such hardines vpon thee, beeing a bondslaue and a captaine, thus to strike a Moore, free of this Countrey: Ptolome perceiuing by the Ladies attending on her, that shee was the Soldanes Daughter, falling on his knee, thus answered.

Assuredlie Madame, rather desire I death, then to liue at such an ill fauoured villaines controll, my selfe beeing a Knight at armes. Are you then a Knight: said the princesse. I am good Madame, quoth he, although my seruitude hath very much altered mee. Alcidiana without any further

question

questions, deliuered the Merchant two hundred Bezaphes, and by two of her Sisters caused him to bee conducted to her Chamber, where he was presently disrobed of his vnseemelie garments, and clothed in such as well became a Knight to weare, afterward, shee commanded her attendants to depart the chamber, and comming to Ptolome, she thus he spake.

Sowe Sir Knight, I intreate you by the holy faith you owe to your best beloued, that you will truely tell mee, by what misfortune you happened first into this Iland. Madame, quoth he, seeing of your owne grace and bounty, you haue deliuered me from these villaines that made sale of my life: I will not faile with you in any one point, but tell you a Historie repleat with wonderful sorrow. Hauing reuealed the manner of his taking, and all the mishaps hee endured euer since, the teares trickling downe his cheekes, he said. And yet sweet Lady, all these passed miseries, and still abiding your slaue, grieues me not so much, as the losse of my dearest Friend, the best Knight in the world, who went to see his Falcon flie, when the Pirats came and vnhappily tooke vs. Well me good Friend, quoth the Princesse, what may the Knight bee called, of whom you make such estimation? Quoth Ptolome, hee nameth himselfe Palmerin d'Oliua.

O soueraigne Gods, said Alchidiana, haue you beene companion to the noble Palmerin? What haue I in truth Madame, quoth he, and know more of his affaires then any other man doth. Vnhappie that I am, said the Princesse, now see I well that I am deceiued in all my hope. Say good Knight, nay more. I coniure thee by thy faith to the soueraigne Creator of all things, to tell me, if hee be of our Law, and hath beene dumbe of long, or no? By God Madame, answered Ptolome, your admiration is such, as rather will I make a sacrifice of my selfe, then bee found vntrue to you in any thing. Hee is a Christian, borne in Greece, and neuer had defect in his speech: if discreet conside-

ration of following euents, either to escape captiuitie or death, did not enforce him to feigne such a deceite, for hee is most expert among all other, in dissembling any matter may turne him aduantage. Then such hath been my fortune, quoth Alchidiana, as his vertus, bounty, and wise foresight, vsed for the space of a yeare and more in my Fathers Court, made me so religiously vowed to him in loue, as I neuer intend to make other choise: and I sweare by al Gods, that if I heare not the better tydings of him by thee, my spirit will forsake this wretched bodie, and expect better fortune among the soules in Elisium. Ah imperious loue, how wonderfull is thy stroke: My Friende is contrarie to me in law and profession, a Knight errant, vnknowne, absent from mee, and loues me not: for these occasions, were I the onelie Daughter to the great Emperour of Turkie, I neither can or will change my former opinion.

Hap then what shall, and let my Father make an oblation of my bloud to his secret Idoll, I will not desist from louing him. And thou my friend (quoth she) to Ptolome, because thou hast not hid the truth from mee, bee thou at this instant free, and vse thy libertie as thou pleasest: for rather let me abide the death, then the companion to my noble Lord suffer shame by mee. Ptolome falling on his knee, humbly kissed her hande, and beganne to reueale the Knightlie chiualrie, that Palmerin and Trineus somtime did in England: likewise how they brought the Kinges Daughter from thence, who remained captiue among the Turks, and her Husband giuen as slaue to the Admirals Cozin. It is enough said the Princesse, talk to me no more heereof, for by the great God, the very remembrance of him is greater griefe to me, then the mercilesse seruitude a poore slaue endureth. The loue he bare to you, to the other Knight, and the yong English Princes, whose misfortune I cannot sufficiently bewaile: calleth me hence to trauell in search of him, and may I find him with them, right

glad

right gladsome will the iourney be to me, because he is the onelie darling and fauorite of fortune. And now shall I tell you how I meane to colour mine intent. My Father not knowing your captiuitie, to him shall I say how you are the onelie companion to Palmerin, and hither are you come to seeke him, as hauing heard before that hee remained in your seruice: of this I dare assure you his Maiestie so deerelie loueth Palmerin, that hee will deliuer you all things necessarie for his search, be it by land or Sea. And if your God shall fauour you so much, as in your trauaile you happen to finde him, or else to send me certaine tidings of him: you doo me the greater honour, that euer Knight did to distressed Lady. So forward was the Princesse in her amorous desire, and loth to waste time with tedious delay: as that day she acquainted her Father therewith, and so cunningly she plaid the Oratrix, as the Soldane gaue Ptoleme Armour, Horses, Seruants, and forty Knights to attend on him. Beside, he furnished him with two great Ships, that he might enquire at all the Ports on the Sea for Palmerin.

The day being come of his departure, hee tooke his leaue of the Soldane, the Princesse Alchidiana accompanying him to the Porte, where for her adieu shee gaue him a sweet kisse, saying: Sir Knight, if your fortune be such as to bring me the man, who only hath power to mittigate my torments: beside the continuall fauours of a Princesse, I will make you one of the greatest Lords in the Orient. Madame (quoth he) I will doe my diligence, and till I returne let good hope perswade ye. So hoysing saile they set to sea, where we will leaue him till he met with Palmerin.

CHAP. XLVII.

How Palmerin and the Princesse Zephira, departed from Elain towards Romata, to seek Muzabelino, and what happened by the way in their iourney.

AFter that Maulerino was crowned King of Mabor, the rebellious Subiects brought to obedience, and the bodie of the same King Tyreno enterred: the young Princesse Zephyra and Palmerin, thought long to set forward on their iourney, wherefore the King allowing them a verie honourable traine, bequeathed them to their desired fortune. Hauing passed many Regions, and sundrie daungers incident in trauaile, thirtene of a Basiliske, whom Palmerin with the helpe of the dog Tyreus valiantly ouercame, at length they entred the Realme of Romata, whereby commandement of the King Abimar, their entertainement was according to their estate: the occasion thereof being thus. This King Abimar holding the greatest possessions in that Region, would neuer yeelde himselfe as subiect to the signorie of Persia: whereat the Soldan now growing offended, sent an Ambassadour to commaund him, presentlie to determine of his obedience, or els he would ouerrun his Countrey with a mighty Army, and put both old and young to the Sword. Abimar abashed at this threatning Embassage, demaunded counsel of the wise Muzabelino, what answer he should make the Ambassador, whereto the Magitian thus answered. Feare not my Lord the threatning menaces of the Soldã, for

for in that you haue two noble Dames, to wit, the Prince Tomano and Drumino, Knights of high and special account: yet come there two others, (one whereof may not be knowne) with the Princesse Zephyra, Daughter to the King of Nabor, who shall deliuer you from his tirannie, and make him your Friend; therefore dismay not to send him a hardie answer, as well becometh a Prince free, and not be commanded. And though one of the Knights that commeth with the Princesse, shal a while be vnknowne to you, by the bountie of his companion, with whom no other may well compare: yet ere long you shall know him, to your no little ioy and contentation. Abimar giuing credit to Muzabelinos speeches, gaue charge in all the Cities where through the Princesse should passe, that she should be entertained with honorable tryumpes, as if himselfe had been in companie. And though the Prince Tomano grieued hereat, who loued the youngest Daughter to the Soldan of Persia, yet the King answered the Ambassador: that he would maintaine his right by the Sworde, and if the Soldane came to assaile him, hee would defend his Countrey so well as he could.

The Ambassadour dispatched with this answere, Tomano came to Muzabelino, saying. Ah my deare Friende Muzabelino, what wrong haue you done mee, in perswading my Father to hold warre with the Soldane: whose Daughter you know I loue in such sort, as if I obtaine her not in mariage, hardly can my life long endure. Content your selfe my Lord, answered Muzabelino: for if the two Knights that come, bring fortune for your father, you must expect the like for your selfe. But, said the Prince, may I not know their names? Let it suffice (quoth Muzabelino) what I haue said, yet hereof I dare assure you, that they are Christians, and extract of the greatest linage on the earth, in bountie and valour incomparable: whereof if you list to make experience, and thereby to credit what I haue said beside, I shall shew you a meane auaileable for

the purpose. You shall cause two Tents to be erected by the Cedar Fountaine, which is halfe a mile distant from this Citie, in the one of them let be your Brother Drumino and your selfe, with tenne of the best Knights in your Fathers Court, and in the other let be your Sister, accompanied with ten of her chiefest Ladies, and about a bow shot from thence towards the high way side, you shal set vp a Marble Pyllar, whereon let these lines be engrauen.

Sir Knight, in these pauillions doth remaine,
A Lady faire, kept by a Princes sonne:
Foyle him by Ioust, and winne her hence againe,
Thou maist not passe before the deede be donne.

If it happen that they passe by and see not the Pyllar, send one of the Ladies to them, to let them vnderstande, that they may not passe, before one of them hath Iousted with the Prince and his Knights. If they bee vnhorsed by him, the Lady must be deliuered to him: yet with this condition, that he refuse not to graunt her one demaunde. By Mahomet, said Drumino, husband to the Ladie, I wil not meddle in this matter, he may be such a one, as if hee hap to winne my Wife, he will be loth to restore her back againe. Feare not that (quoth the Magitian) hee is so courteous, and hath so faire a Friend himselfe, as hee neither may, or will withhold her. By heauen, said Tomano, I will rope with him, and to morrow let the Piller and pauillions bee erected, there wil I with my companions stay his cõming: See here the cause why the King Abimar, commaunded the Princesse Zephira and her Knights to be so honorablie entertained. By this time is the Princesse come within a dayes iourney of Romata, and Tomato with his Brother, Sister, Ladies and Knights, betake themselues to the pauillions, hearing that Zephira was come so neere, and be-

ing

ing themselues Armed, their Sister decked likewise in most sumptuous ornaments, they vowed to breake many Launces for her sake.

CHAP. XLVIII.

How Palmerin Iousted against Tomano, Drumino, and their Knights, whom he all dismounted, and what entertainement the King Abimar, and the wise Nigromanner Muzabelino made them.

By this time is the Princesse with Palmerin and her company, come to the place where the pauillions were erected, and not seeing the Piller, they passed on: wherefore Tomano sent a Damosell to declare the conditions of the passage. Palmerin feigning himself somewhat wearie, made this answere. Damosel, you may say to the Prince and his Knights, that the Princesse Zephyra is not in our guarde, as the Ladie hee fights for abideth with him. Nor comes shee hither to be fought for, rather doth she intreate him to spare vs the Ioust, in that it will be small honour to him to conquer Knights ouerlabored in trauaile, and whose Horses are not able for that exercise.

The Damosell certifying the Prince of this aunswere, he grew into anger, swearing they should not passe before they tried their fortune: wherefore hee sent the Damosell againe, who thus spake to Palmerin. Sir Knight, your excuses may not serue you, you must either Ioust, or leaue the Princesse behinde you. Trust me Damosel, answered Palmerin,

merin, for ie would I be to accompany her so farre, & leaue her in the custody of one I know not, did your Prince shew more courtesie, it would agree much better with his order: but because hee shall not thinke, that we refuse the Ioust through feare or cowardise, say hee shall haue his desire both he and all his shall trie their fortune ere we passe further.

This answere returned to the Prince, Drumino first shewed himselfe in the Field, and by importunate intreaty, certaine of the Princesses Knights would first try their valour: but such was their ill fortune, as Crumino vnhorsed them one after another. Zephira somewhat offended heereat, entreated Palmerin either to win them passage, or else with his succesle she was content to stay prisoner. I goe Madame (quoth Palmerin) and Fortune speede mee, as I regard the safetie of your honor. Muzabelino, hauing acquainted the King with this pastime, they came in habits disguised to behold it, at what time the Prince Drumino encountred Palmerin. But not to hold you with tedious discourse, considering which way the victory is intended, the two Princes and all their Knights were manfullie foyled by Palmerin.

The Ioust being ended, and the King returned againe to the Cittie: Muzabelino came to Palmerin, and hauing saluted him with great reuerence, thus spake. Worthie Lord, who onely deseruest the name of chiualrie, let mee intreate you to excuse the Kings Son, who to make proofe of your valour, by my meanes attempted this noble aduenture, from which you haue escaped with great honour, and to their shame that made the challenge. What are you sir, said Palmerin, that know me so well, and the cause why I came into this Country? Your Friend Muzabelino, (quoth he) whom you haue taken such paines to finde, and who knowing you to be a Christian, will keepe you from al dangers among these Mahumetistes. Palmerin suddainly alighting from his Horse, came and embraced him, saying.

Noble

Noble Friend, suffer me to kisse your hand as a witnesse of my reuerence to your honorable Age. Not so my Lord, answered Muzabelino, rather suffer mee to doe my dutie, to that incomparable person, by whose meanes ere fiue Moneths be past, the greatest Nobilitie in the world shall receiue incredible honour.

While these courteous Ceremonies endured, the conquered Princesse with her Ladyes came from the Pauillion, and saluting Palmerin with great courtesie, saide. See heere Syr Knight the Lady, who trusting in your honourable benignitie, commeth to submit her selfe at your disposition, being woonne with more choyse Chyualrie, then euer any other Ladie was. Notwithstanding, I hope that you will not refuse to graunt me one demaund, according to the conditions agreed in the Ioust. Palmerin seeing her so discreet and modest, so sumptuous in Apparell, and accompanyed with so many Ladyes, iudged that she was the Kings Daughter, and Wife to the Prince Drumino, wherefore entertaining her very graciously, he thus replyed. Vnfitting it is faire Ladie, that a Princesse of so high and speciall qualitie and worth, should be Subiect to a poore and vnknown Knight: and though the agreement of the Ioust bee such, yet doe I humbly thanke you for this honour, bequeathing you to your former Libertie, and restoring you to him that hath best right to you.

A thousand thankes worthy Lord, saide the Princesse, now see I that words of Muzabelino to my father are true, that the Knight who conducted Madame Zephira, as in Chiualrie heer surpasseth all other, so in kinde minde and Liberalitie heer hath not his seconde, which was the chiefest cause why I aduentured my selfe in this hazard of Fortune.

Madame (quoth Palmerin) if the Lord Muzabelino hath vsed any speech of mee in mine absence, and to my honour, it proceeded not by my desert but by his good will in so doing, which if I liue, I will one day acknowledge. Right welcome are you saide the Princesse, and faire Zephira the ra-

rather for your sake: and such be the houre of your arrivall here, as you may obtaine the ende of your desires. Zephira humbly thanked the Princesse, Tomano, Drumino, and all the rest embracing Palmerin, thinking it no dishonour to be conquered by him: they mounted all on Horsebacke, and comming to the Cittie, they found the King there, ready with an honourable traine to receyue them: who saluting the Princesse Zephira very kindely, saidee. No marvell Madame, if you durst undertake so long a iourney, having the onely Knight of Fortune in your company, as my Sonnes haue good occasion to witnes: and shee that commits her selfe to his charge, may be well-assured of speciall defence. Zephira with humble thanks requiting the King, Palmerin and all the rest graciously welcommed: they rode all to the Pallace, where being entertained in choysest sort, Muzabelino still accompanied Palmerin, who forgote not as his wonted kindnesse to his louing Dogge.

CHAP. XLIX.

¶ The talke that the Princesse Zephira and Palmerin had with the wise Muzabelino: and how Palmerin departed from Romata, to the Castell of the tenne Rockes.

THe Princesse Zephira, who had not as yet talked with Muzabelino, in ye Morning sent for him and Palmerin: shee causing them both to sit downe by her, beganne her speeches in this manner. My Lorde, if your deepe knowledge and great Iudgement haue acquainted you with the cause of comming hither at this time, and that you be pleased to do anything

thing for the loue of Syr Palmerin, let pittie perswade you, for in you onely consisteth my remedie. Madame (quoth Muzabelino, vse not such speeches, for what my studie and practise hath taught me, you must make no account of: but referre your selfe wholly to the Supreame Creator, who by the meanes of Noble Palmerin, will restore your health, him will I acquainte with the manner how it must be compassed.

Your Disease happened by smelling to a flower, and by the smell of an other it must be recouered. The flower appointed to giue you Health, groweth in an Arbour in the Castell of the tenne Rocks, and kept by the Enchantment of a Ladie more skilfull in all Magicall Artes, then euer was the skilfull Medea. This Lady deceassing a hundred yeares since and more. She seeing before her death the vertue of this flower, and of a Byrd which is kept there by the selfe same meanes, hauing Enchaunted them in a Garden, the most sumptuous in the worlde: raised tenne Rockes of Marble without the Castell, eache one ascending higher then an other, and by these Rocks was the Castell named. Such Enchauntments did the Lady Exercise on them, as when any one thinketh to passe by them, presently starteth out of each Rock an Armed Knight, who returneth the aduenturer so forcibly, as to this day they haue not beene passed by any. Couragious therefore must hee be that passeth these Rocks, which if Palmerin by his Bountie and prowesse doe not accomplish, no man liuing can end the Aduenture: for by force nat cunning, must the Enchauntment be ended. When the Princesse heard, that by the daungerous trauell of Noble Palmerin her health must be restored, shee thus sorrowfully complained.

Ah Gods, suffiseth it not that heretofore this good Knight aduentured his life, in the dangerous Battell when my Brother was slaine: but now he must abide the direlith Coniurations, where Death is daily and hourely expected: shall I consent to offer him such wrong, and be

guiltie

guilty of his Blood, who surpasseth all other in Chyualrie: rather let my death be a warrant for his safety, then Noble Palmerin should endure such perill for me. Lament not Madame, quoth Muzabelino, before you haue cause, he that slewe Maltada and her Seruaunts, is so highly and specially fauoured of the Heauenly powers, as no Enchauntment whatsoeuer hath any power to hurt him. Why Madame, (saide Palmerin) thinke you my god will is lesse to doe you seruice, then when I was first brought to your Courte? Forbeare these teares I pray you, and offend not your selfe: for such is my hope in God, that what is done by man, shall be destroyed by man: besides, it will be great reproach to me, if comming into straunge Countreyes to seeke Aduentures, I shall depart without tryall of my Fortune. Muzabelina hearing him speake so couragiously, toke him aside, saying: Noble and hardy Knight, whome feare of Death cannot diuinay, happie shall I account my selfe to doe thee any seruice.

And to the ende thou maist with better affection follow this Enterprize, assure thy selfe to passe the Rockes with safety, and enter the Castell with happie victorie, where ending all the Aduentures therein contained, thou shalt finde a part of remedy for recouering thy companions, but not all, for the rest is in the Tower of Maltada, where as yet thou canst not enter, but at thy returne shalt easily open, and in the ende ioyfully finde all thy Companions and Friendes. For the rest, feare not my discouerie of thy secret Loue and Parentage, which is the most Noble in all Christendome: for rather shall I be torne in a thousand pieces, then so good a Knight shall be iniuried by me. Seeing you know so much (qd. Palmerin) I commit all to God and you, let mee therefore right soone craue leaue of the King for my departure, because I long that the Damoselle were eased. Right sorry was the King to parte with him so soone, yet the hope of his short returne somwhat pacified him. And when the newes were spread abroade that Palmerin should trauell to the

Castell

Castell of the tenne Rocks: Tomano Drumino and the Princesse Zephira would needs beare him companie, which he beeing not able to gaine-say, because they were importunate on him, gaue his consent. So departing from Romara, they made such hastes in their journey, as within fewe daies after they arriued at the Castell: and comming to the first Rock, they beheld a goodlie Sworde, enclosed therein vppe to the crosse. The two yong Princes meruailing thereat, alighted from their Horses, and assayed by strength to pull it out, which they were not able to doo: wherefore Tomano entreated Palmerin to try his fortune, who after manie courteous refusals offered to pull it forth, but a fearefull flame of fire suddainly issued forth of the Rock, which compelled them to retire back, wherefore Palmerin said to the Princes: This Sworde I see must be none of ours, therefore it is in vaine to strine anie further.

CHAP. L.

How Palmerin passed the tenne Rocks, vanquished the tenne enchaunted Knights, and entred the Castell, where he finished all the enchauntments: Tyreneus returning to his former shape, and what happened to them afterward.

PAlmerin when he had failed in drawing the Sworde out of the Rocke, hee prepared himselfe to the Combat with the enchaunted knights, whom as yet hee could not anie way discerne: but first he began his orisons in this maniere. O soueraigne Creatour, who euermore hath succoured me in

in all my aduersities and fortunes: this day giue mee strength to confound this diuilish enchantment, and let thy name haue the honour of a glorious victorie.

Then giuing his Horse the spurres, galloped on ward, saying. Sweete Mistresse Polynarda, if euer you remembrance gaue me aide and fauour, now let your diuine regard comfort your Seruant. Being then betweene the two formost Rocks, a mightie Knight mounted on a lustie Courser, with a huge Launce in his hand, called to him, saying.

Turne Sir Knight, you may passe no further, then furiously encountering one another, they met so roughlie together with their bodies, as they were both cast foorth of their saddles. The Dog that still followed Palmerin, seeing his Friends horse offered to starte, caught the bridle by the raynes with his teeth, and would not let him passe anie further. In meane while, Palmerin hauing fought with the Knight, and after a long and cruell combat, smote his head from his shoulders. In briefe, he was so fauoured of Fortune, as hauing vanquished all the ten Knights, he passed the tenne Rocks: and no sooner was he mounted on the formost, but a darke Clowde compassed him about, so that the two Princes, Zephira and their knights, to their great amazement lost the sight of him, yet his former victorie, exempted all feare from them of bad successe. There stayed they Palmerins returne till Sunne setting, when the two Princes demaunded of zephira, if she would depart thence, or stay there all night? Depart quoth she, no by my life, heere will I bide the good Knights returne from the Castell: whereupon her Seruants hauing erected their pauilions, they there tooke vp their lodging for that night. By this time Palmerin was come to the Castell Gate, where looking on his Armour which was hacked in peeces, his flesh cut and mangled in manie places, breathing forth a bitter sigh, said. If yet this trauaile may auaile the Princesse, and my noble companions that are enchaunted, let hap

happe to me what pleaſe the Heauens, for their liberty is more deere to me then life. Then looking on his dog, who all this while helde the Horſes bridle in mouth, heere remembred that he had not demaunded of Muzabelino anie thing concerning him, wherefore he ſaid. Ah gentle dog, yet no dog (I thinke) but rather ſome Knight thus transformed, how forgetfull haue I been of thy ſeruice in my neceſſitie: why did I not demaund the trueth of Muzabelino, what thou art? But muſt thou prooue to be my good Freend Tryneus, when all the enchantments in this Caſtell ſhall be ended, thy former ſhape I hope ſhall bee reſtored.

So ſtriking at the Caſtell Gate, to ſee if any way hee could get it open: at length hee looked vp to the battlements, and beheld an auncient Knight, with a long beard ſo white as ſnow, who furiouſlie thus ſpake to him. Proud Knight, who made thee ſo bolde thus to beate on the Gate: enter, vnto thy furder ill I hope, with theſe wordes the Gates opened of themſelues, when preſentlie Palmerin with his dog entred, and the old man, who ſeemed ouerſpent with yeeres and weakenes meeting him in the Gate taking him by the arme, threwe him violently againſt the ground, ſaying. Thou that haſt ouercome the ten Knights young and Armed, what canſt thou do to an olde man without defence? Wretched villaine, anſwered Palmerin, wherefore haſt thou ſtrooken me? by the liuing God, vnd not thine age ercule thee, ſoone ſhould I lay thee breatheleſſe at my foote.

Soft and faire, ſayd the olde man, thou ſhalt haue worke enough to defend thy ſelfe. So catching Palmerin about the middle, he wrong him ſo cruellie, as one might heare his bones crack. O my God cryed Palmerin, defend me againſt this curſed deuill. At length hee forced the olde man to let goe his holde: when began ſuch a furious fight betweene them, as neuer was Palmerin in ſuch daunger, in that euery blowe was giuen him, hee thought did breake all his

bones.

bones in peeces. The dog seeing his maister in such extremitie, caught the olde man by the throate, and neuer left tugging till he got him downe, when suddainly he vanished away, and was no more seene afterward. For this victorie Palmerin thanked God, and hauing cherished his dog, entred further into the Castell. Where he beheld most stately Galleries, erected on neat collombes, Porphery and Alabaster, as neuer did he behold a more sumptuous spectacle.

In the midst of the Court was a goodly Tombe, enclosed with barres of beaten Golde, and ouer it stoode a goodly Table of Christall, vpheld by foure Satires of Agatha: and on the Table was pictured the personage of a Ladie, drawne by such curious arte and workemanship, as hardly could it be equalled through the world. Palmerin approched to behold the counterfeite, which held in the one hand a Booke fall shutte, and in the other a keye of Golde, pointing with the key towarde the Gate of the Pallace: whereupon he imagined, that this was the Tombe of the Ladie Enchantresse, whereof Muzabelino had tolde him before, and putting his hand betweene the Golden barres, the Image presently offered him the key, Hereat being somewhat abashed, he iudged that this happened not without great cause, wherefore taking the key, he went and opened the Pallace Gate, and entring the great Hall, hee founde it so richlie paued, and garnished round about with such rottlly Tapistrie, as the greatest Monarch in the world had not the like.

Looking behinde him for his Dog, he beheld him suddainlie chaunged to his former shape, and running to embrace Palmerin sayd. Happy be the howre of thy comming deare friend, to whom I remaine for euer bound, in acknowledging the speciall graces and fauours receiued. But Palmerin deceaued with so manie illusions before, would hardlie giue credite to what he now beheld: repuring him rather some hellish furie so disguysed, onely to entrap him

with

with further danger, which Tryneus perceiuing, spake againe. Ah my noble Friend Palmerin, for Gods sake doubt no more, I am thy Brother Tryneus, who since thy comming from Elain, followed thee in the enchaunted forme of a Dog: reioyce then with mee, for since thy long desired hope hath now so good an end, doubt not but the residue of thine affaires will prooue as fortunate. Palmerin being now thoroughlie resolued, I leaue to your iudgements the kinde gratulations betweene them: who well can conceiue the wonderfull ioy of long absent Friends, especially of such as liue to die for each other. Ah my Lord, quoth Palmerin, why did I not sooner acknowledge thee: the great succour thou gauest me by the way, might well haue perswaded me: yet though I still imagined thee my Friende transformed, hardly could I resolue thereon till further experience.

Ah Fortune, if heretofore thou hast been enuious towards me, yet now hast thou recompenced mee in such sort: as now I haue no cause to exclaime on thee. So sitting downe together, Tryneus reuealed the manner of his taking, and all that befel him til his transformation. Which Palmerin to requite, discoursed the knowledge of his Parents, how he was betrothed to his Ladie Polynarda, and how he recouered the Princesse Agriola, who afterward was likewise enchaunted in the Isle of Malfada. Tryneus at these newes, was readie to die with griefe, but Palmerin perswaded him of the wise Muzabelinos promise: that shortly hee should returne againe to the Isle, and they finish all the enchauntments whatsoeuer. While they thus conferred together, they saw suddainlie sette before them a Table furnished with all kind of meates, and a hand holding two great golden Candlesticks, wherin burned two faire wax Tapers: beside, they heard the trampling of their feete that brought the meate to the Table, but they could not discerne any liuing creature. Trust mee, quoth Palmerin, I thinke some body knowes I haue an hungry

appetite, sit downe with mée good Friend: for these two monethes had I not a better stomacke. After they had well refreshed themselues, the Table was presently take away againe, and they entring a good Wardrope, where vnder a Canapie of cloth of Gold, they found two marueilous rostly grëne Armours, so beset with faire Emeraldes and great Oriental Pearles, as neuer proude Pagan wore the like in heatheneße. By them stoode two goodly Shields of proofe, in the one being figured the Armes of Constantinople, and in the other the Creast of Allemaigne: wherat Palmerin not a little merualling, said to Tryneus. I thinke my Lord, that these Armours were prouided for vs, let vs teye if they be fit for our bodies: so helping to Arme each other, they found them so fitte as they had bëen purposely made for them. There found they likewise a Siluer Casket, wherein were two sumptuous kinglie Crownes of Golde, and betwëen them stood a rich Golden Cup, hauing in it a Ring, with the most beautifull stone in it that euer was sëne.

Wondering at these euents, and doubtful to take thence those rare presents: immediatly a Damsell came before them, and humbly on her knees thus spake. Most mighty and magnanimous Princes, the Iewels you haue found in the Casket are yours, and them must you carrie to the Ladies of your affections: because they were purposelie made for them, as these worthie Armours were for you. As for her that deuised them, in this she accounteth her selfe right happie: that this day they are fallen into your power, and by you shall all the aduentures heere bee finished.

You my Lord, quoth she to Tryneus, must take the Ring that is in the Cup: and leaue it not wheresoeuer you come, lest you bee chaunged to the shape of a Dog againe. And you my Lord Palmerin must take the Cup, to put the flowers therin, which you must beare to the Princesse Zephira: assuring you that no one must drinke therin, but

the

the to whom you must carry it. Faire Damosell, said Palmerin, tell me how I shall find the Garden, where those flowers grow of such soueraigne vertue, and how I may come to the Arbour, where the strange Bird remaineth pearched: likewise if any other then your selfe is in this Castell.

My Lord, quoth she, the Ladie of this Castell at her decease, left all the persons in this Castell a sleepe by enchauntment, except my selfe that am her Nurce, and such coniurations hath she charmed them withall: as they shall not stirre till you haue taken the Bird you aske for, at whose fearefull crie they shall all awake, in all this long time no whit consumed. And heere haue I euer since remained, forepointed by her to doe you seruice, in shewing you the manner how to gather the flowers, and to take the fatall Bird pearched in the Arbour, whether I will bring you at the appointed howre. In meane while rest your selues on this rich bedde, which hath beene prepared onely for you, and heere repose your selues til my returne. By my Sword Damosel, quoth Palmerin, you tel vs matters full of wonder: notwithstanding, seeing we find some part of them true, we giue credit to the rest. So bidding her good night, there slept they till the next morning, when the Damosell came to call them: conducting them into the Garden, the most braue and stately that euer they beheld, and after she had shewed them the Arbour, departed. Palmerin looking round about him, marueled at the ingenious foundation of the Castell, the surpassing faire Galleries, and the beautifull Fountaines in the Garden, where hee heard an exceeding pleasant harmony of Birds. Then calling Tryneus to him, entred the Arbour, where taking the fatall Bird by the wings: she gaue three great cryes so loud and fearefull, as made both the Princes greatly amazed.

At this instant were al the enchauntments there ended, and the Seruants restored to their former libertie, when

Palmerin hauing tide the Bird to his fift with a threed the Damsell gaue him, and filling his cup with the soueraigne flowers: they came footh of the Garden, and in the great Hall met them the Lord and Lady of the Castell, so olde, withered and decrepit, as it seemed hardly they could sustaine themselues, casting themselues at Palmerins feete, they said:

Ah noble Prince flower of all chiualrie, the highest God hath blessed thee from thy Cradle, and in the end shall make thee the happiest in the world, for the especiall good thou hast this day done, restoring all them to life that heere slumbred, except the aged Lady my Wines Sister, who for these hundred yeeres past hath slept in her Tombe. After many courteous speeches passed betweene them, Palmerin and Tryneus departed the Castel, and as they went downe the Rockes, Tomano and the Princesse Zephyra came to meete them, she courteously embracing him, said: How faires my noble Lord? greatly did I despaire of your health: for this morning I heard such a fearefull crie from the Castell, as we were out of all hope to see you againe. By the aide of God, Madam, answered Palmerin, and this Knight my deere Friend, whom in the shape of a Dog you brought from Malfada, I find my selfe in perfect content: and here haue I brought you the soueraigne remedy for your so long and vnfortunate disease. But may it be, quoth the Princesse that so faire a Knight should be so transformed? No lesse do I reioyce for his good fortune, then mine owne. So entred they the Princesse pauilion, discoursing all the maruels they had seene.

CHAP.

CHAP. LI.

How the Princesse Zephira was cured of her disease, and how Tryneus ended the aduenture of the enchaunted sword in the Rocke.

AFter that the Princesse Zephira had felt the sweet odours of the flowers Palmerin brought her, the enuenomed wormes which so long time had tormented her, fell from her head dead to the ground, and the lothsome smell of her Canker began to cease. Yet all the scarres on her face were not throughly healed: but the suddaine ease that she found by the flowers, gaue her hope that in time they would weare away. Meane while the two Princes of Romata, conferred with Palmerin about the strange Bird, as also of the costly Armours they brought with them from the Castell: which being past ouer with no little admiration, they remembred the Sword enchaunted in the Rocke, whereupon the Prince Tomano entreated Tryneus, to try if that aduenture were reserued for him.

Nay quoth Tryneus, if you haue already failed, hardlie may I hope of better fortune: yet can I but loose my labour as you haue done, and shame were it for me to passe hence without triall. So taking the Sword by the handle, with very great ease he puld it out of the Rocke, being the goodliest Sword in workmanship that euer was deuised. Trust me, quoth Trineus, he that made this weapon doubtlesse hath tried the vertue thereof. That may be, answered

Palmerin, but had hee likewise knowne the valour of the Knight, who now is worthilie become Maister thereof, of greater count would hée haue esteemed his labour, and to thy perpetuall honour deere Friende maist thou imploy it. But now worthy Lords, seeing the Princes Zephira hath found so good ease, and my louing Brot her Tryneus hath wonne this Sword: I thinke it best that we set forwards to Romata, which (after they had seene the sumptuous buildings in the Castell, the rich Tombe, the beautifull Garden, and all the other monuments worthie view) they did.

Being come to Romata, and there receiued with speciall signes of honor, the wise Muzabelino, caused the fatall Bird to feede of the flowers, which Palmerin hadde brought from the Castell of the tenne Rocks. No sooner had the Bird tasted the flowers, but presently she deliuered such melodious notes, as sweeter harmonie was neuer heard before: and during the time of her singing, fell so many droppes of precious water from her beake, as before Dinner time the Cuppe was well nére filled. Which when the wise Nigromancer perceiued, he brought a verie faire Lute to Palmerin, saying. I beseech you my Lord play some exquisite peece of Musique, that the Bird listening to your melodie, may cease her owne records: els shall we loose the soueraigne vertue contained in the Water. Palmerin taking the Lute, plaide thereon so artificiallie, that the Princelle of Romata, whom he won in the Ioust, was enforced to vse these speeches, How can we sufficientlie marualle at the perfections of Palmerin? for if in prowesse he surpasse Hercules of Libia, who ouercame Tyrants and Monsters at his pleasure: well may we name him an other Amphion or Orpheus of Thrace, who with their melodie tamed the Fishes, Beastes and Birds. Tryneus taking the Cup, brought it to the Princelle Zephyra, who dipping her handkercher therein, bathed her face therewith: the precious vertue whereof was such, as all the

enueno-

enuenomed scarres the wormes had made, were presently washed away, and her face so delicate as euer it was before: whereupon the Princesse falling at Palmerins feete, ioyfully thus spake. Doubtlesse my Lord, I am greatly beholding to the Prince Tryneus, who saued my life when the Traytour woulde haue slaine me in my bedde: but I must confesse my self much more indebted to your worthinesse, by whose paines the venomous putrefaction is extinguished, whereby I endured torments farre exceeding death.

Madame, answered Palmerin, your happie recouerie must not be imputed to mee, but to the soueraigne Lord that so prouided for you, and seeing your health is so worthily restored, I thinke best that we set forward to morrow on our iourney, that we may finish the Magicall coniurations of Malfada, as wee haue alreadie done those at the tenne Rockes. The Princesse of Romata hearing these words, preuented the answer of Zephira, and comming to Palmerin, said: I beseech you Sir Knight, in honor of that God which you reuerence, that you will not refuse my one demaund, according to your promise made mee, when you ouercame my Brother and his knights in Ioust. Aske Ladie (said Palmerin) what you will, and you shall not be denied, so the matter consist in my power to performe. Well may you performe it (quoth she) and to your endlesse honor I hope. The summe of my request is, that you will not forsake the King my Father till his warre against the Soldane of Persia be finished. And that you would entreate your Frend to accompanie you therein. Denie mee not good Sir, for no greater shame is to a knight then breach of promise: nor will I stirre from your foote, vntill you haue graunted what I request. In sooth Madame, answered Palmerin, although my Freend and I haue great assayres in our Countrey, yet (in respect of my promise) wee will assist your Father: let vs in meane while intreate you, to pardon our returne with the Princesse Zephira, who

thinks the time long before shée came to Nabor. Doubtles my Lord, quoth Zephyra, rather then you and my Lord Tryneus, shall breake your promise to the Princesse, in giuing succour to the king Abimar her Father: I can content my selfe to stay here more willingly, then to returne to the king my Brother. Madame, said Muzabelino, assure your selfe, that Palmerin is the onely meane whereby you haue attained your present felicitie: and by him shall you with honour see your Countrey againe. In sooth my Lord, said the Princesse, full well I know his owne gracious nature induced him, first to aduenture his life for the safetie of my Countrey, then to passe strange Countreyes with daunger, onely to finde you, and lastly, his rare fortune at the Castell of the tenne Rocks, from whence hee brought those precious flowers, and the fatall Byrd, wherby my long infirmitie hath beene cured. To offer him fauour, or al my possessions in way of recompence of so great paines, they are not comparable: for though I made him Lord of my selfe, and all those territories my Father left me, yet doth my conscience tell me they are too base. In briefe, I know his deserts so exceeding my reach: as well may I sit downe to imagine, but neuer bee able to contriue a sufficient reward. Beleeue mee Madame, answered Muzabelino, you haue spoken trueth, and his noble magnanimitie must onelie helpe my Lord: and this I assure you, that were it not the daunger of his kingly honor, and hazard of the whole Monarchie of Asia, hardly might the Knight be staied here, of such waight and importance are his other affaires. Then calling Palmerin to him, whose inward thoughts were busied with the remembrance of his Ladie, he said:

Let not your stay héere my Lord offende you, though well I know the wait of your griefe, for that God who hath called you to this present estate, hath forepoynted things that you can not shun, in recompence whereof, before your departure from this Countrey, great & victorious

honours

honors are appointed you. Beside, for a perfect resolution your further doubtes, take you no care for nourishing your Byrd: for when your Musique made her cease singing, at that instant I threw such a Charme on her, as henceforth she shall liue without taking any foode. And when you returne to your Cittie of Constantinople, let her be pearched in some conuenient place, in the great Hall of your Pallace: and there shall shee remaine as a certaine Oracle vntill the day of your death, to deliuer tidings of good or bad. If any Knight or Ladie shall enter your Court, either with intent of Treason, or bringing ill newes, the Byrd shall giue such fearfull shrikes, as shee did at the time when you toke her in the Arbour: but if the newes be of ioy, and for your good, then shall shee sing more sweetely, then when that Soueraigne water fell from her Beake, wherewith the Princesse Zephira was cured.

In briefe my Lorde, at the time when you must leaue this leaue, for the glorious habitation among the blessed, she shal foretell such strange occasions, as shall dismay the most resolute courage. By this meane shall you be guarded from all inconuences, and your good Fortune continued in such sort, as you shall be the most peaceable Emperour that euer liued in Greece. Certes my Lorde (answered Palmerin) not by any desert in me, am I thus honored with so high a present, which I will keepe so charie as mine owne person: but that the name of Muzabelino may for euer be imprinted in my heart, giue me some one of your name or kindred, who euermore may be nearest to my person. My Lord (qd. Muzabelino) to you I will giue one of my Sonnes, begotten by me on a Christian Ladie, agreeing with you in faith and opinion: whereof I am not sorrie, yet doe I feare that the King should knowe so much, least his Religion might his death.

Dere Friende, said Palmerin, for Gods sake giue him me presently, and him will I loue, as he were my Brother. Your request (quoth he) can I not yet satisfie, vntil we goe

to

to my Castell where hée is kept, which because I will not longer deferre, to morrowe will I perswade the King to iourney to his great Cittie of Grisca, there to take viewe of his Armie, when I shall compasse the meane to giue him you, vpon this conclusion they departed to their Chambers.

CHAP. LII.

¶ How Muzabelino gaue Palmerin his Sonne Bellechino, entertaining the King and all his Companie Royallie at his Castell: and how the two Armyes of the King Abimar and the Soldane of Persia encountred, with the successe thereof.

MVzabelino perceiuing by his Arte, that the Soldane of Persia with his power, was neere at hand, thinking to ruinate the great Citie of Grisca: aduertised the King thereof, willing him withall spéd to muster his Armye, and preuent the Soldanes cruell determination. The King not misliking this good aduisemẽt, set forwards presently to Grisca, and by the waye, at the earnest intreatie of Muzabelino, the King with all his Courtly companie laye at his Castell: where many rare deuises were showne them by Enchauntment, which I passe ouer, as matter altogether impertinent. There did the Magitian giue Palmerin his Sonne Bellechino, one of his Daughters likewise to the Quéene, and an other to the Princesse Zephira.

Afterward they iourneyed to the Cittie of Grisca, where all his Army was ranged in readinesse, being numbred an hun-

hundred thousand fighting men: the Auauntguard hee committed to the two Princes, Palmerin and Trineus, consisting of twentie thousand Horsemen, his two Battells of 10000. Archers on Horsebacke, the two Princes Tomano and Drumino had in charge, and the Rereward was gouerned by the two Kinges of Sauata and Garara. The Soldanes power being ordained in Battell-wise, within fewe dayes after the Fight beganne: which continued with such danger on eyther side, as the Victorie hung very long in suspence. In the ende, after a mightie Mallacre made of the Persians, among whome was Donadel Prince of Siconia slaine, with many other great Califfes and Lords: the Soldane himselfe was taken Prisoner by Palmerin, and sente bounde with Fetters of Golde to the Princesse Zephira. The Messenger comming to the Princesses Chamber, declared how Palmerin had sent her that Prisoner, to intreat him as her selfe best liked. In sothe (my Lorde) quoth the Princesse to the Soldane, you are right welcome for his sake that sent you: here shall your entertainment be as fits your calling, and dislike not your mishap, in that the Knight who sent you hither, is wont to Conquere where himselfe pleaseth. The Soldane angrie at his hard Fortune, yet seeing he was Prisoner to a Lady so beautifull: was immediately so surprized with Loue, as he was not able to answer the Princesse one word. But shee perceiuing hee was very sore wounded, caused him to be conducted to a goodly Chamber, commaunding her best Chyrurgions to attend him diligently.

On the morrowe the came to see how hee fared, when Loue ouer-mastering all his sences, made him forgette his hatred to the King Abimar, resoluing to become his Friend, by Marriage of the Princesse: and vnable longer to suppresse his weightie passions, which more troubled him then his daungerous Wounds, in this sort he beganne. Fairest among the Daughters of men, tell me I desire you, if you be the Child of the King Abimar, or else of whence you are: to

the

the end I may one day acknowledge this fauor, which your kinde and milde nature affords your Prisoner. Hereunto the Princesse answered, how she was daughter to the king Onodius of Nabor, coupling therewith all her passed Fortuns, concluding in the end, that in all actions agreeing with honour, she remained his humble Seruant. Fortune (qd. hee) neuer constant, but in vnconstancie: once yesterday was I the greatest Prince in the World, and now none in my kingdome so miserable as my selfe, being brought in subiection to my inferiour, and snared in Loue with my vassalls Daughter. Wisely saide the Poet, That badly doo loue and Maiestie agree together. For though the height of mine Estate forbiddes my desired content, yet Loue and mine owne liking are two such seuere enemyes, as I must not now stand to dispute the cause. Happie is the knight in whose Power remaines a Ladie so excellent: but much more happie is the Ladie that can commaunde so great a person, by whome such honours are this day affoorded you fayre Princesse, as well may you vaunt to bee the greatest in Persia.

If by knight surpassing in Prowesse I was conquered in battell, by one in beauty and courtesie incomparable, am I again ouermastered, so that I am enforced to present you my hart, and all the signories I possesse, to vse at your pleasure, vowing (for your sake) perpetuall peace with Abimar my hatefull enemie. The Princesse abashed at this vnexpected offer, a sweete blush coloured her daintie cheekes, and fearing to bee imputed too indiscreet, shaped her answere to the lust point of all the Soldanes speeches, as thus. In sooth my Lord, well could I like, that Peace were concluded betweene the King and you, though not by any meane in me, but by the Omnipotent power of the Goddes: who letting you know the weaknesse of your owne strength, would not haue any Warre betweene you and the King Abimar. And if it like you so much to abase your selfe, as to like the simple Daughter of a King, who whilest hee liued, was your high-

highnes Subiect: well may I with modestie giue consent, for if my Father in all his lifetime obeyed you as his Lord, vnseemelie were disobedience in his Daughter. By the holie Alcaron of Mahomet, answered the Soldane, your benigne humilitie hath more conquered me, then the proudest enemie in the world could doo: doe you therefore appoint the Articles of our peace, and I as vnpartiall will agree thereto.

Thus began the peace and the promise of mariage betweene the Soldane and the Princesse Zephira, which being thorowlie agreed vppon, the King Abimar, Palmerin, Trineus and all the states subscribing thereto: the Campes on either side were discharged, and the Soldane with his great Seneschall openlie in the Cittie of Grisea, protested peace in this manner. That the Soldane should espouse Zephira, and Tomano the Princesse Belsina the Soldanes Daughter Beside, he renounced all pretended rights to the realmes of Grisea and Romana, nor would he demaund anie tribute of them afterward, or enter his confines with anie violence, but assist the King continually against all his enemies.

Moreouer, within two moneths, hee would deliuer tenne thousand tallents of Golde, and two millions of Seraphes, in recompence of his wrong done to the King of Abimar. All this my Lord quoth the Soldane, will I faithfullie performe, and all the Kings my Subiects shall subscribe thereto: on this condition, that you accompanie the Princesse to the Citie of Harano, there to honor with your presence our espousall, where your Sonne Tomano shall likewise match with our Daughter. To this the King willingly consented, whereupon the Soldane sent his Seneschal, to cause his armie to marche homewards into Persia. except six thousand men at Armes, to guard the Soldanes person: then openly in the field was the peace proclaimed. and the Captaines on either side freindly embracing each other. Afterward the Soldane cõming to the King Abimar

and

and in the presence of Palmerin and Trynens, thus spake: Needlesse were it now (my Lord) to remember our passed displeasures, but generallie to conferre of loue and peace: yet heereof I can assure you, that the Princesse Zephira, and these two strange Knights, preuailed more against me then all the rest of your Armie. But least your people should thinke, that our concluded peace is not thoroughlie grounded to morrow will I bee openlie affianced to the Princesse zephira, and afterward set forwarde to Harano, that my Sisters may be present at our nuptials, in the meane while our Seneschall and the fire other noble Lords, shall remaine with you as our hostages. These determinations fulfilled, the Soldane posted to Harano, where hee heard of the death of the Prince Donadel, and the Kinges Sonne of Rosillia with diuers other Princes of his kindred slaine in the battell: but the heate of his newe loue caused him make smal account thereof, preparing all things readie for the sollemnitie of his mariage.

CHAP

CHAP LIII.

The conference that the Soldane of Persia had with his Sisters, thinking by their meanes to stay Palmerin and Tryneus in his Court, and the honourable entertainment hee made them at the arriuall of the Princesse Zephira. And how by good fortune Palmerin recouered his Squire Colmelio, from the Ambassadour Maucetto.

NO sooner was the Soldane come to Harano, but he presentlie dyspatched messengers to his Sisters, that they might be present at his honourable mariage: and calling for his Daughter the young Princesse Belfina, hee thus beganne Faire Daughter, I thinke you are not ignorant, for report flieth quicklie farre, that I haue promised you in mariage to the Prince Tomano: therefore I account it verie requisite, that your soleminitie bee done on the same day, when I shall espouse the Princesse Zephira.

My gratious Lord and Father, quoth she, I remaine altogether at your highnesse direction, and if for conclusion of peace you match with so faire a Princelle as is Zephira, it were against reason I should refuse the worthy Prince Tomano of Romata When he perceiued the readie goodwill of his Daughter, and his two Sisters by this time were come to the Courte: after hee had welcomned them in most gratious manner he entered into these speeches. I thought it verie expedient (faire Sisters) since you vnder-

stand

ſtand the peace concluded betweene the King of Griſca and my ſelfe, to acquaint you with other matter greatly concerning you.

There commeth hether in the companie of the Princeſſe Zephira, two ſtrange Knights of very rare perfections to whom I would willinglie haue you vſe ſuch eſpeciall behauiour, as we might purchaſe the meanes to enioy them continually in our Courte, for no other intent I promiſe you, but onelie that they may match with you in mariage. You Lifter Lyzanda, (quoth he to the eldeſt) I commit to the chiefeſt Knight, the very ſame man that moſt valiantlie toke mé priſoner in the battell: and you Aurecinda, (for ſo was the youngeſt named) I bequeath to the other, who is one of the goodlieſt perſonages thateuer nature framed.

Hereunto they were right ſoone entreated, eſpecially Aurecinda. who though her elder ſiſter were graue and well aduiſed, yet was ſhe pleaſant, quaint and ſo ſubtill, as eaſilie could ſhe practiſe the meanes to deceaue the wiſeſt man, whereof ſhee made ſome experience, as you ſhall hereafter perceaue in the Chapters following. The Soldane hauing ſent for all the Kings, Princes and Lords his Subiects, to be preſent on the day of this great ſollemnitie: the Prince Tomano, earneſtlie deſiring to ſee his beſt beloued, deſire Palmerin Tryneus and the Princeſſe Zephira, that they might ſette forwards to Harano. But Muzabelino, who knew what troubles would ſucceed the marriage, aduiſed the King Abimor not to goe: and councelled the two Princes Trineus and Palmerin, to keepe themſelues continuallie Armed, becauſe the Soldane was a man continuallie ſubiect to incertaine chaunces. So giuing to each of them a Cote of Armes, of Crimſon Veluet moſt curiouſly embroidred with Pearles, hee departed from them, returning backe againe to the Cittie of Griſca. Now ride theſe Princes ioyfullie to Haraono, where they were receiued by the Soldane with wonderful pompe and

pompe

honor, each one admiring the rare beautie of the Princesse, Zephira, who was conducted with such a royall traine, as neuer was the like seene before in Harano. At the Cittie Gate the Soldane met them, and in a sumptuous Coch, accompanied them to the Pallace, where after many solemne courtesies one each side deliuered, and such magnificall royalty beseeming the time and place, the Soldan came to his Sisters, who had not yet talked with the two strange knights, and thus spake.

Sisters, to the ende that hereafter you shall not bee beguiled, the knights that accompanie my Ladie the Princesse, and whom I haue so much commended to you, are Christians: notwithstanding they be such, as they twaine deserue greater honor, then I am any way able to expresse. As for their comely statures, after that your eye hath conferred with your heart, I referre my opinion to your iudgment, regard them that they bee loued and esteemed, as their perfections doe worthily deserue. Aurecinda the youngest and most volintarie Sister, hauing her eye continually fixed on the Prince Tryneus, thus conferred with her selfe.

My Brother verie lightly commaundeth vs to loue these strange knights, I know not what my Sisters opinion is: as for mine owne, the beginning already of my loue is such, that if I doe not quickly obtaine my desire, I feare that my affection is rated at the price of my life. The time is passed ouer with many delights, and daily pastimes after the Persian manner, but all this while Lizanda and Aurecinda are tormented with loue, so that all patience was vtterlie denied them, yet bearing this weightie burden so well as they could, at length the two Sisters came to the Princesse Zephiraes Chamber, where they found Palmerin and Tryneus consulting together, feigning the cause of their comming to bid the Princesse good morrow. Palmerin perceiuing that Lizanda suddainle changed her colour, imagined the cause of her secret disease, and being

loth to be tempted with any such occasion, dissembling that he saw her not, tooke Zephira by the hand, and leading her to the windowe, found some cause of conference, which Lizanda perceiuing, in anger shee flong forth of the Chamber, yet Aurecinda would not follow her: for shee being thoroughly conquered with loue, neither regarding feare, shame, or other such likely behauiour seemely in Maidens, tooke Aryneus by the hand, and causing him to sit downe by her, thus began. I do not a little marualle Sir Knight, that when Ladies come to see you, their entertainement is no better. It is not the manner of Gentlemen to bee so sollitarie, without hauing some Friend or beloued, which you shall soone find in this Court of higher calling then you imagine, if Ladies may discerne some signe of your fauourable liking. In good faith Madam, answered Tryneus, if to you and your Sister, I haue not done such duty as beseemeth, it proceeded by forgetfulnes, or my mind caried away with other occasions, for nature made me obedient to Ladies. If these words Sir Knight (quoth she) proceed from your heart, I can assure you to beloued of such a one, who is not vnworthy the like good will: and of such account is she with the Soldane, as he shal create you one of the greatest Lords in Persia, so please you to stay in his highnesse Court. That may not be (quoth Tryneus) for so soone as the Soldane, and the Prince Tomano shall be espoused, I must needs depart with my companion, about affaires of very great importance. Palmerin who with one eare listened to the Princesse Zephira, and with the other to the words of Aurecinda, after she was departed the Camber, thus spake to Tryneus.

God Friend, beware of this Ladie, that shee cause you not to offend God, and violate the loyaltie you owe to Madame Agriola. Such experience haue I had in these actions, as when Ladies haue enterprised their amorous furie, if they cannot compasse it by the meanes of men, they will aduenture it with hellish familiars, that can deceiue

the

the very wiſeſt, eſpecially in this wicked Countrey, where is no knowledge of God or his Lawes. Beſide you know, that ſuch impudent loue, cannot be carried about without ſuch apt meſſengers, and from whence proceedeth many inconueniences. Brother, aunſwered Tryneus, feare not my conſtancie: for my Ladies loue hath taken ſuch ſure foundation, as death cannot make me falſe to her, yet prooued his words contrary in the end, and for which hee repented afterward.

While theſe delights continued, Maucetto, Ambaſſadour to the Soldane of Babylon arriued at the Courte, where the Monarch of Perſia receiued him very honourably: willing him to conceale the newes till the marriages were paſt, which on the morow was performed with marueilous royaltie. As the Princes and Lords accompanied the Soldane to the Temple, it happened that Aurecinda was conducted by the Prince Tryneus: whereof ſhee beeing not a little glad, by the way entred into theſe ſpeeches. Ah my true Friend and Lord Tryneus, when will the day come that I may be thus led, to eſpouſe the man whom I loue more deere then my life? Madame, quoth Tryneus, I cannot maruell ſufficiently to ſee you thus chaunged, conſidering the greateſt Lord in the Orient may be thought too ſimple for ſuch a Wife: yet did you chooſe one that perhaps would not eſpouſe you, my Lord the Soldane being your Brother, may conſtraine him thereto. Heere-hence (quoth ſhee) proceedeth my ſorrow, for he whom I loue, is not the Soldanes Subiect, nor doth agree with mee in faith and opinion: he will giue no eare to mine intreaties, much leſſe to ſuch a one, as can make him one of the greateſt Lords in Perſia.

But thinke you my Lord that I can conceale, what you may plainelie diſcerne in mine eyes? You are the onely man my hart hath choſen, and whom the Soldane loueth more then his Brother. Alas Madame, quoth the Prince, vnfitting is it that a Knight errant, ſhould eſpouſe the

Sisters of so great a Lord, as is the Soldane of Persia. And would his Maiestie so much honor me, yet the contrarietie of our faith is such an impeach, as flatlie it may not be: for rather will I bee torne in peeces, then match with a Pagan, or renounce my faith for her loue. No, no, my Lord, said the Princesse, I will renounce mine for your loue, and worship Iesus Christ the Son of the blessed Virgin. Well worthie then were I of reproch, quoth Trineus, if I should not requite you with loue againe, considering what you aduenture for my sake.

As they would haue proceeded further in talke, Colmelio, Palmerins Squire, whom Maucetto had bought, standing to see the traine of Persian Lords and Ladies passe by, espied his Maister and the Prince Tryneus, wherefore pressing through the Guard of Archers, he came to the Prince, and taking him by the mantle, said: Most happie be this houre my noble Lord, to find you and my Maister Palmerin. What fortune hath brought thee hither Colmelio, said Tryneus, hast thou yet spoken to thy Maister? No my Lord, answered Colmelio, hee conducteth the Princesse with the Calife of Siconia, wherefore I durst not presume to trouble him.

Beleeue mee, said the Prince, but thou shalt speake with him, and while the Arch-Flamin was performing the Ceremonies in the Temple, Tryneus presented him to his Maister Palmerin, who was thereat so ioyfull, as if hee had gotten the best Cittie in Persia. Hee demaunded by what meanes he escaped the Pirats hands, the true discourse whereof Colmelio rehearsed: and how Maucetto the Ambassadour bought him, as Ptolome and he were brought to the Soldane of Babilon his Court to be sold, and there both Ptolome finde great fauour as I haue heard, of the faire Princesse Alchidiana the Soldans Daughter, onely for your sake. Thou tellest me wonders said Palmerin, depart not from me til after Dinner, when I will goe to thy Maister Maucetto to demaunde thee: which I hope hee will

not

not denie, because when I was Knight to Alchidiana, hee was one of my speciall good Friendes. After the solemnitie of the mariage was ended, and Dinner ended at the Pallace for preparation of passime: Palmerin calling Colmelio, went with him to the Ambassadour Maucetto, who not a little abashed to see him, that was generally reputed dead in the Soldans Court, came and embraced him with these speches. My Lord Palmerin, what great God hath raised you againe? The Soldane was credibly informed, that you and Olorico were drowned in the Sea: for which both hee and Madame Alchidiana more lamented, then for the losse of his whole Army before the City of Constantinople.

Palmerin dissembling as though he knew not thereof, seemed to marvell thereat very much, and the better to shadow his conceit, said: that after the tempest was ceased, which cast him very farre from the Soldans Armie, thinking to returne to Constantinople, he was by violent windes brought to the Isle of Malfada, where the Prince Olorico, quoth he, and all the rest of my companions remaine enchaunted, whom I hope to recouer againe after I can get hence. Little thought I my Lord, answered Maucetto, to find you in this Countrey, but did Madame Alchidiana know so much, her sorrow would soone be converted into joy.

But what newes with you my Lord? said Palmerin: What may bee the cause of your Ambassage? I will not conceale the trueth thereof from you, quoth Maucetto, I come to demaund aide of the Soldans of Persia, for a fresh invasion against Constantinople. I marvel, quoth Palmerin, that he will enterprise the voyage againe, which hath cost him so much, and returned so little profit: rather would I counsell him to forbeare, and so will I write to his Highnesse before your departure, as also to Madame Alchidiana his Daughter. But I would request one curtesie of you Sir Maucetto, that you would give mee your slaue

Colmelio, who in time past hath been my Squire. Him shall you haue with all my heart, quoth Maucetto, and not onely him, but whatsoeuer else is mine beside, so please you to accept thereof.

I thanke you good Sir, answered Palmerin, and I doubt not in time to requite your gentlenesse. While they thus talked together, the Soldane came to Palmerin, saying: Will not you make one my Lord in the daunce? the Ladies say they cannot haue your company. In sooth my gracious Lord, answered Palmerin, little do I delight in any such exercises, very earnest affaires haue I with the Ambassadour Maucetto, which craue suddaine and speedie dispatch. Beside, faine would I know some tidings of him from my Lady Alchidiana, from whose seruice I haue now discontinued a yeere and more. The Soldane abashed at these words, said: I pray you tell mee the trueth, are not you he that slew the Prince Amarano of Nigrea in Combat, and afterward two other of his Brethren, of which exploits remaine such fame through all Turkie? In sooth my Lord, answered Palmerin, being vowed to my Ladies seruice, I neuer could suffer her honor to be any way distained, and in that duty I will continue, for the manifold curtesies I haue receiued by her. By the liuing God, said the Soldane, now thinke I my selfe the happiest Prince in the world, hauing the man in my Court, whose very name makes the stoutest to tremble. But seeing we are thus far entred, tell me: is the Princesse Alchidiana so beautifull as Fame reports her? That is she my Lord, quoth he, and much more then Fame is able to vtter: beside, shee is one of the most gracious and affable Princesses, that euer I beheld in any Kings Court.

Now is night come, and after the Courtly pastimes were ended, the Bridegroome went to receiue the honour of his Bride, commaunding Palmerin to bee intreated as his own person: which not a little contented the Princesse Lyzanda, thinking hereby (alas too lamishlie) to obtaine

him

him for her Husband, but herein she was deceiued, so that her rash loue procured her miserable death. Aurecinda likewise continually courted Tryneus, as though shee had alwaies been trained vp in his companie: wherefore one day, after hee had been warned foure or fiue times by Palmerin, he thus spake to her. Madame, if your honestie and vertue hath imprinted in Noble mindes, an especiall conceit of your continencie and chastitie: I maruaile now what many will thinke, in that you should not shewe any such signes of loue to me, for it seemes ye yeeld the Citie before any assault be giuen. All these speeches could not qualifie her humour, for loue had so emboldened her with such vnshamefastnes, as shee made no conscience of following the cause, giuing credit to one of her Ladies perswasions, that by good pursuite all things enioy a happy end.

CHAP. LIIII.

How Maucetto the Ambassadour to the Monarch Misos of Babylon, declared his message before the Soldane and all the Princes of Persia. And of the Combat betweene Tryneus, and the King Orzadine of Galappa.

AFter the marriage feast was fully ended, the Soldane sent for the Ambassadour Maucetto, who in the presence of all the Persian Lords, thus began to deliuer his message. Mighty and illustrious Monarch of Persia, the Soldane of Babilon my Lord & Master, hauing euermore continued in faithfull alliance

to your Maiestie: lets you know by me his great and damageable losse, which he sustained before the City of Constantinople. For recouery whereof, he humblie intreateth your highnesse most fauourable assistaunce: which well you cannot denie him, in respect of the great sway you hold in Turkie, as also for the establishment of our faith, and generall destruction of the Grecian Empire. Ambassadour quoth the Soldane, I will better consider hereon, and answer you accordingly. So calling all the Princes presentlie to counsell, diuers confused iudgements were amongst them: whereupon he sent for Palmerin, and before them all demaunded his opinion, whereto hee shaped this aunswere. Might it stand with your highnes liking, and the good conceit of all these noble Princes, gladly would I bee excused in this matter: wherein I may not spaka without suspition, because the entent is against mine owne natiue countrey, and those whom I agree withall in faith and Religion.

But seeing your Maiestie will needes know my iudgement: pardon in speaking boldlie what I would be loth to dissemble. I think no one of you my gracious Lordes, but wel remembers the late warres against the King of Grisca: since which time the Souldiours are hardly recouered, and extremitie were it to endanger the liues of wounded men. Moreouer, if the Soldan of Babilon who now demaundeth succour, sending his Armie into Greece, where raignes a Prince so mightie and puissaunt, as well could repulse them with shamefull confusion. Perswade your selues as yet there is no other, but he that tryumpht in conquest before, I feare can doe the like againe, and thus my Lords is mine opinion.

Well haue you answered quoth the Soldane, and this peaceable conclusion liketh me well, so arising from counsell, they went into the great Hall: where before their comming, as the Princes Zephira was deuising with many Lords & Ladies, entred an Armed Knight, accompanied with

with sir other in Armour, and twelue Squyres, who seeing the Soldan not in his Chayre of Estate demaunded of the Quene where he was: Knight (quoth she) he is in counsell with the Princes and Lordes of his Realme, and long it wil not be before he come: in meane while you may passe the time in conference with the Ladyes. By God (saide Trineus to the Quene, I thinke hee scant knoweth howe to conferre with Ladyes, for his indiscreet behaviour sheweth him to bee the worst nurtured Knight that euer I saw: Saw you not (quoth he to the Princesse Zephira) how unmannerly he sate downe, without vsing any Reuerence to your Maiestie.

The Knight sitting strouting in a Chayre, and hauing vnclasped his Helmet (saide to the Quene) I pray you tell me Madame, are those two strange Knights in this Court, that were against your Husbande in the Battell and toke him: They be Syr Knight (quoth she) well and in good disposition, thankes to the Soueraigne Creator. I aske not of their health (qd. he) How are they called: The one (said the Quene) is named Palmerin, the other Tryneus. And I (quoth he) am Orzadine King of Galappa, to whom Fortune hath bene more fauourable in Loue, then in Riches: making me Friende to the faire Oronia, Daughter to the Califfe of Siconia, and Sister to the Prince Donadel, who was slaine in the Battell against the King Abimar, she in my iudgement, not hauing her second in Beautie, at whose request I haue trauelled the greatest part of Asia, to increase her Fame, and honorable reputation, which I haue done to her perpetuall Fame: and returning to her when my Labors were finished, in stead of ioy and pleasure, I found her sad and pensiue for the death of her Brother. These newes were worse to me then death, and to comfort her, I promised to reuenge her Brothers mis-fortune: and this is the onely cause of my comming, for hauing Combatted with him that slew the Prince, her Loue to mee will be the greater, and mine honour shall be increased with more aduantage.

I

I beleeue well (quoth the Queene,) if you escape with life from the Combat: But tell me Sir Knight, why beare you such ill will to him that slewe the Prince: considering that it was don in plaine Battell, and he his enemy who would haue done as much to him if he could. Not for this cause alone will I enter the Combat, said Orzodine, but for I am desirous to let him know that I am more fauoured in Loue then hee; and as I am one of the most happy Louers, so am I the best Knight in the World, which I will maintaine against any that dare gaine-say it. Happy louer, Dieu vous guard, said Tryneus. If the Poets had hitherto spared the discription of Cupid, Sonne to the Goddesse of Loue, now might they iustly haue set him downe for blinde: yet is hee most worthie to be condemned, that he would vouchsafe any fauour to the most foolish among men, he hauing Dedicated me to the seruice of a Lady, to whom your gentle Ironia, Oronia I should say, doth not deserue the name of her Seruant.

For the rest, whereas you vaunt your selfe to be the best Knight in the World, your great Folly is too apparant, for there are many Knightes Errant in the World, who can giue you a braue Camizado at the Launce: and after they haue foyled you in the Ioust, bestow a little paines to take your greene head from off your grosse shoulders. My selfe that slewe the Brother to your Goddesse of Beauty, will do you so much pleasure as to heale the incurable disease wherwith you are May and Night tormented. O diuine spirits, cryed the Pagan, fauour me so much, that this Knight may but dare to enter the Fielde with mee. Yes I dare (sayde Tryneus) and before we part, I doubt not but to make thee quiet enough.

Orzodine presently threwe his Gauntlet as his Gage, and Tryneus a Golden Bracelet, which Aurecinda had giuen him, entreating Zephira to keepe them, which she refused to doe, fearing the daunger of the Prince Tryneus. Hereupon the Soldane entred the Hall, leauing Palmerin

by

by the hand, but when they saw the Armed Knight thus to contend with Tryneus, they marueiled greatly what might be the occasion thereof. When Orzodine saw the Soldan was sette, hee entred into these speeches. Soldane I am hither come to accuse thee, of a villainous Acte which thou hast committed, Harbouring in thy Courte, the man that slew the valiaunt Donadell, whose murther thou canst not so cunningly couer, but that thy Treasons shall be openly discouered.

What art thou (saide the Soldane) that darest speake thus presumptuously in our Presence? Orzodine King of Galappa (quoth he) of whome thou hast heard heretofore, and nowe haue I presented my Gage against this Knight, which I will maintaine in despight of the proudest. The Soldane abashed at this Euent, sought to dissuade them from the Combatte, because he had heard greate speches of the Kings Prowesse, but all was in vaine: for Orzodine was so Obstinate, and Tryneus so earnest, to reuenge the Mockes proud blasphemy against his Lady, as they would not be pacified till the Fielde was graunted them. Let vs haue Judges presently quoth Orzodine) and the Field assured for our Combat, that I may disciplyne this glorious straunger.

Make not such haste (sayde Tryneus) for I feare thou wilt thinke thy comming too soone. Immediatly were the two combattants Armed, the Judges placed in their Tent, when the Soldane and Palmerin with many other Princes, went to beholde this exployt. But such a mightie man was the King of Galappa, as Palmerin feared his Friends fortune. The Trumpets sounding, the Knights brake their Launces brauely, and met together so furiously with their bodyes, as they were both twowne out of their Saddles: but they quickly recouering themselues againe, drewe their Swoordes, and marched against eache other with like courage, as did Achilles against noble Hector. Long continued the fight with danger on eyther syde, but the K: of Galappa

stroke

strooke such weighty strookes, being a man of equall stature with a Giant, as he wounded Tryneus in many places: and (sith) was his yll Fortune: After long traversing about, he set his foot vnwarily on the tranchion of a Launce, whereby he fell downe backwards to the ground. Orzodino taking advauntage of this fall, sette his foote on the Princes breast, ayming to pull his Helmet from his head: but God knowes in what agony Palmerin was now, when he breathed forth these speeches to himselfe. Ah Heauens (quoth he) haue I taken such paine and trauell to finde my Friends, and must he now dye among his enemyes? Aurecinda, likewise, ready to yelde vp her ghost with griefe, seeing Palmerin ready to loose as hee stood. Alas (quoth she) is it not enough that my Friend must die, but his Noble Companion will beare him companie? While this doubtfull feare was among the Courtyers, Tryneus had so well stuffeled with Orzodine, as he lay along by him likewise, when drawing a Pocket-dagger, he strab it through his Helmet, into one of his eyes, so that hee nayled his head to the ground. Orzodine feeling himselfe wounded to the death, gaue a very loude crie: when Tryneus hauing gotten his Helmet off, presently smote his head from his shoulders.

If the Knightes of Galappa were nowe disnayde, and the Soldane Palmerin, Zephira, Tomano, and all the rest ioyfull, I leaue to your iudgements: especially Palmerin, who reioycing that Tryneus had thus conquered his enemie, entres the Lystes, and embraced him, and bringing him forth the Fielde, he was welcommed to the Pallace, with wonderfull honour.

The Body of the dead King was deliuered to them that came with him, with marueilous reprehension of their Maisters most audacious Challenge: and so with great heauynesse they returned home againe. Nor would the Soldane longer stay in his Court the Assirian Embassadour: But excused himselfe to the Babilonian Myso, that he could not giue him any assistaunce, couering this answer vnder his vnfor-

vnfortunate battell against the King Abimar, Maucetto seeing that to stay longer would not auaile him, tooke his leaue of the Soldane, saying. Albeit my Lord you cannot giue my Maister anie assistance: yet let Palmerin returne to him at his departure from your Court. What I can do herein, answered the Soldane, your Lord shall be assured to finde, although I thinke his minde be otherwise addicted: but you were best to know his minde your selfe, because I heard him say he would write to Madame Alchidiana.

Maucetto departing to Palmerins lodging, the Soldane went to see his Sisters, of whom he demaunded, if they had as yet practised anie thing with the knights. My Lord, answered Aurecinda, who in all things was more prompt then her eldest Sister, I haue fixed my loue on the knight Trineus, with full resolution neuer to loue anie other: dooth not he intend to stay heere in your Courte, much lesse (I feare) to make me his wife. As for my Sister, she cannot compasse the meane, how to imparte her loue to Sir Palmerin. Right strange is it, quoth the Soldane, that the promises you haue made them, and so apparant signes of ardent affection, cannot dissuade them to make choyse of you: Doubtles they bee some Great Princes, who to see the fashions of the world haue thus disguised themselues. Continue your loue as you haue begunne: and if by other meanes you cannot stay them, aduenture your honors as a meane to entrappe them. And now doth occasion well serue you Sister Aurecinda, for by courteous intreating Trineus now is wounded, you may more profite in one houre, then you haue doone during this tedious pursuite.

Needelesse was it for the Soldane thus to perswade her, in that she laboured for no other matter, keeping Tryneus compante both day and night: but Palmerin offended thereat, secretly thus rebuked the Prince. What meane you my Lord? If you mend not this order I must be angry with

with you. You see this Princesse exceeds in her desire, and you giue her occasion to continue it: I know not what will happen hereupon, but my minde perswades mee that you will hardly depart hence with honour. Be aduised I desire you and take this of me: that the wisest man will lende his eares to loose persons, and follow their affections: hee shall become more vnreasonable then a bruite Beast, regarding nothing but what is obiect to his eies, and what the flesh, (the onelie mortall ennemie to the spitit) shall soonest perswade him.

CHAP. LV.

How Aurecinda Sister to the Soldane of Persia, pursued the Prince Tryneus so neere, as in the ende, shee had her desire, and what followed thereon.

PAlmerin hauing thus schooled the Prince Tryneus, that he should giue no eare to the entisements of Aurecinda: Lyzanda came to his Chamber, and feigning vrgent busines with him, tooke him aside, deliuering her affections in this manner. Right happy would I think my selfe Sir Palmerin, so you would deigne to continue in the Soldanes Court: who doubtlesse would aduaunce you to the highest steppe of honor, and giue mee to you in marriage that am his Sister, and a Ladie worthy some reckoning.

Palmerin offred to depart to the Chamber, but Lyzanda stayed him, proceeding thus. Alas my Lord will you neuer vouchsafe to speake to mee? now sée I well that you

are

are the moſt diſloyall knight in the worlde. Madame, anſwered Palmerin, rather will I die then one iote of diſloyaltie ſhall be found in me: nor can I graunt your importunate requeſts, without committing notorious treaſon to my Ladie and offending my God, whom foolish loue ſhall neuer make me to diſpleaſe. So without any further ſpeeches he went to the Prince Tomano, leauing the poore Ladie well neere dead with this vnkinde refuſall, who going to her owne cabbinet, thus began to breath forth her ſorrowes.

Ah Loue, the moſt cruell paſſion that euer entred the hart of any Lady, how great and mernailous is thy power: Some thou enforceſt to deſire and intreate, without being heard or regarded: others thou cauſeſt to be happily fauoured, eſteemed of their friends, Seruants and louers. Vnhappie that I am, but much more vnhappy Brother, accurſed be the howre when thou diddeſt commaund me to loue the moſt cruell and vnkinde among men. Can there be anie Ladie in the word more diſgraced then I am: had I not reuealed my loue to him, ſome comfort I might therby enioy among my ſorrowes: but the frozen mind knowing my loue: dooth holde mee in the greater contempt. My Sitter tolde me, that by too long concealment of loue, manie haue loſt them they moſt eſteemed: but I (alas) doo finde it cleane contrarie. Now was Aurecinda (by chance) in the Chamber nert her Sitters Cabinette, and hearing her thus ſorrowfullie complaine: ſhe came to her, and thus ſpake.

Good Sitter diſcomfort not your ſelfe by your frends refuſall: I would not thinke my ſelfe worthy the name of a woman, if I could not winne you the man that thus torments you. As for me, I haue found the meane to compaſſe mine owne deſire. Yet could not all theſe ſpeeches appeaſe her, wherefore ſhe left her, and vnderſtanding by one of her Ladies, Tryneus ſhould this night Suppe in the Soldans Chamber: whereuppon ſhe went to the Ladies hote

houſe,

house, and there prepared his bed, and such sweete delicate bathes, as might moove the spirits of a verie staied Gentleman. This doone, she came to one of the Pages of honor, Brother to the Ladie whome thee most of all trusted, saying.

I pray thée good Page, goe to the Prince Tryneus his Chamber, and there attende till he come foorth: then faining that some one hath doone thee iniurie, thou shalt intreate him to helpe thee against him that abused thee. If he condiscend, as doubtlesse he will: bring him to the bath, where I will stay his comming with my Sister, and so soone as he is entred, make fast the doore on him, and get thée gone, but in any case be secrét herein, and I will recompence thée to thine owne content. The wagge was so well instructed in his arte, as he failed not in ante one point of his charge. But as the Prince Tryneus came alone from his Chamber, fell on his knees before him, saying. My Lord, if euer you pitied a Gentleman abused, let mee intreate you to reuenge my cause, on a villaine that hath too much wronged me.

Tryneus, who had often séene the Page in his Chamber with Aurecinda answered, Beleeue me Page, it were pittie to denie thy requeste, considering thou doost demaund it so courteouslie: shall I neede to be better prouided then I am? No my Lord, quoth he, your sword is sufficient. So was he conducted by the page along the Gallery, and béeing come to the appointed place, hee opened the doore thus speaking to the prince. My Lord, the partie you must deale withall is in his Chamber, accompanied but with one Ladie, wherefore you may enter secure from daunger. Hee was no sooner in, but the Page clapt to the doore and departed. Now was Tryneus not a little amazed, when he saw no bodie but the Princesse with her Ladie, she being come thither to bathe herselfe, and layd in her bed: but in such surpassing brauerie, as Iupiter with his lightning, Neptune with his three forked Mace, and Pluto with his Cerberus

berus, would stand and wonder thereat. So finely had shée tressed the golden wyres of her ayre, and her head-attyre embellished with such goodly Orient all Pearles, as made her seeme a beautifull Angell, being couered with a gorgious Canapie, resembling the Sunne vnder a faire Cloude. Betwéne her daintie breasts hung a precious Carbuncle which supplied the office of Venus her firebrand: when she saw Trineus stand so agast, she said. Why? my Lord, are you more afraid of a naked Ladie, then of the most puissant Knight in Persia, armed cap a pe? I can iudge no lesse, seeing you dare approch no neerer. In sooth my Lord, quoth the Pages Sister, you may thinke your selfe happie to be desired of such a Lady, whom mightie Kings and Princes haue earnestly sought, and would gladly haue had the least fauour shee bestowes on you. So taking him by the hand, shee caused him to sit downe in a Chayre by the beds side, and giuing her Mistresse her Harpe, she departed leauing them together. Ah Page, quoth Trineus, how hast thou deceiued me? What? said the Princesse, you forget where you are, you must at this time somewhat pittie my sorrowes, and heare a dittie which I haue made for your sake. Then taking her Harpe, shée thus began to sing as followeth.

The Dittie sung by *Aurecinda* to the Prince *Trineus*.

THe God of warre, fierce, sterne and rigorous,
when he beheld faire Venus *heauenly beauty,*
Made small account of her disloialty,
But suddenly became full amorous.

Beautie had then her power vigorous,
Chaunging rough lookes to sweetest secrecy.
But he I loue, incenst with cruelty,
Doth not regard my torments langourous.
Why should I then pursue that stubborne minde,
That with excuses kils my hope out-right?
Yet if he helpe not, death must me acquite,
Ah mighty loue in nature most vnkind,
Thou dost constraine me to affect the man,
That neither fauour loue, nor kindnes can.

What haue I said? the Knight of my desire,
Is meere diuine, and furthest from compare:
Whose Eagles eyes can well discerne my care,
And with sweete pitties droppes alay this fire.
The little God hath made him gracious,
His Mother mild, to rue the Ladies smart:
That shrines his liuely Image in her hart,
Then to despaire he seemes no vertuous,
Regard sweet friend the passions of thy Friend,
Whom God and nature hath appointed thine:
Giue loue his due, and then thou must be mine,
So shall long sorrow haue a happie end.
The Persian maid, say boldly thou hast wonne;
That Monarches, Kings and Princes neere could (donne.

With excellent cunning did she handle her instrument, but with far better grace and affection deliuered her dittie, gracing it with such sad countenaunce, mournefull lookes, and renting sighes, and forced the Prince Tyreus to become exceeding amorous. And burning in this new fierie impres-

impression, beheld the singular beautie of Auricinda, which ravished his sences in such sort, as (trembling like the Aspen leafe) hee sat downe by her on the beddes side. The Princesse laying her Harpe from her, embraced him very louinglie with these speeches. Alas my Lord, will you still continue in this rigour and cruell inhumanitie? your hart is more hard then Adamant, that will not bee mollified with so many intreaties: I sweare to you by the Sunne that lighteneth the world, unlesse you graunt me one request, before your face will I presently slay my selfe. Full well doe I perceiue, quoth Tyneus, that hardly can I escape misfortune: the Seruant hath deceiued me, and now the Mistresse seekes my death. Ah Madame, quoth he, how can I graunt your request, considering mine offence to God, and he that loueth me loyally? Either be as good as thy word, quoth she, else stand to the danger that may befall thee.

Why? Sir Knight, is my beautie of so slender account, as I am not worthy to bee held betweene thine armes? wilt thou suffer me to consume in this violent flame, which thou maist with such ease and honor extinguish? hadst thou rather see a Ladie spilt her hart before thee, then thou wilt vouchsafe to preserue her life? Come, come sweet Friend, see how loue and his Mother hath made way for thee, refuse not opportunitie so fauourablie offered. What blemish is on this bodie, that should deserue disdaine? If the King of Gods would think himself honored with this conquest: much more estimation shouldest thou make hereof. In briefe, she was so perfect in her subtiltie, and knew so well how to inueigle the Prince with queint speeches and sweet embracings: that she made him forget God, his Ladie, loyaltie, and himselfe, so that of a Maiden, he made her the fayrest woman in Persia. When the time came that hee should depart, the Princesse said to him; Yet haue I a further request, my Lord, you must promise to meete mee in this place at times conuenient, and endeuour with your

companion, that he may likewise loue my Sister. Tryneus made promise he would, but rather he desired to stab himselfe with his weapon: then that Palmerin should know this great abuse, so heinous did his offence seeme to himselfe.

Aurecinda perswaded her Sister, still to pursue Palmerin with her loue, and what had passed betweene her and the Prince Tryneus, she declared: whereupon her desire grew the greater, yet all was in vaine, for Palmerin would giue no eare to her complaints, which was the cause of this mishap following. Lyzanda aduertised by her Sister, that Tryneus still thus vsed her company in the Bath: enuious of her Sisters benefit, and despitefull at Palmerins obstinate refusall, she went to the Soldane, and with many teares thus deliuered her griefe. Ah my Lord, how much better had it been, that wee had neuer knowne these cruell Christian Knights: whose ingratitude will bee the cause of my death: for the younger of them is maruellously beloued of my Sister, who forgetting her faith, honor, and her obedience to your Maiestie, hath dishonored both her selfe and you, onely to make proofe of the other Knights crueltie to me. The Soldane admiring his Sisters report, answered.

I did not will my Sister to abuse her selfe, without promise of marriage: but seeing it hath so fallen out, by my fathers soule they shall both repent it. Durst the Traytour abuse me so much in mine owne Court? Why my Lord, quoth Lyzanda, you are the onely cause thereof, and therefore you must bee angry with no body but your selfe. Let me not liue an howre said the Soldane, if I be not sufficiently reuenged on him: Sister, bee you but secret, and referre the rest to my direction. Then calling for the Captaine of his Guard, willing him to take fiftie Knights, and when his Maiestie was at Supper, they should goe take his Sister and the Knight with her in the Bathe, and afterward carrie them to strong prison. But see it done secretly,

stretly, quoth he, for if his companion know thereof, it may arise to further inconuenience. And because Palmerin should not mistrust this treason, all Supper time the Soldane held him in familiar talke: he hoping by this fetch, to stay them still in his Court, but it fell out afterward to be the cause, that many of his best and chiefest knights were slaine.

Not long had the ambushed knights waited where they were appointed, but the Princesse Aurecinda opened the doore, and came forth with her Friend as shee was accustomed: where they were suddenly taken, Tryneus not hauing the leisure to draw his Sword, so was he caried prisoner to one of the strongest Towers in the Pallace, and Aurecinda at the same time to another. Tryneus seeing himselfe thus betraide, fel into these lamentable discourses. Unfortunate wretch that I am, haue I so lately escaped by my Friend, the cruell enchauntments of the hellish Malfada, when I endured so many paines and torments, and am now come to the place where they shall be redoubled?

Ah Palmerin my good Brother and companion, what wilt thou say when thou hearest of my taking: but most of all when thou vnderstandest the cause thereof? Miserable wretch, how often did my Friend warne me of this inconuenience, yet had not I the grace to credit his counsell: doubtlesse my very conceit of shame, when thou shalt bee acquainted with my foule offence, will bee more grieuous to me then death. What dishonour, paine, torment and punishment, shall bee sufficient for my misdeede? Forlorne and despised Caitife, could not the feare of God, which hath hitherto so graciously protected thee, nor the loyaltie of Agriola, who forsoke Parents, Friends, and all for thee: haue kept thee from this monstrous acte? O eternall God, the man that forsaketh thee is vile and abominable. When I had thy feare before mine eyes, I was at rest and quiet in conscience, esteemed and beloued of all men: but when

thou gauest me raines of libertie, I became dissolute and forgetfull of thee, as also of them that honored me so much. Ah miserable occasion, and those deceits, entisements, and subtill perswasions: how mightie are they in operation: neither men nor diuels could bring me into such danger, as you haue plunged me in vp to the eares. Ah villainous Page that first brought me thither, and thou the falsest Ladie in the world art cause of my euill. Nor are they to be accused but my wretched selfe, who seeking mine owne hurt, found it, and hauing found it, continued in it. Thus sorrowfully wailed Tryneus, where on the contrary side Aurecinda reioyced: for when she considered the estate of her Friend, she perswaded her selfe by this meane, that the Soldane her Brother would enforce him to marrie her, which hope made her as ioyfull, as Tryneus was sad and pensiue.

When the Captaine had imprisoned Trynens & Aurecinda, he came to the Soldane sitting at the Table, saying: Will your Maiestie commaund me any further seruice? I haue enclosed the Knight Trineus in one Tower, and your Sister Aurecinda in another. Why? quoth the Soldane, did you find them together? I did my Lord, quoth the Captaine, your Sister leading him by the hand out of the Ladies hot house. By Mahomet, quoth the Soldane, but that you speake it, hardlie could I beleeue it, what shamefull villainie is this committed in our Pallace? by the greatest God, the fact shall be so worthilie punished, as it shall remaine for a perpetual memory. At these speeches Palmerin was not a little amazed, and dissembling his anger so well as he could, said to the Soldane. I cannot be perswaded my Lord, that Tryneus would commit so vile an acte, without entisement thereto by your Sisters treason: shee beeing (vnder your Maiesties correction) the most shameles Girle that euer I saw, for twentie and twentie times haue I seene her follow him, with gestures farre vnfitting one of her calling. Then starting from the Table, quoth he: Con-

sider

sider what he is, and what thou intendest against him, for never was imprisonment so dearely bought as this will be, and before thou puttest him to death, it shall cost me my life, and the liues of an hundred thousand knights beside, in reuenge of his wrong. Being thus enflamed with ire, hee could not so giue ouer, but thus began againe. By God Soldane, thy treasons is so manifest, as thou canst not hide it, full well doe I vnderstand thy flatteries, whereby thou hopest to keepe vs in thy seruice, but farre art thou frō thy reckoning, for rather will I be borne in a thousand peeces, then endure the reproch of such a mans seruice, who vnder colour of friendship imprisoneth his knights, and afterward threatneth them with death. Tomano, Dramino, Corax, and many other knights belonging to the king Abimar, seeing Palmerin in such a rage, as it seemed the fire did sparckle frō his eyes: endeuoured to perswade him, and Tomano thus spake to the Soldane. My Lord, vnder my safe conduct, and your faith promised, are these two knights come with vs to your Court, and you haue now imprisoned one of them, aduise your selfe of speedie iustice: for this shame done him is against all right, and for euer shall you be noted with breach of faith: beside, I repute his iniurie as done to my selfe. The Soldane seeing the Barons thus moued, although himselfe procured those fiftie Armed knights to take Tryneus, yet with smoothy countenance he thus answered. Content your selues my friends, Tryneus in right shall be defended: and if I find my Sister culpable, she shall be punished as she were a stranger. More I demaund not, said Palmerin, for I am assured, that by her flatteries Trineus hath been seduced. So departing to his Chamber, he met his two Squires, Bellechino and Colmelio, of whom he demanded, if they at any time perceiued the loue betweene Tryneus and the Princesse Autecinda.

They answered that they did perceiue it, and diuers nights they saw him goe to the Princesse Chamber. And

why did you not reueale it to me? quoth he, worthily haue you deserued death, in concealing the shame of your Maisters Friend, wherein my selfe cannot escape vntouched. Hereupon he Armed himselfe, and sending for the Prince Tomano, said to him.

I thinke it best my Lord, that you keepe your ordinarie guarde about your person, till we know how the Soldane will deale with Tryneus. As for my selfe, I intend (if your Brother Drumino and the Prince Corax will ioyne with mee) to keepe the Field with the thousand Knights that came hither with vs, that none may enter into the Cittie without our licence. In meane while, you may send a Courtier to the King your Father, that he presently send vs what helpe he may. Sir Palmerin, answered Tomano, not onely my Knights shall enter the Field for you, but my selfe likewise, so please you to commaund me, and what you thinke best for the deliuerance of your Friende Tryneus, I will bee willing to accomplish to my vttermost. Presentlie will I send a Horseman to Grisca, and conferre with my Brother Drumino, that his Knights and Gentlemen may be Armed that came from Sauara, as also they that came with my Nephew Corax from Garara, which will bee in number a thousand more: your selfe in meane time may get forth your necessaries.

Who then had seene the Knights Arming, the Horses prouiding, the bag and baggage carrying, would haue said, that Palmerin was as much feared & beloued in a strange Countrey, as in his owne. Such was the diligence of the Nobles and Souldiers of Grisca, Sauara and Garara, as they were right soone before the Pallace attending for Palmerin, who commanded Tryneus his Horse and rich Armoure should be brought forth by his Squires, leauing in his Chamber all the riches and treasure, that the Soldane and the Princesse Zephira had giuen him, and mounting on his owne Courser, he came and embraced y Prince Corax, saying: Let vs depart (my Lord) from these ingrate-

full.

full people that neuer knew how to entertaine strangers: well may the Soldane thanke the Princesse Zephira his Wife, else I had smitten his head from off his shoulders. There the Ensignes displayed, the Drummes and Trumpets sounding cheerfully, as the noyse was heard through all the Cittie.

And in this manner went Palmerin to the field, which caused such a tumult among the people, and such sedition amongst the Nobles of Persia, as they boldly told the Soldane, that most vnaduisedly he had imprisoned the strange knight and the Princesse his Sister, and Faith ought euermore be defence for a stranger. The Soldane perceiued his follie well enough, but as the man blighting in his euill, without altering his humour, regarded not their speeches: commaunding that they should all Arme themselues, and charging eache one expressly not to speake to Tryneus without leaue. Why? (quoth hee) the Fole that is gone, to much aduised mee in my Pallace: by my Crowne, I will punish both his pryde and his companions, maugre all them that dare say the contrarie. And so he went from them into his Chamber.

CHAP. LVI.

¶ How the Soldane seeing hee could not perswade Tryneus to marrye his Syster, condemned him to death, and what followed afterwards.



Omano, who by the good counsell and aduisement of Palmerin remained in the Cittie, with two hundred knights for the defence and safegard of his person: sought by all the best meanes he possibly could for the deliuerance of Prince Tryneus, and comming to the Queen Zephira, thus spake: Madam,

seing

sering men can no way perswade the Soldane, trye what the pleasing speeches of Ladies will do: who (in my iudgement) cannot come from him, without obtaining theyr requeste.

The Soldane hauing forgotten the especiall fauour, which heretofore he receyued by Syr Palmerin, for whose safety he gaue both faith and promise: at the simple report of Madame Lizanda, hath this Night past committed Sir Trynens Prisoner in the strongest Tower, saying he was found in the Bathe with Aurecinda. And so earnestlye dooth he prosecute the matter, as that notwithstanding the great intreatie of all the Princes and my selfe, he will not discharge him, but hath sworne that in despight of vs all hee shall be punished. What? (quoth the Queene) doth my Lord so much forget himselfe: that he will take his harme who hath done him such honour? Beleeue mee Madame (answered the Prince) I haue told ye the trueth: therefore when you shall walke to his Chamber, which is the place where all demaunds are graunted to Ladyes, you may put him in remembraunce of the Prince, and to giue some good words for him, that so willingly aduentured his life for you. Ah my Lord (said Zephira) I feare the Soldane will hardly heare me: For when such mightie persons are in anger, little account make they of Loue or vertue, yet will I willingly doe what lyeth in me.

So bidding the Prince good Night, she went weeping to the Soldanes Chamber: which his Maiestie perceiuing, came and embraced her, demaunding who had any way offended her? Euen you my Lord (quoth shee) and in such sorte, as if presently you doe not helpe it, I doubt the danger will be ve very great. I vnderstand you haue sent Trynens to Prison, and withall sworne that hee shall dye: if you suffer such an infamous deede, thinke not but that my life will speedily follow him. Madame (answered the Soldane, what I haue done is to no other ende, but to stay him and his company in my Courte, because they renowne is

so

so famous in Turkie. With this excuse he so qualified the Queene, that she durst not moue any further questions. The next day hee sent for the Prince Tomano, and with many other great Lordes went to see his Sister Aurecinda, framing his speeches to her in this manner.

Sister, you haue shewne your selfe of good gouernment, and great estimation made you of honour and vertue, in daring to thinke so fowle a thought as you haue committed in acte. Diost thou not consider the place of honour in my Courte: what shame hast thou done to the house of Persia, which hitherto neuer sustained blemish: and now is soyled by thy immodest dealing with a straunger. So much doth thy heynous faulte offend mee, that if he make thee not his Wife, thou shalt dye the death as the Law hath ordained.

Soldane (answered the Princesse fiercely) in vaine seekest thou to recall the Acte committed. Doest thou thinke my faulte so offensiue, which first was perpetrated by thy perswasion? To Loue a Gentleman, faire, well spoken, comely, sweete, gracious, and benigne, and who is of highest desert among all other: is it a matter deserning death? chiefely to a Princesse, whose youth may well excuse her trespasse? If it be worthy the name of a sinne, it is more to thee then mee: For thou diost first intreate, perswade, and commaund mee to Loue him: yea, thou diddest inuent the meane how to winne him.

By thy deuise first did I make proffer of that, which is the only sweet solace in Loue. If thou therefore wilt put me to death, my care is the lesse, seeing that with the moste perfect among men I haue obtained my desires. And for the fault shall not be layd on the best Knight in the world, my self prouoked him thereto, I called him, I deceiued him: and in briefe, more by force then Loue I constrained him to yeelde, to ease those passions that hourely tormented me.

When the Soldan beheld the impudencie of his Sister, he thus replyed. Very true it is, that I commaunded thee to Loue him, but not in this sort: whereof I can requell no bet-

better proue then thine owne shameleſſe ſpeeches, which I will ſeuerely correct before it be Night. So departing from her, hee went to Tryneus with theſe words. Sy Knight, I did neuer thinke that a man wiſe and valiant, as thou haſt bene eſtéemed, hauing ſéene and frequented many Princes Courtes, could imagine an act ſo fowle and deteſtable, in his Pallace that hath ſo highly honoured thée. It behoueth thée therefore to take thy choyſe of two things: either to amende thy fault by eſpouſing my Siſter, whome I franckly giue thée, and therewithall to renounce thy Baptiſme, or ſuffer cruell death in reward of thine offence. Soldane anſwered Tryneus, thou abuſeſt thy ſelfe in thinking to beguile me.

By GOD, ſirrah arme me with patience to the death, rather then for Riches and Honors momentarie, I ſhould forſake my Faith to my Sauiour, by whom I hope to enioy euerlaſting happineſſe. As for the fact thou twitteſt mee withall, well may it be excuſed: for I haue neither rauiſhed or violated, but by force of Loue erred, with her that threatned her owne Death before my face, except I conſented to her deſire: yet in reſpect of mine Honour, much better had it bene to haue ſuffered her dye: but to ſhunne the reproach of too ſeuere and inhumane Nature, I yelded to her Amorous petitions. Notwithſtanding, if thou therefore wilt put mee to death, thou canſt not doe me ſo much ſhame as thou imagineſt, but ſhalt cauſe mee to performe the Debt we all owe to Nature, and for which wee enioy our Byrth in this world.

To conclude, thy flatteries and menaces cannot make me thine, much leſſe hers, that hath ſo falſly deceyued mee. By the Starres (quoth the Soldane,) the audacious behauiour of theſe Knights maketh me to wonder: the one hath Villainouſly iniuried mee in the preſence of my Barons, and the other (for nothing I can ſay) will Exchaunge his opinion, which he ſhall full ſone and deerely repent. So cauſing the Tower to be faſt locked, he went to the great Hall,

and

and there before all his Knights, said. You haue heard my Lordes, the confession of them both, and withall haue seene their great obstinacie: therefore by sentence irrenocable I condemne them to death, and this day shall they be burned in the place accustomed, none of you all moove mee to the contrarie, for I will not be otherwise perswaded. By heauen, said the Prince Tomano, vnhappie should I be to stay with you any longer, wherefore at this instant I forsake your alliaunce, and henceforth will shew my selfe your mortall enemie. Alas my Lord quoth the young Princesse Belfino, will ye so soone abandon my companie? Follow mée then answered Tomano, where I goe: for no more will I be seene in this tyrannous Court, where nothing but dishonour and crueltie is vsed.

Presently the Princesse and hee mounted on horsebacke, and with their trayne came to Palmerins Campe: who hauing heard the Soldanes sentence, was readie to haue slaine himselfe, but that he hoped to saue the life of Tryneus at the fatall houre. Alas my Friends, quoth he, to his companie, this day must you assist me, to deliuer the most gentle Knight that euer bare armes. Set forwarde couragiously against the Tyrant, whom with the ayde of my God, wee shall easilie vanquish. Zephira hearing that Tomano and Belfina were gone, and how the Soldane had iudged Tryneus and Aurecinda to death: entred into meruailous regrets and acclamations, whereat the Soldane was so enraged, as he commaunded that Tryneus and his Sister, should presentlie be ledde to the place of execution, and vnder the charge of fiue thousand Souldiours, they were brought on horsebacke forth of the Cittie: but when Aurecinda sawe her selfe so hardlie vsed, wringing her handes, and renting her comelie locks of hayre, she brake forth into these pittifull speeches.

Alas Gentlemen, why are you the instruments to execute a Tyrants will? what recompence can you expect at his handes, that for greedie desire of my patrimony, sendeth

deth me to death: So pierceing were these wordes in the eares of the Souldiers, as they very much lamented her case: but Tryneus neuer chaunged colour, ryding on with resolute constancie, not once listning to the mones of the Princesse.

When they were come within sight of Palmerins power, they raunged themselues in battell arraie, committing Trineus and Aurecinda, the fiftie knights, who should conuey them to the Furnace where there death was appointed, which was a good quarter of a league from the Cittie. Tryneus now seeing death before his eyes, and no succour neere to relieue him: prepared himselfe to the latest extremitie, and with manie sorrowfull farewelles to Agriola and Palmerin, was fully perswaded to endure the torment. Palmerin knowing which way his Friend should be led to death, with a sufficient traine lay secretly ambushed, and espying opportunitie, gaue the summons to his men, whereupon they all issued forth very courageously. But as they rushed out from their secrete ambushment, the ayre was suddainly obscured, and such thunder, hayle and rayne fell, as neuer was the like heard or seene before: the Soldanes squadrone seemed to be all in a flaming fire. The poore Persians thinking the end of the world was come vpon them, fled towards the Cittie: but notwithstanding all their haste, the greatest part of them remained dead in the field. In the natural fire (prepared of Tryneus) made him fearful, doubtlesse this fire rayled by coniuration made him much more affrighted, but suddainly came to him an Armed knight with his Sword drawne, and mounted on a horse of mightie bignes, who tooke the horse of Tryneus by the bridle, saying.

Come Sir Tryneus, in despight of the Tyrant thou shalt not die. At these wordes arriued Palmerin, who embracing Tryneus, said, Ah my deere Friend and Brother, what villainous minds beare they that would doe you this outrage: alight, and put on your Armour which my Squire hath

hath brought hither, that wee may with honour reuenge this shame. As they thought to goe set on the enemie, the Armed knight, was Muzabelino, thus spake. My Lord, let vs not tarrie tryfling time heere, but summon your people together, and sette forwarde to Grisca, where you shall finde better succour then in this place. The desolate Tryneus, what with his former feare, and present ioy to beholde his Freind, was not able to speake one worde, but Palmerin hauing well noted the Armed knight, at length knew him to be Muzabelino, wherefore embracing him, said;

Ah my Lord, for euer be the king of kings praysed, in graunting me to haue knowledge of you, let me be worthilie condemned of ingratitude, if I doe not acknowledge this great fauour to my Freind: which I account as deere as done to my selfe. After manie courteous salutations passed on all sides, they sette forward to Grisca with their men and prouision: where we will leaue them, to shewe what afterward befell to the Soldane and his people. After a long and very dangerous tempest, with whirle-windes, lightnings, and strange apparations, to the great discomfort of all the Persians, one of the Princes, came to the Soldane, saying;

My Lord, the lightning hath fallen so terriblie in the Court, as all the Ladies of honor are slaine therewith. An other brought newes, that three parts of the Soldiours, which conducted Trineus and Aurecinda foorth of the Cittie, lay all slaine in the rough tempest. While these strange mishappes were discoursing, Aurecinda entred the Chamber, saying, Now Soldane maist thou behold thy sin: Seest thou not that the celestical spirits, haue reuenged our wrong with the death of thy people? and for my escape I render thanks to the highest, not to thee that gaue my life to the fire, yet much better would my death haue contented mee, then to liue without him whose absence is my torment: and did not the hope of his life giue mee some comfort, thou

shouldest

shouldest perceiue how little I estéeme of my life. Then entred the Quéene Zephira, and she falling at the Soldanes féete, thus began. Ah my Lord, the dishonour you haue this day done me is vnspeakeable. Haue my deserts béene so simple in your eyes, that I might not intreate the libertie of one Knight, who this day (I feare) hath perished by your ingratitude? Neuer shall I sée those noble Knights againe, whose liues haue béene endaungered for my welfare. Ah my Lorde, if you loke into the weight of your offence, you shall perceiue my teares are not shedde without great reason.

Madame, quoth the Soldane, and you faire Sister, at this time excuse my fault committed, and patiently heare what hath happened: for I vowe to you by the faith of a Prince, that I will make sufficient amends for my trespasse. When hee now thought to be no further troubled, his Sister Lyzanda entred mad and raging, and snatching his fallhion from his side, said. Sée villaine, sée what happeneth by thy commaundement, one of thy Sisters is for euer defamed, and the other will presentlie end her life before thée. Herewith she stabd the weapon to her hart, and fell downe dead at the Soldanes féete, to the no little sorow of his Maiestie, and all that were present: but Zephira, causing the bodie be taken away, the Soldane commanded she should be honourablie buried and erecting a goodlie Tombe of Marble ouer her graue, caused the maner of her death to be thereon described. Afterward, by the counsell of the Lords of Persia, he sent the Prince Tomano and the strange Knights, all the riches and treasure they had left behinde them: the Princesse Aurecinda remaining in continual heauines, and within shorte time she felt her selfe to be conceiued with Childe. Herein shee somewhat comforted her selfe, though Fortune would not suffer her to enioy the companie of her Freind, yet one day shee hopped to sée his liuelie image: which at the time appointed by nature she did, béing deliuered of the goodliest male Childe

that

that euer was seene in Persia, naming him Ryfarano, who carried the beautifull complexion of his Mother, as hee did the hardines and magnanimitie of his Father.

CHAP. LVII.

How Palmerin and Tryneus hauing sojourned a while at Grisca with the King Abimar, departed to the Isle of Malfada, where by the meanes of Dulacco and Palmerin, all the enchauntments were finished.

By the way as the Princes rode towards Grisca, Palmerin vsed these speches to Tryneus. How happy is the Prince that giues credit to good counsell, and will not be led by flatteries, or subiect himselfe to his owne passions? and how vnfortunate are they that fall into the contrarie? Can yee haue a better example hereof then the trayterous Soldane? who first (causelesse) disquited the good King Abimar, and afterward at his Sisters motion imprisoned his Friend: for your good successe herein my Lord, you must thank Muzabelino, and the Prince Tomano, whose power was so ready to defend you. Tryneus remembring his follies past, was still so ashamed thereof, as he could make no answere, wherefore Palmerin thus spake againe.

Why? my Lord, hath the imprisonment for faire Aurecinda strooken you dumbe: leaue this bashfulnes to Women, and remember your former courage. Stoute Hercules, whose honors are yet so rife in memorie, did not he for the loue of Iole, weare feminine garments, and spin

among women? Did not Achilles the like, when he was with his faire Friend in the Court of King Lycomedes? Marke Antonie the Romane Emperour, did not he follow Cleopatra before Octauius, although his Armie on the Sea, was twofold the number of his enemies? And you, for a little familiar loue to a young Princesse, who conquered you only by importunate sute, remaine thus confounded. Doe you imagine your selfe to excell in strength, prowesse and knowledge, Hercules, Achilles, and the Emperour Antonie?

Alas deere Brother, answered Tryneus, well may you boast of your especiall graces, being able to tryumph ouer concupiscence: but so grieuous is my offence in mine owne conceit, as I thinke my selfe vnworthie to be seene among men of vertue. What shall I say to my Agriola, when she shall vnderst and my heinous offence? how shal I dare to present my selfe before her? For that, saide Palmerin, we shall doe well enough: but I would it were so welcome to passe, that we were with her to abide her censure. Continuing these speeches, they arriued at Grisca, where the King being aduertised of their comming, came to méete them, vsing these gracious words at their entertainment. Right welcome are yee my noble Friends, no marvell though the Soldane sought to wrong you, remembring how for my sake you vsed him in the battell. In soth my Lord answered Palmerin, well doth your nobilitie deserue our seruice, and his iniurious dealing sharpe reuenge, which happily hereafter he may feele to his cost, vsing strangers so vnhonorablie: but heere we present your Daughter Belsina to your Maiestie, after whose mariage all these troubles began.

Welcome faire Daughter, said the King, much better then my Sonne hath been to your Fathers Court. When my Father, quoth the Princesse, hath considered his furie, doubtlesse he will be hartily sorrie therefore, and make satisfaction for any thing misdone: till then I beseech your highnesse

highneſſe to conceiue the beſt. And according as the Princeſſe had ſpoken, it came to paſſe, for within three daies after, the Soldane ſent Ambaſſadours to the King Abimar, to excuſe the imprisonment of Tryneus, and the ſentence of death hee gaue againſt him: ſending to him and Palmerin all their treaſure, and ſumptuous preſents in ſigne of ſatisfaction, and to his Daughter Belſina and the Prince Tomano, he ſent fiue Camels laden with gold, as the dowrie of their marriage.

Now are Palmerin and Tryneus weary of their ſo long ſtay from their Friends, wherefore they deſired leaue of the King to depart, who ſeeing he could not well intreate their longer aboade, right thankfully yeelded to their requeſt, giuing them all thinges needfull for their iourney, as Horſes, Armour, men, money, and diuers other gifts of ineſtimable value. For which kindnes they humbly thanked his Maieſtie, refuſing to trouble themſelues with ſuch riches in their trauaile, nor would they take that the Soldane ſent them, or what they brought from the ten Rocks: except the Bird and the two Crownes, giuing all the reſt to Muzabelino, deſiring him to continue them in remembrance. My Lords, quoth he, no ſeruice can bee loſt that is done to ſuch liberall Princes, as now you giue mee good occaſion to confeſſe: and though both I and mine would ſpend all our following daies in your ſeruice, yet can we not recompẽce the very leaſt of your courteſies, recommending my ſonne Bellechino once more to you my Lord, in hope he will proue a loyall and faithfull Seruant, otherwiſe I could part his head from his ſhoulders in your preſence.

And becauſe the way you brought Madame Zephira, is very long, troubleſome and dangerous: I haue prepared a Shippe for you, which without any perill ſhall ſpeedily carrie you to Malda, and a yong Knight my brother haue I appointed Pilot therein, who ſhall direct you how to finiſh all the enchauntments in the Iſle, and after-

ward I desire you so to order the matter with the King Maulerino, that my Brother may haue the gouernement thereof after your departure. Beleeue me noble Friend, answered Halmerin, your Sonne will I intreate as well beseemes him, and your Brother shall not onely haue the charge of the Isle, which I will freelie giue him: but I will so worke with the Brother to Zephira, that he shal endow him with greater possessions. So taking their leaue of all the Courtiers, Muzabelino brought him to the Shippe: wherein they were no sooner entred, but it presentlie cut through the waters with such violence, as they were very quicklie come to Malfada. They going on shore, Dulacco Brother to Muzabelino demaunded of the Prince Trineus, if hee had the King hee found in the Cup at the Castell of the fenne Rocks. I haue it on my finger Sir, answered Tryneus. Let vs three then enter the Isle, said Dulacco, as for you Bellecgino and Colmelio, stay you in the Ship till you heare the sound of a Cornet, and then may you safely venture on the land.

Dyardo standing in one of the Turrets in the Castell, saw when the Ship came and cast Anker, wherefore hee expected if any durst come foorth thereof on the shore, and so amazed he was that the three Knights were not transformed, as till Palmerin spake to him, hee knew not what to imagine, but afterward he made hast downe, and letting downe the Bridge, came and embraced him, saying: Welcome is my noble Lord to Malfada: haue you learned or brought any remedie with you, whereby to recouer your Friends here enchaunted: in happy hower did you best bestow your labour, if so it came to passe, but what may these two Knights bee that come in your company? The one is the Prince Tryneus, quoth Palmerin, whom I so long time sought for, and the other is the man that must giue vs assistance.

After many friendly embracings, Palmerin demaunded what was become of the two Damosels he left there.

My

My Lord, said Dyardo, they remaine prisoners to doe penance for the hard speeches they gaue you. So went they all to the prison, where Palmerin demanded which of them had the Key of the enchaunted Tower: but they continuing in their former obstinacie and malice, would not answer one word. False harlots, quoth Palmerin, why speake ye not? if you giue me not the Key quickly, all your sorcerie shall not saue your liues. They being fearefull of death, presently fell on their knees, and one of them taking the Key forth of her pocket, opened the doore of the Tower, saying:

Enter Knight, I hope thou wilt repent thy hastinesse. Palmerin and his three companions went in, where they beheld a huge Image of Copper, holding a Bow with an arrow readie drawne to shoote: by him hung a goodly Cornet of Iuorie, and on the other side a faire Booke. My Lord, said Dulacco, we must haue both the Cornet and the booke: and if you faile in getting them, no one aliue can ende the enchauntments. Yea God will strengthen me, said Palmerin, so drawing his sword and couering himselfe with his shield, he boldly stept to the Image. And in despight of the deuils that fiercely strooke at him, he pulld the Bow violently from him: when suddainly such a fearefull crie was heard through the Castell, as made them all to shake and tremble. The Booke and Cornet he easily reached, and giuing them to Dulacco, willed him to finish the rest. That will I, quoth he, but you must be readie to assist me: let vs now goe forth and you shall see maruailes: when I am reading the first leafe of the Booke, doe you sound the Cornet so loud as you can possible. Palmerin did as hee was commanded, and by the reading of Dulacco, and the sound of the Cornet, all that were enchaunted in the Iland came running thether; being so many as Palmerin was amazed thereat.

Dulacco hauing ended his Lecture, they all returned to their former shapes, the first were the contagious Fryoll,

the King of Sparta, the Duke of Pontus, the Prince of Mecæna, the Prince Olorico, Laurana and Agriola, whom Tryneus ranne and embraced, seeing her so perfect in beautie as euer she was.

Now the remembrance of his offence with Aurecinda, stopped the passage of his speech, and her fauours thowne to the great Turke, made her likewise ashamed: yet kisses and embracings with teares and sighes, deliuered their inward ioy for this happy meeting. Here must we imagine the comfort of the other fiue Princes and Laurana, then which doubtlesse could bee no greater, seeing their noble Friend that had deliuered them, and beholding each other in good disposition. Now are all those which were enchanted, brought to their former shape, as well Turks as Christians, and their Ships by Dulacco restored them againe: chiefely they that belonged to the Merchant Estebon and his Sonnes, to whom Palmerin gaue such abundance of treasure, as afterward they had no cause of want, discharging each one to their owne Coutry, who departed thence to their no little contentation. Agriola, Laurana and the other Princes, being altogether conferring of their good fortune, Palmerin commeth cheerefully among them, and discoursed what had happened since the separation, wherin hee reuealed all that you haue heard already, which to repeate againe would be but troublesome: it sufficeth you to conceiue, that all the Friends being met together, are so well acquainted with each others misshappe, as now they ioyntly reioyce in this happy successe. The next morning, Palmerin called Bellechino his Squire, saying to him.

Thou must presentlie poste to Elaine to the King Maulerino, and hauing saluted him on my behalfe: deliuer him these Letters, wherein his Maiestie shall bee acquainted with all that hath happened, but make all possible speede thou canst, because at thy returne we will sette to Sea presently. The Squire being gone. Palmerin gaue in charge to Dulacco, to see his Shippes victualed and prouided, and

that

that withall which Muzabellino had giuen him.

After ward he went to bid Agriola and Laurana good morrow, and then comming to Frysoll, the King of Sparta, and Olorico, who were all pleasantly discoursing together in their Chamber, hee said to them. Assuredly my good friends, if Fortune had been so aduerse to me, that I could not haue found Trineus, or the meane to deliuer you from the enchantment: I had giuen my farewel to Armes, riches and honour, and would haue haunted those pathes where neuer man trode. For with what face could I approch the presence of my Sister and Aunt, hauing left them whom they liue onely to loue. And you noble Prince Olorico, haue iust occasion to complaine on mee, that haue caused you to endure such paine and trauaile: but in recompence of this ouer great wrong, I will cause you to enioy her, whom you haue so long faithfullie loued, and so soone as I am arriued at Constantinople, I will send Ambassadours to my Lord the Soldan, that he may accept you as his Son in my stead.

My Lord, answered Olorico, the honour you haue done me, in accepting my company, I account to exceed all other courtesies, and though for a time I haue been vnfortunate. I take it patiently, assuring you by the word of a Prince, that I imagine the man not worthie to taste the sweete, who cannot abide to feele the sower. By this time are Palmerins Letters come to the King Maulerine, who hauing vnderstood their content, ioyfull of Palmerins returne, and of his good fortune in finishing the enchantments: hee came presentlie with his traine to Malfada, where to discourse the pleasure on each side conceiued, the honourable and gracious courtesies bestowed, with all the especiall fauours beseeming a King and so worthie personages, is farre beyond my capacitie, and therefore I referre it to your gentle consideration. But at Palmerins intreatie, Delacco was made Lord and chiefe Gouernour of Malfada, and diuers other territories nere adioyning:

which moued Palmerin thus to thanke the King. Seeing your Highnesse for my sake, hath bestowed this Iland on my worthy good Friend, to the end that the name of wicked Mallada may bee vtterlie raced foorth: let me intreate that it may henceforth bee called the Iſle of the two Louers, because therein was enchaunted two, the most loyall Seruants that euer Loue had, hauing endured wonderfull and dreadable fortunes, and yet here met in the end to their no little comfort.

Let it be, quoth the King, as you haue appointed, and whosoeuer henceforth calleth it otherwise, shall bee held among vs as an open blasphemer. Afterward the King accompanied Palmerin and his Friends to their Shippes, and there committed them to their prosperous voyage, to Palmerin, his seauen cõpanions, the two Princesses, with his Squires Bellechino and Colmelio, entred the Shippe that Muzabechino gaue him: the an hundred Knights which the King Madelrion had giuen him, were embarked in another Shippe well appointed, so hoysing saile, with a merrie gale of winde they launced into the Sea, and the King with his traine returned to the Courte, leauing Dolaco quietly possessed of the two Louers.

CHAP.

CHAP. LVIII.

¶ How Palmerin and his Companions saylingon the Sea, mee with Ptolomee and of the honorable entertainment the Emperour, Flarendos, and the Ladies them, when they arrived at Constantinople.



THe dayes sayles our knights without any straunge aduenture, and on the fourth, as Phœbus gaune enter his Chariot, to displaye his radiant golden beames on his Uncles Neptunes Regions: Palmerin standing aloft on the Decke, espyed a great Carrick, which with full sailes made haste towardes them, and by the Banners he discerned that it was of Turkie, wherefore he cryed aloud to his Companyons to arme themselues.

Suddenly were they all come aloft on the Decke armed, and the hundred knightes in the other Shipps were likewise in readynesse: when the Carricke being come neere them, they might behold the Turkes strongly prouided, and Ptolome their Captaine warely encouraging them. At length they buckled together, and a dangerous fight began betweene them, so that seuen of the kings Mauclerinos knights were slaine, the king of Sparta sore wounded by Ptolome, and Dyardo in great perill of his life. When Palmerin saw the king of Sparta fall, and that the Turkes had dangerously hurt diuers of his friendes, fearing the king was slaine, hee came to Ptolome, and after many sharpe strokes on either side, at length he tooke, when pulling his Helmet furiously from him, thinking to haue smitten off his head, Ptolome cried: Kill me not sir knight,

for

for I yéld my selfe to thée. Palmerin knowing his Friend, said to his companions and the rest. Giue ouer my friends, and fight no longer. for false Fortune hath too much deluded vs.

Ah worthy Ptolome, why haue I dealte so hardly with thée? Is it possible that any man may be likened to mee in mishap? no sooner am I out of one, but presently I fall into another: By Heauen (deare Friend) if I had slaine thée, right soone would I haue beene reuenged on my selfe. See then sweet Ptolome, how Palmerin grieues for his offence, more then if he had lost the best limme on his body. When Ptolome beheelde his Friende Palmerin, and by him the noble Prince Tryneus, embracing them, he said. O Sauiour of the World, how highly hast thou this day fauoured mee, permitting me to finde my dearest Friendes? Then they brought him to the Princesse Agriola in her Cabbin, who was not a little glad to behold the man, that endured with her some parte of miserie, and Colmelio was ioyfull to behold Syr Ptolome, in that their hap was to be parted when they were led to be sold as slaues: but Agriola would needs heare the discourse of all his Fortunes, since the first time of their separation, which he and Colmelio truely recounted. Beleeue me Ptolome said Palmerin, I see we haue had our shares in aduersitie, and hardly can we iudge whose wrong hath bene greatest: But how came you thus to bee Captaine among the Turkes? My Lord (quoth he) the Princesse Alchidiana bought me, and charged me to seeke you, aswell by Sea as by Land: and for my defence gaue me fortie Knights, of whome there now remaines but ten aliue. What Ladie am I highly beholding to (saide Palmerin, and for the wrong I haue done her by the death of her Knights, I will excuse my selfe by an honorable Embassade, when I shall send the Prince Olorico to her againe. And that thou Ptolome mayst know some of my good happe, vnderstande that I haue founde my Father and Mother, who are Florendos the King of Macedon, and Griana the Daughter

and

and Heyre to the Emperour of Greece. I did euer perſwade my ſelfe (quoth Ptolome) that your Diſcent was of Royall linage: But I intreate you for my ſake, that theſe Knights which your men haue taken, may be gently vſed, and enioy their Liberty. Palmerin calling them to him, ſaid. For Ptolome his ſake, that was your Captaine, and her Loue who commanded you to trauell with him, I wiſh to you as to my ſelfe: yet ſhall you all goe with me to Conſtantinople, that you may helpe to conduct the Prince Olorico backe againe, whome I meane to ſend with you vnto your Miſtreſſe.

We abide my Lord (quoth they) at your Direction, and willingly obey your commaund, in that wee haue knowne how dearely the Soldane loued you, and better Fortune could not haue befallen vs, then ſo luckily to meet with you and the Prince Olorico: as for our Companions that are ſlaine, there is no remedie, for ſuch miſhappes are common, where Fortune frowneth. So ſayled they on friendly together, and on the Sea we will leaue them, to tell you of the returne of the Embaſſadour Maucetto to the Soldane of Babylon, who hearing that the Perſian had refuſed to aſſiſt him, was ſomewhat offended thereat: But when he ſaw what Palmerin had written, hee pacified himſelfe, ſaying: Ah gentle Palmerin, hadſt thou bene in the Battel at Conſtantinople, I had not needed to demand help of him whom I iudged my Friend: but ſeeing Fortune hath ſhowne herſelfe ſo contrary, I will not attempt any thing, from which thou diſſwadeſt me.

Maucetto declared, that Palmerin had likewiſe ſent a Letter the Princeſſe Alchidiana, which hee commaunded him preſently to carry her: So ſoone had ſhee read the Letter, and thereby vnderſtanding his knighly deedes of Chiualry, but embracing the Embaſſadour, ſhe thus ſpake: Maucetto, neuer couldeſt thou haue brought mee better newes, then of the man whoſe Name flouriſheth in all places. Ah ſweet Letter, written by the hand of the moſt perfect

fect knight living, full of charitie, and chyefelie will I kéepe thée. Ah Prolome, whome my Noble friend loues so déere-ly, thée haue I sent in dangerous hazard of thy life: but may I once sée thée againe, thou shalt perceiue my Loue for Palmerins sake.

Happy art thou Princesse Aephira, hauing with thée the myrrour of mankinde. Ye Lord (quoth she) as though Palmerin had beene present) wilt thou wrong thy selfe so much as to tarry with her? Dare the Soldanes Sisters vaunt that they loue thee? They beléeue, as I vnderstand, but yet not so faire that thou shouldst refuse mee for them. What haue I saide? doubtlesse matter to mine owne reproach, for if thou wouldest, the kingly offers of my Father, and my importunate intreaties could no way moue thée: hardly may the Persians prenaile with thee, especially in such a weightie cause as Loue is. Maucetee, what saiest thou? is Lorde Palmerin like to stay long in Persia with the Soldans sisters? No Madam (quoth he) I heard him say very often that hee would depart thence before a Moneth was expyred.

In these and such like speeches they continued, wherein I wee purpose to leaue them: For by this time is Palmerin and his Friendes arriued in the Hauen of Constantinople, and Colmelio is sent before to the Pallace, to aduertise the Emperour of the moste ioyfull tydings. As Colmelio entred into the great Hall, the first man he met was his Father Gerard, who was newly made Lord Chamberlaine to the King Florendos: wherfore falling on his knée before him, he saide: Father, little did I thinke to finde you exalted to such honour, happy was the day when you found Prince Palmerin: and much more happinesse is this day, in that I bring the most ioyfull newes that euer Man did to this Court. Old Gerard was exceeding glad to behold his sonne, catching him in his armes, said. Welcom Colmelio to thy aged Father: hast thou heard any tydings of thy Lord and Maister? Get with me Father, answered Colmelio, and

you

you shall heare matter of meruaile. At that instant came the Emperor with the King Florendos into the Hall, and all the Ladies going to heare diuine seruice, wherefore Gerrard thus spake to his highnesse. My Lord, se heere my Sonne Colmelio, who long time hath trauailed in searche of Prince Palmerin, he hath some message of importaunce to deliuer to your Maiestie. Right welcome is hee, quoth the Emperour, say what thou wilt my freind, thou hast free libertie.

Mightie Emperour, said Colmelio, your Son Prince Palmerin is arriued in the Hauen, and with him the yong Prince Tryneus, Sonne to the Emperour of Allemaigne, the good knight Sir Ptoleme, the fiue Princes which went with him from Macedon, the two Princes of England and Durace, with diuers other vnknowne to me: and saluting your Maiestie with his humble, duetie intreateth that Horses may be sent for them and the Ladies that hee and they may come to kisse your highnes hande. The Emperour, Florendos and the Ladies, were readie to swoune with ioy at these tidings, and hauing embraced the Messenger, commanded a royall trayne to goe meete his sonne, and goodlie Palfraies to bring them to the Pallace, some ranne on foote to the Porte, other on horsebacke, so that before the Emperours traine came, such store of Gentlemen and Merchaunts were there to receiue them, as hardlie they could stand one by another. After they were all mounted on horsebacke, with great ioy and triumph they rode towards the Pallace, where Tryneus falling on his knee before the Emperour, said.

Long liue your Maiestie in health and happines, heere may you beholde the man, for whome my Lord Palmerin your sonne, hath endured such paine and trauaile. The Emperour perceiuing by his speeches that he was Tryneus the Prince of Allemaigne, thus answered. I hope my Lord that you will beare with mine age and weakenesse, which hinders me from entertaining you as faine I wold, but

but I beseech you to arise, for it ill beseemes so great a Prince, to humble himselfe in such sort. Florendos & Griana (in this time) welcommed their Sonne, Arismena the King of Sparta, Armida her Frysoll, and the old Emperor and Empresse graciously entertained Agriola and Laurana, each absent Friend so embraced and welcommed, as all the day was spent onely in those ceremonies. The next morning Palmerin dispatched his Dwarfe Vrbanillo to the Emperour of Allmaigne, that he and Polynarda might vnderstand these long expected newes: and afterward comming to Sir Frysoll, he said to him; Brother, our Mother hath enriched vs with a Sister since our departure, and my Sister Armida me with two Nephewes, I pray you let vs goe see them.

Hereupon the Nurses brought the young Princes, the eldest of them being named Dytrius, and the youngest Belcar, the young Princesse, Daughter to Florendos and Griana, was called Denisa: so fayre and comely were the Infants, as if Nature had studied to make them most exquisit. Beleeue me Sir Frysoll, quoth Palmerin, if my Sister continue as she begins, the Realme of Hungaria shall hardlie want heires: what? two at a blow, bir Lady it is a signe of good fertilitie. And when you are entred the estate of wedlocke, answered Frysoll, if your linage increase according to the greatnesse of desire: Madame Polynarda shall be as well sped as her neighbours. Thus ieested the Princes together, attending newes of the Courtier, that went with Vrbanillo to the Emperour of Allemaigne, who at that time was at Vienna.

CHAP.

CHAP. LIX.

How the Duke of Mensa and the Countie of Redona, conducted the Prince Olorico into Assiria, where hee was espoused to the Princesse Alchidiana.

FOr the space of a Moneth and more, Palmerin, Trineus and Agriola soiourned at Constantinople, till all things were prepared for them to trauell towards Allemaine: during which time, Palmerin shewed such signes of loue to the Prince Olorico, as hee would seldome be forth of his company. And seeing that more and more his amorous passions encreased, hee said: Deere Friend Olorico, although I am no way able to recompence your long continued kindnes, or remunerate the paine and trauell you haue suffered in my company: yet haue I determined (so you like thereof) to send you to Assiria, and with you the Duke of Mensa, and the Counte of Redona, as Ambassadours to my Lord the Soldane, with such an honourable traine beside, as Mysos shall haue no occasion to complaine.

Nor doe I this (sweete Prince) as enuious of your company, or that I stand in feare of the Soldane: but only to keepe my promise, which was, that I would aide you to my vttermost, to accomplish the marriage betweene you and Madame Alchidiana, for whom I see your mind is incessantly troubled. My Lord, answered Olorico, if euer perfect loue might bee discerned in a Princes heart, doubtlesse it is most amply deciphered in yours. Where can you

find

finde in any Hiſtorie, ſemblable affection? or that a Chriſtian would ſo fauour his enemie, that is contrarie to him in Law and profeſſion? Rare is the humanity, that ſo great a Prince would ſo much abaſe himſelfe, to accept as his companion in Armes, the poore Sonne to the King of Arabia: promiſing for his good, not the ſuretie alone of the Chriſtians, but the aliance of the greateſt Lord in Aſia. Wherefore my noble Lord, ſince of your accuſtomed good nature you haue made me this offer, of ſimple iudgement ſhould I ſhew my ſelfe to refuſe it. I accept your gracious kindnes, and aſſure your ſelfe of his readie ſeruice, whom your precious vertues hath ſo bound to you, as for euer I will name my ſelfe the Seruant to the Prince of Greece. Hereupon Palmerin wrote to the Soldane of Babilon in forme as followeth.

The Letter of Prince *Palmerin*, to the great Sultane of *Babylon*.

RIght puiſſant Lord of Aſſiria, if the obedience we owe to Parents and Countrey, are cauſes ſufficient to cal home a Knight errant, with refuſall of all ſtrange friendſhips and alliaunces: I hope your Maieſtie wil not miſlike of my returne from Perſia to Conſtantinople. And becauſe I was there aduertiſed by your highnes Ambaſſadour Maucetto, how you haue reſolued to ver vs with open hoſtilitie: I will now reueale vnto you, that by the grace and fauour of the higheſt God, ſince my departure from your Courte, I haue obtained knowledge of my Parents, who are ſuch, as if you ſeeke the wracke of Conſtantinople: you goe about to deſtroy that Palmerin, whom heretofore you haue ſo deerelie loued, and is now become the onely heire to that Empire. Wherefore my Lord, if for my ſake you will graunt ſo much, as to forget reuenge for your deceaſed Brother Ganezio: both we and all ours

ſhall

shall continually name our selues, your Friends and assistants against all your enemies. Contrariwise, if you will follow your former opinion, we must defend our selues so well as we may. And for I am no more (with credit) forsake my Countrey, Parents and Friends, to returne againe to your seruice: I send you the Prince Olorico, a Knight both valiant and hardy as any in all Turkie, without exception of your Court, the great Turkes, or the Soldane of Persia, and he to serue you in my stead. Desiring your highnesse by that affection which you did beare mee, when the Prince Amarano was slaine in your presence: that you accept him as your Son, and giue him in mariage to your daughter Alchidiana, as the man that hath best deserued her, if euer Prince might merit a Ladies loue by bountie and choise chiualrie. So shall you performe an action of mickle honor, and bind me continually to acknowledge this kindnes.

Yours Palmerin d' Oliua.

An other Letter he wrote to the Princesse Alchidiana, the tenure whereof was thus.

The Letter of *Palmerin*, to the Princesse of *Assyria*.

TO you Madame Alchidiana, daughter to the great Soldan of Babilon: Palmerin d'Oliua your Knight, sendeth health condigne to your magnificence Madã, sending to your Father the Duke of Mensa, and the County of Redoua our Ambassadors, to intreate of perpetuall peace & aliance betweene his Maiesty and vs, whereto may it please you to giue fauourable assistance, I thought good by them likewise to write to your excellencie, with earnest intreaty to receiue as yours, the Prince Olorico, heire

to the Crowne of Arabia. You know faire Madame, that neuer had he come to your Fathers Court, had not the perillous battell against the proud Brethren of Amarano prouoked him, nor would hee haue aduentured the dangers of the Sea, but in hope (at length) to purchase your gracious loue. For these considerations, good Madam, entertaine him into your sober thoughts, who hath no more feared to spend his blood for your sake, and thrust his life into infinite dangers, then I haue done to set my hand and pen to this paper. I know that your grace, beautie and great dowrie, commandeth the chiefest Prince on the earth for your Husband, and (to shield my selfe from blame) I know that I promised you my seruice, when I should returne from Constantinople: but how hath it fallen out: your Palmerin is knowne by them that haue like authoritie ouer him, as your loue hath on the Prince Olorico. I am a Christian, a stranger, Sonne to the simple King of Macedon, and Daughter to the Emperour of Greece, beside, of very little or no desert at all. Hee is of your Law, your Neighbour, Sonne to the rich King of Arabia, & a Prince of as high vertue as euer was in my companie: witnesse whereof he made on the Phrygians, and in an hundred places since in my presence. Wherefore Madam, if nobleness of hart, and loyall loue deserue so great an alliance, I know no Prince this day liuing more worthy then he. Assuring you withall, that more gladly would I die the death, then sollicite the cause of him, whom I should but imagine vnworthy your person.

Your Knight, Palmerin d' Oliua.

When hee had sealed their Letters, he gaue them to the Ambassadours, who accompanied with fiftie Grecian knights, went to the Hauen where their Ships was prepared: after them followed the King Maulerinos hundred knights, the number being supplied with other, in stead

steade of them that were slaine, and after them went the Knights that came with Ptolome: then came the Prince Olorico and Palmerin, deuising by the way on many seuerall businesses.

My Lord (quoth Palmerin) I imagine you nowe remember our taking by the Admyrall Olimaell, and feare that like mishappe may againe befall you: I therefore (as your Guarde) giue you the hundreth Knights I had of the King Maulerino, and fiftie other Knightes naturally borne in Greece, as able in Armes as any other whatsoeuer, intreating you to hold me excused if I giue you not such estate becomes your Nobility. Worthy Palmerin (answered the Prince) tge greatest Lord that is might well content himselfe with the Honourable companie you haue giuen mee. And had not extreame passions ouer-ruled me, and cald me hence to her seruice whom I haue onely chosen: I would forsake Arabia, and the Lawe of Mahomet, onely to liue in your companie. But in what place my Fortune guides me hereafter, neither Parents or Friends shall hinder mee to say that I am your bolwed and affectionate Seruant. The like also doe you conceiue of me (said Palmerin.) So with teares they left eache other, Olorico and all his companie being aboord, such fauourable wind and weather they had, as without any danger they safely arriued where the Soldane lay: and first the tenne Knights went on shore, they that were left of the companie which the Princesse Alchidiana gaue to Ptolome, and comming before the Princesse, said:

Madame, your Knight Sir Ptolome humbly saluteth, you by vs, sending your excellencie this Letter. Beside there is now arriued at the porte, the Prince Olorico, and certaine Ambassadours from the valiant Palmerin, Prince of Greece and Macedon, who come on his behalfe to kisse your hand. The Princesse hauing heard these newes, and read the Letter which Ptolome sent, containing the great good fortunes of Palmerin, was inwardly so rauished with

delight, as a long space shee remained silent, but at length brake forth into these speeches. Ah Fortune, how well thou knowest to change matters which way thou pleasest, not according to the will & desire of passionate mindes, but on the behalf of the highest in perfections. Ah Palmerin, the man whom my heart shall euer loue, how may faire Polinarda iustly tearme her selfe happy, hauing thee for her Lord and loue: considering that the beautie and graces of so many Ladies conquered with thy deserts, nor the sumptuous riches continually offered thee, could once diuert thee from thy first affection. Ah Alchidiana, that which hath made so many Ladies and Knights fortunate, in compassing the onely issue of their desires, doth now remaine for thy torment alone, making thee the most vnhappy creature vnder the Sun. Agriola, Griana, Acismena, Acmida and Zephira, are they (sweete Knight) by thy meanes in assurance of their loues: Tryneus, Frysoll, the King of Sparta, Maulerino, Abimar, Tomano and diuers other: are their Realmes quieted, and their Ladies triumphing in their ioyes, onely by the price of thy blood, and danger of thy life: And must I alone remaine disgraced, for euer confounded, hauing lost the Knight I loued as my soule: While the Princesse continued these complaints, the Prince Olorico and the Ambassadours were come before the Soldane, and being entertained by him with very gracious countenance, they presented the Letters from Palmerin, which being read in the presence of all his Lords, the Soldane thus answered.

My Friends, I will impart these newes to my Counsell and my Daughter, and afterward make you answere as I may. Hereupon the Duke of Mensa, the Countie of Redora, and the Prince Olorico withdrew themselues, and sone after the Soldane sent for his Daughter, thus speaking to her; Daughter, our Princes thinke good, and haue counselled me to make peace with Palmerin, who at this present is heyre of Greece: and requireth in witnesse

of

ak our truce, that I should giue you in marriage to the renowned Prince Olorico. Aduise your selfe hereon, for Palmerin hath earnestly intreated it by writing, and here I haue a Letter for you, I think to the same effect. The Princesse hauing read the Letter, returned this answere. It is very true my Lord, his request to mee is for the selfe same cause: seeing therefore it liketh you, and the Princes of our Realme think it conuenient, in respect of the common profit and good may ensue thereby: it is not for mee to make denial.

Right glad was the Soldane of this answere, wherefore he said. Goe then faire Daughter and decke your selfe accordingly, for after Dinner in the Presence of the Ambassadours, you shall be affianced to the Prince. Olorico since his arriuall had talked but little with his Ladie, wherefore hee now determined to goe see her: and meeting her as she returned from the Soldane, hee saluted her with great reuerence, but the Princesse feigning that shee knew nothing yet of their mariage, thus spake to him. I vnderstand my Lord, that your companion Palmerin hath altogether forsaken vs. Madame, quoth the Prince, if hee haue abandoned your company, it is onely by the fauour of Fortune, who hath been a greater Friend to him then any man beside: yet cannot the great honours and possessions hee now enioyeth, make him forget you, in that at my departure he said, for euer he would liue and die your Knight. God keepe him, said the Princesse, where euer he is, for still is my hart bound to his remembrance: and gladlie can I doe as much for him as for my Brother, though his present aduancement hinder him from my seruice. Such is his trust Madame, quoth he, in your fauour, that you will not refuse any honest request he makes to your excellencie, in which respect her hath fortuned to intreate you, that you will be a meane to the peace he desireth with your Father, and that you would vouchsafe me so much honor, as in his sted to entertaine me into your seruice, which to begin, I

present you my heart, that neuer since the day of our departure from Constantinople, hath entred any rest, being absent from the onely meanes of my comfort. If then I haue liued all this while in some hope, by remembraunce of your exceeding graces and courtesies: beyond all other should I account my selfe in happinesse, if now at length you receiue me as your Seruant. I receiue you, saide the Princesse, for Palmerins sake, and for your owne deserts, which haue bene so worthy: requiting you with equall affection, so that you denye me not one request. Nothing shall you be denyed (sweete Princesse, quoth hee) if by my life it may be compassed.

Nor will I demaunde any thing of so great value (saide she) this is the fauour you shall graunt me: hereafter when time shall serue, that you will conduct me to Constantinople, there to behold the faire Princesse Polynarda, and the magnificent Courts of Noble Palmerin, in recompence whereof, I giue my selfe to be your Wife, and accept you as my Lord and Husband. If Olorice was now well pleased, I referre to your iudgements, whereafter confirming their premises, by kisses and embracings, with solemne protestations and irreuocable vowes, they departed thence, to their Chambers.

After Dinner, the Princesse Attyred in most sumptuous Garments, came into the Hall with her waiting Ladyes, when the Soldane sent for the Ambassadours, and thus spake to them. My Friends, I now perceiue the man to be ouer foolish that trusteth in himselfe, I thought by my power to destroy Greece, where on the contrary my people are destroyed. I thought to continue vnquenchable hatred toward your Maister, and now I am constrained to graunt him Peace: yet not constrayned, but by the worke of the greatest God, I am moued so to do, which in the presence of all my Lordes I protest, and with as good a will as hee doth demaunde it. See then the power of that Maiestie, which can subdue and conquer where he list: and I sweare to

to you by my Crowne, that the good Fortune of Palmerin, contenteth me as well, as if hee were mine owne Sonne. Mightie Soldane, answered the Duke of Mensa, if you resolue to loue the Prince Palmerin, both hee and his will not faile to performe the like vnto you: and on his behalfe we moste faithfully promise, that against all your Enemyes, (Christendome excepted) you shall be assured of his succour assistaunce.

I request no better assistaunce (quoth the Soldane) then this that he hath sent, and that you may witnesse I am his faithfull Friend: at this instant shall the peace be ratified by all the Lords and Princes here present, and to seale the same, as he requested, I giue my Daughter to the worthie Prince Olorico. Great ioy was generally made for this good agreement, and the two Louers were Espoused together within fewe dayes after: and the time being come for the Embassadours returne to Constantinople, Alchydiana sent diuers rich gyfts to Palmerin and Polynarda, the like did the Soldane and the Prince Olorico.

CHAP. LX.

¶ How Palmerin, Tryneus, and Agriola, accompanied with many great Lords and Princes, went to the Emperour of Allemaigne at Vienna, where great tryumphs were made, at the celebrating of the Mariage between Tryneus, and the Princesse Agriola.

SOone after the Prince Olorico, and the Embassadours of Greece were gone towardes Assiria, Palmerin (although the Aged Emperour very much dissuaded him) made prouision for his speedy voyage to Allemaigne: and hauing already conducted the K. of Sparta

and his Aunt Arismena some part of their way homeward: at his returne to the Citie of Constantinople, came to the Duke of Pontus, saying: I remember the time when you did cut off the great Turkes head, an acte deseruing good and especiall recompence, and that you thereby deliuered vs, and performed it at the motion of the Princesse Laurana: her haue you loued euer since both on land and Sea, and her Countrey is not farre hence, wil ye now make her your Ladie & Wife? I promise yo my assistance so farre as I can.

My Lord, answered the Duke, fearing to offend you, I still deferred to moue you in this cause: but seeing wee are now so happily fallen into these tearmes, I will not conceale the truth from you. In sooth my Lord, when first I saw her, I loued her, and haue euer since continued in this hope, that time at length would fauour my intent. It suffiseth, said Palmerin, and presently he acquainted the Emperour therewith, who thinking the match very meete and conuenient: they were the next day maried by the Archbishop of Constantinople, and in short time after went to take possession of their Duchy of Durace, where they were receiued very honorablie, and the whole State yelded vp into the Dukes hand.

When Palmerin saw that the most part of his companions were departed, at the earnest intreatance of the Prince Trineus and Agriola, he set forward to Allemaine, accompanied with Frysoll and Armida, whom he conducted into the Realme of Hungaria, where Frysol was crowned King by reason of his Fathers decease, there went with him likewise Diardo of Bohemia, ỹ Prince Eustace, Ptolome & other Lords of great account. Such good speede they made in their iourney, as in short time they arriued at Vienna, where the Emperour being aduertised of their comming by the Dwarfe, came with his courtly traine to meete them, and taking his Sonne Tryneus in his armes, said: I see it is the will of God my Sonne, that hereafter

I

I shall haue as great ioy by thee, as in thy long absence I haue had griefe and sorrow, all which I patiently put vp, for the loue of thy Brother, the Noble Prince Palmerin, and faire Agriola of England, that well deserues it. But in good sooth my Children, had you not come in so happy time, I should haue bene driuen to marueilous feare. For the King of France perceiuing, that I would not giue my onely Daughter in marriage to his eldest Sonne, demaunded the King Recinde of Spayne his Daughter, who graunted his request: so that they twayne, with the ayde of the king of England, haue leuyed such an Armie on the Sea, as neuer was the like seene to passe the Rheine. But seeing you returned in good disposition, the lesse account I make of their angry menaces: yet are they the three principall Kings of Christendome.

Thy Lorde (answered Palmerin) be not you dismayde at their Enterprise, for ere many dayes be expyred: I haue to see all matters quietly pacified, and that without any effusion of Blood. The lesse is my doubt (quoth the Emperour) in that with such good Fortune you haue finished your intentions, for nothing you begin, but comes to luckie ende. Witnes hereof appeareth in the search of my Sonne Tryneus, whom the best Knights of Christendome haue laboured to find: but all their trauel I see hath bene spent in vaine. By this time they were come to the Palace, where they were graciously receyued by the Ladies. Alas my friends, saide the Empresse, which of you shall I first embrace?

Ah my Son Tryneus, how sorowful hast thou made me since thy departure from England? Iust cause hast thou to thanke the Heauens, which preserued thee still in so many daungers, and forgetfull thy Mother Flerida, who hath endured many troubles for thy sake. Faire Daughter, (quoth she to the Princesse Agriola) welcome are you indeed. God send you better Fortune hereafter, then you haue had already, though yet hath bene a Mirrour of your loyaltie. But while my eyes peruse, and minde, how the other two

Louers with piercing Regard beholde each other, and how many gratious signes passed as secrete Embassadours betweene them. Polynarda was clad in such costly Accoutrements, for the pleasure she conceyued the Dwarffs artiuall at the Court: as she seemed another Iuno, when she stood to abide the Arbitrement of Paris, or like Voluptas, following her Mother.

But fearing least this Amiable encounter, should decypher some parte of her former courtesies to her Friende, which as yet was vnknowne to any by Bryonella: she locked vp all secrets with so sweete a kisse, as would haue contented the rudest of the Gods, had it bene Vulcane or Neptune themselues. And comming to salute the Princesse Agriola, saide. No marueil (faire Syster,) if your Loue wrought wonders in my Brothers minde, for vnfainedly I speake it, your exquisite Graces deserue the greatest seruice in the world. Alas Madame, answered Agriola, if Nature, or they that had the charge of mee in my youth, could haue painted me with such Beauty, as I see in you, or vnriched me with Wisedome, able to reuile with my Lord when he came to see me: then could I haue said somewhat of the paines he hath taken for me, but I know my selfe so full of imperfections, as the Loue he beares me proceedeth of his owne good Nature, not by any merite he can beholde in me. Then Palmerin kneeling before the Emperour, saide. I beseech you my Lord graunt me one request, which shall be no way preiuniall to your Maiesty. Arise Sir Palmerin (quoth the Emperour) aske what thou wilt, and thou shalt haue it.

My Lords Tryneus and the Princesse Agriola, saide Palmerin, are religiously married betweene themselues, let me intreate your Highnes to confirme it with open solemnization, before the Duke of Mecenas here present: whom I mean to to send into England, that he may resolue the King how himselfe was an eye witnes of their Marriage. The Emperour liked so well of Palmerins motion, as sone after

the

the Wedding was sollemnized: and he comming to Brionella, courteously taking her by the hand, sayde. My good Friend Bryonella, I am now to be discharged of the promise I made at my last being heere: in witnes whereof I haue brought your Knight Syr Ptolome, and him I commend to your further fauour. So highly am I beholding vnto you my Lord quoth he, as neuer shall I be able to requite sufficient recompence: but were wee shall in ioy with the Prince Tryneus and fayre Agriola, then would I thinke no Rome can wrong vs.

Palmerin at these wordes presently left her, and perswaded the Emperour so well: as Ptolome and Bryonella were likewise espoused together: when Palmerin conferring with the Princesse Agriola, thus spake to her.

Now may you iudge Madame, whether I deceyued ye or no: and if the Estate of my Lord Trineus be any lesse then I telde ye. Had I not giuen faithfull credite to your speaches? answered Agriola: I would not haue forsaken my Parents and Friends so rashly: but I hope they will pardon me, in that I haue done nothing but to their honor.

On the Morrow with exceeding ioy and rare triumphs, were Palmerin and Polynarda Married together. And thus was long and faithfull Loue worthily requited. Ptolome was now Created Duke of Saxonie, and Dyardo tooke his leaue to goe see his Wife Cordonye, whom he had not heard any tydings of, since he was first taken by the Pyrates.

FINIS.

CHAP. LXI.

How Palmerin sent Ptolome Duke of Saxon (as his Embassadour) to the King of Fraunce, and the Duke Eustace of Mecæna, to the King of England, to treat of the peace betweene them.



Certaine dayes before the departure of Dyardo towards Bohemia, Palmerin in the Presence of the Emperour and all the Princes, gaue the charge of his Embassade to the Duke Ptolome: which he should deliuer, not onely vnto the most Christian king of Fraunce himselfe, but also to his youngest Sonne, who now had espoused the Duchesse of Burgundie.

So departed Ptolome from Vienna, accompanied with many worthy Lords and knights, and at length arriued at Digeon, where the Prince Lewes being made acquainted with the cause of his comming, thus answered the Embassadour.

My Lorde, sometimes I had acquaintance in Fraunce, with the most renowned Palmerin, and because hee is the onely man of the Worlde, to whome I owe all friendly affection: I will perswade my Father to ioyne in Peace with him. Now was Ptolome in good hope that his trauell would sorte to successefull ende, wherefore they presently iourneyed to the king, who as then was with his Estates at Paris: and hauing heard Palmerins request, who nowe was wedded to the Princesse Polynarda, and therfore his intended warre to the Emperour, would extende to the hurt of the man he loued, thus answered. Duke of Saxon, I

am

am sufficiently acquainted with the bountie of the Em-
perour, and very well I doe remember, that at his being in
France he combated for his Lady Polynarda: yet was I
ignorant till now of that hath happened. But least hee
should conceive, that I seek to make a commotion in Chri-
stendome: let him enjoy his Lady and Wife in peace, al-
though she was sometime promised to mine eldest Sonne,
reserving their conditions of our amitie, that our first Na-
phewes and Neeces may match together in marriage, there-
by to continue the honour of their predecessors. As for the
Kings of Spaine and England, who moved me to give them
assistance: on their behalfe I am make you no certaine an-
swere, vntill my Messengers bee returned home againe.
Gracious Lord, quoth Ptolome, I dare assure you in the
name of my Master, that he hath enermore affirmed your
favour among the best Christian Princes, and will not re-
fuse the marriage betweene your Children hereafter. And
this continuation of your amitie, will cause, that neither the
Kings of Spaine or England will seeke to molest him: but
with your highnesse leave he takes his leave and kindnesse. With
this answer Ptolome returned to Vienna, where the Em-
perour and Palmerin welcommed him with exceeding ho-
nour: and by this time was the Duke Eustace taken land-
ding in England, where delivering the summe of his charge
to the King, his highnesse returned him this answer. Al-
though my Lord Ambassadour, both your Master and the
Prince Tyrneus did me manifest dishonor, yet not to with-
stand peace, which still ought to be preferred before warre,
I grant his request, and will presently call home my
Garrisons, shaking hands with him in honourable concord.
As for the wrong done to my Daughter, I am content to
amend it, beleeving that shee was not conveied hence, but
with her will: thanking the Prince for the honour hee hath
done her, seeing she would leave her Parents and Friends
so lightly. I thinke my gracious Lord, answered the Duke,
that when you consider what your Daughter hath done,

you

you will not touch her with want of wit or iudgement: for in respect of the long enmitie betweene the Emperour and you, we desired that her mariage might sorte to this happie ende. For would she haue departed hence with the Prince Tryneus, without a faithfull and resolued promise of mariage: which is performed, with as great honor as euer was done to the Daughter of a King. Thinke you, quoth the King, that had not the great friendship of Tryneus, (when against his Fathers will he came with Palmerin to assist me) qualified the weight of mine anger against him: I referre his service, to the iudgements of my Lords of England, who perswaded me to reuenge, which you well perceiue as yet I haue not done.

Prince Palmerin, quoth the Duke, is so vertuous, as rather would hee haue runne on a thousand deathes, then your Daughters honour should any way haue beene impeached: but being assured of this fortunate issue, both hee and Tryneus aduentured as they did. And sorrie am not I, said the King, that all things are come so well to passe, but seeing we are entred thus farre in speech: tell mee (I pray you) how Palmerin came to the knowledge of his Parents and how he finished the aduentures at the Castell of the tenne Rocks, and the dangerous Isle of Malfada, which neuer any Knight could compasse before. Then the Duke rehearsed euery accident, how amorous the great Turke was on the Princesse Agriola, and each seuerall occasion as they fell out: at which report the Queene with her Ladies were present, who hearing the discourse of so strange and variable fortunes, said:

I thought my Daughter had learned more modestie, then leauing her Fathers Court, to follow a Knight vnknowne to her in strange Countries: but seeing the ende hath fallen out so well, hencefoorth I shall remaine in better contentment, seeing a Prince of so great renowne hath now espoused her.

While

While this conference endured, the Duke earnestly beheld the Princes Sabinda, Daughter to the Prince of Sansuega, and neece to the Queene: and of such excellent grace and beautie he esteemed her, as forgetting the death of his Father, who deceased since his departure from Allemaine, hee became so amorous of her, that he demanded of the Queene if she were her Daughter. She is not my daughter, quoth the Queene, but the daughter of my Brother, the Prince of Sansuega.

Right glad was the Duke thereof, and resolued to request her of the king in marriage: who knowing the honourable place he held among the Princes of Greece, and what account Palmerin made of him: consented thereto, so that within few daies after they were espoused together. Hereupon, to accompany the Princesse, and to confirme the peace, the king sent the Duke of Gaule, and another great Lord with them into Allemaine, the Queene likewise sent twelue English Ladies to attend on her Daughter.

Thus returned the Duke of Mecena to Vienna, where he was worthily welcommed by the Emperour Palmerin and Tyneus, especially the young Duchesse, and the Ambassadours of England, by whom the peace was faithfully ratified and confirmed.

CHAP.

CHAP. LXII.

How Palmerin and Polinarde departed from Vienna toward Constantinople, where after the decease of the aged Emperour Remicius: Palmerin was crowned Emperour of Greece, and what ioy was made at the birth of Polynarda her first sonne.

After the Ambassadours of England were returned home, Palmerin perceiuing the Empire of Allemaine was in quiet: tooke his leaue of the Emperor, minding to conduct his Polynarda to Constantinople, not without many sorrowfull lamentations of the Mother to forgoe her daughter, and faire Agriola her new acquainted sister, yet the Emperour pacified them well enough, by shewing what benefit this contract would be to Christendome, and so proceeded to his Daughter in this manner.

Thou goest Polynarda to the seate of a great Empire: but more pleaseth me, the perelesse name of Palmerin d' Oliua thy Husband, then the regiment of such a mightie Monarch. Farewell faire Daughter, continue in faithfull loue and obedience, remembring the reuerend honour a Wife oweth to her Husband. Polynarda hearing with what earnest affection her Father spake, was so ouercome with modest dutie of a Childe to her Father, as shee was not able to answere one word: which Palmerin beholding, kissed the Emperours hande, embraced Trineus, and tooke a courteous farewel of all the Ladies, commanding

ding the Pages presently to bring away the Princesse Lit-
tety saying to her: Madame, the longer you stay heere, the
greater will be your conceite of sorrow, by absence the griefe
will be forgotten: Let vs then merrily iourney to the Cit-
tie of Constantinople, where they that neuer saw you, will
reioyse more at your comming, then all the Allemaignes
can sorrow for your departure. With like comfortable spe-
ches Palmerin frequented his Ladie by the way; vntill at
length they entred the Kingdome of Hungaria, where Fry-
soll with his chiefest Lordes attended their comming, to
whom Palmerin in iesting, saide:

Brother, I haue aduentured to bring your Sister Poly-
narda into your Kingdome, take heede if you lay clayme to
her now as sometimes yee did: because that I am ready to
defend her against whomsoeuer dare. I perceyue my good
Lord (quoth Frysoll) that you will haue my Follie generall-
ly knowne, I pray you let no such youthfull prancke be now
remembred: for as you are the chiefest in Chyualrie, so haue
the destenies giuen you a Lady, whom no one in the whole
world may Paragon. Well may it be saide that God and
Nature fore-poynted this match: nothing inferiour vnto
louely Paris and faire Helena, or puissant Hector and wise
Andromacha.

Frysoll accompanied them so farre as Alba, where most
courteously parting from each other, Frysoll returned to his
Kingdome, and Palmerin some after came to Constantino-
ple, where no little ioy was made for his safe arriuall, espe-
cially for the Princesse Polynarda, who was a right Wel-
come Ladie into Greece, the olde Emperour prouiding such
rare Deuices and Triumphs as the Chronicles to this day
recorde the memory thereof. About tenne or twelue Mo-
neths after, Polynarda was deliuered of a goodly Sonne,
who was named Prymaleon, whereat the good olde Em-
perour so inwardly reioyced, as his spirite onely comforted
in the good Fortune of his Sonnes, and fearing afterward,
to see any sinister chaunce befall them, departed this frayle

and transitory life, whose Death was signified three dayes before by the Enchanted Byrd. His Funerall was performed as beseemed so great an Estate: and faine would Palmerin haue had his Father the King Florendos Crowned Emperour, earnestly labouring the Princes in that cause: But hee desiring them to holde him excused, returned them this answere.

Great offence were it to God (my Friendes) that the Honour due to him, who gaue me libertie, defended my renowme, and saued my Life, should be taken from him, and giuen to me: For if Vertue, Authoritie, and good Fortune, are the properties, whereby to make choise of an Emperour, Palmerin is very many degrees before me. As for his Generosity, it is so well known to you, as that it were but lost labour to make report thereof. For his Authority, the barbarous Nations, among whome he hath liued, and conqueringly controlled, deliuer sufficient testimonie. And for his high good Fortune in all his Enterprises, where is the man that may be equalled with him? Or what hath hee at any time attempted, but he hath finished the same with wonderfull Honour? I could name Kings and Princes, that raigne onely by his meanes. To speake of the victories he hath obtained, either in Battel or single Combat, your eyes haue beheld, and the whole World apparantly witnesseth. This dare I boldly say, and some of you doe know it better then I, that his onely Name wilbe more feared in Greece, then all your fore-passed Emperours haue beene by their greatest puissance.

So well did the people like what the King Florendos had saide, as immediately was the Prince Palmerin proclaimed Emperour of Constantinople, and the next day he was Crowned according to the accustomed Rites and Ceremonies. Not long after wards did the King Florendos stay with his Sonne, but returned with his Queene vnto Macedon, where he gouerned in loue and iustice among his Subiects, daily sending Messengers to Constantinople, as

well to vnderstande the health of the Emperour and Empresse, as also of young Primaleon, who daylie increased in strength and Beautie.

CHAP. LXIII.

How the Prince Olorico and Alchydiana pretending to trauell to Constantinople, to visite the Emperour Palmerin, and the Empresse Polyandra, stayed on the Seas, and what sorrowfull moane she made, and how she was found by Palmerin.

IN one of the Chapters before you haue heard mentioned, how Olori compassed the Princesse Alchydiana, that her would bring her to the Emperour Palmerins Court, which shee kept imprinted so deepe in her fancie, as but for the common Malladie, incident to young Ladyes, which is, to become great some after they are espoused, shee would haue betaken her selfe to Trauell, within three Moneths after her Marriage. Notwithstanding, within shorte time after that trouble was past, shee came to beegge a Boone of the Soldane, which he not denyed her, thinking she would demaund no matter of weight. Father (quoth she) you must needes giue leaue to the Prince Olorico, that he may guide me, and accompanie me to Constantinople, for that I am desirous to see the Emperour Palmerin.

Daughter (saide the Soldane, the trauell on the Seas is very perillous, and oftentimes great Estates perish by Shipwracke: but seeing you are so desirous, and I vnadvisedly haue past my promise, you shall not in ought bee hin-

perceiuing them, prouyded all things presently prepared for the Shippes and Galleys, the greater part whereof was laden with great Horses, rich Tapistry, and other things of much value, which should be giuen to Palmerin and his Polynarda. In the rest were Embarqued chosen Knightes for her defence, with Ladyes and Gentlewomen to attend on her, and needfull necessaries: thinking to shewe her sumptuous Magnificence in the Emperours Courte, which in conclusion fell out otherwise. For Fortune who is euermore variable and neuer permanent, at the instant, when Olorico and Archidiana building most on her fauor, and iuste come within tenne dayes sailing of Constantinople: thee altered their opinions in most doubtfull manner, as they expected nothing but the ende of their liues. The winde now ariseth contrary to them, a sudden stormie and terrible Tempest ouertaketh them, and with such rough Billowes their Shippes were beaten, as on their right syde of their Galleys were drowned, the residue were very farre scattered from them, and the great Carracke wherein themselues were against a Rocke, was split in the middest. Now are they left to the mercie of the Waters, and Archidiana wayting on nothing but the losse of her life: and had not one of the Pyrates by swimming recouered a little Squiffe, wherewith he presently made to her, and gotte her in, otherwise there had the Damoselle vnhappily perished. This Pilote was skilfull and cunning, as cutting through the vnmerciful waues, he gained landing at a Port distant from Constantinople about thirtie miles: the Inhabitents where they came on shore, wondred to see her so gorgiously Attired, and had not the Pilote friendly perswaded them, that she was a Damoselle trauelling to the Emperours Court, and by mishap had lost all her company on the Seas, they would haue dealt with her very hardly. But when they vnderstoode the matter, they entertained her with fauour and ciuilitie, causing her to be lodged at a very wealthy Marchants house, where shee wanted nothing she could desire.

Alchidiana seeing she had escaped the danger of the Sea, and was now in better assurance then before, comforted her selfe with this good fortune: but when she remembred her losse, into what want & poverty she was now brought, and that through her foolish desire, her Husband was drowned, (as she thought) she was overcome with griefe, that neither her owne noble mind, nor the daily presence of the Greeks that came to see her, could dissuade her from ceaselesse lamentations.

Ah wretch that I am, quoth she, how well haue I deserued this wreakefull aduenture? Ah ill aduised Alchidiana, what moued thee to crosse the Seas? if not in ordinate desire to see him, of whom thou maist expect no remedie for thy sorrow: or else to see her that is Mistresse of his heart, and so make thine owne concents more languishing? My Lord and Husband Olorico, I am the vnhappy cause of thy death, thy loue hath euer beene to mee sound and perfect: why could it not then make thee forget the man, who alwaies disdained my passions, and neuer loued mee but with dissimulation? If thou escape death as I haue done: iust cause hast thou to hate mee continually. Could not I remember, how thy people spent their blood for mee, onely to witnesse thy neuer daunted affection? and I haue requited thy loue with monstrous ingratitude. Why then did not our Gods make me alone to suffer the desert of my folly, but take reuenge on them that neuer offended? Ah noble Ladies, how hard is your recompence in my seruice, that you tender and delicate bodyes should be sode for the Fishes? And you worthy Knights and Gentlemen, in stead of purchasing honour and renowne with your Master, you are lost for euer, to my no little griefe and veration. The Merchant in whose house thee was lodged, hearing her heauie and lamentable complaints, thus comforted her. Be of good cheere Madame, your Husband (by the grace of God) will well enough escape this danger. As for your treasure, it is a matter soone gotten and soone lost: and to

mourne for your Ladies and Gentlewen, it is to no purpose, because it can no way benefit them. When wee poore men lose our goods wiues and Children, we must with patience please our selues: you then hauing knowledge of vertue, and that wee are all subiect to the transitory changes of the world, to despaire is farre vnseemely your estate.

My Lord the Emperour is bountifull and liberall, and the most vertuous Prince that euer reigned in Greece: he will so well recompence your toile, as you shall not complaine of your comming. With the perswasions, she was somewhat pacified, and hauing staied there nine or tenne daies, to see if any other of the Gallets would arriue there, seeing none came: she solde diuers of her precious Iewels that was about her, for halfe the value they were worth, and prouided her selfe of fiue Horses for her selfe, her Hostesse and her two Daughters, the Pilot that had saued her from drowning, and one of the Merchants seruants, with which companie she rode toward Constantinople, hauing changed her rich attire into mourning weedes. As they were in a great Forrest fiue miles from the Cittie, the Princesse calling to remembrance, how poore and simple shee should come before the Emperour, hauing beene one of the wealthiest Ladies in the world: was so ouercome with this conceite, as hardly could her Hostesse keepe her from swouning, wherefore seeing they were neere a goodly Fountaine, there they alighted to rest her a little. And after shee had walked in the cole shadow of the Trees, she found her selfe in better disposition, preparing to mount on horsbacke againe: but it came so to passe, that the Emperour Palmerin hauing beene Hunting in that Forrest, and by earnest pursuit of the Game, lost all his companie, so that at length he came to the Fountaine where Archidiana walked. His arriuall greatly amazed the Women, and before he would demaund what they were, hee alighted and dranke of the Fountaine-water. Archidiana earnestly beholding him,

and

and feling inwardlie a strange alteration, presentlie swouned againe in her Knights armes. Alas, said the Emperour, have I so offended the Ladie, that the sight of mee should endanger her life? tell mee my Friend, quoth he to the Pilot, dost thou know of whence she is? No my Lord, answered the Pilot, but I understand she is a noble Princesse, who comming to see the Emperour, hath lost her people and goods in the Sea. Me thinks I have seene her heretofore, said Palmerin, but I cannot remember the place where. Then beholding her more advisedly, he said: Is not this the Princesse Alchidiana? that cannot be: my Ambassadours told mee, that shee was married to the Prince Olorico.

By this time she was a little recovered, and seing how he held her in his armes, thus spake. Ah Sir Palmerin, why do you hinder the departure of miserable Alchidiana? thinke you shee can ende her life in better time and place, then in this Countrey, and betweene his armes whom she loved as her life, yet never received courtesie by him till this instant. Ah my Lord, heere at last thou beholdst the foolish and indiscreete Alchidiana, who for thee hath lost her Husband Olorico that loved her dearelie: Knights, Ladies, and inestimable treasure hath shee likewise lost, all which she maketh no account of, but of her beloved, whom she shall never recover. But may it be Madame, quoth the Emperour, that you are indeed the Princesse Alchidiana, Daughter to the Soldane of Babilon, the flower of all the Ladies in Turkie? The same am I, said shee, who loved thee so unmeasurably, and the loyaltie of marriage, feare of dangers of the Sea, nor thy too rigorous refusall, both in my presence, and by thy Messengers, could not dissuade me from this shame, onely to see thy Court, and the beauty of Polynarda. And that at length I might purchase my desire, I brought my Husband with mee, who I feare the cruell waters have swalowed, and as braue Knights as ever were seene, with riches that well might decorate an Em-

pite. By heauen Madame, quoth Palmerin, if the Prince haue lost his life in this aduenture, neuer will my heart bee merrie againe. Nowe see I the vnspeakable loue you bare me, which I haue in some part requited toward your Florisco: yet disnay not sweete Lady, nor feare his death before further tryall, for by mine honour I sweare, no sooner shall I come to Constantinople, but I will cause his search presently to be followed, not doubting but he may be found againe.

And now faire Princesse, tell what vertue or desert you saw in me, that might value the least paine you haue endured: or committing your gracious person to so many doubtfull hazards, of feares, affrights, perturbations, heate and colde, which your choise nature could hardly brooke in trauell: vnworthie were I the name of a man, if now I should not pitie you. And I sweare to you by the liuing God, that if your mishap sort to an euill ende, neuer will I weare my Diademe longer. Alas Madame, if heretofore I haue deluded you, consider it was a Louers deceit: that had bequeathed his hart to such a Lady, as loues you as if you were her Sister. But haue you, quoth she, among your amorous delights, acquainted her with my vnseemely boldnesse: what may she then conceiue of me, but as of a Girle giuen to lose and lauish appetite: The loue of wedlocke faire Princesse, said Palmerin, cannot make me disclose her preiudice, that honoured me so much: let it suffise you, that for the fauour I obtained where you found me in like place, there remaineth to recompence you with all possible kindnes. Let vs then depart hence toward Constantinople, that you may be vsed as beseemeth your high calling. Poore despised that I am, quoth the Princesse, had I entred into conceit of your former illusions, neuer had I fallen into so great danger: but as for matters past, either of your rigour or disdaine, your present affabilities compelles mee to forget, set on then when you please, and I will beare yee companie.

The Pilote, the Marchaunts Wife, and her Daughter, on their knees desired the Emperour to excuse them, in that they hadde not reuerenced his Maiestie as they ought. Worldly Honour I expect not said the Emperour, come on and goe with mee, that I may recompence your paines taken for this worthy Princesse. So rode they forward, and as they issued forth of the Forrest, there stayed the Knights and Hunters attending the Emperours comming, they all maruelling at the great courtesie he vsed to the Lady: then his Maiestie calling the Duke Eustace to him, saide. Thou must presently with thy companions, goe Arme ye, and trauell to finde the Prince Olorico, whome the tempestuous Seas hath separated from his Lady. Who brought these heauy tidings to your Highnes (said the Duke.) This Ladie, who is his Wife (quoth he) hauing miraculously escaped Shipwracke by the meanes of this Marriner. When they were come to the Pallace, the Duke of Saxon came to hold the Emperours Horse while hee alighted. Ptolome saide Palmerin, know you not better your Mistresse Alchidiana? you must now remember her passed fauours, when shee rescemed you from base seruitude. And that shall not I forget my Lord (quoth the Duke) while I haue a day to liue: I cannot thinke that this Lady is she. It is euen she without further question (saide the Emperour) doe you and the Duke of Mecæna helpe her from her Horse, and conduct her vp into the Pallace, while I in meane time goe to vnattire the Empresse.

Madame (quoth Ptolome) yet can I not be throughly resolued. In sooth Ptolome, (said she) I am Alchidiana, who to accomplish what thou and thy Companyons could not, am come hither in this poueity: discouering my want of knowledge by an vnreconcilable losse, except you my good Lords take the greater pitty on me. Thinke you Madam, (quoth Ptolome,) that my Lord Olorico is lost: neuer feare it I beseech ye, but thinke you shall finde as great fauour in this Court, as it were with the Soldane your Father.

Pal-

(Palmerin comming to the Empreſſe, ſaide) Madame, as I was Hunting this day, I found in our Foreſt the Princeſſe Alchidiana, of whom I haue ſo often told ye, ſhe being wife to the Prince Olorico, that named himſelfe my Dwarfes Brother, when I was laſt with you at Gaunt, I deſire yee to intreate her, as her Calling deſerueth, becauſe I am not a little beholding to her. So taking her by the hand, they came and met the Princeſſe, and Palmerin taking her courteouſlie in his armes, deliuered her to the Empreſſe, ſaying.

Faire Princeſſe, you ſhall remaine with my Ladie, till our Knights haue found your Lord and Husband. God will requite your kindenelle to a diſtreſſed Lady, ſaid Alchidiana, although I feare for my offences his fortune will be much the worſe. Madame (quoth the Empreſſe) ſo Noble and debonaire is your Lord and Husband, as no danger can any way preiudice his life, but thinke him as ſafe as if he were here preſent with you, which doubtleſſe will be right ſoone and in good time: therefore let me intreat you to be of good cheere, as if you were now in Aſſiria. And though we cannot compare with the Court of Babylon, yet here ſhall you be attended as beſeemes ſo great a Princeſſe.

I doubt not thereof good Madame, ſaide Alchidiana, the more am I indebted to the Emperour and you: yet can I not forget the abſence of my Lorde, being ſeparated from him in a place ſo vncouth. Yee that is the defender of the iuſt (quoth the Empreſſe) will ſend ye mete againe in place more comfortable, and in that hope I pray yee to pacifie your ſelfe: laying aſide theſe mourning garments, the very ſight whereof cannot but offend ye. Theſe gracious ſpeeches ſomewhat contented her, and expelled all priuate conceite of ſorrow: yet would ſhe not change her habit, till ſhe heard eyther good or bad newes of the Prince Olorico.

CHAP.

CHAP. LXIIII.

¶ Howe the Prince Olorico was reskewed from the Moores, by the young Knightes that the Emperour Palmerin sent in his search: and what ioy was made at Constantinople at his arriuall.

VPon the Emperours resolution for the searche of Olorico, the Dukes of Mecena, and Saxon, with each of them fifty knights, were prepared to Sea with two greate Galleyes well appointed: and Colmelio, Bellechino, Sergillo, Sonne to Cardino, and the Marchant Esterbons two Sonnes, whome the Emperour had but lately knighted, with thirtie hardy and valiant Souldiours departed in another. Eight other Vessells were sent on the Coaste of Propontida and the Bosphore, to seeke the Prince.

It so came to passe, that the same day Archidiana was preserued for drowning, Alibarbanco a Pirate was sailing towards Natolia, and passed very nie: where the Princesse Carrick was split, and him did he espye floting on a Chest, which was filled within with Martin-skinnes, being then with pittie moued to behold him in such daunger, he caused his men to take him into the Shippe, who ready to yeeld vp his ghoste he was benummed with colde. When Alibarbanco saw him so richly Apparelled, and the Chest well stuffed with things of such Value: hee imagined him presently to be some great Lorde, for whome hee should haue some large Raunsome, wherefore he vsed him very courteously. Olorico seeing he was so happily escaped, lifting his eyes

eyes to Heauen, saide. Great is thy mercie O God, that so fauourably vouchsafed to regarde thy poore creature, not were losse worthie reckoning, so my Ladie Alchydiana were safe in Assiria. What angry Planet raigned when we betooke our selues to Sea? what answer shall I make to the Soldane your Father, that gaue mee such charge of your Person at my departure? hardly may I dare to come before him any more.

Alibarbanco hearing these complaints, reioyced thereat. By Mahomet (quoth he to himselfe) nor shalt thou see him any more, if I can hinder it, for I will present thee to the great Turke, his mortall enemie: and for thy Ransome I shall receyue a bountifull recompence. So thinking to strike towards Natolia, he hapned among the Emperours young Knights ere he was aware: wherefore he thought to take their Shippes likewise, yet therein he found himselfe very much deceyued. For Bellechino knowing them to be Turks by their Banners, said to his companions, We are now I feare in the danger of Turkish Pyrates: Let vs therefore with courage winne our deliuerance. Hereupon they fiercely assailed Alibarbanco, and buckled so closely, that in the ende they Boorded him, making such slaughter among his men, and throwing him likewise slaine into the Sea, that none were left to resist their further Entraunce, where they found the Prince Olorico, and being not a little gladde of this their good successe, they eache one embraced him with gracious courtesie. Alas my Friends (quoth the Prince, how knew you my being heere? who gaue you in charge to seeke me forth? who hath bene the Messenger of my misfortune? My Lorde the Emperour Palmerin, (answered Colmelio,) vnderstood thereof by your Ladye Alchydiana, whome he found by good happe as he rode on Hunting.

But may I giue credite to your wordes (saide the Prince) is my Ladie with his Maiestie at the Court? She is in truethy my Lorde (saide Bellechino) and the Mariner like,

likewise that saued her life, whom the Emperour hath highly recompenced for his faithfull seruice. I beseech you, quoth Olorico, let vs hoise saile presently toward Constantinople, for my heart cannot be perswaded till I haue seene her, so great as my doubt, considering our vnfortunate separation.

Neuer may I beare Armes in knighthood, said Bellechino, or lift my Sword in honourable Chiualrie, if Alchidiana be not at Constantinople, where I both saw her and spake to her before our departure. So taking the vessel that belonged to the Pirate Alibarbanco with them, in short time after they arriued at Constantinople, where their cheare full sounding of Drums, Trompets, and Clarions at their landing, deliuered testimonie of their good successe. If the Emperour was glad for the recouery of his friend, the Princesse Alchidiana of her Husband, and euerie one generally for the man lost by such mishap, I leaue to your iudgements, that can censure the rare ioyes of loue and friendship. What Triumphes, Tournaments, bonfires, Masks, Homeries, and other delightful exercises were performed, for ioy of the Prince Olorieos safetie, whom the Emperour made account of, as you haue heard before: it would demand a larger volume to set downe, you must therefore here imagine, that you behold his Maiestie highly contented, Alchidiana thoroughly satisfied, and the whole Court well pleased by this happie euent, giuing themselues to expresse the same in open and manifest signes, beseeming so great estates to prosecute, & therefore as great honour as may be deuised.

The young knights are especially welcommed for their worthie seruice, the Dukes of Saxon and Mocæna likewise, though they failed of bringing the Prince, yet they brought two Foystes belonging to the Prince Alibarbanco, richly laden with many wealthy spoiles, which were giuen among the young knights in recompence of their paines. During the time of these surpassing pleasures

and

and delights, there entred the Hauen of Constantinople three Ships, laden with maruellous sumptuous gifts and presents, from the Quéene Zephira, and her Brother the King Maulerino, being sent to the Emperour Palmerin and his Empresse Polynarda, by two great Lords Ambassadours from Persia, to request familiar loue and alliance with the Emperour, the Soldane confessing his iniurie to Tryneus while he was in his Courte. When the Persians came before the Emperour, who was honorably accompanied with Kings, Dukes, Princes, Counties, and many braue Ladies: they were greatly abashed, yet thinking on the argument of their Embassage, one of them began in this manner.

It is no maruell, redoubted Emperour and Monarch of Greece, if thy Subiects both loue thée and visit thée, whé thy behauiour hath conquered the mindes of forraine Potentates: who to enter amitie and peace with thée, some haue left their Countries to send their Ambassadours hither, other dare not stirre, or assemble their men in warlike manner, so is the name of Palmerin feared thorow all Asia. Hereof beare witnes the great Turke, the Califfe of Siconia, and the heyres to the Prince Amarano of Nigrea: not much inferiour in this condition, is the Soldane of Babilon, whose Daughter with her Husband I here behold. The victorious Abimar, King of Romata and Grisca the worthy Maulerino, and the puissant Soldane of Persia my Master, Husband to the vertuous Quéene Zephra: who with their Brother haue sent your highnes three Shippes, laden with the most welthy riches their Countreys can yéeld. My Lord and they humbly kisse your Maiestis hand, desiring you to forget his discourtesie to the gentle Knight Tryneus, when hee became enamoured on the Princesse Aurecinda. But if their loue then sorted to a philosophicall trope or figure, it hath sithence proued effectuall in procreation, to the no little ioy of my Lord and Master.

The

The Princesse was deliuered of a goodly Son, growing in such exquisite forme and feature: as it is expected hee will one day resemble his Father in chiualrie, as hee doth already his Mother in amiable perfection.

Ambassadour, quoth the Emperour, for the great vertue and nobilitie I haue founde, as well in the Princesse Zephira, as also her noble Brother: I grant the friendly alliance thou demandest. Yet hereafter I sorrie, that the Sonne to the Prince Tyneus, should bee nourished and spend his youth among Pahumetists, without knowledge of his God and Redeemer: for in such sort should hee bee instructed, after hee is come to the yeeres of vnderstanding; that all the Alchoran is tales and fables, and doubtlesse God will so deale with him in time, as hee shall imitate the steppes of his Noble Father. As for the presents sent vs by the King Maulerino, the Soldane, and his Queene Zephira, wee accept them as from our Friends, and will returne them some remembrance of our thankfulnesse. His Maiestie commanded the Persians to be lodged in his Pallace, and continued still their former ioyes and triumphes: but to alter those Courtly pastimes and delights, this misfortune happened which hereafter followeth.

CHAP.

CHAP. LXV.

How the great Turke refused to assist Lycado, Nephew to the Admirall Olimael, against the Emperor Palmerin: and what trouble happened in Constantinople, by the Traytour Nardides, Nephew to the King Tarisius, Lycado, Meuodeno and their Father.



Such was the humanitie and pitty of Palmerin, when hee finished the enchantments at the Ile of Malfada, as he gaue libertie to all the Turkes and Christians, which were before transformed, as you haue heard: among whom was Lycado, Nephew to the Admirall Olimael, he that at the taking of Agriola, had the Prince Trineus for his prisoner. This Lycado, seeing himselfe in his owne Countrey and out of danger, where hee heard how the great Turk was slaine and his Uncle likewise: hee came before the Sultane that then raigned, saying: Worthie Lord, as men are naturally inclined to bemone their losses, so are Subiects bound to aduertise their Soueraignes, of any shame or iniurie done to their Maiesties. This speake I my Lord, because you haue not as yet reuenged the death of your deceased Brother, now sleeping in the armes of Mahomet, albeit traiterously slaine by Palmerin and his companions: at which time my noble Uncle was likewise murdered, with many Knights of chiefe and especiall account. And least you should be ignorant in the truth of the deede, and who also caried hence the Princesse Agriola, I haue credibly

credibly vnderstood, that Palmerin is Nephew to the Emperour of Greece: one of his Companyons is the Emperours Sonne of Allemaigne, and all the rest were Princes and Lords of Greece, onely sent as Spyes into Turkie. Wherefore, seeing you now hold the Rate in such peace and quietnes, it were necessarie you should leave Knightly Armes, and please you to commit the charge thereof to me, I will lose my life, or make an absolute destruction of all Greece. I remember (said the great Turke) that your Vnckle made like entraunce into my deceased Brothers Court, as you by your speeches now do labour to do: but I will so warily loke to such intrusions, as no Traytor shall rest here if I can hinder them. Your Vnckle bered the Christians what followed thereon: the death of his Maister, and daungerous confusion. By you likewise may ensue as bad Fortune, depart you therefore from our Court: and but that we are loath to be noted with Tyrannie, thou shouldst presently be drawne in pieces with horses. False Traytour, thou that commest to counsell vs in a matter, wherin we cannot meddle but with great dishonour: it behoues the first to regard the end of thy intent, and what hee is that gouernes in Greece. Out Villaine goe, and on perill of thy life neuer presume before our againe.

Lycado was greatly astonyed at this sharpe answere, and seeing he could haue no better sutcelle, hee went to his Father the Brother to Olimaell, being one of the chiefest Magitians in all Turkie: to him he made his complaints, saying, hee would die in that resolution, but he would cause the Turke to know that hee was no Traytour, and this (quoth hee) shall be the meane whereby I will compasse it. I meane to disguise my selfe, and Trauell to the Citie of Constantinople, where priuily I will murder the Emperor Palmerin: So shall my Lorde the great Turke touch it or with no further suspition, but will reward me with greater benefites then euer my Vnckle had. My Sonne (answered his Father, thinkest thou that thy deuice will sorte to effect:

the Brother Menadeno would helpe her herein, but he is too young: yet in ten times so much as the departure I will not onely tell thee, but conduct them my selfe. I beseech you good Father (sayd Lycado) further me in what you may, for neuer will my heart be at rest, till I haue payde Palmerin with the selfe same coyne the great Master was. In the meane while do you studie, and search all your Bookes of Negromancie, Diuination, Magique, and Sygromancie, as Zebulus, Orpheus, Hercules, Zoroastres, Circes, Medea, Alphonsus, Bacon, Apponius, and all the rest that write of the Blacke Speculatiue: reade them ouer againe and againe, deuise such Spells, Exorcisms, and Coniurations, as the deyspirits may speake of the Feate I will make at the Citie of Constantinople.

Hereupon the Olde man made his Sonne Menadeno Knight, and with Lycado betooke themselues to Sea, saying my Sonnes, I will bring ye to Constantinople, where (by vertue of mine Arte) once I will arriue before three dayes be orpired: remember your Uncles death, and behaue your selues in such sort, as you may be Registred for euer. The time doth now fauour you with sufficient Reuenge, and therein shall you be assisted by a Christian Knight, whome we shall finde ready Landed there for the same cause.

They Anker beeing weyed, they launch into the deepe, and cut through the waues with such violence, as if the Diuell himselfe were in they Sayles: so that they take Landing at the selfe same houre, as Nardide arriued at Constantinople. As concerning what this Nardides was, you remember the two Traytors Promptaleon and Oudin, Nephewes to the King Tarisius of Hungaria, whome Palmerin and Frysol slew at Constantinople: he was their Brother, and Sonne to the Duchesse of Ormuda. She vnderstanding the death of her two Sonnes, could not conceale it from the Duke her Husbande, who presently dyed with very conceyte of griefe: Whereupon, she to Reuenge this mishappe caused by her report, as also the death of her two

sonnes,

Sonnes, made promise to Nardides, (then being eighteene yeeres olde) that so soone as he was knighted, he should goe to Constantinople, and there (if it were possible) to murder the Emperour and Fryoli. All this he vowed to performe, and about some two or three yeeres after, having maried the kings Daughter of Polonia, he imbarqued himselfe with forty knights, determining by a Combat for Treason, to compasse his intent.

These wreakfull ayners at Revenge, landed all at one instant at Constantinople, when the old Magitian calling to Nardydes: saide he would gladly speake with him in secrete, as concerning matters greatly for his auayle. Whereupon they went all closely together, into the Maisters Cabin, and the Olde man entred into these speeches.

Syr Nardydes, nedelesse it is for you to hide your affaires from me, for I know that you departed from Polonia with fortie knightes disguised like Marchants, onely with this determination, to destroy the Emperour, in revenge of certaine iniuryes done to your Brethren. But if you will giue credite to me, and go to worke in such sort as I shall aduise ye, ye shall happily obtaine the ende of your desire. By God (saide Nardydes) you tell me wonders, there is not one in the Shippe that knowes mine intent: yet haue you saide the truth, wherat I cannot marnell sufficiently. Seeing then you know so much, it were but follie to dissemble, say then your mind, and I will heare ye. This night (saide the olde man) the Emperour will Supper in the great Hall, with the Prince Olorico, and the Princesse Alchidianaes Friends, the king of Sparta, and his Queene, with many other great Princes and Lordes: so that such store of people are in the Pallace, as little regard will be had of Strangers or Houshold seruants.

You then with my Sonne Mercadeo, beeing Armed as becommeth a cause so weightie, shall suddenly enter, and kill the Emperour: my Sonne Lycado and I, will stay your returne here, and I that can commaunde the winde

and weather will carrie yee hence without daunger of following. And trust it is, that there is a Bird preached in the Hall, which the wise Muzabelino hath so Enchaunted, as neyther good nor yll tidings can come to the Emperour, but shee bewrayes the same by her Song or fearefull crye: yet doubt not yee thereof, strikeboldly, there will be none Armed, and so shall you depart againe at your owne pleasure. My Friend (said Nardides, happy be the good houre I mette with thee, assure thy selfe, that if I can kill the Emperour, and thou after woud deliuer me safely: such recompence will I bestowe on thee, as both thou and thine shall for euer remember me.

Other recompence I demaund not (said the Old man) then the death of the Empeour: Prepare thy self therefore to follow thine intent. The Night being come, these Traytors Armed themselues, and calling their Mankles, about them, entred the Pallace, where among the Pages and Seruants, without suspition they came into the Hall leading Lycado and his Father at the Porte, where her threw abroade such Enchauntments, that all such as came forth of their Houses, presently fell downe a sleepe in the Streetes. No sooner were the Traytors entred the Hall, but the Byrd gaue a horrible and fearefull crye, beating her Beake against her Breast with such Furie, as though she would haue rent forth her heart. My God (said the Emperour) in mercie beholde me: For the crie of this Byrd doth foretell great misfortune. Looke about my Friends (quoth hee to his Guarde) and see if any Straunger or vnknowne bodie is entred our Presence. Nardides by these speeches, well knew he was the Emperour, wherefore drawing his Sword, he thought to haue cloue with his head: yet he failed of his intent, for the Emperour hearing the Byrd crie, with a great Golden Cuppe stroke it indifferently, notwithstanding, the Sworde slipping from the Cup, gaue him a sore wound vpon the head. Olorico sitting on the other side of the Table, ranne at the Traytour, but the Em-

perour,

perour had receiued two strokes more ere he could come at him, so that his Maiestie fell from his Chaire as hee had been dead.

As the Prince Olorico held the Traytor Nardides by the armes, Menadeno strooke at him so rigorously, as if Prolome had not borne of the blowes with a great Siluer plate, Olorico there had lost his life. Duke Eustace seing this shamefull outrage, wrong the Sword out of Nardides hand, and gaue him such a sound stroke therewith on the head, as made him tomble his heeles vpward: and by the helpe of Bellechino, who found the meanes to get off his Helmet, he smote his head from his shoulders. Bellechino who had been newly baptised, loued the Emperour as hee had beene his Father, and comming to Menadeno whom Duke Prolome stronglie held in his armes, gaue him so many stabs on his throate, that hee likewise fell downe at his feete. The Empresse seing her Lord so wounded, rent her garments, tore her comely locks of haire, smote her faire face with meruailous violence. Ah my Lord, quoth she, thou art not wounded alone: for if thou die, as God forbid, right soone will my ghost follow thee. Cease Madame your complaints, said the Emperour, and comfort your selfe so well as you may, for this is the houre wherein I must leaue you: I haue lost such abundance of my blood, as longer may I not liue with you: O my God forgiue my sinnes, and receiue my soule. In muttering these words he swouned againe, and the Empresse with him for company, to the no little amazement of all the Lords and Ladies, who were well nere at their wits end to behold this vnexpected alteration. Alchidiana likewise was in wonderfull perplexitie, fearing also that her Lord was wounded to the death: but to comfort this sorrowfull and desolate Court, good Fortune sent this helpe ensuing.

CHAP. LXVI.

How the wise Muzabelino knowing by his art, the cruel treason done to the Emperour: came to succour him, and of that which followed.

MVzabelino the Nigromancer, of whom we haue already spoken, by chance this day was turning ouer his Bookes, and found the dangerous stratageme deuised by these Traytors, and calling his familiars together, demanded the danger that would ensue by this treason: whereto one of them replied, that if he went not speedily to Constantinople, the Emperour, the Prince Olorato and their Ladies would hardly escape that day with life. Then Armed he himselfe, in selfesame manner as hee was when he succored the Prince Tryneus, and calling two spirits of the ayre resembling Giants, their faces so vgly and fearfull as no human creature durst behold them: them he commanded to carrie him to Constantinople, and with a great flaming fire-brand in his hand, he cut through the ayre with such horrible thunder, as each one thought the world had bin ended. When he beheld the old man that defended the port, he said to him: False and disloiall Traitor, darest thou meddle with the man whom thou knowest to bee in my guarde: take him to ye (quoth he to his two spirits) and conuey him to your Courte, and there keepe him aliue for mee, for I will giue him a paine a thousand times worse then death: you know how to vse my gentle guest, let him be

be dealt withall as his behauiour hath deserued. The miserable old man astonied hereat, and thinking to helpe himselfe by his Magique, was presently transformed into a Serpent. Now thou shalt perceiue, said Muzabelino, that I am greater in power then thou art. So taking two great Golden chaines, he tied the Serpent about the necke therewith and his Sonne together: setting such a coniuration on them, as he should neuer bee changed to his former shape.

Then came hee to the Pallace, where taking off his Helmet, he entred the Hall, saying to the Knights. Ah my deere Friends, the Traytor that thus hath molested you is taken, reioyce therefore and be of good cheere, your Lord is not dead, he liueth, he must liue, and in despight of enuie shall florish more then euer he did. The Princes & Knights hearing him speake so friendly, and yet knew not what hee was, notwithstanding his promises they were greatly amazed: but when the saw Bellechino and Colmelio so reuerently embraced him, they began to conceiue better opinion of him. Alas my Lord and Father, said Bellechino, in a happie houre came you hither, and your presence puts vs out of all further feare: vouchsafe to succor the Empresse Polynarda, for pittie it is to see her thus changed. Heereupon Muzabelino embraced the Empresse, whose face was colde, pale and wan. Why Madame: quoth he, where is your former wisedome and discretion: leaue these desolate countenances to common people: your Lord is in no daunger, but within three daies hee shall bee well againe. Conuey her hence, said he to the Ladies, I am ashamed to see your folly, suffering her to lie in this sort, and no one helpe her. Then was she conducted to her Chamber, and Muzabelino with the ayde of his Sonne and Duke Eustace, caried the Emperour to his bed, where staunching his woundes with a precious Oyntment: Muzabelino gaue him some of the water to drink, which before had healed the Princesse Zephiro, and which he had brought with

him in a little viall of Christall, when the Emperour being somewhat better recouered, lifting his eies to heauen, said. How great art thou in mercy my soueraign Redeemer, sending Muzabelino from the furthest regions, to help me in so great a necessitie: Ah my noble friend, what haue I done at any time for thee, that might induce thee to fauour me so much? My Lord, answered Muzabelino, so precious are your deserts in mine eies, as I can doe no lesse, except I should be accounted the most ingrateful among men. So bathing his wounds with the iuyce of certaine vertuous hearbes, he willed all that were present to depart the chamber, and on the morrow they should see their Lord in better estate. So left they the Emperor to his rest, & al the Princes, Knights and Ladies, came to welcome Muzabelino, who comforted the Princesse Alchidiana, assuring her that the Prince Olorico should doe wel enough, for he had likewise bathed his wounds, and left him in his Chamber quietly sleeping. On the morrow he commanded the bodies of Nardides and Menadeno to be burned, afterward he losed Lycado from his father, causing him to be put in prison till the Emperor were amended: and taking the Serpent by the chaine, he brought him by the help of his two spirits into the great Court, where by his cunning he erected a goodly Marble pillar, and on the top thereof a strong Cage of yron, saying to the old man transformed. Accursed creature, to the ende thy paine may bee the greater during the Emperors life, thou shalt remain in this monstrous shape, and die thou shalt not, till the God of heauen call him hence whose death thou diddest contriue. Incontinent the spirits thrust the Serpent into the Cage: and afterward banished away, leauing the monster casting fearefull flames of fire out at his mouth, and howling with strange and pittifull cries. Then went Muzabelino to the Empresse, who still remained sad and pensiue, and bringing her to the Emperour, said. See Madam, am I not so good as my word, your Lord is well and perfectlie recouered, bee you then pleasant

and

and mourne no longer. Not a little ioyfull was she at this sight, embracing his highnes with such affection, as though she had bin absent from him a long time: but when the Emperor saw her face so martered with lamenting, and her sweet countenance so much altred, Alas Madam, quoth he, why doe you offend that seate of heauenly beautie, which God ordained to excell all Ladies liuing? albeit I had died, yet should not you haue died such tyrannie on your selfe. If such a wreakefull chance had happened, answered the Empresse, some had my ghost followed my Lord. For my heart hath no comfort but onely in you, and that once lost, farewell life and all. Then must you both, said Muzabelino, consider the mighty work of God, especially you my Lord, who as you are loued of many, so are you hated likewise of a number: you must therefore hereafter stand vpon your guard, hauing before your eies, that the more renowne encreaseth, the more doth spightfull enuie seeke to deface it. Alexander the great, and Iulius Cæsar are examples thereof. You Madame must wash your face with the water in this viall, which will restore your former beauty, as sometime it did to the Princesse Zephira. Whilom sets vales after, the Emperour shewed himselfe to his Subiects, who were meruailous ioyfull to see him so well recouered, the Prince Olorico likewise was perfectly cured, and all things so well as if this had not happened. Then was Lycado deliuered to the people, who in recompence of his treason, haled him into the Market place, and there binding him in an yron chayne, made a small fire vnder him, and so by little and little broiled him to death.

CHAP.

CHAP. LXVII.

How the Soldane of Babilon sent for the Prince Olorico, and his Daughter Alchidiana, and of the sorow the Emperour and Empresse made for their departure.

THe report of this mishap at Constantinople was so spread abroad, as the King Florendos of Macedon, and the Queene Griana hearing thereof, presently posted to Constantinople, where by the good meanes of Muzabelino, they found their Sonne in very sound estate of health, for which they highly thanked the wise Magitian, giuing him many rich and honourable rewards. And Muzabelino seing all matters quieted, that the Persian Ambassadours were likewise readie to returne to the Soldane, not a little contented with the league of peace, he tooke his leaue of the Emperor and sailed home with them to the King Abimar of Grisca, who he certified of all things that happened, and how fortunately the danger was preuented. Frysoll the King of Hungaria, came with his Queene Armida to Constantinople, a Messenger likewise came from the Emperor of Allemaine and Tryneus, to vnderstand the health of the Emperor, such was the bruite of this suddaine mischance. While all these Princes remained there at the Court, the Princesse Alchidiana was deliuered of a faire Daughter, who at the Emperor Palmerins request was baptised, and named Philocrista, and not many dales after the Empresse had a Daughter likewise, named Bellixa, and the Queene of Hungaria had another, called Melicia: no little ioy being made at the birth of these children. But now the Soldane of Babilon seing his son

and

and daughter returned not all this while, sent the young King of Balisarca to enquire of them; and no sooner was he entred the Haven of Constantinople, but newes of his arriuall was brought to Alchidiana and Olorico, who to honour the King, went and met him at the Porte. The King being landed, seeing himselfe vnarmed, and remembring the death of his Father before that Citie, with the teares in his eies, said: Wretched that I am, must I venture thus nakedly on the shore, where my father, brother, and dearest friends were slaine? Ah Constantinople, the enemy to our Law and Religion, dwelt thou flourish by the blud of the greatest Lords in Turkie? a day will come to abate thy pride and insolency. I hope King of Balisarca, said Olorico if thy father and brother were slaine, it was like worthie Princes in their Masters seruice, whose death if thou remember, and (withall) the valour of them that slew them: thou must think how Fortune fauours the Grecian successors in the Empire. Beside, thou commest now in peace, but ill beseemes it thee then to remember passed troubles: say thy message to the Emperor that thou commest for, and think not on such frinolous matters. By this time they were come into his Maiesties presence, when the King began in this maner. Mighty and renowned Emperor, the Soldan of Babilon my Father, perceiuing that age hasteneth on his death, seeketh to intreat your highnes, that his son and daughter may returne home to him, that while he liues he may inuest them in the kingdome, to beholde some part of their worthy gouernment. I think their absence, said the Emperor, is as irkesome to him, as it is pleasing and contented to me, nor will I with-hold them contrary to his liking: desiring you good Princes to hold me excused, if I haue not vsed you as your vertues worthy merit. Alchidiana hauing heard her fathers request, brake forth into teares, and though nature made her desire to see the place of her birth, and to behold her parents and kindred: yet piercing affection which conquereth all things, drew back her

mind

mind in such sort, as shee could more willingly haue staied in the Emperors Court. But beholding the mutuall loue betweene Palmerin and Polynarda, she resolued to vse the like to her Husband, and forget the folly that too much conquered her appetite. When the day was come of their departure, maruellous was the sorrow at this friendly parting: yet seeing there was no remedie, she kissed her daughter Philocrista, and courteously bidding the Emperor and Empresse farewell, with her Lord Olorico, who was as loth to leaue his noble friend, went aboord, and hoising saile attained safe arriuall at the Soldanes Court. Great ioy was made for their returne, the Pilot that saued the Princesse life, the Soldane made chiefe Captaine of his Guard: and he dying, Olorico was created Soldane, whereof soone after he aduertised the Emperor, sending to him and the Empresse many precious iewels, not forgetting somwhat to his daughter Philocrista. Whē Olorico and Alchidiana sailed from Constantinople, the King of Sparta and his Queene Arismena, the Duke Eustace and the Duchesse Sabinda, with diuers other Princes returned to their countries. The like would the King Florendos, Griana, Prosome and Bryonella haue done: but that the Emperour intreated their longer stay. Griana gaue her Dwarfe Amenada sister to Vrbanillo, to the young Princesse Belliza, & the Emperor gaue his Dwarfe such welthy possessions, as he maried with a rich Gentlewoman of the city, by whom he had a sonne of the stature of the Pygmees, named Risdeno, who afterward was giuen to wait on the young Prince Primaleon. Now the Emperor calling to mind, his former paine and trauell in search of aduentures, so loued and honored knights errant: as from each place in the world they came to his Court, as well to behold his magnificence, as the three yong Princesses, Philocrista, Belliza, & Melicia whose beauties were renowned farre and neere. Great Iousts & Triumphes were daily made in honor of them, wherein Belcar, sonne to King Frysoll, and Tirendos son

to Duke Eustace of Mecona, hauing receiued the order of knighthood, behaued themselues both forward and valiant. Daily came such store of knights to Constantinople from Allemaine, Italie, France and Spaine, as they exceeded the number of them in King Arthurs time, when he made the great Tourney before the Castell of Ladies. And one euening as the Emperour was deuising with the Princes, to censure of them that had best deserued: suddainly entred the Hall a Lady richly attired, who without saluting or speaking a word to any body, a good while beheld the Emperor & his knights. At length, making as though she would returne againe, she thus spake. Noble Emperor Palmerin, I haue more delighted to behold thy Chiualrie, then any of the Princes on the earth: but a time shall come, that the renowme of them and thee, shall be vtterly abolished by Strangers, chiefely by one, whose vertue & bountie shall be such, as thy selfe shalt account him the best that euer bare Armes. So departing, she mounted on her Palfray, and rode away in exceeding great haste. The Emperour marueiling at these words, said. Ill aduised was I, in not demanding of the Lady the knights name, which shal surpasse all other in prowesse, gladly would I know his name, of whom she made such a glorious report. These speeches so enflamed the minds of the knights present, as many of them secretly Armed themselues, and rode after the Lady, among whom was Cardyno and Colmelio, whom we will leaue in their iourney till they find her: and heere conclude our History, til time bring on the follo[illegible]r booke of Primaleon and Palmendos, desiring your[illegible]le acceptations for these two parts, the better affection I shall haue to proceede in the other.

FINIS.

MY premiſe performed, and *Palmerins* famous Hiſtorie finiſhed: for my long labour, Gentlemen, I requeſt but your friendly ſpeeches, an eaſie matter to be giuen by you, yet nothing can bee more welcome to me. If I may ſpeed in ſo fit all a requeſt, *Palmendos* will leaue his Mother the Queene of *Thar-ſus*, and *Primaleon* haſten his order of Knight-hood, that you may bee acquainted with their rare aduentures. In meane while, the famous *Palladine* of *England* is arriued, and to feede you with varietie of delights, his Hiſtory by Eaſter tearme next will be with ye: till when, vſe ſuch fauour to *Palmerin*, as Prince *Palladine* be not hindered.

Antonie Monday.

Honos alit Artes.

FINIS.

BRITISH MUSEUM